



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

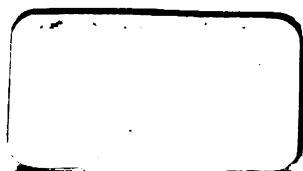
- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



110 d 511<sup>b</sup>.









## Herzog's Encyclopædia.

ENCYCLOPEDIA OR DICTIONARY OF BIBLICAL, HISTORICAL, DOCTRINAL, AND PRACTICAL THEOLOGY. Based on the Real-Encyclopædie of Herzog, Plitt, and Hauck. Edited by PHILIP SCHAFF, D.D. Three Vols. imperial 8vo, price 24s. each.

'We know no encyclopædia of the kind to compete with this.'—*Wesleyan Methodist Magazine*.

## Schaff's History of the Christian Church.

APOSTOLIC CHRISTIANITY, A.D. 1-100. In Two Divisions, ex. demy 8vo, price 21s.

ANTE-NICENE CHRISTIANITY, A.D. 100-311. In Two Divisions, ex. demy 8vo, price 21s.

NICENE AND POST-NICENE CHRISTIANITY, A.D. 311-600. In Two Divisions, ex. demy 8vo, price 21s.

'These volumes cannot fail to prove welcome to all students.'—*Freeman*.

## Goebel's Parables of Jesus.

A Methodical Exposition. Translated by Rev. Prof. BANKS. 8vo, 10s. 6d.

'This volume is quite a treasury of original exposition on a subject on which preachers constantly need help.'—*Methodist Recorder*.

## Biblical Study:

Its Principles, Methods, and History. By Professor C. A. BRIGGS, D.D. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

'Written by one who has made himself a master of the subject, and who is able to write upon it both with the learning of the scholar and with the earnestness of sincere conviction.'—*Scotsman*.

## Hutchison on Thessalonians.

Lectures on St. Paul's Epistle to the Thessalonians. 8vo, 10s. 6d.

'We have not—at least amongst modern works—many commentaries on these epistles in which the text is at once treated with scholarly ability, and turned to popular and practical account. Such is the character of Dr. Hutchison's work.'—*Baptist*.

## The Philosophical Basis of Theism.

An Examination of the Personality of Man to ascertain his Capacity to Know and Serve God, and the Validity of the Principles underlying the Defence of Theism. By SAMUEL HARRIS, D.D. 8vo, 12s.

'Full of suggestive thought, and of real assistance in unfolding to the mind the true account and justification of its religious knowledge.'—*Spectator*.

## Naville's Modern Physics.

Historical and Philosophical Studies. Crown 8vo, 5s.

'Christian scientists should at once procure this learned and able volume.'—*Evangelical Magazine*.

## History of Christian Doctrine.

A Popular Introduction. By Rev. T. G. CRIPPEN. 8vo, 9s.

'Mr. Crippen is studiously, on some points startlingly, and enviably fair. His book shows wide reading and honest thinking. It abounds in acute distinctions; its statements of varying views of doctrine is sometimes very happy, and it sufficiently illustrates the pathology of theological speculation.'—*Wesleyan Methodist Magazine*.

## Studies in the Christian Evidences.

By ALEXANDER MAIR, D.D. Crown 8vo, 6s.

'The reasoning is cogent, the style clear and pleasant, the spirit admirable.'—*Methodist Recorder*.

## Christian Charity in the Ancient Church.

By G. UHLHORN, D.D. Crown 8vo, 6s.

'The historical knowledge this work displays is immense; and the whole subject is wrought out with great care and skill. It is a most readable, delightful, and instructive volume.'—*Evangelical Christendom*.

'A very excellent translation of a very valuable book.'—*Guardian*.



HISTORY  
OF THE  
CHRISTIAN CHURCH

BY  
PHILIP SCHAFF, D.D.

*Christianus sum: Christiani nihil a me alienum puto*

---

A NEW EDITION, REVISED AND ENLARGED

---

NICENE AND POST-NICENE CHRISTIANITY

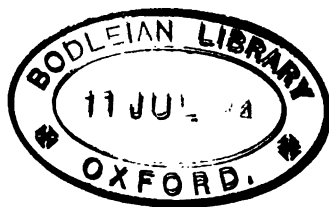
FROM CONSTANTINE THE GREAT TO GREGORY THE GREAT

A.D. 311-600

Division Second

EDINBURGH  
T. & T. CLARK, 38 GEORGE STREET  
1884

110. d. 511<sup>6</sup>.



## CHAPTER VIII.

### CHRISTIAN ART.

#### § 102. *Religion and Art.*

**MAN** is a being *intellectual*, or thinking and knowing, *moral*, or willing and acting, and *aesthetic*, or feeling and enjoying. To these three cardinal faculties corresponds the old trilogy of the *true*, the *good*, and the *beautiful*, and the three provinces of *science*, or knowledge of the truth, *virtue*, or practice of the good, and *art*, or the representation of the beautiful, the harmony of the ideal and the real. These three elements are of equally divine origin and destiny.

Religion is not so much a separate province besides these three, as the elevation and sanctification of all to the glory of God. It represents the idea of holiness, or of union with God, who is the original of all that is true, good, and beautiful. Christianity, as perfect religion, is also perfect humanity. It hates only sin; and this belongs not originally to human nature, but has invaded it from without. It is a leaven which pervades the whole lump. It aims at a harmonious unfolding of all the gifts and powers of the soul. It would redeem and regenerate the whole man, and bring him into blessed fellowship with God. It enlightens the understanding, sanctifies the will, gives peace to the heart, and consecrates even the body a temple of the Holy Ghost. The ancient word: "*Homo sum, nihil humani a me alienum puto*," is fully true only of the Christian. "All things are yours," says the Apostle. All things are of God, and for God. Of these truths we must never lose sight,

notwithstanding the manifold abuses or imperfect and premature applications of them.

Hence there is a Christian art, as well as a Christian science, a spiritual eloquence, a Christian virtue. Feeling and imagination are as much in need of redemption, and capable of sanctification, as reason and will.

The proper and highest mission of art lies in the worship of God. We are to worship God "in the beauty of holiness." All science culminates in theology and theosophy, all art becomes perfect in cultus. Holy Scripture gives it this position, and brings it into the closest connection with religion, from the first chapter of Genesis to the last chapter of the Revelation, from the paradise of innocence to the new glorified earth. This is especially true of the two most spiritual and noble arts, of poetry and music, which proclaim the praise of God—in all the great epochs of the history of his kingdom from the beginning to the consummation. A considerable part of the Bible: the Psalms, the book of Job, the song of Solomon, the parables, the Revelation, and many portions of the historical, prophetic, and didactic books, are poetical, and that in the purest and highest sense of the word. Christianity was introduced into the world with the song of the heavenly host, and the consummation of the church will be also the consummation of poetry and song in the service of the heavenly sanctuary.

Art has always, and in all civilized nations, stood in intimate connection with worship. Among the heathen it ministered to idolatry. Hence the aversion or suspicion of the early Christians towards it. But the same is true of the philosophy of the Greeks, and the law of the Romans; yet philosophy and law are not in themselves objectionable. All depends on the spirit which animates these gifts, and the purpose which they are made to serve.

The great revolution in the outward condition of the church under Constantine dissipated the prejudices against art and the hindrances to its employment in the service of the church. There now arose a Christian art which has beautified and enriched the worship of God, and created immortal monuments of architecture, painting, poetry, and melody, for the edifica-

tion of all ages; although, as the cultus of the early church in general perpetuated many elements of Judaism and heathenism, so the history of Christian art exhibits many impurities and superstitious which provoke and justify protest. Artists have corrupted art, as theologians theology, and priests the church. But the remedy for these imperfections is not the abolition of art and the banishment of it from the church, but the renovation and ever purer shaping of it by the spirit and in the service of Christianity, which is the religion of truth, of beauty, and of holiness.

From this time, therefore, church history also must bring the various arts, in their relation to Christian worship, into the field of its review. Henceforth there is a history of Christian architecture, sculpture, painting, and above all of Christian poetry and music.

### § 103. *Church Architecture.*

On the history of Architecture in general, comp. the works of KUGLER, KINKEL, SONNENBERG, and others, on the plastic arts; also KREUSER: *Der christliche Kirchenbau, seine Geschichte, Symbolik u. Bildnerel*, Bonn, 1851. 2 vols., and the English works of KNIGHT, BROWN, CLOUSE, J. FERGUSON (*A Hist. of Architecture*, Lond. 1865, 8 vols.), etc.

Architecture is required to provide the suitable outward theatre for the public worship of God, to build houses of God among men, where he may hold fellowship with his people, and bless them with heavenly gifts. This is the highest office and glory of the art of building. Architecture is a handmaid of devotion. A beautiful church is a sermon in stone, and its spire a finger pointing to heaven. Under the old covenant there was no more important or splendid building than the temple at Jerusalem, which was erected by divine command and after the pattern of the tabernacle of the wilderness. And yet this was only a significant emblem and shadow of what was to come.

Christianity is, indeed, not bound to place, and may every where worship the omnipresent God. The apostles and martyrs held the most solemn worship in modest private dwellings, and



even in deserts and subterranean catacombs, and during the whole period of persecution there were few church buildings properly so called. The cause of this want, however, lay not in conscientious objection, but in the oppressed condition of the Christians. No sooner did they enjoy external and internal peace, than they built special places of devotion, which in a normal, orderly condition of the church are as necessary to public worship as special sacred times. The first certain traces of proper church buildings, in distinction from private places, appear in the second half of the third century, during the three-and-forty years' rest between the persecution of Decius and that of Diocletian.<sup>1</sup> But these were destroyed in the latter persecution.

The period of church building properly begins with Constantine the Great. After Christianity was acknowledged by the state, and empowered to hold property, it raised houses of worship in all parts of the Roman empire. There was probably more building of this kind in the fourth century than there has been in any period since, excepting perhaps the nineteenth century in the United States, where, every ten years, hundreds of churches and chapels are erected, while in the great cities of Europe the multiplication of churches by no means keeps pace with the increase of population.<sup>2</sup> Constantine and his mother Helena led the way with a good example. The emperor adorned not only his new residential city, but also the holy places in Palestine, and the African city Constantine, with basilicas, partly at his own expense, partly from the public treasury. His successors on the throne, excepting Julian, as well as bishops and wealthy laymen, vied with each other in building, beautifying, and enriching churches. This was considered a work pleasing to God and meritorious. Ambition and self-righteousness mingled themselves here, as they almost everywhere do, with zeal for the glory of God. Chrysostom even

<sup>1</sup> Euseb. Hist. Ecol. viii. 1.

<sup>2</sup> The cities of New York, Brooklyn, and Philadelphia, for instance, have more churches than the much older cities of Berlin, Vienna, and Paris. New York has some three hundred, Berlin and Paris each hardly fifty. This is a noble triumph of the voluntary principle in religion.

laments that many a time the poor are forgotten in the church buildings, and suggests that it is not enough to adorn the altar, the walls, and the floor, but that we must, above all, offer the soul a living sacrifice to the Lord.<sup>1</sup> Jerome also rebukes those who haughtily pride themselves in the costly gifts which they offer to God, and directs them to help needy fellow-Christians rather, since not the house of stone, but the soul of the believer is the true temple of Christ.

The fourth century saw in the city of Rome above forty great churches.<sup>2</sup> In Constantinople the Church of the Apostles and the church of St. Sophia, built by Constantine, excelled in magnificence and beauty, and in the fifth century were considerably enlarged and beautified by Justinian. Sometimes heathen temples or other public buildings were transformed for Christian worship. The Emperor Phocas (602-610), for example, gave to the Roman bishop Boniface IV, the Pantheon, built by Agrippa under Augustus, and renowned for its immense and magnificent dome (now called chiesa della rotonda), and it was thenceforth consecrated to the virgin Mary and the martyrs.

But generally the heathen temples, from their small size and their frequent round form, were not adapted for the Christian worship, as this is held *within* the building, and requires large room for the congregation, that the preaching and the Scripture-reading may be heard; while the heathen sacrifices were performed before the portico, and the multitude looked on *without* the sanctuary. The sanctuary of Pandrosos, on the Acropolis at Athens, holds but few persons, and even the Parthenon is not so capacious as an ordinary church. The Pantheon in Rome is an exception, and is much larger than most temples. The small round pagan temples were most easily convertible into Christian baptisteries and burial chapels. Far more frequently, doubtless, was the material of forsaken or destroyed temples applied to the building of churches.

<sup>1</sup> Homil. lxxx. in Matth. § 2, and l. § 8.

<sup>2</sup> Optatus of Mileve, De schism. Donat. li. 4: "Inter quadraginta et quod exsuperet: basilicas."

§ 104. *The Consecration of Churches.*

New churches were consecrated with great solemnity by prayer, singing, the communion, eulogies of present bishops, and the depositing of relics of saints.<sup>1</sup> This service set them apart from all profane uses, and designated them exclusively for the service and praise of God and the edification of his people. The dedication of Solomon's temple,<sup>2</sup> as well as the purification of the temple after its desecration by the heathen Syrians,<sup>3</sup> furnished the biblical authority for this custom. In times of persecution the consecration must have been performed in silence. But now these occasions became festivals attended by multitudes. Many bishops, like Theodoret, even invited the pagans to attend them. The first description of such a festivity is given us by Eusebius: the consecration of the church of the Redeemer at the Holy Sepulchre,<sup>4</sup> and of a church at Tyre.<sup>5</sup>

After the Jewish precedent,<sup>6</sup> it was usual to celebrate the anniversary of the consecration.<sup>7</sup>

Churches were dedicated either to the holy Trinity, or to one of the three divine Persons, especially Christ, or to the Virgin Mary, or to apostles, especially Peter, Paul, and John, or to distinguished martyrs and saints.

The idea of dedication, of course, by no means necessarily involves the superstitious notion of the omnipresent God being inclosed in a definite place. On the contrary, Solomon had long before said at the dedication of the temple at Jerusalem :

<sup>1</sup> This last was, according to Ambrose, Epist. 54, the custom in Rome, and certainly wherever such relics were to be had.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Chron. c. 5-7.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Macc. iv. 44 ff.

<sup>4</sup> Vita Constant. iv. 43-46.

<sup>5</sup> Hist. Eccl. x. 2-4. Eusebius speaks here in general of the consecration of churches after the cessation of persecution, and then, c. 4, gives an oratio panegyrica, delivered probably by himself, in which he describes the church at Tyre in a minute, but pompous way.

<sup>6</sup> Τὰ ἑγκαίρια, in memory of the purification of the temple under the Maccabees, 1 Macc. iv. 59; John x. 22.

<sup>7</sup> Sozomen, H. E. ii. 25 (26). Gregory the Great ordered: "Solemnitates ecclesiarum dedicationum per singulos annos sunt celebrandæ."

"Behold, the heaven and heaven of heavens cannot contain thee; how much less this house that I have builded." When Athanasius was once censured for assembling the congregation on Easter, for want of room, in a newly built but not yet consecrated church, he appealed to the injunction of the Lord, that we enter into our closet to pray, as consecrating every place. Chrysostom urged that every house should be a church, and every head of a family a spiritual shepherd, remembering the account which he must give even for his children and servants.<sup>1</sup> Not walls and roof, but faith and life, constitute the church,<sup>2</sup> and the advantage of prayer in the church comes not so much from a special holiness of the place, as from the Christian fellowship, the bond of love, and the prayer of the priests.<sup>3</sup> Augustine gives to his congregation the excellent admonition: "It is your duty to put your talent to usury; every one must be bishop in his own house; he must see that his wife, his son, his daughter, his servant, since he is bought with so great a price, continues in the true faith. The apostle's doctrine has placed the master over the servant, and has bound the servant to obedience to the master, but Christ has paid a ransom for both."<sup>4</sup>

### § 105. *Interior Arrangement of Churches.*

The interior arrangement of the Christian churches in part imitated the temple at Jerusalem, in part proceeded directly from the Christian spirit. It exhibits, therefore, like the whole catholic system, a mixture of Judaism and Christianity. At the bottom of it lay the ideas of the priesthood and of sacrifice, and of fellowship with God administered thereby.

Accordingly, in every large church after Constantine there were three main divisions, which answered, on the one hand,

<sup>1</sup> Hom. vi. in Gen., § 2: 'Ἐκκλησίαν ποιήσόν σου τὴν οἰκίαν καὶ γὰρ καὶ ἐπεύδυναι αὐτὴν καὶ τῆς τῶν παιδίων καὶ τῆς οἰκετῶν σωτηρίας.

<sup>2</sup> Sermon in Eutrop.: 'Ἡ ἐκκλησία οὐ τεῦχος καὶ δροφος, ἀλλὰ πίστις καὶ βίος.

<sup>3</sup> De incomprehensibili: 'Ἐνταῦθα ἵστί τι πλεόν, ὅσον ἡ ἀνάγκη καὶ ἡ συμφωνία καὶ τῆς ἀγάπης δὲ σύνδεσμος καὶ αἱ τῶν ἱερῶν εὐχαί.

<sup>4</sup> Sermon. 94.

to the divisions of Solomon's temple, on the other, to the three classes of attendants, the catechumens, the faithful, and the priests, or the three stages of approach to God. The evangelical idea of immediate access of the whole believing congregation to the throne of grace, does not yet appear. The priesthood everywhere comes between.

1. The PORTICO: In this again must be distinguished:

(a) The *inner* portico, a covered hall which belonged to the church itself, and was called *πρόναος*, or commonly, from its long, narrow shape, *νάρθηξ*, *ferula*, i. e., literally, *staff, rod*.<sup>1</sup> The name *paradise* also occurs, because on one side of the wall of the portico Adam and Eve in paradise were frequently painted,—probably to signify that the fallen posterity of Adam find again their lost paradise in the church of Christ. The inner court was the place for all the unbaptized, for catechumens, pagans, and Jews, and for members of the church condemned to light penance, who might hear the preaching and the reading of the Scriptures, but must withdraw before the administration of the Holy Supper.

(b) The *outer* portico, *αὐλή*, *atrium*, also *locus lugentium* or *hiemantium*, which was open, and not in any way enclosed within the sacred walls, hence not a part of the house of God properly so called. Here those under heavy penance, the “weepers”<sup>2</sup> as they were called, must tarry, exposed to all weather, and apply with tears to those entering for their Christian intercessions.

In this outer portico, or atrium, stood the *laver*,<sup>3</sup> in which, after the primitive Jewish and heathen custom, maintained to this day in the Roman church, the worshipper, in token of inward purification, must wash every time he entered the church.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Sometimes the narthex again was divided into two rooms, the *upper* place for the kneelers (*locus substratorum*), i. e., catechumens who might participate, kneeling, in the prayers after the sermon (hence genuflectentes, *γονυκλίνοτες*), and the *lower* place, bordering on the outer portico, for mere hearers, Jews, and pagans (*locus audientium*).

<sup>2</sup> *Flentes*, *hiemantes*.

<sup>3</sup> *Κρήνη*, *cantharus*, *phiale*.

<sup>4</sup> In Num. xix. 2 ff.; xxxi. 19 ff. (comp. Heb. ix. 18) the sprinkling-water, or “water of separation” (i. e., water of purification, LXX.: *ὕδωρ βάπτισμοῦ*), already

After about the ninth century, when churches were no longer built with spacious porticoes, this laver was transferred to the church itself, and fixed at the doors in the form of a holy water basin, supposed to be an imitation of the brazen sea in the priest's court of Solomon's temple.<sup>1</sup> This symbolical usage could easily gather upon itself superstitious notions of the magical virtue of the holy water. Even in the pseudo-Apostolic Constitutions the consecrated water is called "a means of warding off diseases, frightening away evil spirits, a medicine for body and soul, and for purification from sins;" and though these expressions related primarily to the sacramental water of baptism as the bath of regeneration, yet they were easily applied by the people to consecrated water in general. In the Roman Catholic church the consecration of the water<sup>2</sup> is performed on Easter Sunday evening; in the Greco-Russian church, three times in the year.

2. The TEMPLE proper,<sup>3</sup> the HOLY PLACE,<sup>4</sup> or the NAVE of the church,<sup>5</sup> as it were the ark of the new covenant. This part extended from the doors of entrance to the steps of the altar, had sometimes two or four side-naves, according to the size of the church, and was designed for the body of the laity, the faithful and baptized. The men sat on the right towards the south (in the men's nave), the women on the left towards the

appears, prepared from the ashes of the burned red heifer and water, and used for the cleansing of those made unclean by contact with a corpse. The later Jews were very strict in this; no one could appear in the temple or synagogue, or perform any act of worship, prayer, or sacrifice, without being washed, 1 Sam. xvi. 5; 2 Chron. xxx. 17. Therefore synagogues were built by preference in the neighborhood of streams. The Pharisees were very paltry and pedantic in the matter of these washings; comp. Matt. xv. 2; Mark vii. 8; Luke xi. 38. The same custom of symbolical purification before worship we find among the ancient Egyptians, Persians, Brahmins (who ascribed to the water of the Ganges saving virtue), Greeks, and Romans, and among the Mohammedans. At the entrance of every Turkish mosque stands a large font for this purpose.

<sup>1</sup> 1 Kings vii. 23-26; 2 Chron. iv. 2-5.

<sup>2</sup> *Benedictio fontis.*

<sup>3</sup> *Naós.*

<sup>4</sup> *Ἱερόν.*

<sup>5</sup> *Naûs, navis ecclesie.* Many derive this expression from a confusion of the Greek *naós* with *naûs* and *navis*. Not till the ninth and tenth centuries is *navis* used in this way. The more exact equivalent in English would be *long-room*, or *hall*.

north (in the women's nave), or, in Eastern countries, where the sexes were more strictly separated, in the galleries above.<sup>1</sup> The monks and nuns, and the higher civil officers, especially the emperors with their families, usually had special seats of honor in semicircular niches on both sides of the altar.

About the middle of the main nave was the pulpit or the *ambo*,<sup>2</sup> or subsequently two *desks*, at the left the *Gospel-desk*, at the right the *Epistle-desk*, where the lector or deacon read the Scripture lessons. The sermon was not always delivered from the pulpit, but more frequently either from the steps of the altar (hence the phrase: "speaking from the rails"), or from the seat of the bishop behind the altar-table.<sup>3</sup>

Between the reading-desks and the altar was the *odœum*,<sup>4</sup> the place for the singers, and at the right and left the seats for the lower clergy (anagnosts or readers, exorcists, acolytes). This part of the nave lay somewhat higher than the floor of the church, though not so high as the altar-choir, and hence was also called the lower choir, and the gradual, because steps (*gradus*) led up to it. In the Eastern church the choir and nave are scarcely separated, and they form together the *naós*, or temple hall; in the Western the choir and the sanctuary are put together under the name *cancelli* or chancel.

3. The MOST HOLY PLACE,<sup>5</sup> or the CHOIR proper;<sup>6</sup> called also in distinction from the lower choir, the *high choir*,<sup>7</sup> for the priests, and for the offering of the sacrifice of the Eucharist.

<sup>1</sup> Called *ἐρεῶνα*, the elevated galleries on the side walls. Besides this the women's places were protected by wooden lattices from all curious or lascivious glances of the men. Chrysostom says, Homil. 74 in Matth.: "Formerly these lattices certainly did not exist; for in Christ there is neither male nor female (Gal. iii. 28), and in the time of the apostles men and women were together with one accord. But then men were still men, and women were women; now women have sunk to the level of prostitutes, and men are like horses in rutting." A sad commentary on the moral and religious condition of that time!

<sup>2</sup> Ἀμβων, from ἀναβαίνειν, pulpitum, suggestus. Hence the English *pulpit*, while the corresponding German *Kanzel* is derived from *cancelli*.

<sup>3</sup> Βῆμα, exedra.

<sup>4</sup> Ὀδῆϊον. Subsequently the singers were usually placed in the galleries or upper-church.

<sup>5</sup> Τὰ ἅγια τῶν ἁγίων, τὰ ἁδύτα, *sepasior*, sacarium, sanctuarium.

<sup>6</sup> Χορὸς, βῆμα (*ascensus*). <sup>7</sup> Hence the terms *high mass*, *high altar*.

No layman, excepting the emperor (in the east), might enter it. It was semi-circular or conchoidal in form,<sup>1</sup> and was situated at the eastern end of the church, opposite the entrance doors, because the light, to which Christians should turn themselves, comes from the east.<sup>2</sup> It was separated from the other part of the church by rails or a lattice,<sup>3</sup> and by a curtain, or by sacred doors called in the Greek church the picture-wall, *iconostas*, on account of the sacred paintings on it.<sup>4</sup> While in the Eastern churches this screen is still used, it in time gave place in the West to a low balustrade.

In the middle of the sanctuary stood the *altar*,<sup>5</sup> generally a table, or sometimes a chest with a lid; at first of wood, then, after the beginning of the sixth century, of stone or marble, or even of silver and gold, with a wall behind it, and an overshadowing, dome-shaped canopy,<sup>6</sup> above which a cross was

<sup>1</sup> Hence called also *κόγχη*, *shell*.

<sup>2</sup> Thus so early as this was the line of east and west established as the *sacred* (or church-building) *line*. Yet there were exceptions. Socrates, H. E. v. 22, notes it as peculiar in the church of Antioch, that the altar here stood not in the eastern end, but in the western (*οὐ γὰρ πρὸς ἀνατολὰς τὸ θυσιαστήριον, ἀλλὰ πρὸς δύσειν ὄρεται*).

<sup>3</sup> *Ἀμφίδουρα, κυγκλίδες, cancelli*, whence the name *chancel*.

<sup>4</sup> Eusebius mentions, in his description of the church of the bishop Paulinus in Tyre, H. E. x. 4, an elegantly wrought lattice, and Athanasius mentions the curtains. Indeed, the pictures placed upon these curtains date back even to the fourth century, since Epiphanius, Ep. ad Joann. Hierosolymit., inveighed against a painted curtain in a village of Palestine. The lattice has perpetuated itself to this day in the picture wall or iconostas (*εἰκονόστασις*) in the Russo-Greek church. It bears, on the right, the picture of Christ, and on the left, that of the Virgin Mary, and is pierced with three doors; the middle one, called the Emperor's gate (*θύρα Ζαράκιτζα*), because only the emperor, besides the chief priest, may pass through it to take the holy Supper, is decorated and distinguished with the utmost splendor; oftentimes a golden sun with a thousand rays appears, which suddenly separates during the worship, and discloses the altar; or a Mount Zion with innumerable temples and battlements; or a network of golden garlands of flowers and fruits, among which especially clusters of grapes, probably with reference to the sacramental wine, frequently occur.

<sup>5</sup> *Altare, mensa sacra, θυσιαστήριον, ἅγια τράπεζα*. The *altar-cloth, palla, pallia*, covers the whole upper face of the altar. This must not be confounded with the *corporale* (*εἰλητόν*, from *εἰλίσσω, involvo*), i. e., a white linen cloth, with which the oblations prepared upon the altar are covered.

<sup>6</sup> *Πύργος*, tower; *κιβώριον* (of doubtful origin), ciborium, umbraculum. Subsequently the ciborium gave place to the steeple-shaped *tabernaculum* for the preservation of the body of Christ. With the ciborium the dove-shaped form of the receptacle for the body of Christ (hence called *περιστήριον*) also gradually disappeared.



usually fixed. The altar was hollow, and served as the receptacle for the relics of the martyrs; it was placed, where this was possible, exactly over the grave of a martyr, probably with reference to the passage in the Revelation: "I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held."<sup>1</sup> Often a subterranean chapel or crypt<sup>2</sup> was built under the church, in order to have the church exactly upon the burial place of the saint, and at the same time to keep alive the memory of the primitive worship in underground vaults in the times of persecution.

The altar held therefore the twofold office of a tomb (though at the same time the monument of a new, higher life), and a place of sacrifice. It was manifestly the most holy place in the entire church, to which everything else had regard; whereas in Protestantism the pulpit and the word of God come into the foreground, and altar and sacrament stand back. Hence the altar was adorned also in the richest manner with costly cloths, with the cross, or at a later period the crucifix, with burning tapers, symbolical of Christ the light of the world,<sup>3</sup> and previously consecrated for ecclesiastical use,<sup>4</sup> with a splendid copy of the Holy Scriptures, or the mass-book, but above all with the tabernacle, or little house for preserving the consecrated host, on which in the middle ages the German stone-cutters and sculptors displayed wonderful art.

SIDE ALTARS did not come into use until Gregory the Great.

<sup>1</sup> Rev. vi. 9. In the Greek and Roman churches every altar must contain some relics, be they never so unimportant.

<sup>2</sup> *Kryptai*, memorias, confessiones, testimonia.

<sup>3</sup> This usage also no doubt came from Judaism into the Christian church; for in the temple at Jerusalem, and in the tabernacle before it, a lamp was perpetually burning according to divine command, Exod. xxvii. 30 f. Probably lamps were in earlier use in the church. But tapers also were already in use in the time of Chrysostom, especially for lighting the altar, while lamps were rather employed in chapels and before images of saints.

<sup>4</sup> In the Roman church the second of February, or the fortieth day after Christmas, when Mary presented the Lord in the temple, and when the aged Simeon prophetically called the child Jesus "a light to lighten the Gentiles," is appointed for this consecration, and is hence called *Candlemas of Mary*, a contraction of the two names, *Purification of Mary* and *Candlemas*.

Ignatius,<sup>1</sup> Athanasius, Gregory Nazianzen, and Augustine know of only one altar in the church. The Greek church has no more to this day. The introduction of such side altars, which however belong not to the altar space, but to the nave of the church, is connected with the progress of the worship of martyrs and relics.

At the left of the altar was the table of *prothesis*,<sup>2</sup> on which the elements for the holy Supper were prepared, and which is still used in the Greek church; at the right the *sacristy*,<sup>3</sup> where the priests robed themselves, and retired for silent prayer. Behind the altar on the circular wall (and under the painting of Christ enthroned, if there was one) stood the *bishop's chair*,<sup>4</sup> overlooking the whole church. On both sides of it, in a semicircle, were the seats of the presbyters. None but the clergy were allowed to receive the holy Supper within the altar rails.<sup>5</sup>

### § 106. *Architectural Style. The Basilicas.*

Comp. the works on the Basilicas by P. SAENELLI (*Antica Basilicografia*. Napoli, 1686), CIAMPINI (Rom. 1698), GUTTENSOHN & KNAPP (*Monumenta di rel. christ., ossia raccolta delle antiche chiese di Roma*. Rom. 1822 sqq. 3 vols.; also in German, München, 1843), BUNSEN (*Die Basiliken des christlichen Roms*. München, 1843, a commentary on the preceding), VON QUAST (Berl. 1845), and ZESTERMANN (*Die antiken und die christlichen Basiliken*. Leipz. 1847).

The history of church building, from the simple basilicas of the fourth century to the perfect Gothic cathedrals of the thirteenth and fourteenth, exhibits, like the history of the other Christian arts and the sciences, a gradual subjection and

<sup>1</sup> He even expressly (Ep. ad Philad. c. 4) likens the unity of the church in the episcopate to the unity of the altar: "Ἐν θυσιαστήριον, ὡς εἰς ἐπίσκοπος."

<sup>2</sup> Πρόθεσις, oblationarium, still used in the Greek church.

<sup>3</sup> Σκευοφυλάκιον, διακονικόν, sacristia, sacrorum custodia, saluatorium, etc.

<sup>4</sup> Θρόνος, cathedra.

<sup>5</sup> Before Ambrose the emperors were permitted to take their seats within the altar-space. But Ambrose, with the approval of Theodosius, abolished this custom, and assigned to the emperors a special place at the head of the congregation, just outside the rails. Sozomen, H. E. vii. 25.

transformation of previous Jewish and heathen forms by the Christian principle. The church succeeded to the inheritance of all nations, but could only by degrees purge this inheritance of its sinful adulterations, pervade it with her spirit, and subject it to her aims; for she fulfils her mission *through* human freedom, not *in spite of* it, and does not magically transform nations, but legitimately educates them.

The history of Western architecture is the richer. The East contented itself with the Byzantine style, and adhered more strictly to the forms of the round temples, baptisteries, and mausoleums; while the West, starting from the Roman basilica, developed various styles.

The style of the earliest Christian churches was not copied from the heathen temples, because, apart from their connection with idolatry, which was itself highly offensive to the Christian sentiment, they were in form and arrangement, as we have already remarked, entirely unsuitable to Christian worship. The primitive Christian architecture followed the basilicas, and hence the churches built in this style were themselves called basilicas. The connection of the Christian and heathen basilicas, which has been hitherto recognized, and has been maintained by celebrated connoisseurs,<sup>1</sup> has been denied by some modern investigators,<sup>2</sup> who have claimed for the Christian an entirely independent origin. And it is perfectly true, as concerns the interior arrangement and symbolical import of the building, that these can be ascribed to the Christian mind alone. Nor have any forensic or mercantile basilicas, to our knowledge, been transformed into Christian churches.<sup>3</sup> But in external architectural form there is without question an affinity, and there appears no reason why the church should not have employed this classic form.

The basilicas,<sup>4</sup> or royal halls, were public judicial and mer-

<sup>1</sup> Bunsen, Schnaase, Kugler, Kinkel, Quast, &c.

<sup>2</sup> Zestermann (1847) and Krauser (1851).

<sup>3</sup> The passage quoted for this view from Ausonius in his address of thanks to the emperor Gratian, his pupil, c. 2: "Forum et basilica olim negotiis plena, nunc votis, votisque pro tua salute susceptis," implies only, according to the connection, that now all houses and public places are full of good wishes for the emperor.

<sup>4</sup> *Basilikai*. The name comes from that of the highest civil magistrate,

cantile buildings, of simple, but beautiful structure, in the form of a long rectangle, consisting of a main hall, or main nave, two, often four, side naves,<sup>1</sup> which were separated by colonnades from the central space, and were somewhat lower. Here the people assembled for business and amusement. At the end of the hall opposite the entrance, stood a semicircular, somewhat elevated niche (apsis, tribune), arched over with a half-dome, where were the seats of the judges and advocates, and where judicial business was transacted. Under the floor of the tribunal was sometimes a cellar-like place of confinement for accused criminals.

In the history of architecture, too, there is a Nemesis. As the cross became changed from a sign of weakness to a sign of honor and victory, so must the basilica in which Christ and innumerable martyrs were condemned to death, become a place for the worship of the crucified One. The judicial tribune became the altar; the seat of the prætor behind it became the bishop's chair; the benches of the jurymen became the seats of presbyters; the hall of business and trade became a place of devotion for the faithful people; the subterranean jail became a crypt or burial place, the superterrene birth-place, of a Christian martyr. To these were added other changes, especially the introduction of a cross-nave between the apse and the main nave, giving to the basilica the symbolical form of the once despised, but now glorious cross, and forming, so to speak, a recumbent crucifix. The cross with equal arms is called the *Greek*; that with unequal arms, in which the transept is shorter than the main nave from the entrance to the

the *ἄρχων Βασιλεὺς*, who held court in these buildings. In the church this designation was very naturally transferred to Christ, as the supreme King and Judge. Though of Greek origin, the basilicas first reached their full development in Rome, and, properly speaking, arose from the *forum Romanum*. They were strictly *fora* for the people, but roofed, and so protected from rain and heat. The city of Rome had ten of them: the Bas. Julia, Ulpia, Porcia, Marciana, &c. Zestermann, however, denies the connection of the Roman basilica with the Athenian *στοὰ βασιλείου*, and derives it from the later times of Roman luxury, when the name *basilicus* was applied to everything grand and costly.

<sup>1</sup> Basilicas with a single nave are very rare. The pagan basilica of Trier is an instance, and the small church of St. Balbina in Rome, said to have been built by Gregory I. in the beginning of the seventh century.

altar, the *Latin*. Towers, which express the heavenward spirit of the Christian religion, were not introduced till the ninth century, and were then built primarily for bella.

This style found rapid acceptance in the course of the fourth century with East and West; most of all in Rome, where a considerable number of basilicas, some in their ancient venerable simplicity, some with later alterations, are still preserved. The church of St. Maria Maggiore on the Esquiline hill affords the best view of an ancient basilica; the oldest principal church of Rome—S. Giovanni in Laterano (so named from the Roman patrician family of the Laterans), dedicated to the Evangelist John and to John the Baptist; the church of St. Paul, outside the city on the way to Ostia, which was burnt in 1823, but afterwards rebuilt splendidly in the same style, and consecrated by the pope in December, 1854; also S. Clemente, S. Agnese, and S. Lorenzo, outside the walls—are examples. The old church of St. Peter (Basilica Vaticana), which was built on the spot of this apostle's martyrdom, the Neronian circus, and was torn down in the fifteenth century (the last remnant did not fall till 1606), surpassed all other churches of Rome in splendor and wealth, and was rebuilt, not in the same style, but, as is well known, in the Italian style of the sixteenth century.

Next to Rome, Ravenna is rich in old church buildings, among which the great basilica of S. Apollinare in Classe (in the port town, three miles from the main city, and built about the middle of the sixth century) is the most notable. The transept, as in all the churches of this city, is wanting.

In the East Roman empire there appeared even under Constantine sundry departures and transitions toward the Byzantine style. The oldest buildings there, which follow more or less the style of the Roman basilica, are the church at Tyre, begun in 313, destroyed in the middle ages, but known to us from the description of the historian Eusebius;<sup>1</sup> the original St. Sophia of Constantine in Constantinople; and the churches in the Holy Land, built likewise by him and his mother Helena, at Mamre or Hebron, at Bethlehem over the birth-

<sup>1</sup> In the panegyric addressed to Paulinus, bishop of Tyre, *Hist. Eccl.* x. c. 4.

spot of Christ, on the Mount of Olives in memory of the ascension, and over the holy sepulchre on Mount Calvary. Justinian also sometimes built basilicas, for variety, together with his splendid Byzantine churches; and of these the church of St. Mary in Jerusalem was the finest, and was destined to imitate the temple of Solomon, but it was utterly blotted out by the Mohammedans.<sup>1</sup>

### § 107. *The Byzantine Style.*

PROCOPIUS: De ædificiis Justiniani. L. i. c. 1-8. CAR. DUFRESNE DOM. DU OANEX: Constantinopolis Christiana. Venet. 1729. SALZENBERG UND KORTUM: Altchristliche Baudenkmale Constantinopels vom V. bis XII. Jahrh. (40 magnificent copperplates and illustrations). Berlin, 1854.

The second style which meets us in this period, is the Byzantine, which in the West modified the basilica style, in the East soon superseded it, and in the Russo-Greek church has maintained itself to this day. It dates from the sixth century, from the reign of the scholarly and art-loving emperor Justinian I. (527-565), which was the flourishing period of Constantinople and of the centralized ecclesiastico-political despotism, in many respects akin to the age of Louis XIV. of France.

The characteristic feature of this style is the hemispherical dome, which, like the vault of heaven with its glory, spanned the centre of the Greek or the Latin cross, supported by massive columns (instead of slender pillars like the basilicas), and by its height and its prominence ruling the other parts of the building. This dome corresponds on the one hand to the centralizing principle of the Byzantine empire,<sup>2</sup> but at the same

<sup>1</sup> Comp. the more minute descriptions of these churches in the above-mentioned illustrated work of Guttonsohn and Knapp: *Monumenta di religione christ., etc.*, 1822-'27, and the explanatory text by Bunsen: *Die Basiliken des christl. Roms*. München, 1848. Also Gottfried Kinkel: *Geschichte der bildenden Künsten bei den christlichen Völkern*, i. p. 61 seq., and Ferd. von Quast: *Die Basilika der Alten*.

<sup>2</sup> Kurtz, in his large *Handbuch der K. Gesch.*, 3d ed. i. 372, well says: "The Byzantine state, in that maturity of it which Constantine introduced and Justinian completed, was, in polity, as astonishing, gorgeous, majestic a centralized edifice, as

time, and far more clearly than the flat basilica, to that upward striving of the Christian spirit from the earth towards the height of heaven, which afterwards more plainly expressed itself in the pointed arches and the towers of the Germanic cathedral. "While in the basilica style everything looks towards the end of the building where the altar and episcopal throne are set, and by this prevailing connection the upward direction is denied a free expression, in the dome structure everything concentrates itself about the spacious centre of the building over which, drawing the eye irresistibly upward, rises to an awe-inspiring height the majestic central dome. The basilica presents in the apse a figure of the horizon from which the sun of righteousness arises in his glory; the Byzantine building unfolds in the dome a figure of the whole vault of heaven in sublime, imposing majesty, but detracts thereby from the prominence of the altar, and leaves for it only a place of subordinate import."

The dome is not, indeed, absolutely new. The Pantheon in Rome, whose imposing dome has a diameter of a hundred and thirty-two feet, dates from the age of Augustus, B. C. 26. But here the dome rises on a circular wall, and so strikes root in the earth, altogether in character with the heathen religion. The Byzantine dome rests on few columns connected by arches, and, like the vault of heaven, freely spans the central space of the church in airy height, without shutting up that space by walls.

Around the main central dome<sup>1</sup> stand four smaller domes in a square, and upon each dome rises a lofty gilded cross, which in the earlier churches stands upon a crescent, hung with all sorts of chains, and fastened by these to the dome.

The noblest and most complete building of this kind is the

the church of St. Sophia in architecture. The imperial power, as absolute autocracy, was the all-ruling, all-moving centre of the whole state life. The main dome, over-topping all, the full expression of the majesty of the centre, towards which all parts of the building strove, to which all were subservient, in the splendor of which all basked, was the court and the residence; on it the provinces and the authorities set over them leaned, as the subordinate side-domes or half-domes on the main one."

<sup>1</sup> Θόλος.

renowned church of St. Sophia at Constantinople, which was erected in lavish Asiatic splendor by the emperor Justinian after a plan by the architects Anthemius of Tralles and Isidore of Miletus (A. D. 532-537), and consecrated to the Redeemer,<sup>1</sup> but was transformed after the Turkish conquest into a Mohammedan mosque (Aja Sofia). It is two hundred and twenty-eight feet broad, and two hundred and fifty-two feet long; the dome, supported by four gigantic columns, rises a hundred and sixty-nine feet high over the altar, is a hundred and eight feet in diameter, and floats so freely and airily above the great central space, that, in the language of the Byzantine court biographer Procopius, it seems not to rest on terra firma, but to hang from heaven by golden chains.<sup>2</sup> The most costly material was used in the building; the Phrygian marble with rose-colored and white veins, the dark red marble of the Nile, the green of Laconia, the black and white spotted of the Bosphorus, the gold-colored Libyan. And when the dome reflected the brilliance of the lighted silver chandeliers, and sent it back doubled from above, it might well remind one of the vault of heaven with its manifold starry glories, and account for the proud satisfaction with which Justinian on the day of the consecration, treading in solemn procession the finished building, exclaimed: "I have outdone thee, O Solomon!"<sup>3</sup> The church of St. Sophia stood thenceforth the grand model

<sup>1</sup> The Wisdom, the Logos, of God; called in Proverbs and the Book of Wisdom *σοφία*. Hence the name of the church. There is still standing in Constantinople a small church of St. Sophia, which was likewise erected by Justinian.

<sup>2</sup> In 557, the 32d year of Justinian, the eastern part of the dome fell in, and destroyed the altar, together with the tabernacle and the ambo, but was restored in 561. A similar misfortune befell it by an earthquake in the twelfth century, and again in 1346. The Turks let the grand structure gradually decay, till finally, by command of the Sultan, A. D. 1847-'49, a thorough restoration was undertaken under the direction of an Italian architect, Fossati. This brought to light the magnificence of the Mosaic pictures which Mohammedan picture-hatred and Turkish barbarism had in part destroyed, in part plastered over. The Sultan now caused them to be covered with plates of glass, cemented with lime; so that they are secure for a time, till the pile shall come again into the service of Christianity.

<sup>3</sup> *Νεκρὸν δὲ Σολομῶν*. Comp. the descriptions in Evagrius: *Hist. Eccl.* l. iv. cap. 31; Procopius: *De ædific.* i. 1; and the poem of Paul Silentiarius: *Ἐκφρασις πρὸς τῆς ἁγίας Σοφίας* (a metrical translation of it in the above cited work of Salzberg and Kortüm).



of the new Greek architecture, not only for the Christian East and the Russian church, but even for the Mohammedans in the building of their mosques.

In the West the city of Ravenna, on the Adriatic coast, after Honorius (A. D. 404) the seat of the Western empire, or of the eparchate, and the last refuge of the old Roman magnificence and art, affords beautiful monuments of the Byzantine style; especially in the church of St. Vitale, which was erected by the bishop Maximian in 547.<sup>1</sup>

In the West the ground plan of the basilica was usually retained, with pillars and entablature, until the ninth century, and the dome and vaultings of the Byzantine style were united with it. Out of this union arose what is called the Romanesque or the round-arch style, which prevailed from the tenth to the thirteenth century, and was then, from the thirteenth to the fifteenth, followed by the Germanic or pointed-arch style, with its gigantic masterpieces, the Gothic cathedrals. From the fifteenth century eclecticism and confusion prevailed in architecture, till the modern attempts to reproduce the ancient style. The Oriental church, on the contrary, has never gone beyond the Byzantine, its productivity almost entirely ceasing with the age of Justinian. But it is possible that the Græco-Russian church will in the future develop something new.

### § 108. *Baptisteries. Grave-Chapels and Crypts.*

BAPTISTERIES or PHOTISTERIES,<sup>2</sup> chapels designed exclusively for the administration of baptism, are a form of church building by themselves. In the first centuries baptism was performed on streams in the open air, or in private houses. But after the public exercise of Christian worship became lawful, in the fourth century special buildings for this holy ordinance began to appear, either entirely separate, or connected with

<sup>1</sup> Comp. on these Byzantine churches Kinkel, l. c., i. p. 100 sqq. and p. 121 sqq., and the splendid work of Salzenberg and Kortüm, *Altchristliche Baudenkmale Konstantinopels*, etc.

<sup>2</sup> Φωτιστήρια, places of enlightening; because the baptized were, according to Heb. vi. 4, called "enlightened."

the main church (at the side of the western main entrance) by a covered passage; and they were generally dedicated to John the Baptist. The need of them arose partly from the still prevalent custom of immersion, partly from the fact that the number of candidates often amounted to hundreds and thousands; since baptism was at that time administered, as a rule, only three or four times a year, on the eve of the great festivals (Easter, Pentecost, Epiphany, and Christmas), and at episcopal sees, while the church proper was filled with the praying congregation.

These baptismal chapels were not oblong, like the basilicas, but round (like most of the Roman temples), and commonly covered with a dome. They had in the centre, like the bathing and swimming houses of the Roman watering places, a large baptismal basin,' into which several steps descended. Around this stood a colonnade and a circular or polygonal gallery for spectators; and before the main entrance there was a spacious vestibule in the form of an entirely walled rectangle or oval. Generally the baptisteries had two divisions for the two sexes. The interior was sumptuously ornamented; especially the font, on which was frequently represented the symbolical figure of a hart panting for the brook, or a lamb, or the baptism of Christ by John. The earliest baptistery, of the Constantinian church of St. Peter in Rome, whose living flood was supplied from a fountain of the Vatican hill, was adorned with beautiful mosaic, the green, gold, and purple of which were reflected in the water. The most celebrated existing baptistery is that of the Lateran church at Rome, the original plan of which is ascribed to Constantine, but has undergone changes in the process of time.\*

After the sixth century, when the baptism of adults had become rare, it became customary to place a baptismal basin in the porch of the church, or in the church itself, at the left of the entrance, and, after baptism came to be administered no

Καλουβήδρα, piscina, fons baptismalis.

\* In it, according to tradition, the emperor received baptism from pope Silvester I. But this must be an error; for Constantine did not receive baptism until he was on his death-bed in Nicomedia. Comp. § 2, above.

longer by the bishop alone, but by every pastor, each parish church contained such an arrangement. Still baptisteries also continued in use, and even in the later middle ages new ones were occasionally erected.

Finally, after the time of Constantine it became customary to erect small houses of worship or memorial CHAPELS upon the burial-places of the martyrs, and to dedicate them to their memory.<sup>1</sup> These served more especially for private edification.

The subterranean chapels, or CRYPTS, were connected with the churches built over them, and brought to mind the worship of the catacombs in the times of persecution. These crypts always produce a most earnest, solemn impression, and many of them are of considerable archæological interest.

### § 109. *Crosses and Crucifixes.*

JAC. GRETSER (R. C.): *De cruce Christi*. 2 vols. Ingolst. 1608. JUST. LIPSIUS: *De cruce Christi*. Antv. 1694. FR. MÜNTER: *Die Sinnbilder u. Kunstvorstellungen der alten Christen*. Altona, 1825. O. J. HEFELE (R. C.): *Alter u. älteste Form der Crucifixe* (in the 2d vol. of his *Beiträge zur Kirchengesch., Archäologie u. Liturgik*. Tübingen, 1864, p. 265 sqq.).

The cross, as the symbol of redemption, and the signing of the cross upon the forehead, the eyes, the mouth, the breast, and even upon parts of clothing, were in universal use in this period, as they had been even in the second century, both in private Christian life and in public worship. They were also in many ways abused in the service of superstition; and the nickname *cross-worshippers*,<sup>2</sup> which the heathen applied to the Christians in the time of Tertullian,<sup>3</sup> was in many cases not

<sup>1</sup> Hence the name *μαρτύρια*, *martyrum memoria, confessiones*. The clergy who officiated in them were called *κληρικοὶ μαρτυρίων*, *martyrarii*. The name *capella* occurs first in the seventh and eighth centuries, and is commonly derived from the *cappa* (a clerical vestment covering the head and body) of St. Martin of Tours, which was preserved and carried about as a precious relic and as a national palladium of France.

<sup>2</sup> *Religiosi crucis*.

Tert. *Apolog.* c. 16

entirely unwarranted. Besides simple wooden crosses, now that the church had risen to the kingdom, there were many crosses of silver and gold, or sumptuously set with pearls and gems.<sup>1</sup>

The conspicuous part which, according to the statements of Eusebius, the cross played in the life of Constantine, is well known: forming the instrument of his conversion; borne by fifty men, leading him to his victories over Maxentius and Licinius; inscribed upon his banners, upon the weapons of his soldiers in his palace, and upon public places, and lying in the right hand of his own statue. Shortly afterwards Julian accused the Christians of worshipping the wood of the cross. "The sign of universal detestation," says Chrysostom,<sup>2</sup> "the sign of extreme penalty, is now become the object of universal desire and love. We see it everywhere triumphant; we find it on houses, on roofs, and on walls, in cities and hamlets, on the markets, along the roads, and in the deserts, on the mountains and in the valleys, on the sea, on ships, on books and weapons, on garments, in marriage chambers, at banquets, upon gold and silver vessels, in pearls, in painting upon walls, on beds, on the bodies of very sick animals, on the bodies of the possessed [—to drive away the disease and the demon—], at the dances of the merry, and in the brotherhoods of ascetics." Besides this, it was usual to mark the cross on windows and floors, and to wear it upon the forehead.<sup>3</sup> According to Augustine this sign was to remind believers that their calling is to follow Christ in true humility, through suffering, into glory.

We might speak in the same way of the use of other Christian emblems from the sphere of nature; the representation of Christ by a good shepherd, a lamb, a fish, and the like,

<sup>1</sup> The cross occurs in three forms: the *crux decussata* × (called St. Andrew's cross, because this apostle is said to have died upon such an one); the *crux commissa* T; and the *crux immissa*, either with equal arms + (the Greek cross), or with unequal † (the Roman).

<sup>2</sup> In the homily on the divinity of Christ, § 9, tom. i. 571.

<sup>3</sup> Ἐκτυπεῖν τὸν σταυρὸν ἐν τῇ μετώπῳ, effingere crucem in fronte, postare in fronte, which cannot always be understood as merely making the sign with the finger on the forehead. Comp. Neander, iii. 547, note.

which we have already observed in the period preceding.<sup>1</sup>

Towards the end of the present period we for the first time meet with *crucifixes*; that is, crosses not bare, but with the figure of the crucified Saviour upon them. The transition to the crucifix we find in the fifth century in the figure of a lamb, or even a bust of Christ, attached to the cross, sometimes at the top, sometimes at the bottom.<sup>2</sup> Afterwards the whole figure of Christ was fastened to the cross, and the earlier forms gave place to this. The Trullan council of Constantinople (the Quinisextum), A. D. 692, directed in the 82d canon: "Hereafter, instead of the lamb, the human figure of Christ shall be set up on the images."<sup>3</sup> But subsequently the orthodox church of the East prohibited all plastic images, crucifixes among them, and it tolerates only pictures of Christ and the saints. The earlier Latin crucifixes offend the taste and disturb devotion; but the Catholic art in its flourishing period succeeded in combining, in the figure of the suffering and dying Redeemer, the expression of the deepest and holiest anguish with that of supreme dignity. In the middle age there was frequently added to the crucifix a group of Mary, John, a soldier, and the penitent Magdalene, who on her knees embraced the post of the cross.

<sup>1</sup> Vol. I. § 100 (p. 377 sqq.).

<sup>2</sup> Crosses of this sort, colored red, with a white lamb, are thus described by Paulinus of Nola in the beginning of the fifth century, Epist. 32:

"Sub cruce sanguinea niveo stat Christus in agno."

<sup>3</sup> Κατὰ τὸν ἀνδρόπικτον χαρακτῆρα. Hefele (l. c. 266 sq.) proves that crucifixes did not make their first appearance with this council, but that some existed before. The Venerable Bede, for example (Opp. ed. Giles, tom. iv. p. 376), relates that a crucifix, bearing on one side the Crucified, on the other the serpent lifted up by Moses, was brought from Rome to the British cloister of Weremouth in 686. Gregory of Tours, also († 595), De gloria martyrum, lib. i. c. 23, describes a crucifix in the church of St. Genesius in Narbonne, which presented the Crucified One almost entirely naked (pictura, quæ Dominum nostrum quasi præcinctum linteo indicat crucifixum). But this crucifix gave offence, and was veiled, by order of the bishop, with a curtain, and only at times exposed to the people.

§ 110. *Images of Christ.*

FR. KUGLER: *Handbuch der Geschichte der Malerei seit Constantin dem Gr* Berlin, 1847, 2 vols.; and other works on the history of painting  
 Also C. GRÜNEISEN: *Die bildliche Darstellung der Gottheit.* Stuttgart 1828. On the Iconoclastic controversies, comp. MAIMBOURG (R. C.) *Histoire de l'hérésie de l'Iconoclastes.* Par. 1679 sqq. 2 vols. DAL LÆUS (Calvinist): *De imaginibus.* Lugd. Bat. 1642. FR. SPANHEIM: *Historia imaginum restituta.* Lugd. Bat. 1686. P. E. JABLONSKI († 1757): *De origine imaginum Christi Domini,* in *Opuscul.* ed. Water, Lugd. Bat. 1804, tom. iii. WALOH: *Ketzergesch.,* vols. x. and xi. J. MARX: *Der Bildersturm der byzantinischen Kaiser.* Trier, 1839. W. GRIMM: *Die Sage vom Ursprunge der Christusbilder.* Berlin, 1848. L. GLÜCKSKNIG: *Christus-Archäologie,* Prag, 1868. HEFELE: *Beiträge zur Kirchengeschichte,* vol. ii. Tüb. 1864 (*Christusbilder,* p. 254 sqq.). Comp. the liter. in HASE's *Leben Jesu,* p. 79 (5th ed. 1865).

While the temple of Solomon left to the Christian mind no doubt concerning the lawfulness and usefulness of church architecture, the second commandment seemed directly to forbid a Christian painting or sculpture. "The primitive church," says even a modern Roman Catholic historian,<sup>1</sup> "had no images of Christ, since most Christians at that time still adhered to the commandment of Moses (Ex. xx. 4); the more, that regard as well to the Gentile Christians as to the Jewish forbade all use of images. To the latter the exhibition and veneration of images would, of course, be an abomination, and to the newly converted heathen it might be a temptation to relapse into idolatry. In addition, the church was obliged, for her own honor, to abstain from images, particularly from any representation of the Lord, lest she should be regarded by unbelievers as merely a new kind and special sort of heathenism and creature-worship. And further, the early Christians had in their idea of the bodily form of the Lord no temptation, not the slightest incentive, to make likenesses of Christ. The oppressed church conceived its Master only under the form of a servant, despised and uncomely, as Isaiah, liii. 2, 3, describes the Servant of the Lord."

The first representations of Christ are of heretical and pagan

<sup>1</sup> Hefele, l. c. p. 254.

origin. The Gnostic sect of the Carpocratians worshipped crowned pictures of Christ, together with images of Pythagoras, Plato, Aristotle, and other sages, and asserted that Pilate had caused a portrait of Christ to be made.<sup>1</sup> In the same spirit of pantheistic hero-worship the emperor Alexander Severus (A. D. 222—235) set up in his domestic chapel for his adoration the images of Abraham, Orpheus, Apollonius, and Christ.

After Constantine, the first step towards images in the orthodox church was a change in the conception of the outward form of Christ. The persecuted church had filled its eye with the humble and suffering servant-form of Jesus, and found therein consolation and strength in her tribulation. The victorious church saw the same Lord in heavenly glory on the right hand of the Father, ruling over his enemies. The one conceived Christ in his state of humiliation (but not in his state of exaltation), as even repulsive, or at least "having no form nor comeliness;" taking too literally the description of the suffering servant of God in Is. lii. 14 and liii. 2, 3.<sup>2</sup> The other beheld in him the ideal of human beauty, "fairer than the children of men," with "grace poured into his lips;" after the Messianic interpretation of Ps. xlv. 3.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Irenæus, Adv. hæres. 1, 25, § 6: "Imagines quasdam quidem depictas, quasdam autem et de reliqua materia fabricatas habent, dicentes formam Christi factam a Pilato illo in tempore, quo fuit Jesus cum hominibus. Et has coronant et proponunt eas cum imaginibus mundi philosophorum, videlicet cum imagine Pythagoræ et Platonis et Aristotelis et reliquorum; et reliquam observationem circa eas, similiter ut gentes, faciunt." Comp. Epiphanius, Adv. hæres. xxvi. no. 6; August., De hæres. c. 7.

<sup>2</sup> So Justin Martyr, Dial. c. Tryph.; Clement. Alex., in several places of the Pædagogus and the Stromata; Tertullian, De carne Christi, c. 9, and Adv. Jud. c. 14; and Origen, Contra Cels. vi. c. 75. Celsus made this low conception of the form of the founder of their religion one of his reproaches against the Christians.

<sup>3</sup> So Chrysostom, Homil. 27 (al. 28) in Matth. (tom. vii. p. 871, in the new Paris ed.): Οὐδὲ γὰρ θαυματουργῶν ἦν θαυμαστὸς μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ φαινόμενος ἀπλῶς πολλῆς ἔγχευε χάριτος· καὶ τοῦτο ὁ προφήτης (Pa. xlv.) δηλῶν ἔλεγεν· ἁρῆτος κάλλει παρὰ τοῖς υἱοῖς τῶν ἀνθρώπων. The passage in Isaiah (liii. 2) he refers to the ignominy which Christ suffered on the cross. So also Jerome, who likewise refers Pa. xlv. to the personal appearance of Jesus, and says of him: "Absque passionibus crucis universis [hominibus] pulchrior est. . . . Nisi enim habuisset et in vultu quidam oculisque sidereum, numquam eum statim secuti fuissent apostoli, nec qui ad comprehendendum eum venerant, corruissent (Jno. xviii.)." Hieron. Ep. 65, c. 8.

This alone, however, did not warrant images of Christ. For, in the first place, authentic accounts of the personal appearance of Jesus were lacking; and furthermore it seemed incompetent to human art duly to set forth Him in Whom the whole fulness of the Godhead and of perfect sinless humanity dwelt in unity.

On this point two opposite tendencies developed themselves, giving occasion in time to the violent and protracted image-controversies, until, at the seventh ecumenical council at Nice in 787, the use and adoration of images carried the day in the church.

1. On the one side, the prejudices of the ante-Nicene period against images in painting or sculpture continued alive, through fear of approach to pagan idolatry, or of lowering Christianity into the province of sense. But generally the hostility was directed only against images of *Christ*; and from it, as Neander justly observes,<sup>1</sup> we are by no means to infer the rejection of *all* representations of religious subjects; for images of Christ encounter objections peculiar to themselves.

The church historian Eusebius declared himself in the strongest manner against images of Christ in a letter to the empress Constantia (the widow of Licinius and sister of Constantine), who had asked him for such an image. Christ, says he, has laid aside His earthly servant-form, and Paul exhorts us to cleave no longer to the sensible;<sup>2</sup> and the transcendent glory of His heavenly body cannot be conceived nor represented by man; besides, the second commandment forbids the making to ourselves any likeness of anything in heaven or in earth. He had taken away from a lady an image of Christ and of Paul, lest it should seem as if Christians, like the idolaters, carried their God about in images. Believers ought rather to fix their mental eye, above all, upon the divinity of Christ, and, for this purpose, to purify their hearts; since only the pure in heart shall see God.<sup>3</sup> The same Eusebius, how-

<sup>1</sup> Kirchengesch., vol. iii. p. 550 (Germ. ed.).

<sup>2</sup> Comp. 2 Cor. v. 16.

<sup>3</sup> In Harduin, Collect. concil. tom. iv. p. 406. A fragment of this letter of Eusebius is preserved in the acts of the council of the Iconoclasts at Constantinople in 754, and in the sixth act of the second council of Nice in 787.



ever, relates of Constantine, without the slightest disapproval, that, in his Christian zeal, he caused the public monuments in the forum of the new imperial city to be adorned with symbolical representations of Christ, to wit, with figures of the good Shepherd and of Daniel in the lion's den.<sup>1</sup> He likewise tells us, that the woman of the issue of blood, after her miraculous cure (Matt. ix. 20), and out of gratitude for it, erected before her dwelling in Cæsarea Philippi (Pancas) two brazen statues, the figure of a kneeling woman, and of a venerable man (Christ) extending his hand to help her, and that he had seen these statues with his own eyes at Paneas.<sup>2</sup> In the same place he speaks also of pictures (probably Carpocratian) of Christ and the apostles Peter and Paul, which he had seen, and observes that these cannot be wondered at in those who were formerly *heathen*, and who had been accustomed to testify their gratitude towards their benefactors in this way.

The narrow fanatic Epiphanius of Cyprus († 403) also seems to have been an opponent of images. For when he saw the picture of Christ or a saint<sup>3</sup> on the altar-curtain in Anablatha, a village of Palestine, he tore away the curtain, because it was contrary to the Scriptures to hang up the picture of a man in the church, and he advised the officers to use the cloth for winding the corpse of some poor person.<sup>4</sup> This arbitrary conduct, however, excited great indignation, and Epiphanius found himself obliged to restore the injury to the village church by another curtain.

2. The prevalent spirit of the age already very decidedly

<sup>1</sup> Vita Const. iii. c. 49.

<sup>2</sup> Hist. Eccl. lib. vii. cap. 18. According to Philostorgius (vii. 3), it was for a long time unknown whom the statues at Paneas represented, until a medicinal plant was discovered at their feet, and then they were transferred to the sacristy. The emperor Julian destroyed them, and substituted his own statue, which was riven by lightning (Sozom. v. 21). Probably that statue of Christ was a monument of Hadrian or some other emperor, to whom the Phenicians did obeisance in the form of a kneeling woman. Similar representations are to be seen upon coins, particularly of the time of Hadrian.

<sup>3</sup> "Imaginem quasi Christi vel sancti cujusdam."

<sup>4</sup> Epiph. Ep. ad Joann. Hierosolym., which Jerome has preserved in a Latin translation. The Iconoclastic council at Constantinople in 754 cited several works of Epiphanius against images, the genuineness of which, however, is suspicious.

avored this material representation as a powerful help to virtue and devotion, especially for the uneducated classes, whence the use of images, in fact, mainly proceeded.

Plastic representation, it is true, was never popular in the East. The Greek church tolerates no statues, and forbids even crucifixes. In the West, too, in this period, sculpture occurs almost exclusively in bas relief and high relief, particularly on sarcophagi, and in carvings of ivory and gold in church decorations. Sculpture, from its more finite nature, lies farther from Christianity than the other arts.

Painting, on the contrary, was almost universally drawn into the service of religion; and that, not primarily from the artistic impulse which developed itself afterwards, but from the practical necessity of having objects of devout reverence in concrete form before the eye, as a substitute for the sacred books, which were accessible to the educated alone. Akin to this is the universal pleasure of children in pictures.

The church-teachers approved and defended this demand, though they themselves did not so directly need such helps. In fact, later tradition traced it back to apostolic times, and saw in the Evangelist Luke the first sacred painter. Whereof only so much is true: that he has sketched in his Gospel and in the Acts of the Apostles vivid and faithful pictures of the Lord, His mother, and His disciples, which are surely of infinitely greater value than all pictures in color and statues in marble.<sup>1</sup>

Basil the Great († 379) says: "I confess the appearance of the Son of God in the flesh, and the holy Mary as the mother of God, who bore Him according to the flesh. And I receive also the holy apostles and prophets and martyrs. Their likenesses I revere and kiss with homage, for they are handed down from the holy apostles, and are not forbidden, but on the contrary painted in all our churches."<sup>2</sup> His brother, Gregory

<sup>1</sup> Jerome, in his biographical sketch of Luke, *De viris illustr.* c. 7, is silent concerning this tradition (which did not arise till the seventh century or later), and speaks of Luke merely as *medicus*, according to Col. iv. 4.

<sup>2</sup> Epist. 205. Comp. his *Oratio in Barlaam*, Opp. i. 515, and similar expressions in Gregory Naz., *Orat.* 19 (al. 18).

of Nyssa, also, in his memorial discourse on the martyr Theodore, speaks in praise of sacred painting, which "is wont to speak silently from the walls, and thus to do much good." The bishop Paulinus of Nola, who caused biblical pictures to be exhibited annually at the festival seasons in the church of St. Felix, thought that by them the scenes of the Bible were made clear to the uneducated rustic, as they could not otherwise be; impressed themselves on his memory, awakened in him holy thoughts and feelings, and restrained him from all kinds of vice.<sup>1</sup> The bishop Leontius of Neapolis in Cyprus, who at the close of the sixth century wrote an apology for Christianity against the Jews, and in it noticed the charge of idolatry, asserts that the law of Moses is directed not unconditionally against the use of religious images, but only against the idolatrous worship of them; since the tabernacle and the temple themselves contained cherubim and other figures; and he advocates images, especially for their beneficent influences. "In almost all the world," says he, "profligate men, murderers, robbers, debauchees, idolaters, are daily moved to contrition by a look at the cross of Christ, and led to renounce the world, and practise every virtue."<sup>2</sup> And Leontius already appeals to the miraculous fact, that blood flowed from many of the images.<sup>3</sup>

Owing to the difficulty, already noticed, of worthily representing Christ Himself, the first subjects were such scenes from the Old Testament as formed a typical prophecy of the history of the Redeemer. Thus the first step from the field of nature, whence the earliest symbols of Christ—the lamb, the fish, the shepherd—were drawn, was into the field of pre-Christian revelation, and thence it was another step into the province of gospel history itself. The favorite pictures of this kind were, the offering-up of Isaac—the pre-figuration of the great

<sup>1</sup> Paulinus, *Carmen ix. et x. de S. Felicis natali.*

<sup>2</sup> See the fragments of this apology in the 4th act of the second council of Nicea, and Neander, iii. 560 (2d Germ. ed.), who adds the unprejudiced remark: "We cannot doubt that what Leontius here says, though rhetorically exaggerated, is nevertheless drawn from life, and is founded on impressions actually produced by the contemplation of images in certain states of feeling."

<sup>3</sup> Πολλὰ αἱμάτων ῥύσεις ἐξ εἰκόνων γέγονασι.

sacrifice on the cross; the miracle of Moses drawing forth water from the rock with his rod—which was interpreted either, according to 1 Cor. x. 4, of Christ Himself, or, more especially and frequently, of the birth of Christ from the womb of the Virgin; the suffering Job—a type of Christ in His deepest humiliation; Daniel in the lion's den—the symbol of the Redeemer subduing the devil and death in the underworld; the miraculous deliverance of the prophet Jonah from the whale's belly—foreshadowing the resurrection;<sup>1</sup> and the translation of Elijah—foreshadowing the ascension of Christ.

About the middle of the fifth century, just when the doctrine of the person of Christ reached its formal settlement, the first representations of Christ Himself appeared, even said by tradition to be faithful portraits of the original.<sup>2</sup> From that time the difficulty of representing the God-Man was removed by an actual representation, and the recognition of the images of Christ, especially of the Madonna with the Child, became even a test of orthodoxy, as against the Nestorian heresy of an abstract separation of the two natures in Christ. In the sixth century, according to the testimony of Gregory of Tours, pictures of Christ were hung not only in churches, but in almost every private house.<sup>3</sup>

Among these representations of Christ there are two distinct types received in the church:

(1) The SALVATOR picture, with the expression of calm serenity and dignity, and of heavenly gentleness, without the faintest mark of grief. According to the legend, this was a portrait, miraculously imprinted on a cloth, which Christ Himself presented to Abgarus, king of Edessa, at his request.<sup>4</sup> The

<sup>1</sup> Comp. Matt. xii. 39, 40.

<sup>2</sup> The image-hating Nestorians ascribed the origin of iconolatry to their hated opponent, Cyril of Alexandria, and put it into connection with the Monophysite heresy (Assem., Bibl. orient. iii. 2, p. 401).

<sup>3</sup> De gloria martyrum, lib. i. c. 22.

<sup>4</sup> First mentioned by the Armenian historian Moses of Chorene in the fifth century, partly on the basis of the spurious correspondence, mentioned by Eusebius (H. E. i. 13), between Christ and Abgarus Uchomo of Edessa. The Abgarus likeness is said to have come, in the tenth century, into the church of St. Sophia at Constantinople, thence to Rome, where it is still shown in the church of St. Sylvester. But Genoa also pretends to possess the original. The two do not look

original is of course lost, or rather never existed, and is simply a mythical name for the Byzantine type of the likeness of Christ which appeared after the fifth century, and formed the basis of all the various representations of Christ until Raphael and Michael Angelo. These pictures present the countenance of the Lord in the bloom of youthful vigor and beauty, with a free, high forehead, clear, beaming eyes, long, straight nose hair parted in the middle, and a somewhat reddish beard.

(2) The *Eccē Homo* picture of the suffering Saviour with the crown of thorns. This is traced back by tradition to St. Veronica, who accompanied the Saviour on the way to Golgotha, and gave Him her veil to wipe the sweat from His face; whereupon the Lord miraculously imprinted on the cloth the image of His thorn-crowned head.<sup>1</sup>

The Abgarus likeness and the Veronica both lay claim to a miraculous origin, and profess to be *εἰκόνες ἀχειροποίηται*, pictures not made with human hands. Besides these, however, tradition tells of pictures of Christ taken in a natural way by Luke and by Nicodemus. The Salvator picture in the Lateran chapel Sancta Sanctorum in Rome, which is attributed to Luke, belongs to the Edessene or Byzantine type.

With so different pretended portraits of the Lord we cannot wonder at the variations of the pictures of Christ, which the Iconoclasts used as an argument against images. In truth, every nation formed a likeness of its own, according to its existing ideals of art and virtue.

Great influence was exerted upon the representations of Christ by the apocryphal description of his person in the Latin epistle of Publius Lentulus (a supposed friend of Pilate) to the Roman senate, delineating Christ as a man of slender form,

much alike, and are of course only copies. Mr. Glückselig (*Christus-Archæologie*, Prag, 1863) has recently made an attempt to restore from many copies an *Edessenum redivivum*.

<sup>1</sup> This Veronica likeness is said to have come to Rome about A. D. 700, where it is preserved among the relics in St. Peter's, but is shown only to noble persons. According to the common view, advocated especially by Mabillon and Papebroch, the name Veronica arose from the simple error of contracting the two words *vera icon* (*εικών*), the true image. W. Grimm considers the whole Veronica story a Latin version of the Greek Abgarus legend.

noble countenance, dark hair parted in the middle, fair forehead, clear eyes, faultless mouth and nose, and reddish beard. An older, and in some points different, description is that of John of Damascus, or some other writer of the eighth century, who says: "Christ was of stately form, with beautiful eyes, large nose, curling hair, somewhat bent, in the prime of life, with black beard, and sallow complexion, like his mother."<sup>1</sup>

No figure of Christ, in color, or bronze, or marble, can reach the ideal of perfect beauty which came forth into actual reality in the Son of God and Son of man. The highest creations of art are here but feeble reflections of the original in heaven, yet prove the mighty influence which the living Christ continually exerts even upon the imagination and sentiment of the great painters and sculptors, and which He will exert to the end of the world.

### § 111. *Images of Madonna and Saints.*

Besides the images of Christ, representations were also made of prominent characters in sacred history, especially of the blessed Virgin with the Child, of the wise men of the east, as three kings worshipping before the manger,<sup>2</sup> of the four Evangelists, the twelve Apostles, particularly Peter and Paul,<sup>3</sup> of many martyrs and saints of the times of persecution, and honored bishops and monks of a later day.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The letter of Lentulus has been rightly known in its present form only since the eleventh century. Comp. Gabler: *De abderitq* Epistolæ Publil Lentuli ad Senatū R. de J. C. scriptæ. Jenæ, 1819, and 1822 (2 dissertations).

<sup>2</sup> Epist. ad Theoph. imper. de venerandis imag. (of somewhat doubtful origin), in Joh. Damasc. Opera, tom. i. p. 681, ed. Le Quien. A third description of the personal appearance of Christ, but containing nothing new, occurs in the fourteenth century, in Nicephorus Callisti, Hist. Eccl. lib. i. cap. 40.

<sup>3</sup> Into the representation of the child Jesus in the manger the ox and ass were almost always brought, with reference to Is. i. 3: "The ox knoweth his owner, and the ass his master's crib: but Israel doth not know, my people doth not consider."

<sup>4</sup> Usually Christ in the middle, and the leading apostles on either side. Augustine, De consensu Evangelist. i. 16: "Christus simul cum Petro et Paulo in pictis parietibus."

<sup>5</sup> Especially the pillar-saint, Symeon. The Antiochians had the picture of their deceased bishop Meletius on their seal rings, bowls, cups, and on the walls of their apartments. Comp. Chrysostom, Homil. in Meletium.

According to a tradition of the eighth century or later, the Evangelist Luke painted not only Christ, but Mary also, and the two leading apostles. Still later legends ascribe to him even seven Madonnas, several of which, it is pretended, still exist; one, for example, in the Borghese chapel in the church of Maria Maggiore at Rome. The Madonnas early betray the effort to represent the Virgin as the ideal of female beauty, purity, and loveliness, and as resembling her divine Son.<sup>1</sup> Peter is usually represented with a round head, crisped hair and beard; Paul, with a long face, bald crown, and pointed beard; both, frequently, carrying rolls in their hands, or the first the cross and the keys (of the kingdom of heaven), the second, the sword (of the word and the Spirit).

Such representations of Christ, of the saints, and of biblical events, are found in the catacombs and other places of burial, on sarcophagi and tombstones, in private houses, on cups and seal rings, and (in spite of the prohibition of the council of Elvira in 305)<sup>2</sup> on the walls of churches, especially behind the altar.

Manuscripts of the Bible also, liturgical books, private houses, and even the vestments of officials in the large cities of the Byzantine empire were ornamented with biblical pictures. Bishop Asterius of Amasea in Pontus, in the second half of the fourth century, protested against the wearing of these "God-pleasing garments,"<sup>3</sup> and advised that it were better with the proceeds of them to honor the living images of God, and support the poor; instead of wearing the palsied on the clothes, to visit the sick; and instead of carrying with one the image of the sinful woman kneeling and embracing the feet of Jesus, rather to lament one's own sins with tears of contrition.

The custom of prostration<sup>4</sup> before the picture, in token of

<sup>1</sup> The earliest pictures of the Madonna with the child are found in the Roman catacombs, and are traced in part by the Cavaliere de Rossi (*Imagini Scelte*, 1868) to the third and second centuries.

<sup>2</sup> Conc. Eliberin. or Illiberitin. can. 36: "Placuit picturas in ecclesia esse non debere, ne quod colitur aut adoratur, in parietibus depingatur." This prohibition seems to have been confined, however, to pictures of Christ Himself; else we must suppose that martyrs and saints are accounted objects of *cultus* and *adoratio*.

<sup>3</sup> *ἡμῶν τε καὶ τῶν ἁγίων*.

<sup>4</sup> *Προσκύνησις*.

reverence for the saint represented by it, first appears in the Greek church in the sixth century. And then, that the unintelligent people should in many cases confound the image with the object represented, attribute to the outward, material thing a magical power of miracles, and connect with the image sundry superstitious notions—must be expected. Even Augustine laments that among the rude Christian masses there are many image-worshippers,<sup>1</sup> but counts such in the great number of those nominal Christians, to whom the essence of the Gospel is unknown.

As works of art, these primitive Christian paintings and sculptures are, in general, of very little value; of much less value than the church edifices. They are rather earnest and elevated, than beautiful and harmonious. For they proceeded originally not from taste, but from practical want, and, at least in the Greek empire, were produced chiefly by monks. It perfectly befitted the spirit of Christianity, to begin with earnestness and sublimity, rather than, as heathenism, with sensuous beauty. Hence also its repugnance to the nude, and its modest draping of voluptuous forms; only hands, feet, and face were allowed to appear.

The Christian taste, it is well known, afterwards changed, and, on the principle that to the pure all things are pure, it represented even Christ on the cross, and the holy Child at His mother's breast or in His mother's arms, without covering.

Furthermore, in the time of Constantine the ancient classical painting and sculpture had grievously degenerated; and even in their best days they reached no adequate expression of the Christian principle.

In this view, the loss of so many of those old works of art, which, as the sheer apparatus of idolatry, were unsparingly destroyed by the iconoclastic storms of the succeeding period, is not much to be regretted. It was in the later middle ages, when church architecture had already reached its height, that Christian art succeeded in unfolding an unprecedented bloom of painting and sculpture, and in far surpassing, on the field

<sup>1</sup> De moribus ecclesie cath. l. 75: "Novi multos esse picturarum adulateores." The Manichæans charged the entire catholic church with image-worship.



of painting at least, the masterpieces of the ancient Greeks Sculpture, which can present man only in his finite limitation, without the flush of life or the beaming eye, like a shadowy form from the realm of the dead, probably attained among the ancient Greeks the summit of perfection, above which even Canova and Thorwaldsen do not rise. But painting, which can represent man in his organic connection with the world about him, and, to a certain degree, in his unlimited depth of soul and spirit, as expressed in the countenance and the eye, has waited for the influence of the Christian principle to fulfil its perfect mission, and in the Christs of Leonardo da Vinci, Fra Beato Angelico, Correggio, and Albrecht Dürer, and the Madonnas of Raphael, has furnished the noblest works which thus far adorn the history of the art.

### § 112. *Consecrated Gifts.*

It remains to mention in this connection yet another form of decoration for churches, which had already been customary among heathen and Jews: consecrated gifts. Thus the temple of Delphi, for example, had become exceedingly rich through such presents of weapons, silver and golden vessels, statues, &c. In almost every temple of Neptune hung votive tablets, consecrated to the god in thankfulness for deliverance from shipwreck by him.<sup>1</sup> A similar custom seems to have existed among the Jews; for 1 Sam. xxi. implies that David had deposited the sword of the Philistine Goliath in the sanctuary. In the court of the priests a multitude of swords, lances, costly vessels, and other valuable things, were to be seen.

Constantine embellished the altar space in the church of Jerusalem with rich gifts of gold, silver, and precious stones. Sozomen tells us<sup>2</sup> that Cyril, bishop of Jerusalem, in a time of famine, sold the treasures and sacred gifts of the church, and that afterwards some one recognized in the dress of an actress the vestment he once presented to the church.

<sup>1</sup> Comp. Horace, *Ars poet.* v. 20.

<sup>2</sup> H. E. iv. 25.

A peculiar variety of such gifts, namely, memorials of miraculous cures,<sup>1</sup> appeared in the fifth century; at least they are first mentioned by Theodoret, who said of them in his eighth discourse on the martyrs: "That those who ask with the confidence of faith, receive what they ask, is plainly proved by their sacred gifts in testimony of their healing. Some offer feet, others hands, of gold or silver, and these gifts show their deliverance from those evils, as tokens of which they have been offered by the restored." With the worship of saints this custom gained strongly, and became in the middle age quite universal. Whoever recovered from a sickness, considered himself bound first to testify by a gift his gratitude to the saint whose aid he had invoked in his distress. Parents, whose children fortunately survived the teething-fever, offered to St. Apollonia (all whose teeth, according to the legend, had been broken out with pincers by a hangman's servant) gifts of jaw-bones in wax. In like manner St. Julian, for happily accomplished journeys, and St. Hubert, for safe return from the perils of the chase, were very richly endowed; but the Virgin Mary more than all. Almost every church or chapel which has a miracle-working image of the mother of God, possesses even now a multitude of golden and silver acknowledgments of fortunate returns and recoveries.

### § 113. *Church Poetry and Music.*

**J. RAMBACH:** Anthologie christl. Gesänge aus allen Jahrh. der christl. Kirche. Altona, 1817-'38. **H. A. DANIEL:** Thesaurus hymnologicus. Hal. 1841-'56, 5 vols. **EDÉLESTAND DU MÉRIL:** Poésies populaires latines antérieures au douzième siècle. Paris, 1843. **C. FORTLAGE:** Gesänge der christl. Vorzeit. Berlin, 1844. **G. A. KÖNIGSFELD u. A. W. v. SCHLEEEL:** Altchristliche Hymnen u. Gesänge lateinisch u. deutsch. Bonn, 1847. Second collection by KÖNIGSFELD, Bonn, 1865. **E. E. KOCH:** Geschichte des Kirchenlieds u. Kirchengesangs der christl., insbesondere der deutschen evangel. Kirche. 2d ed. Stuttgart, 1852 f. 4 vols. (i. 10-80). **F. J. MOHR:** Latein. Hymnen des Mittelalters (from MSS.), Freiburg, 1853-'55. (Vol. i., hymns of God and angels; ii., h. of Mary; iii., n. of saints.) **BÄSELER:** Auswahl alt-christl. Lieder

<sup>1</sup> *Εὐχέλματα.*

vom 2-15ten Jahrh. Berlin, 1858. R. OH. TRENON: Sacred Latin Poetry, chiefly lyrical, selected and arranged for use; with Notes and Introduction (1849), 2d ed. improved, Lond. and Cambr. 1864. The valuable hymnological works of Dr. J. M. NEALE (of Sackville College, Oxford): The Ecclesiastical Latin Poetry of the Middle Ages (in *Henry Thompson's History of Roman Literature*, Lond. and Glasgow, 1852, p. 213 ff.); *Mediaeval Hymns and Sequences*, Lond. 1851; *Sequentiæ ex Missalibus*, 1852; *Hymns of the Eastern Church*, 1862, several articles in the *Ecclesiologist*; and a Latin dissertation, *De Sequentiis*, in the *Essays on Liturgiology*, etc., p. 859 sqq. (Comp. also J. CHANDLER: *The Hymns of the Primitive Church*, now first collected, translated, and arranged, Lond. 1837.)

Poetry, and its twin sister music, are the most sublime and spiritual arts, and are much more akin to the genius of Christianity, and minister far more copiously to the purposes of devotion and edification than architecture, painting, and sculpture. They employ word and tone, and can speak thereby more directly to the spirit than the plastic arts by stone and color, and give more adequate expression to the whole wealth of the world of thought and feeling. In the Old Testament, as is well known, they were essential parts of divine worship and so they have been in all ages and almost all branches of the Christian church.

Of the various species of religious poetry, the hymn is the earliest and most important. It has a rich history, in which the deepest experiences of Christian life are stored. But it attains full bloom in the Evangelical church of the German and English tongue, where it, like the Bible, becomes for the first time truly the possession of the people, instead of being restricted to priest or choir.

The hymn, in the narrower sense, belongs to lyrical poetry, or the poetry of feeling, in distinction from the epic and dramatic. It differs also from the other forms of the lyric (ode, elegy, sonnet, cantata, &c.) in its devotional nature, its popular form, and its adaptation to singing. The hymn is a popular spiritual song, presenting a healthful Christian sentiment in a noble, simple, and universally intelligible form, and adapted to be read and sung with edification by the whole congregation of the faithful. It must therefore contain nothing

inconsistent with Scripture, with the doctrines of the church, with general Christian experience, or with the spirit of devotion. Every believing Christian can join in the *Gloria in Excelsis* or the *Te Deum*. The classic hymns, which are, indeed, comparatively few, stand above confessional differences, and resolve the discords of human opinions in heavenly harmony. They resemble in this the Psalms, from which all branches of the militant church draw daily nourishment and comfort. They exhibit the bloom of the Christian life in the Sabbath dress of beauty and holy rapture. They resound in all pious hearts, and have, like the daily rising sun and the yearly returning spring, an indestructible freshness and power. In truth, their benign virtue increases with increasing age, like that of healing herbs, which is the richer the longer they are bruised. They are true benefactors of the struggling church, ministering angels sent forth to minister to them who shall be heirs of salvation. Next to the Holy Scripture, a good hymn-book is the richest fountain of edification.

The book of Psalms is the oldest Christian hymn-book, inherited by the church from the ancient covenant. The appearance of the Messiah upon earth was the beginning of Christian poetry, and was greeted by the immortal songs of Mary, of [Elizabeth],<sup>2</sup> of Simeon, and of the heavenly host. Religion and poetry are married, therefore, in the gospel. In the Epistles traces also appear of primitive Christian songs, in rhythmical quotations which are not demonstrably taken from the Old Testament.<sup>1</sup> We know from the letter of the elder Pliny to Trajan, that the Christians, in the beginning of the second century, praised Christ as their God in songs; and from a later source, that there was a multitude of such songs."

<sup>1</sup> E. g., Eph. v. 14, where either the Holy Spirit moving in the apostolic poetry, or (as I venture to suggest) the previously mentioned *Light* personified, is introduced (ὁὖ λέγει) speaking in three strophes:

Ἐγχευε δ καθεύδων,  
καὶ ἄνδρα ἐκ τῶν νεκρῶν.  
καὶ ἐπιφάνσει σοι ὁ Χριστός.

Comp. Rev. iv. 8; 1 Tim. iii. 16; 2 Tim. ii. 11; and my *History of the Apostolic Church*, § 141.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. Euseb. H. E. v. 28.

Notwithstanding this, we have no complete religious song remaining from the period of persecution, except the song of Clement of Alexandria to the divine Logos—which, however, cannot be called a hymn, and was probably never intended for public use—the Morning Song' and the Evening Song' in the Apostolic Constitutions, especially the former, the so-called *Gloria in Excelsis*, which, as an expansion of the doxology of the heavenly hosts, still rings in all parts of the Christian world. Next in order comes the *Te Deum*, in its original Eastern form, or the *Kαθ' ἑκάστην ἡμέραν*, which is older than Ambrose. The *Ter Sanctus*, and several ancient liturgical prayers, also may be regarded as poems. For the hymn is, in fact, nothing else than a prayer in the festive garb of poetical inspiration, and the best liturgical prayers are poetical creations. Measure and rhyme are by no means essential.

Upon these fruitful biblical and primitive Christian models arose the hymnology of the ancient catholic church, which forms the first stage in the history of hymnology, and upon which the mediæval, and then the evangelical Protestant stage, with their several epochs, follow.

#### § 114. *The Poetry of the Oriental Church.*

Comp. the third volume of DANIEL'S Thesaurus hymnologicus (the Greek section prepared by R. Vormbaum); the works of J. M. NEALE, quoted sub § 113; an article on *Greek Hymnology* in the *Christian Remembrancer*, for April, 1859, London; also the liturgical works quoted § 98.

We should expect that the Greek church, which was in advance in all branches of Christian doctrine and culture, and received from ancient Greece so rich a heritage of poetry, would give the key also in church song. This is true to a very limited extent. The *Gloria in excelsis* and the *Te Deum* are unquestionably the most valuable jewels of sacred poetry which have come down from the early church, and they are

<sup>1</sup> "Ὕμνος ἐωθινός, beginning: Δόξα ἐν ὑψίστοις Θεῷ, in Const. Apost. vii. 47 (al. 48), and in Daniel's Thesaur. hymnol. iii. p. 4.

<sup>2</sup> "Ὕμνος ἑσπερινός, which begins: Ὡς ἱλαρὸν ἁγίας δόξης, see Daniel, iii. 5.

both, the first wholly, the second in part of Eastern origin, and going back perhaps to the third or second century.<sup>1</sup> But, excepting these hymns in rhythmic prose, the Greek church of the first six centuries produced nothing in this field which has had permanent value or general use.<sup>2</sup> It long adhered almost exclusively to the Psalms of David, who, as Chrysostom says, was first, middle, and last in the assemblies of the Christians, and it had, in opposition to heretical predilections, even a decided aversion to the public use of uninspired songs. Like the Gnostics before them, the Arians and the Apollinarians employed religious poetry and music as a popular means of commending and propagating their errors, and thereby, although the abuse never forbids the right use, brought discredit upon these arts. The council of Laodicea, about A. D. 360, prohibited even the ecclesiastical use of all uninspired or "private hymns,"<sup>3</sup> and the council of Chalcedon, in 451, confirmed this decree.

Yet there were exceptions. Chrysostom thought that the perverting influence of the Arian hymnology in Constantinople could be most effectually counteracted by the positive antidote of solemn antiphonies and doxologies in processions. Gregory Nazianzen composed orthodox hymns in the ancient measure; but from their speculative theological character and their want of popular spirit, these hymns never passed into the use of the church. The same may be said of the produc-

<sup>1</sup> That the so-called Hymnus angelicus, based on Luke ii. 14, is of Greek origin, and was used as a morning hymn, is abundantly proven by Daniel, *Thesaurus hymnol.* tom. ii. p. 267 sqq. It is found in slightly varying forms in the Apostolic Constitutions, l. vii. 47 (al. 48), in the famous Alexandrian Codex of the Bible, and other places. Of the so called Ambrosian hymn or Te Deum, parts at least are Greek, comp. Daniel, l. c. p. 276 sqq.

<sup>2</sup> We cannot agree with the anonymous author of the article in the "Christian Remembrancer" for April, 1859, p. 282, who places Cosmas of Maiuma as high as Adam of S. Victor, John of Damascus as high as Notker, Andrew of Crete as high as S. Bernard, and thinks Theophanes and Theodore of the Studium in no wise inferior to the best of Sequence writers of the eleventh and twelfth centuries.

<sup>3</sup> Can. 59: Οὐ δεῖ ἰδιωτικὸν ψαλμὸν λέγεσθαι ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ. By this must doubtless be understood not only heretical, but, as the connection shows, all extrabiblical hymns composed by men, in distinction from the κανονικὰ βιβλία τῆς καινῆς καὶ παλαιᾶς διαθήκης.

tions of Sophronius of Jerusalem, who glorified the high festivals in Anacreontic stanzas; of Synesius of Ptolemais (about A. D. 410), who composed philosophical hymns; of Nonnus of Panopolis in Egypt, who wrote a paraphrase of the Gospel of John in hexameters; of Eudoxia, the wife of the emperor Theodosius II.; and of Paul Silentarius, a statesman under Justinian I., from whom we have several epigrams and an interesting poetical description of the church of St. Sophia, written for its consecration. Anatolius, bishop of Constantinople († 458), is properly the only poet of this period who realized to any extent the idea of the church hymn, and whose songs were adapted to popular use.<sup>1</sup>

The Syrian church was the first of all the Oriental churches to produce and admit into public worship a popular orthodox poetry, in opposition to the heretical poetry of the Gnostic Bardesanes (about A. D. 170) and his son Harmonius. EPHRAIM SYRUS († 378) led the way with a large number of successful hymns in the Syrian language, and found in Isaac, presbyter of Antioch, in the middle of the fifth century, and especially in Jacob, bishop of Sarug in Mesopotamia († 521), worthy successors.<sup>2</sup>

After the fifth century the Greek church lost its prejudices against poetry, and produced a great but slightly known abundance of sacred songs for public worship.

In the history of the Greek church poetry, as well as the Latin, we may distinguish three epochs: (1) that of formation, while it was slowly throwing off classical metres, and inventing its peculiar style, down to about 650; (2) that of perfection, down to 820; (3) that of decline and decay, to 1400 or to the fall of Constantinople. The first period, beautiful as

<sup>1</sup> Neale, in his *Hymns of the Eastern Church*, p. 8 sqq., gives several of them in free metrical reproduction. See below.

<sup>2</sup> On the Syrian hymnology there are several special treatises, by AUGUSTI: *De hymnis Syrorum sacris*, 1814; HAHN: *Bardesanes Gnosticus, Syrorum primus hymnologus*, 1819; ZINGERLE: *Die heil. Muse der Syrer*, 1833 (with German translations from Ephraim). Comp. also JOS. SIM. ASSEMANI: *Bibl. orient.* i. 80 sqq. (with Latin versions), and DANIEL'S *Thes. hymnol.* tom. iii. 1855, pp. 189-268. The Syrian hymns for Daniel's *Thesaurus* were prepared by L. SPLETH, who gives them with the German version of Zingerle. An English version by H. BURGESS: *Select metrical Hymns and Homilies of Ephraem S.*, Lond. 1853, 2 vols.

are some of the odes of Gregory of Nazianzen and Sophronius of Jerusalem, has impressed scarcely any traces on the Greek office books. The flourishing period of Greek poetry coincides with the period of the image controversies, and the most eminent poets were at the same time advocates of images; pre-eminent among them being John of Damascus, who has the double honor of being the greatest theologian and the greatest poet of the Greek church.

The flower of Greek poetry belongs, therefore, in a later division of our history. Yet, since we find at least the rise of it in the fifth century, we shall give here a brief description of its peculiar character.

The earliest poets of the Greek church, especially Gregory Nazianzen, in the fourth, and Sophronius of Jerusalem in the seventh century, employed the classical metres, which are entirely unsuitable to Christian ideas and church song, and therefore gradually fell out of use.<sup>1</sup> Rhyme found no entrance into the Greek church. In its stead the metrical or harmonic prose was adopted from the Hebrew poetry and the earliest Christian hymns of Mary, Zacharias, Simeon, and the angelic host. Anatolius of Constantinople († 458) was the first to renounce the tyranny of the classic metre and strike out a new path. The essential points in the peculiar system of the Greek versification are the following:<sup>2</sup>

The first stanza, which forms the model of the succeeding ones, is called in technical language *Hirmos*, because it draws the others after it. The succeeding stanzas are called *Troparia* (stanzas), and are divided, for chanting, by commas, without regard to the sense. A number of troparia, from three to twenty or more, forms an *Ode*, and this corresponds to the Latin *Sequence*, which was introduced about the same time by the monk Notker in St. Gall. Each ode is founded on a

<sup>1</sup> See some odes of Gregory, Euthymius and Sophronius in Daniel's *Theo.* tom. iii. p. 5 sqq. He gives also the hymn of Clement of Alex. (*ὕμνος τοῦ σωτῆρος Χριστοῦ*), the *ὕμνος ἰαδωός* and *ὕμνος ἱσπερινός*, of the third century.

<sup>2</sup> See the details in Neale's works, whom we mainly follow as regards the Eastern hymnology, and in the article above alluded to in the "Christian Remembrancer" (probably also by Neale).



hirinos and ends with a troparion in praise of the Holy Virgin. The odes are commonly arranged (probably after the example of such Psalms as the 25th, 112th, and 119th) in acrostic, sometimes in alphabetic, order. Nine odes form a *Canon*.<sup>1</sup> The older odes on the great events of the incarnation, the resurrection, and the ascension, are sometimes sublime; but the later long canons, in glorification of unknown martyrs are extremely prosaic and tedious and full of elements foreign to the gospel. Even the best hymnological productions of the East lack the healthful simplicity, naturalness, fervor, and depth of the Latin and of the Evangelical Protestant hymn.

The principal church poets of the East are ANATOLIUS († 458), ANDREW OF CRETE (660-732), GERMANUS I. (634-734), JOHN OF DAMASCUS († about 780), COSMAS of Jerusalem, called the Melodist (780), THEOPHANES (759-818), THEODORE of the Studium (826), METHODIUS I. (846), JOSEPH of the Studium (830), METROPHANES of Smyrna († 900), LEO VI. (886-917), and EUTHYMIUS († 920).

The Greek church poetry is contained in the liturgical books, especially in the twelve volumes of the *Mensea*, which correspond to the Latin Breviary, and consist, for the most part, of poetic or half-poetic odes in rhythmic prose.<sup>2</sup> These

<sup>1</sup> Hence this last troparion is called *Theotokion*, from *θεοτόκος*, the constant predicate of the Virgin Mary. The *Stauro-theotokion* celebrates Mary at the cross.

<sup>2</sup> *Κανόν*. Neale says (Hymns of the East. Ch. Introd. p. xxix.): "A canon consists of Nine Odes—each Ode containing any number of troparia from three to beyond twenty. The reason for the number nine is this: that there are nine Scriptural canticles employed at Lauds (*εἰς τὸν Ὁρσπον*), on the model of which those in every Canon are formed. The first: that of Moses after the passage of the Red Sea—the second, that of Moses in Deuteronomy (ch. xxxiii.)—the third, that of Hannah—the fourth, that of Habakkuk—the fifth, that of Isaiah (ch. xvi. 9-20)—the sixth, that of Jonah—the seventh, that of the Three Children (verses 3-24, our "Song" in the Bible Version)—the eighth, *Benedicite*—the ninth, *Magnificat* and *Benedictus*."

<sup>3</sup> Neale, l. c. p. xxxviii., says of the Oriental Breviary: "This is the staple of those three thousand pages—under whatever name the stanzas may be presented—forming Canons and Odes; as Troparia, Idiomela, Stichera, Stichoi, Contakia, Cathismata, Theotokia, Triodia, Stauro-theotokia, Catavasiai—or whatever else. Nine-tenths of the Eastern Service-book is poetry." Besides these we find poetical pieces also in the other liturgical books: the *Paraclesis* or the *Great Octoechus*, in eight parts (for eight weeks and Sundays), the small *Octoechus*, the *Triodion* (for

treasures, on which nine centuries have wrought, have hitherto been almost exclusively confined to the Oriental church, and in fact yield but few grains of gold for general use. Neale has latterly made a happy effort to reproduce and make accessible in modern English metres, with very considerable abridgements, the most valuable hymns of the Greek church.<sup>1</sup>

We give a few specimens of Neale's translations of hymns of St. Anatolius, patriarch of Constantinople, who attended the council of Chalcedon (451). The first is a Christmas hymn, commencing in Greek :

*Μέγα καὶ παράδοξον θαῦμα.*

"A great and mighty wonder,  
The festal makes secure;  
The Virgin bears the Infant  
With Virgin-honor pure.

The Word is made incarnate,  
And yet remains on high:  
And cherubim sing anthems  
To shepherds from the sky.

And we with them triumphant  
Repeat the hymn again:  
'To God on high be glory,  
And peace on earth to men!'

While thus they sing your Monarch,  
Those bright angelic bands,  
Rejoice, ye vales and mountains!  
Ye oceans, clap your hands!

the Lent season), and the *Pentecostarion* (for the Easter season). Neale (p. xli.) reckons that all these volumes together would form at least 5,000 closely-printed, double column quarto pages, of which 4,000 pages would be poetry. He adds an expression of surprise at the "marvellous ignorance in which English ecclesiastical scholars are content to remain of this huge treasure of divinity—the gradual completion of nine centuries at least." Respecting the value of these poetical and theological treasures, however, few will agree with this learned and enthusiastic Anglican venerator of the Oriental church.

<sup>1</sup> Neale, in his preface, says of his translations: "These are literally, I believe, the only English versions of any part of the treasures of Oriental Hymnology. There is scarcely a first or second-rate hymn of the Roman Breviary which has not been translated: of many we have six or eight versions. The eighteen quarto volumes of Greek church-poetry can only at present be known to the English reader by my little book."

Since all He comes to ransom,  
By all be He adored,  
The Infant born in Bethlehem,  
The Saviour and the LORD!

Now idol forms shall perish,  
All error shall decay,  
And CHRIST shall wield His sceptre,  
Our LORD and God for aye."

Another specimen of a Christmas hymn by the same, commencing *ἐν Βηθλεέμ* :<sup>1</sup>

"In Bethlehem is He born!  
Maker of all things, everlasting God!  
He opens Eden's gate,  
Monarch of ages! Thence the fiery sword  
Gives glorious passage; thence,  
The severing mid-wall overthrown, the powers  
Of earth and Heaven are one;  
Angels and men renew their ancient league,  
The pure rejoin the pure,  
In happy union! Now the Virgin-womb  
Like some cherubic throne  
Containeth Him, the Uncontainable:  
Bears Him, whom while they bear  
The seraphs tremble! bears Him, as He comes  
To shower upon the world  
The fulness of His everlasting love!"

One more on Christ calming the storm, *ζοφερὰς τρικυμίας*, as reproduced by Neale:

"Fierce was the wild billow  
Dark was the night;  
Oars labor'd heavily;  
Foam glimmer'd white;  
Mariners trembled;  
Peril was nigh;  
Then said the God of God  
—'Peace! It is I!'

Ridge of the mountain-wave,  
Lower thy crest!

<sup>1</sup> From the "Christian Remembrancer," l. c. p. 302. Comp. Neale, *Hymns of the Eastern Church*, p. 18.

Wail of Euroclydon,  
 Be thou at rest!  
 Peril can none be—  
 Sorrow must fly—  
 Where saith the Light of Light,  
 —'Peace! It is I.'

Jesu, Deliverer!  
 Come Thou to me:  
 Soothe Thou my voyaging  
 Over life's sea!  
 Thou, when the storm of death  
 Boars, sweeping by,  
 Whisper, O Truth of Truth!  
 —'Peace! It is I.'"

§ 115. *The Latin Hymn.*

More important than the Greek hymnology is the Latin from the fourth to the sixteenth century. Smaller in compass, it surpasses it in artless simplicity and truth, and in richness, vigor, and fulness of thought, and is much more akin to the Protestant spirit. With objective churchly character it combines deeper feeling and more subjective appropriation and experience of salvation, and hence more warmth and fervor than the Greek. It forms in these respects the transition to the Evangelical hymn, which gives the most beautiful and profound expression to the personal enjoyment of the Saviour and his redeeming grace. The best Latin hymns have come through the Roman Breviary into general use, and through translations and reproductions have become naturalized in Protestant churches. They treat for the most part of the great facts of salvation and the fundamental doctrines of Christianity. But many of them are devoted to the praises of Mary and the martyrs, and vitiated with superstitions.

In the Latin church, as in the Greek, heretics gave a wholesome impulse to poetical activity. The two patriarchs of Latin church poetry, Hilary and Ambrose, were the champions of orthodoxy against Arianism in the West.

The genius of Christianity exerted an influence, partly liberating, partly transforming, upon the Latin language and

versification. Poetry in its youthful vigor is like an impetuous mountain torrent, which knows no bounds and breaks through all obstacles; but in its riper form it restrains itself and becomes truly free in self-limitation; it assumes a symmetrical, well-regulated motion and combines it with periodical rest. This is rhythm, which came to its perfection in the poetry of Greece and Rome. But the laws of metre were an undue restraint to the new Christian spirit which required a new form. The Latin poetry of the church has a language of its own, a grammar of its own, a prosody of its own, and a beauty of its own, and in freshness, vigor, and melody even surpasses the Latin poetry of the classics. It had to cast away all the helps of the mythological fables, but drew a purer and richer inspiration from the sacred history and poetry of the Bible, and the heroic age of Christianity. But it had first to pass through a state of barbarism like the Romanic languages of the South of Europe in their transition from the old Latin. We observe the Latin language under the influence of the youthful and hopeful religion of Christ, as at the breath of a second spring, putting forth fresh blossoms and flowers and clothing itself with a new garment of beauty, old words assuming new and deeper meanings, obsolete words reviving, new words forming. In all this there is much to offend a fastidious classical taste, yet the losses are richly compensated by the gains. Christianity at its triumph in the Roman empire found the classical Latin rapidly approaching its decay and dissolution; in the course of time it brought out of its ashes a new creation.

The classical system of prosody was gradually loosened, and accent substituted for quantity. Rhyme, unknown to the ancients as a system or rule, was introduced in the middle or at the end of the verse, giving the song a lyrical character, and thus a closer affinity with music. For the hymns were to be sung in the churches. This accented and rhymed poetry was at first, indeed, very imperfect, yet much better adapted to the freedom, depth, and warmth of the Christian spirit, than the stereotyped, stiff, and cold measure of the heathen classics.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Archbishop Trench (*Sacred Latin Poetry*, 2d ed. Introd. p. 9): "A struggle

Quantity is a more or less arbitrary and artificial device; accent, or the emphasizing of one syllable in a polysyllabic word, is natural and popular, and commends itself to the ear. Ambrose and his followers, with happy instinct, chose for their hymns the Iambic dimeter, which is the least metrical and the most rhythmical of all the ancient metres. The tendency to euphonious rhyme went hand in hand with the accented rhythm, and this tendency appears occasionally in its crude beginnings in Hilary and Ambrose, but more fully in Damasus, the proper father of this improvement.

Rhyme is not the invention of either a barbaric or an over-civilized age, but appears more or less in almost all nations, languages, and grades of culture. Like rhythm it springs from the natural esthetic sense of proportion, euphony, limitation, and periodic return.<sup>1</sup> It is found here and there, even in the oldest popular poetry of republican Rome, that of Ennius, for example.<sup>2</sup> It occurs not rarely in the prose even of Cicero, and especially of St. Augustine, who delights in ingenious alliterations and verbal antitheses, like *patet* and *latet*, *spes* and

commenced from the first between the form and the spirit, between the old heathen form and the new Christian spirit—the latter seeking to release itself from the shackles and restraints which the former imposed upon it; and which were to it, not a help and a support, as the form should be, but a hindrance and a weakness—not liberty, but now rather a most galling bondage. The new wine went on fermenting in the old bottles, till it burst them asunder, though not itself to be split and lost in the process, but to be gathered into nobler chalices, vessels more fitted to contain it—new, even as that which was poured into them was new.” This process of liberation Trench illustrates in Prudentius, who still adheres in general to the laws of prosody, but indulges the largest license.

<sup>1</sup> Comp. the excellent remarks of Trench, l. c. p. 26 sqq., on the import of rhyme. Milton, as is well known, blinded by his predilection for the ancient classics, calls rhyme (in the preface to “Paradise Lost”) “the invention of a barbarous age, to set off wretched matter and lame metre; a thing of itself to all judicious ears trivial and of no true musical delight.” Trench answers this biased judgment by pointing to Milton’s own rhymed odes and sonnets, “the noblest lyrics which English literature possesses.”

<sup>2</sup> “It is a curious thing,” says J. M. Neale (The Eccles. Lat. Poetry of the Middle Ages, p. 214), “that, in rejecting the foreign laws in which Latin had so long gloried, the Christian poets were in fact merely reviving, in an inspired form, the early melodies of republican Rome;—the *rhythmical* ballads which were the delight of the men that warred with the Samnites, and the Volscians, and Hannibal.”

*res, fides and vides, bene and plene, oritur and moritur* Damasus of Rome introduced it into sacred poetry.<sup>1</sup> But it was in the sacred Latin poetry of the middle age that rhyme first assumed a regular form, and in Adam of St. Victor, Hildebert, St. Bernard, Bernard of Clugny, Thomas Aquinas, Bonaventura, Thomas a Celano, and Jacobus de Benedictis (author of the *Stabat mater*), it reached its perfection in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries; above all, in that incomparable giant hymn on the judgment, the tremendous power of which resides, first indeed in its earnest matter, but next in its inimitable mastery of the musical treatment of vowels. I mean, of course, the *Dies iræ* of the Franciscan monk Thomas a Celano (about 1250), which excites new wonder on every reading, and to which no translation in any modern language can do full justice. In Adam of St. Victor, too, of the twelfth century, occur unsurpassable rhymes; e. g., the picture of the Evangelist John (in the poem: *De S. Joanne evangelista*), which Olshausen has chosen for the motto of his commentary on the fourth Gospel, and which Trench declares the most beautiful stanza in the Latin church poetry:

“Volat avis sine meta  
Quo nec vates nec propheta  
Evolavit altius:  
Tam implenda,<sup>2</sup> quam impleta,<sup>3</sup>  
Nunquam vidit tot secreta  
Purus homo purius.”

The metre of the Latin hymns is various, and often hard to be defined. Gavanti<sup>4</sup> supposes six principal kinds of verse:

1. Iambici dimetri (as: “Vexilla regis prodeunt”).
2. Iambici trimetri (ternarii vel senarii, as: “Autra deserti teneris sub annis”).

<sup>1</sup> In his *Hymnus de S. Agatha*, see Daniel, *Theat. hymnol.* tom. i. p. 9, and Fortlage, *Gesänge christl. Vorzeit*, p. 365.

<sup>2</sup> The Apocalypse.

<sup>3</sup> The Gospel history.

<sup>4</sup> *Thesaur. rit. sacr.*, cited in the above-named hymnological work of Königsfeld and A. W. Schlegel, p. xxi., first collection.

3. Trochaici dimetri ("Pange, lingua, gloriosi corporis mysterium," a eucharistic hymn of Thomas Aquinas).

4. Sapphici, cum Adonico in fine (as: "Ut queant laxis resonare fibris").

5. Trochaici (as: "Ave maris stella").

6. Asclepiadici, cum Glyconico in fine (as: "Sacris solemnibus juncta sint gaudia").

In the period before us the Iambic dimeter prevails; in Hilary and Ambrose without exception.

### § 116. *The Latin Poets and Hymns.*

The poets of this period, Prudentius excepted, are all clergymen, and the best are eminent theologians whose lives and labors have their more appropriate place in other parts of this work.

HILARY, bishop of Poitiers (hence Pictaviensis, † 368), the Athanasius of the West in the Arian controversies, is, according to the testimony of Jerome,<sup>1</sup> the first hymn writer of the Latin church. During his exile in Phrygia and in Constantinople, he became acquainted with the Arian hymns and was incited by them to compose, after his return, orthodox hymns for the use of the Western church. He thus laid the foundation of Latin hymnology. He composed the beautiful morning hymn: "Lucis largitor splendide;" the Pentecostal hymn: "Beata nobis gaudia;" and, perhaps, the Latin reproduction of the famous *Gloria in excelsis*. The authorship of many of the hymns ascribed to him is doubtful, especially those in which the regular rhyme already appears, as in the Epiphany hymn:

"Jesus refulsit omnium  
Pius redemptor gentium."

We give as a specimen a part of the first three stanzas of his

<sup>1</sup> Catal. vir. illustr. c. 100. Comp. also Isidore of Seville, De offic. eccles. l. i. and Overthür, in the preface to his edition of the works of Hilary.



morning hymn, which has been often translated into German and English: <sup>1</sup>

"Lucis largitor splendide,  
Cuius sereno lumine  
Post lapsa noctis tempora  
Dies refusus panditur:

"Tu verus mundi Lucifer,  
Non is, qui parvi sideris,  
Venturæ lucis nuntius  
Augusto fulget lumine:

"Sed toto sole clarior,  
Lux ipse totus et dies,  
Interna nostri pectoris  
Illuminans præcordia."

"O glorious Father of the light,  
From whose effulgence, calm and bright,  
Soon as the hours of night are fled,  
The brilliance of the dawn is shed:

"Thou art the dark world's truer ray:  
No radiance of that lesser day,  
That heralds, in the morn begun,  
The advent of our darker sun:

"But, brighter than its noontide gleam,  
Thyself full daylight's fullest beam,  
The inmost mansions of our breast  
Thou by Thy grace illumineest."

AMBROSE, the illustrious bishop of Milan, though somewhat younger († 397), is still considered, on account of the number and value of his hymns, the proper father of Latin church song, and became the model for all successors. Such was his fame as a hymnographer that the words *Ambrosianus* and *hymnus* were at one time nearly synonymous. His genuine hymns are distinguished for strong faith, elevated but rude simplicity, noble dignity, deep unction, and a genuine churchly and liturgical spirit. The rhythm is still irregular, and of rhyme only imperfect beginnings appear; and in this respect they certainly fall far below the softer and richer melodies of the middle age, which are more engaging to ear and heart. They are an altar of unpolished and unhewn stone. They set forth the great objects of faith with apparent coldness that stands aloof from them in distant adoration; but the passion is there, though latent, and the fire of an austere enthusiasm burns beneath the surface. Many of them have, in addition to their poetical value, a historical and theological value as testimonies of orthodoxy against Arianism.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The Latin has 8 stanzas. See Daniel, *Thesaur. hymnol.* tom. I. p. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Trench sees in the Ambrosian hymns, not without reason (l. c. p. 86), "a rock-like firmness, the old Roman stoicism transmuted and glorified into that nobler Christian courage, which encountered and at length overcame the world." Fortlage judged the same way before in a brilliant description of Latin hymns, l. c. p. 4 f.: comp. Daniel, *Cod. lit.* iii. p. 282 sq.

Of the thirty to a hundred so-called Ambrosian hymns,<sup>1</sup> however, only twelve, in the view of the Benedictine editors of his works, are genuine; the rest being more or less successful imitations by unknown authors. Neale reduces the number of the genuine Ambrosian hymns to ten, and excludes all which rhyme regularly, and those which are not metrical. Among the genuine are the morning hymn: "*Æterne rerum conditor;*"<sup>2</sup> the evening hymn: "*Deus creator omnium;*"<sup>3</sup> and the Advent or Christmas hymn: "*Veni, Redemptor gentium.*" This last is justly considered his best. It has been frequently reproduced in modern languages,<sup>4</sup> and we add this specimen of its matter and form with an English version:

"Veni, Redemptor gentium,  
Ostende partum Virginis;  
Miretur omne sæculum:  
Talis partus decet Deum.

"Come, Thou Redeemer of the earth,  
Come, testify Thy Virgin Birth:  
All lands admire—all times applaud:  
Such is the birth that fits a God.

"Non ex virili semine,  
Sed mystico spiramine,  
Verbum Dei factum est caro,  
Fructusque ventris floruit.

"Begotten of no human will,  
But of the Spirit, mystic still,  
The Word of God, in flesh arrayed,  
The promised fruit to man displayed.

"Alvus tumescit Virginis,  
Clastrum pudoris permanet,  
Vexilla virtutum micant,  
Versatur in templo Deus.

"The Virgin womb that burden gained  
With Virgin honor all unstained:  
The banners there of virtues glow:  
God in His Temple dwells below.

<sup>1</sup> Daniel, ii. pp. 12–115.

<sup>2</sup> The genuineness of this hymn is put beyond question by two quotations of the contemporary and friend of Ambrose, Augustine, *Confess.* ix. 12, and *Retract.* i. 12, and by the affinity of it with a passage in the *Hexameron* of Ambrose, xxiv. 88, where the same thoughts are expressed in prose. Not so certain is the genuineness of the other Ambrosian morning hymns: "*Æterna cœli gloria,*" and "*Splendor paternæ gloriæ.*"

<sup>3</sup> The other evening hymn: "*O lux beata Trinitas,*" ascribed to him (in the Roman Breviary and in Daniel's *Thesaur.* i. 36), is scarcely from Ambrose: it has already the rhyme in the form as we find it in the hymns of Fortunatus.

<sup>4</sup> Especially in the beautiful German by John Frank: "*Komm, Heidenhellsand, Lösegeld,*" which is a free recomposition rather than a translation. For another English version (abridged), see "*The Voice of Christian Life in Song,*" p. 97:

"Redeemer of the nations, come;  
Pure offspring of the Virgin's womb,  
Seed of the woman, promised long,  
Let ages swell Thine advent song."

"Procedit e thalamo suo,  
Pudoris aulâ regiâ,  
Geminæ Gigas substantiæ,  
Alacris ut currat viam.<sup>1</sup>

"Egressus ejus a Patre,  
Regressus ejus ad Patrem,  
Excursus usque ad inferos,  
Recursus ad sedem Dei.

"Æqualis æterno Patri,  
Carnis tropæo<sup>2</sup> cingere,  
Infirma nostri corporis  
Virtute firmans perpeti.

"Præsepe jam fulget tuum,  
Lumenque nox spirat novum,  
Quod nulla nox interpolet,  
Fideque jugi luceat."

"Proceeding from His chamber free,  
The royal hall of chastity,  
Giant of twofold substance, straight  
His destined way He runs elate.

"From God the Father He proceeds,  
To God the Father back He speeds:  
Proceeds—as far as very hell:  
Speeds back—to light ineffable.

"O equal to the Father, Thou!  
Gird on Thy fleshly trophy (mantle) now  
The weakness of our mortal state  
With deathless might invigorate.

"Thy cradle here shall glitter bright,  
And darkness breathe a newer light,  
Where endless faith shall shine serene,  
And twilight never intervene."

By far the most celebrated hymn of the Milanese bishop, which alone would have made his name immortal, is the Ambrosian doxology, *Te Deum laudamus*. This, with the *Gloria in excelsis*, is, as already remarked, by far the most valuable legacy of the old Catholic church poetry; and will be prayed and sung with devotion in all parts of Christendom to the end of time. According to an old legend, Ambrose composed it on the baptism of St. Augustine, and conjointly with him; the two, without preconcert, as if from divine inspiration, alternately singing the words of it before the congregation. But his biographer Paulinus says nothing of this, and, according to later investigations, this sublime Christian psalm is, like the *Gloria in excelsis*, but a free reproduction and expansion of an older Greek hymn in prose, of which some constituents appear in the Apostolic Constitutions, and elsewhere.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> This is an allusion to the "giants" of Gen. vi. 4, who, in the early church, were supposed to have been of a double substance, being the offspring of the "sons of God," or angels, and the "daughters of men," and who furnished a forced resemblance to the twofold nature of Christ, according to the mystical interpretation of Ps. xix. 5. Comp. Ambr. De incarnat. Domini, c. 5.

<sup>2</sup> On the difference of reading, *tropæo*, *trophæo*, and *stropheo* or *strophio* (*strophium* = "cingulum aureum cum gemmis"), see Daniel, tom. i. p. 14.

<sup>3</sup> For instance, the beginning of a morning hymn, in the Codex Alexandrinus of the Bible, has been literally incorporated into the *Te Deum*:

Ambrose introduced also an improved mode of singing in Milan, making wise use of the Greek symphonies and antiphonies, and popular melodies. This *Cantus Ambrosianus*, or figural song, soon supplanted the former mode of reciting the Psalms and prayers in monotone with musical accent and little modulation of the voice, and spread into most of the Western churches as a congregational song. It afterwards degenerated, and was improved and simplified by Gregory the Great, and gave place to the so-called *Cantus Romanus*, or *choralis*.

AUGUSTINE, the greatest theologian among the church fathers († 430), whose soul was filled with the genuine essence of poetry, is said to have composed the resurrection hymn: "Cum rex gloriæ Christus;" the hymn on the glory of paradise: "Ad perennis vitæ fontem mens sitivit arida;" and others. But he probably only furnished in the lofty poetical intuitions and thoughts which are scattered through his prose works, especially in the Confessions, the *materia carminis* for later poets, like Peter Damiani, bishop of Ostia, in the eleventh century, who put into flowing verse Augustine's meditations on the blessedness of heaven.<sup>1</sup>

Καθ' ἐκάστην ἡμέραν εὐλογῶ σε,  
Καὶ αἰνέσω τὸ ὄνομά σου εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα  
Καὶ εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα τοῦ αἰῶνος.

Καταξίωσον, κύριε, καὶ τὴν ἡμέραν ταύτην  
Ἀναμαρτήτους φυλαχθῆναι ἡμᾶς.

Comp. on this whole hymn the critical investigation of Daniel, l. c. vol. ii. p. 289 sqq.

Per singulos dies benedicimus te,  
Et laudamus nomen tuum in sæculum  
Et in sæculum sæculi.  
Dignare, Domine, die isto  
Sine peccato nos custodire.

<sup>1</sup> This beautiful hymn, "De gloria et gaudiis Paradisi," is found in the appendix to the 8th volume of the Benedictine edition of the Opera Augustini, in Daniel's Thesaurus, tom. i. p. 116, and in Trench's Collection, p. 315 sqq., and elsewhere. Like all the new Jerusalem hymns it derives its inspiration from St. John's description in the concluding chapters of the Apocalypse. There is an excellent German translation of it by Königsfeld and an English translation by Wackerbarth, given in part by Neale in his *Mediæval Hymns and Sequences*, p. 59. The whole hymn is very fine, but not quite equal to the long poem of Bernard of Cluny (in the twelfth century), on the contempt of the world, which breathes the same sweet home-sickness to heaven, and which Neale (p. 58) justly regards as the most lovely, in the same way that the *Dies iræ* is the most sublime, and the *Stabat Mater* the most pathetic, of mediæval hymns. The original has not less than 8,000 lines; Neale gives an admirable translation of the concluding part, commencing "Hic breve

DAMASUS, bishop of Rome († 384), a friend of Jerome, likewise composed some few sacred songs, and is considered the author of the rhyme.<sup>1</sup>

CÆLIUS SEDULIUS, a native of Scotland or Ireland, presbyter in the first half of the fifth century, composed the hymns: "Herodes, hostis impie," and "A solis ortus cardine," and some larger poems.

MARCUS AURELIUS CLEMENS PRUDENTIUS († 405), an advocate and imperial governor in Spain under Theodosius, devoted the last years of his life to religious contemplation and the writing of sacred poetry, and stands at the head of the more fiery and impassioned Spanish school. Bently calls him the Horace and Virgil of Christians, Neale, "the prince of primitive Christian poets." Prudentius is undoubtedly the most gifted and fruitful of the old Catholic poets. He was master of the classic measure, but admirably understood how to clothe the new ideas and feelings of Christianity in a new dress. His poems have been repeatedly edited.<sup>2</sup> They are in some cases long didactic or epic productions in hexameters, of much historical value;<sup>3</sup> in others, collections of epic poems, as the

*vivitur*," and a part of this translation: "To thee, O dear, dear Country" (p. 55), is well worthy of a place in our hymn books. From these and similar mediæval sources (as the "*Urbs beata Jerusalem*," &c.) is derived in part the famous English hymn: "O mother dear, Jerusalem!" (in 81 stanzas), which is often ascribed to David Dickson, a Scotch clergyman of the seventeenth century, and which has in turn become the mother of many English hymns on the new Jerusalem. (Comp. on it the monographs of H. Bonar, Edinb. 1852, and of W. C. Prime: "*O Mother dear, Jerusalem*," New York, 1865.)—To Augustine is also ascribed the hymn: "*O gens beata cœlitum*," a picture of the blessedness of the inhabitants of heaven, and: "*Quid, tyranne! quid miraris?*" an antidote for the tyranny of sin.

<sup>1</sup> Jerome (*De viris ill.* c. 108) says of him: "*Elegans in versibus componendis ingenium habet, multaque et brevia metro edidit.*" Neale omits Damasus altogether. Daniel, *Theo.* i. pp. 8 and 9, gives only two of his hymns, a *Hymnus de S. Andrea*, and a *Hymnus de S. Agatha*, the latter with regular rhymes, commencing:

"Martyris ecce dies Agathæ  
Virginis emicat eximie,

Christus eam sibi qua sociat  
Et diadema duplex decorat."

<sup>2</sup> E. g., by Th. Obbarius, Tub. 1845; and by Alb. Dressel, Lips. 1860.

<sup>3</sup> The *Apotheosis*, a celebration of the divinity of Christ against its opponents (in 1,068 lines); the *Harmatigenia*, on the origin of sin (in 966 lines); the *Psychomachia*, on the warfare of good and evil in the soul (915 lines); *Contra Symmachum*, on idolatry, &c.

*Cathemerinon*,<sup>1</sup> and *Peristephanon*.<sup>2</sup> Extracts from the latter have passed into public use. The best known hymns of Prudentius are: "Salvete, flores martyrum," in memory of the massacred innocents at Bethlehem,<sup>3</sup> and his grand burial hymn: "Jam moesta quiesce querela," which brings before us the ancient worship in deserts and in catacombs, and of which Herder says that no one can read it without feeling his heart moved by its touching tones.<sup>4</sup>

We must mention two more poets who form the transition from the ancient Catholic to mediæval church poetry.

VENANTIUS FORTUNATUS, an Italian by birth, a friend of queen Radegunde (who lived apart from her husband, and presided over a cloister), the fashionable poet of France, and at the time of his death (about 600), bishop of Poitiers, wrote eleven books of poems on various subjects, an epic on the life of St. Martin of Tours, and a theological work in vindication of the Augustinian doctrine of divine grace. He was the first to use the rhyme with a certain degree of mastery and regularity, although with considerable license still, so that many of his rhymes are mere alliterations of consonants or repetitions of vowels.<sup>5</sup> He first mastered the trochaic tetrameter, a meas-

<sup>1</sup> Καθημερινόν = Diurnorum (the *Christian Day*, as we might call it, after the analogy of Keble's *Christian Year*), hymns for the several hours of the day.

<sup>2</sup> Περὶ στεφάνων, concerning the crowns, fourteen hymns on as many martyrs who have inherited the crown of eternal life. Many of them are intolerably tedious and in bad taste.

<sup>3</sup> *De SS. Innocentibus*, from the twelfth book of the *Cathemerinon*, in Prudentii Carmina, ed. Obbarius, Tub. 1845, p. 48, in Daniel, tom. i. p. 124, and in Trench, p. 121.

<sup>4</sup> It is the close of the tenth *Cathemerinon*, and was the usual burial hymn of the ancient church. It has been translated into German by Weiss, Knapp, Puchta, Königsfeld, Bämler, Schaff (in his *Deutsches Gesangbuch*, No. 468), and others. Trench, p. 281, calls it "the crowning glory of the poetry of Prudentius." He never attained this grandeur on any other occasion. Neale, in his treatise on the *Eccles. Latin Poetry*, l. c. p. 22, gives translations of several parts of it, in the metre of the original, but without rhyme, commencing thus:

"Each sorrowful mourner be silent!  
Fond mothers, give over your weeping!  
None grieve for those pledges as perished:  
This dying is life's reparation."

Another translation by E. Caswall: "Cease, ye tearful mourners."

<sup>5</sup> Such as prodeunt—mysterium, viscera—vestigia, fulgida—purpura, etc.

are which, with various modifications, subsequently became the glory of the mediæval hymn. Prudentius had already used it once or twice, but Fortunatus first grouped it into stanzas. His best known compositions are the passion hymns: "Vexilla regis prodeunt," and "Pange, lingua, gloriosi proelium (lauream) certaminis," which, though not without some alterations, have passed into the Roman Breviary.<sup>1</sup> The "Vexilla regis" is sung on Good Friday during the procession in which the consecrated host is carried to the altar. Both are used on the festivals of the Invention and the Elevation of the Cross.<sup>2</sup> The favorite Catholic hymn to Mary: "Ave maris stella,"<sup>3</sup> is sometimes ascribed to him, but is of a much later date.

We give as specimens his two famous passion hymns, which were composed about 580.

*Vexilla Regis Prodeunt.*<sup>4</sup>

"Vexilla regis prodeunt,  
Fulget crucis mysterium,  
Quo carne carnis conditor  
Suspensus est patibulo."<sup>5</sup>

"The Royal Banners forward go:  
The Cross shines forth with mystic glow.  
Where He in flesh, our flesh who made,  
Our sentence bore, our ransom paid.

"Quo vulneratus insuper  
Mucrone diro lanceæ,  
Ut nos lavaret crimine  
Manavit unda et sanguine.

"Where deep for us the spear was dyed,  
Life's torrent rushing from His side:  
To wash us in the precious flood,  
Where mingled water flowed, and blood.

"Impleta sunt quæ concinit  
David fideli carmine  
Dicens: in nationibus  
Regnavit a ligno Deus.

"Fulfilled is all that David told  
In true prophetic song of old:  
Amidst the nations, God, saith he,  
Hath reigned and triumphed from the  
Tree.

<sup>1</sup> Daniel, Theas. i. p. 160 sqq., gives both forms: the original, and that of the Brev. Romanum.

<sup>2</sup> Trench has omitted both in his Collection, and admitted instead of them some less valuable poems of Fortunatus, De cruce Christi, and De passione Domini, in hexameters.

<sup>3</sup> Daniel, i. p. 204.

<sup>4</sup> The original text in Daniel, i. p. 160. The translation by Neale, from the Hymnal of the English Ecclesiological Society, and Neale's Mediæval Hymns, p. 6. It omits the second stanza, as does the Roman Breviary.

<sup>5</sup> The Roman Breviary substitutes for the last two lines:

"Qua vita mortem pertulit  
Et morte vitam protulit."

"Arbor decora et fulgida  
Ornata regis purpura,  
Electa digno stipite  
Tam sancta membra tangere.

"O Tree of Beauty! Tree of Light!  
O Tree with royal purple dight!  
Elect upon whose faithful breast  
Those holy limbs should find their rest!

"Beata cuius brachiis  
Pretium pendit sæculi,  
Statera facta sæculi  
Prædamque tulit tartaria."<sup>1</sup>

"On whose dear arms, so widely flung,  
The weight of this world's ransom hung  
The price of human kind to pay,  
And spoil the spoiler of his prey!"

*Pange, Lingua, Gloriosi Prælium Certaminis.*<sup>2</sup>

"Sing, my tongue, the glorious battle,<sup>3</sup> with completed victory rife,  
And above the Cross's trophy, tell the triumph of the strife;  
How the world's Redeemer conquer'd, by surrendering of His life.

"God, his Maker, sorely grieving that the first-born Adam fell,  
When he ate the noxious apple, whose reward was death and hell,  
Noted then this wood, the ruin of the ancient wood to quell.

"For the work of our Salvation needs would have his order so,  
And the multiform deceiver's art by art would overthrow;  
And from thence would bring the medicine whence the venom of the foe.

"Wherefore, when the sacred fulness of the appointed time was come,  
This world's Maker left His Father, left His bright and heavenly home,  
And proceeded, God Incarnate, of the Virgin's holy womb.

"Weeps the Infant in the manger that in Bethlehem's stable stands;  
And His limbs the Virgin Mother doth compose in swaddling bands,  
Meetly thus in linen folding of her God the feet and hands.

"Thirty years among us dwelling, His appointed time fulfilled,  
Born for this, He meets His Passion, for that this He freely willed:  
On the Cross the Lamb is lifted, where His life-blood shall be spilled.

"He endured the shame and spitting, vinegar, and nails, and reed;  
As His blessed side is opened, water thence and blood proceed:  
Earth, and sky, and stars, and ocean, by that flood are cleansed indeed.

<sup>1</sup> Brev. Rom. : "Tulitque prædam tartari."

<sup>2</sup> See the original, which is not rhymed, in Daniel, i. p. 168 sqq., and in somewhat different form in the Roman Breviary. The masterly English translation in the metre of the original is Neale's, l. c. p. 287 sq., and in his *Mediæval Hymns and Sequences*, p. 1. Another excellent English version by E. Caswell commences:

"Sing, my tongue, the Saviour's glory; tell His triumph far and wide."

<sup>3</sup> *Prælium certaminis*, which the Roman Breviary spoiled by substituting *laus* *ream*. The poet describes the glory of the struggle itself rather than the glory of its termination, as is plain from the conclusion of the verse.



"Faithful Cross! above all other, one and only noble Tree!  
None in foliage, none in blossom, none in fruit thy peers may be;  
Sweetest wood and sweetest iron, sweetest weight is hung on thee!"<sup>1</sup>

"Bend thy boughs, O Tree of Glory! thy relaxing sinews bend;  
For awhile the ancient rigor, that thy birth bestowed, suspend;  
And the King of heavenly beauty on thy bosom gently tend.

"Thou alone wast counted worthy this world's ransom to uphold;  
For a shipwreck'd race preparing harbor, like the Ark of old:  
With the sacred blood anointed from the wounded Lamb that roll'd.

"Laud and honor to the Father, laud and honor to the Son,  
Laud and honor to the Spirit, ever Three and ever One:  
Consubstantial, co-eternal, while unending ages run.

Far less important as a poet is GREGORY I. (590-604), the last of the fathers and the first of the mediæval popes. Many hymns of doubtful origin have been ascribed to him and received into the Breviary. The best is his Sunday hymn: "Primo dierum omnium."<sup>2</sup>

The hymns are the fairest flowers of the poetry of the ancient church. But besides them many epic and didactic poems arose, especially in Gaul and Spain, which counteracted the invading flood of barbarism, and contributed to preserve a connection with the treasures of the classic culture. JUVENUS, a Spanish presbyter under Constantine, composed the first Christian epic, a Gospel history in four books (3,226 lines), on the model of Virgil, but as to poetic merit never rising above mediocrity. Far superior to him is PRUDENTIUS († 405); he wrote, besides the hymns already mentioned, several didactic, epic, and polemic poems. ST. PONTIUS PAULINUS, bishop of Nola († 431), who was led by the poet Ausonius to the mysteries of the Muses,<sup>3</sup> and a friend of Augustine and Jerome, is the

<sup>1</sup> The Latin of this stanza is a jewel:

"Crux fidelis, inter omnes arbor una nobilis!  
Nulla talem silva profert fronde, flore, germine:  
Dulce lignum, dulci clavo, dulce pondus sustinens."

(In the Roman Breviary: "Dulce ferrum, dulce lignum, dulce pondus sustinent.")

<sup>2</sup> See Daniel's Cod. i. p. 175 sqq. For an excellent English version of the hymn above alluded to, see Neale, l. c. p. 233.

<sup>3</sup> Ausonius yielded the palm to his pupil when he wrote of the verses of Paulinus:

"Cedimus ingenio, quantum præcedimus ævo:  
Assurget Musæ nostra camæna tua."

author of some thirty poems full of devout spirit; the best are those on the festival of S. Felix, his patron. PROSPER AQUITANUS († 460), layman, and friend of Augustine, wrote a didactic poem against the Pelagians, and several epigrams; AVITUS, bishop of Vienne († 523), an epic on the creation and the origin of evil; ARATOR, a court official under Justinian, afterwards a sub-deacon of the Roman church (about 544), a paraphrase, in heroic verse, of the Acts of the Apostles, in two books of about 1,800 lines. CLAUDIANUS MAMERTUS,<sup>1</sup> BENEDICTUS PAULINUS, ELPIDIUS, ORONTIUS, and DRACONTIUS are unimportant.

<sup>1</sup> Not to be confounded with Claudius Claudianus, of Alexandria, the most gifted Latin poet at the end of the fourth and beginning of the fifth century. The Christian Idyls, Epistles, and Epigrams ascribed to him, were probably the work of Claudianus Mamertus, of Vienne (comp. H. Thompson's *Manual of Rom. Lit.* p. 204, and J. J. Brunet's *Manual du libraire*, tom. iii. p. 1351 of the 5th ed. Par. 1862). For Claudius Claudianus was a heathen, according to the express testimony of Paulus Orosius and of Augustine (*De civit. Dei*, v. p. 26: "Poeta Claudianus, quamvis a Christi nomine alienus," &c.), and in one of his own epigrams, *In Jacobum, magistrum equitum*, shows his contempt of the Christian religion.

## CHAPTER IX.

### THEOLOGICAL CONTROVERSIES, AND DEVELOPMENT OF THE ECUMENICAL ORTHODOXY.

#### § 117. *General Observations. Doctrinal Importance of the Period. Influence of the Ancient Philosophy.*

THE Nicene and Chalcedonian age is the period of the formation and ecclesiastical settlement of the ecumenical orthodoxy; that is, the doctrines of the holy trinity and of the incarnation and the divine-human person of Christ, in which the Greek, Latin, and evangelical churches to this day in their symbolical books agree, in opposition to the heresies of Arianism and Apollinarianism, Nestorianism and Eutychianism. Besides these trinitarian and christological doctrines, anthropology also, and soteriology, particularly the doctrines of sin and grace, in opposition to Pelagianism and Semi-Pelagianism, were developed and brought to a relative settlement; only, however, in the Latin church, for the Greek took very little part in the Pelagian controversy.

The fundamental nature of these doctrines, the greatness of the church fathers who were occupied with them, and the importance of the result, give this period the first place after the apostolic in the history of theology. In no period, excepting the Reformation of the sixteenth century, have there been so momentous and earnest controversies in doctrine, and so lively an interest in them. The church was now in possession of the ancient philosophy and learning of the Roman empire,

and applied them to the unfolding and vindication of the Christian truth. In the lead of these controversies stood church teachers of imposing talents and energetic piety, not mere book men, but venerable theological characters, men all of a piece, as great in acting and suffering as in thinking. To them theology was a sacred business of heart and life,<sup>1</sup> and upon them we may pass the judgment of Eusebius respecting Origen: "Their life was as their word, and their word was as their life."

The theological controversies absorbed the intellectual activity of that time, and shook the foundations of the church and the empire. With the purest zeal for truth were mingled much of the *odium* and *rabies theologorum*, and the whole host of theological passions; which are the deepest and most bitter of passions, because religion is concerned with eternal interests.

The leading personages in these controversies were of course bishops and priests. By their side fought the monks, as a standing army, with fanatical zeal for the victory of orthodoxy, or not seldom in behalf even of heresy. Emperors and civil officers also mixed in the business of theology, but for the most part to the prejudice of its free, internal development; for they imparted to all theological questions a political character, and entangled them with the cabals of court and the secular interests of the day. In Constantinople, during the Arian controversy, all classes, even mechanics, bankers, frippers, market women, and runaway slaves took lively part in the questions of Homousion and sub-ordination, of the begotten and the unbegotten.<sup>2</sup>

The speculative mind of the Eastern church was combined

<sup>1</sup> Or, as Gregory Nazianzen says of the true theologian, contemplation was a prelude to action, and action a prelude to contemplation, *ὑπαὐξίς* (a religious walk) *ὑπερβαρὺς δειπνίς* (actio gradus est ad contemplationem), Oratio xx. 12 (ed. Bened. Paris. tom. i. p. 388).

<sup>2</sup> So Gregory of Nyssa (not Nazianzen, as J. H. Kurtz, wrongly quoting from Neander, has it in his large K. Gesch. i. ii. p. 99) relates from his own observation: Orat. de Deitate Filii et Spiritus S. (Opera ii. p. 898, ed. Paris. of 1615). He compares his contemporaries in this respect with the Athenians, who are always wishing to hear some new thing.

with a deep religious earnestness and a certain mysticism, and at the same time with the Grecian curiosity and disputatiousness, which afterwards rather injured than promoted her inward life. Gregory Nazianzen, who lived in Constantinople in the midst of the Arian wars, describes the division and hostility which this polemic spirit introduced between parents and children, husbands and wives, old and young, masters and slaves, priests and people. "It has gone so far that the whole market resounds with the discourses of heretics, every banquet is corrupted by this babbling even to nausea, every merry-making is transformed into a mourning, and every funeral solemnity is almost alleviated by this brawling as a still greater evil; even the chambers of women, the nurseries of simplicity, are disturbed thereby, and the flowers of modesty are crushed by this precocious practice of dispute."<sup>1</sup> Chrysostom, like Melancthon at a later day, had much to suffer from the theological pugnacity of his times.

The history of the Nicene age shows clearly that the church of God carries the heavenly treasure in earthly vessels. The Reformation of the sixteenth century was likewise in fact an incessant war, in which impure personal and political motives of every kind had play, and even the best men often violated the apostolic injunction to speak the truth in love. But we must not forget that the passionate and intolerant dogmatism of that time was based upon deep moral earnestness and strong faith, and so far forth stands vastly above the tolerance of indifferentism, which lightly plays with the truth or not rarely strikes out in most vehement intolerance against the faith. (Remember the first French revolution.) The overruling of divine Providence in the midst of these wild conflicts is unmistakable, and the victory of the truth appears the greater for the violence of error. God uses all sorts of men for his instruments, and brings evil passions as well as good into his service. The Spirit of truth guided the church through the rush and the din of contending parties, and always triumphed over error in the end.

<sup>1</sup> Orat. xxvii. 2 (Opera, tom. i. p. 488). Comp. Orat. xxxii. (tom. i. p. 581 Carmen de vita sua, vers. 1210 sqq. (tom. ii. p. 787 sq.).

The ecumenical councils were the open battle-fields, upon which the victory of orthodoxy was decided. The doctrinal decrees of these councils contain the results of the most profound discussions respecting the Trinity and the person of Christ; and the Church to this day has not gone essentially beyond those decisions.

The Greek church wrought out Theology and Christology, while the Latin church devoted itself to Anthropology and Soteriology. The one, true to the genius of the Greek nationality, was predominantly speculative, dialectical, impulsive, and restless; the other, in keeping with the Roman character, was practical, traditional, uniform, consistent, and steady. The former followed the stimulation of Origen and the Alexandrian school; the latter received its impulse from Tertullian and Cyprian, and reached its theological height in Jerome and Augustine. The speculative inclination of the Greek church appeared even in its sermons, which not rarely treated of the number of worlds, the idea of matter, the different classes of higher spirits, the relation of the three hypostases in the God-head, and similar abstruse questions. The Latin church also, however, had a deep spirit of investigation (as we see in Tertullian and Augustine), took an active part in the trinitarian and christological controversies of the East, and decided the victory of orthodoxy by the weight of its authority. The Greek church almost exhausted its productive force in those great struggles, proved indifferent to the deeper conception of sin and grace, as developed by Augustine, and after the council of Chalcedon degenerated theologically into scholastic formalism and idle refinements.

The fourth and fifth centuries are the flourishing, classical period of the patristic theology and of the Christian Græco-Roman civilization. In the second half of the fifth century the West Roman empire, with these literary treasures, went down amidst the storms of the great migration, to take a new and higher sweep in the Germano-Roman form under Charlemagne. In the Eastern empire scholarship was better maintained, and a certain connection with antiquity was preserved through the medium of the Greek language. But as the Greek

church had no middle age, so it has had no Protestant Reformation.

The prevailing philosophy of the fathers was the Platonic, so far as it was compatible with the Christian spirit. The speculative theologians of the East, especially those of the school of Origen, and in the West, Ambrose and pre-eminently Augustine, were moulded by the Platonic idealism.

A remarkable combination of Platonism with Christianity, to the injury of the latter, appears in the system of mystic symbolism in the pseudo-Dionysian books, which cannot have been composed before the fifth century, though they were falsely ascribed to the Areopagite of the book of Acts (xvii. 34), and proceeded from the later school of New-Platonism, as represented by Proclus of Athens († 485). The fundamental idea of these Dionysian writings (on the celestial hierarchy; on the ecclesiastical hierarchy; on the divine names; on mystic theology; together with ten letters) is a double hierarchy, one in heaven and one on earth, each consisting of three triads, which mediates between man and the ineffable, transcendent, hyper-essential divinity. This idea is a remnant of the aristocratic spirit of ancient heathenism, and forms the connecting link with the hierarchical organization of the church, and explains the great importance and popularity which the pseudo-Dionysian system acquired, especially in the mystic theology of the middle ages.<sup>1</sup>

In Synesius of Cyrene also the Platonism outweighs the Christianity. He was an enthusiastic pupil of Hypatia, the famous female philosopher at Alexandria, and in 410 was called to the bishopric of Ptolemais, the capital of Pentapolis. Before taking orders he frankly declared that he could not forsake his philosophical opinions, although he would in public accommodate himself to the popular belief. Theophilus of Alexandria, the same who was one of the chief persecutors of the admirers

<sup>1</sup> Comp. ENGELHARDT: Die angeblichen Schriften des Areop. Dionysius übersetzt und erklärt, 1828, 2 Parts; RITTER: Geschichte der christl. Philosophie, Bd. ii. p. 515; BAUR: Geschichte der Lehre von der Dreieinigkeit, ii. 207 ff., and his Geschichte der Kirche, from the fourth to the sixth century, p. 59 ff.; JOH. HUBER: Die Philosophie der Kirchenväter, pp. 327-341; and an article of K. Voigt, in Herzog's Encycl. iii. p. 412 ff.

of Origen, the father of Christian Platonism, accepted this doubtful theory of accommodation. Synesius was made bishop, but often regretted that he exchanged his favorite studies for the responsible and onerous duties of the bishopric. In his hymns he fuses the Christian doctrine of the Trinity with the Platonic idea of God, and the Saviour with the divine Helios, whose daily setting and rising was to him a type of Christ's descent into Hades and ascension to heaven. The desire of the soul to be freed from the chains of matter, takes the place of the sorrow for sin and the longing after salvation.'

As soon as theology assumed a scholastic character and began to deal more in dialectic forms than in living ideas, the philosophy of Aristotle rose to favor and influence, and from John Philoponus, A. D. 550, throughout the middle age to the Protestant Reformation, kept the lead in the Catholic church. It was the philosophy of scholasticism, while mysticism sympathized rather with the Platonic system.

The influence of the two great philosophies upon theology was beneficial or injurious, according as the principle of Christianity was the governing or the governed factor. Both systems are theistic (at bottom monotheistic), and favorable to the spirit of earnest and profound speculation. Platonism, with its ideal, poetic views, stimulates, fertilizes, inspires and elevates the reason and imagination, but also easily leads into the errors of gnosticism and the twilight of mysticism. Aristotelianism, with its sober realism and sharp logical distinctions, is a good discipline for the understanding, a school of dialectic practice, and a help to logical, systematic, methodical treatment, but may also induce a barren formalism. The truth is, Christianity itself is the highest philosophy, as faith is the highest reason; and she makes successive philosophies, as well as the arts and the sciences, tributary to herself, on the Pauline principle that "all things are hers."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Comp. CLAUEN: *De Synesio philosopho*, Hafn. 1831; HUBER: *Philos. der Kirchenväter*, pp. 315-321; BAUR: *Church Hist. from the fourth to the sixth century*, p. 52 ff., and W. MÖLLER in Herzog's *Encycl.* vol. xv. p. 335 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Concerning the influence of philosophy on the church fathers, comp. RITTER's *Geschichte der christl. Philosophie*; ACKERMANN, and BAUR: *Ueber das Christliche*



§ 118. *Sources of Theology. Scripture and Tradition.*

Comp. the literature in vol. i. § 75 and § 76. Also: EUSEBIUS: *Hist. Ecol.* iii. 8; vi. 25 (on the form of the canon in the Nicene age); LEANDER VAN ESS (R. C.): *Chrysostomus oder Stimmen der Kirchenväter für's Bibellesen.* Darmstadt, 1824.

VINCENTIUS LIRINENSIS († about 450): *Commonitorium pro cathol. fidei antiquitate et universitate adv. profanas omnium hæ. novitates*; frequent editions, e. g. by Baluzius (1668 and 1684), Gallandi, Coster, Klüpfel (with prolegom. and notes), Viennæ, 1809, and by Herzog, Vratisl. 1839; also in connection with the *Opera Hilarii Arelatensis*, Rom. 1731, and the *Opera Salviani*, Par. 1669, and in Migne's *Patrologia*, vol. 50, p. 626 sqq.

The church view respecting the sources of Christian theology and the rule of faith and practice remains as it was in the previous period, except that it is further developed in particulars.<sup>1</sup> The divine Scriptures of the Old and New Testaments, as opposed to human writings; and the oral tradition or living faith of the catholic church from the apostles down, as opposed to the varying opinions of heretical sects—together form the one infallible source and rule of faith. Both are vehicles of the same substance: the saving revelation of God in Christ; with this difference in form and office, that the church tradition determines the canon, furnishes the key to the true interpretation of the Scriptures, and guards them against heretical abuse. The relation of the two in the mind of the ancient church may be illustrated by the relation between the supreme law of a country (such as the Roman law, the Code Napoleon, the common law of England; the Constitution of the United States) and the courts which expound the law, and decide between conflicting interpretations. Athanasius, for example, "the father of orthodoxy," always bases his conclusions upon Scripture, and appeals to the authority of

im Platonismus; HUBER'S *Philosophie der Kirchenväter* (Munich, 1859); NEANDER'S *Dogmengeschichte*, i. p. 59 sqq.; ARCHER BUTLER'S *Lectures on Ancient Philosophy*; SHEDD'S *History of Christian Doctrine*, vol. i. ch. 1 (*Philosophical Influences in the Ancient Church*); ALB. STÖCKL: *Geschichte der Philosophie des Mittelalters*, Mainz, 1865, 2 Bde.

<sup>1</sup> Comp. vol. i. § 75 and 76.

tradition only in proof that he rightly understands and expounds the sacred books. The catholic faith, says he, is that which the Lord *gave*, the apostles *preached*, and the fathers have *preserved*; upon this the church is founded, and he who departs from this faith can no longer be called a Christian.<sup>1</sup>

The sum of doctrinal tradition was contained in what is called the APOSTLES' CREED, which at first bore various forms, but after the beginning of the fourth century assumed the Roman form now commonly used. In the Greek church its place was supplied after the year 325 by the NIOENE CREED, which more fully expresses the doctrine of the deity of Christ. Neither of these symbols goes beyond the substance of the teaching of the apostles; neither contains any doctrine specifically Greek or Roman.

The old catholic doctrine of Scripture and tradition, therefore, nearly as it approaches the Roman, must not be entirely confounded with it. It makes the two identical as to substance, while the Roman church rests upon tradition for many doctrines and usages, like the doctrines of the seven sacraments, of the mass, of purgatory, of the papacy, and of the immaculate conception, which have no foundation in Scripture. Against this the evangelical church protests, and asserts the perfection and sufficiency of the Holy Scriptures as the record of divine revelation; while it does not deny the value of tradition, or of the consciousness of the church, in the interpretation of Scripture, and regulates public teaching by symbolical books. In the Protestant view tradition is not coördinate with Scripture, but subordinate to it, and its value depends on its agreement with the Scriptures. The Scriptures alone are the *norma fidei*; the church doctrine is only the *norma doctrinæ*. Protestantism gives much more play to private judgment and

<sup>1</sup> Ad Serap. Ep. l. cap. 28 (Opera, tom. i. pars ii. p. 676): "Ἴδμεν . . . τὴν τῆς ἀρχῆς παράδοσιν καὶ διδασκαλίαν καὶ πίστιν τῆς καθολικῆς ἐκκλησίας ἣν ὁ μὲν κύριος ἔδωκεν, οἱ δὲ ἀπόστολοι ἐκήρυξαν, καὶ οἱ πατέρες ἐφύλαξαν. Voigt (Die Lehre des Athanasius, &c. p. 18 ff.) makes Athanasius even the representative of the formal principle of Protestantism, the supreme authority, sufficiency, and self-interpreting character of the Scriptures; while Möhler endeavors to place him on the Roman side. Both are biased, and violate history by their preconceptions.

free investigation in the interpretation of the Scriptures, than the Roman or even the Nicene church.<sup>1</sup>

I. In respect to the HOLY SCRIPTURES :

At the end of the fourth century views still differed in regard to the *extent of the canon*, or the *number* of the books which should be acknowledged as divine and authoritative.

The Jewish canon, or the Hebrew Bible, was universally received, while the Apocrypha added to the Greek version of the Septuagint were only in a general way accounted as books suitable for church reading,<sup>2</sup> and thus as a middle class between canonical and strictly apocryphal (pseudonymous) writings. And justly; for those books, while they have great historical value, and fill the gap between the Old Testament and the New, all originated after the cessation of prophecy, and they cannot therefore be regarded as inspired, nor are they ever cited by Christ or the apostles.<sup>3</sup>

Of the New Testament, in the time of Eusebius, the four Gospels, the Acts, thirteen Epistles of Paul, the first Epistle of John, and the first Epistle of Peter, were universally recognized as canonical,<sup>4</sup> while the Epistle to the Hebrews, the second and third Epistles of John, the second Epistle of Peter, the Epistle of James, and the Epistle of Jude were by many disputed as to their apostolic origin, and the book of Revelation was doubted by reason of its contents.<sup>5</sup> This indecision in reference to the Old Testament Apocrypha prevailed still

<sup>1</sup> On this point compare the relevant sections in the works on Symbolic and Polemic Theology, and Schaff's *Principle of Protestantism*, 1845.

<sup>2</sup> Βιβλία ἀναγιγνωσκόμενα (libri ecclesiastici), in distinction from *κανονικά* or *καταριθμούμενα* on the one hand, and *ἀπόκρυφα* on the other. So Athanasius.

<sup>3</sup> Heb. xi. 35 ff. probably alludes, indeed, to 2 Mac. vi. ff.; but between a historical allusion and a corroborative citation with the solemn ἡ γραφή λέγει there is a wide difference.

<sup>4</sup> Hence called *ὁμολογούμενα*.

<sup>5</sup> Hence called *ἀντιλεγόμενα*, which, however, is by no means to be confounded with *ἀπόκρυφα* and *νόθα*. There are no apocrypha, properly speaking, in the New Testament. The apocryphal Gospels, Acts, and Apocalypses in every case differ greatly from the apostolic, and were never received into the canon. The idea of apocrypha in the Old Testament is innocent, and is applied to later Jewish writings, the origin of which is not accurately known, but the contents of which are useful and edifying.

longer in the Eastern church; but by the middle of the fourth century the seven disputed books of the New Testament were universally acknowledged, and they are included in the lists of the canonical books given by Athanasius, Gregory Nazianzen, Amphilochius of Iconium, Cyril of Jerusalem, and Euphrasianus; except that in some cases the Apocalypse is omitted.

In the Western church the canon of both Testaments was closed at the end of the fourth century through the authority of Jerome (who wavered, however, between critical doubts and the principle of tradition), and more especially of Augustine, who firmly followed the Alexandrian canon of the Septuagint, and the preponderant tradition in reference to the disputed Catholic Epistles and the Revelation; though he himself, in some places, inclines to consider the Old Testament Apocrypha as *deutero*-canonical books, bearing a subordinate authority. The council of Hippo in 393, and the third (according to another reckoning, the sixth) council of Carthage in 397, under the influence of Augustine, who attended both, fixed the catholic canon of the Holy Scriptures, including the Apocrypha of the Old Testament, and prohibited the reading of other books in the churches, excepting the Acts of the Martyrs on their memorial days. These two African councils, with Augustine,<sup>1</sup> give forty-four books as the canonical books of the Old Testament, in the following order: Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, Deuteronomy, Joshua, Judges, Ruth, four books of Kings (the two of Samuel and the two of Kings), two books of Paralipomena (Chronicles), Job, the Psalms, five books of Solomon, the twelve minor Prophets, Isaiah, Jeremiah, Daniel, Ezekiel, Tobias, Judith, Esther, two books of Ezra, two books of Maccabees. The New Testament canon is the same as ours.

This decision of the transmarine church, however, was subject to ratification; and the concurrence of the Roman see it received when Innocent I. and Gelasius I. (A. D. 414) repeated the same index of biblical books.

This canon remained undisturbed till the sixteenth century,

<sup>1</sup> De doctr. Christ. l. ii. c. 8.

and was sanctioned by the council of Trent at its fourth session.

Protestantism retained the New Testament canon of the Roman church,<sup>1</sup> but, in accordance with the orthodox Jewish and the primitive Christian view, excluded the Apocrypha from the Old.<sup>2</sup>

The most eminent of the church fathers speak in the strongest terms of the full *inspiration* and the infallible *authority* of the holy Scriptures, and commend the diligent reading of them even to the laity. Especially Chrysostom. The want of general education, however, and the enormous cost of books, left the people for the most part dependent on the mere hearing of the word of God in public worship; and the free private study of the Bible was repressed by the prevailing spirit of the hierarchy. No prohibition, indeed, was yet laid upon the reading of the Bible; but the presumption that it was a book of the priests and monks already existed. It remained for a much later period, by the invention of printing, the free spirit of Protestantism, and the introduction of popular schools, to make the Bible properly a people's book, as it was originally designed to be; and to disseminate it by Bible societies, which now print and circulate more copies of it in one year, than were made in the whole middle age, or even in the fifteen centuries before the Reformation.

The oldest *manuscripts* of the Bible now extant date no further back than the fourth century, are very few, and abound in unessential errors and omissions of every kind; and the

<sup>1</sup> The well-known doubts of Luther respecting some of the *antilegomena*, especially the Epistle of James, the Epistle to the Hebrews, and the Revelation, are mere private opinions, which have latterly been re-asserted by individual Lutheran divines, like Philippi and Kahnis, but have had no influence upon the church doctrine.

<sup>2</sup> The more particular history of the canon belongs to historical and critical Introduction to the Bible. Besides the relevant sections in works of this sort, and in LARDNER's *Credibility of the Gospel History*, and KIRCHHOFFER's *Quellensammlung* (1844), comp. the following special treatises: THIERSCH: *Herstellung des historischen Standpunkts für die Kritik der N. T.lichen Schriften*, 1845; CREDNER: *Zur Geschichte des Kanons*, 1847; OEHLER: *Kanon des A. Ts. in Herzog's Encyclopädie*, vol. vii. pp. 243-270; LANDERER: *Kanon des Neuen Testaments*, *ibid.* pp. 270-303; also an extended article: *Canon of Scripture*, in W. SMITH's *Dictionary of the Bible* (London and Boston, 1860), vol. i. pp. 250-263.

problem of a critical restoration of the original text is not yet satisfactorily solved, nor can it be more than approximately solved in the absence of the original writings of the apostles.

The oldest and most important manuscripts in uncial letters are the Sinaitic (first discovered by Tischendorf in 1859 and published in 1862), the Vatican (in Rome, defective), the Alexandrian (in London); then the much mutilated codex of Ephraim Syrus in Paris, and the incomplete codex of Cambridge. From these and a few other uncial codices the oldest attainable text must be mainly gathered. Secondary sources are quotations in the fathers, the earliest versions, such as the Syriac Peshito and the Latin Vulgate, and the later manuscripts.<sup>1</sup>

The faith which rests not upon the letter, but upon the living spirit of Christianity, is led into no error by the defects of the manuscripts and ancient and modern versions of the Bible, but only excited to new and deeper study.

The spread of the church among all the nations of the Roman empire, and even among the barbarians on its borders, brought with it the necessity of *translating* the Scriptures into various tongues. The most important of these versions, and the one most used, is the Latin *Vulgate*, which was made by the learned Jerome on the basis of the older *Itala*, and which afterwards, notwithstanding its many errors, was placed by the Roman church on a level with the original itself. The knowledge of Hebrew among the fathers was very rare; the Septuagint was considered sufficient, and even the knowledge of Greek diminished steadily in the Latin church after the invasion of the barbarians and the schism with the East, so that the Bible in its original languages became a sealed book, and remained such until the revival of learning in the fifteenth century.

In the *interpretation* of the Scriptures the system of allegorical exposition and imposition was in high repute, and

<sup>1</sup> Full information on this subject may be found in the Introductions to the New Testament, and in the Prolegomena of the critical editions of the New Testament, among which the editions of Lachmann, Tischendorf, Tregelles, and Alford are the most important. Comp. particularly the eighth large edition of Tischendorf, begun in 1865, and diligently employing all existing critical helps.

often degenerated into the most arbitrary conceits, especially in the Alexandrian school, to which most of the great dogmatic theologians of the Nicene age belonged. In opposition to this system the Antiochian school, founded by Lucian († 311), and represented by Diodorus of Tarsus, Theodore of Mopsuestia, and best by John Chrysostom and Theodoret, advocated a soberer grammatical and historical exegesis, and made a sharper distinction between the human and the divine elements in the Scriptures. Theodore thereby incurred the suspicion and subsequently even the condemnation of the Greek church.

Among the Latin fathers a similar difference in the interpretation of Scripture appears between the discerning depth and lively play of Augustine and the grammatical and archaeological scholarship and dogmatical superficiality of Jerome.

II. The Holy Scriptures were universally accepted as the supreme authority and infallible rule of faith. But as the Scriptures themselves were variously interpreted, and were claimed by the heretics for their views, the fathers of our period, like Irenæus and Tertullian before them, had recourse at the same time to TRADITION, as preserved from the apostles through the unbroken succession of the bishops. With them the Scriptures are the supreme law; the combined wisdom and piety of the catholic church, the organic body of the faithful, is the judge which decides the true sense of the law. For to be understood the Bible must be explained, either by private judgment or by the universal faith of Christendom.

Strictly speaking, the Holy Ghost, who is the author, is also the only infallible interpreter of the Scriptures. But it was held that the Holy Ghost is given only to the orthodox church, not to heretical and schismatic sects, and that he expresses himself through assembled orthodox bishops and universal councils in the clearest and most authoritative way. "The heretics," says Hilary, "all cite the Scriptures, but without the sense of the Scriptures; for those who are outside the church can have no understanding of the word of God." They imagine they follow the Scriptures, while in truth they

follow their own conceits, which they put into the Scriptures instead of drawing their thoughts from them.

Even Augustine, who of all the fathers stands nearest to evangelical Protestantism, on this point advocates the catholic principle in the celebrated maxim which he urges against the Manichæans: "I would not believe the gospel, if I were not compelled by the authority of the universal church." But he immediately adds: "God forbid that I should not believe the gospel."<sup>1</sup>

But there are different traditions; not to speak of various interpretations of the catholic tradition. Hence the need of a criterion of true and false tradition. The semi-Pelagian divine, VINCENTIUS, a monk and priest in the South-Gallic cloister of Lirinum († 450),<sup>2</sup> otherwise little known, propounded the maxim which formed an epoch in this matter, and has since remained the standard in the Roman church: We must hold "what has been *everywhere, always, and by all* believed."

<sup>1</sup> "Ego vero evangelio non crederem, nisi me Catholicæ ecclesiæ commoveret autoritas. . . . Sed absit ut ego Evangelio non credam. Illi enim credens, non invenio quomodo possim etiam tibi [Manichæus] credere. Apostolorum enim nomina, quæ ibi leguntur, non inter se continent nomen Manichæi." Contra Epist. Manichæi, quam vocant fundamenti, cap. 6 (ed. Bened. tom. viii. p. 154). His object in this argument is to show that the Manichæans have no right in the Scriptures, that the Catholic church is the legitimate owner and interpreter of the Bible. But it is an abuse to press this argument at once into the service of Rome as is so often done. Between the controversy of the old Catholic church with Manichæism, and the controversy of Romanism with Protestantism, there is an immense difference.

<sup>2</sup> Lirinum or Lirinum (now St. Honorat) is one of the group of small islands in the Mediterranean which formerly belonged to Roman Gaul, afterwards to France. In the fifth century it was a seminary of learned monks and priests for France, as Faustus Regiensis, Hilarius Arelensis, Salvianus, and others.

<sup>3</sup> Commonit. cap. 2 (in MIGNE's *Patrolog.* vol. 50, p. 640): "In ipsa item Catholica Ecclesia magnopere curandum est, ut id teneamus quod *ubique*, quod *semper*, quod *ab omnibus* creditum est." The Commonitorium was composed, as we learn from the preface and from ch. 42, about three years after the ecumenical council of Ephesus, therefore about 434, under the false name of Peregrinus, as a help to the memory of the author that he might have the main points of ecclesiastical tradition constantly at hand against the heretica. Baronius calls it "opus certe aureum," and Bellarmin "parvum mole et virtute maximum." It consisted originally of two books, but the manuscript of the second book was stolen from the author, who then added a brief summary of both books at the close of the first (c. 41-43). Vossius,



Here we have a threefold test of the ecclesiastical orthodoxy: Catholicity of place, of time, and of number; or ubiquity, antiquity, and universal consent; in other words, an article of faith must be traced up to the apostles, and be found in all Christian countries, and among all believers. But this principle can be applied only to a few fundamental articles of revealed religion, not to any of the specifically Romish dogmas, and, to have any reasonable meaning, must be reduced to a mere principle of majority. In regard to the *consensus omnium*, which properly includes both the others, Vincentius himself makes this limitation, by defining the condition as a concurrence of the *majority* of the *clergy*.<sup>1</sup> To the voice of the people neither he nor the whole Roman system, in matters of faith, pays the slightest regard. In many important doctrines, however, there is not even a *consensus patrum*, as in the doctrine of free will, of predestination, of the atonement. A certain freedom of divergent private opinions is the indispensable condition of all progress of thought, and precedes the ecclesiastical settlement of every article of faith. Even Vincentius expressly asserts a steady advance of the church in the knowledge of the truth, though of course in harmony with the previous steps, as a man or a tree remains identical through the various stages of growth.<sup>2</sup>

Vincentius is thoroughly Catholic in the spirit and tendency of his work, and has not the most remote conception of

Cardinal Norisius (*Historia Pelagiana*, l. ii. c. 11), Natalis Alexander, Hefele, and Schmidt give this work a polemic aim against strict Augustinism, for which certainly the Greek church cannot be claimed, so that the three criteria of catholicity are wanting. There is pretty strong evidence in the book itself that Vincentius belonged to the semi-Pelagian school which arose in Marseille and Lirinum. He was probably also the author of the *Vincentianæ objectiones* against Augustine's doctrine of predestination. Comp. on Vincentius, Tillemont's *Mémoires*, tom. xv. pp. 143-147; the art. *Vincentius v. L.* by H. Schmidt in Herzog's *Encykl.* vol. xvii. pp. 211-217; and an essay of C. J. Hefele (R. C.), in his *Beiträge zur Kirchengeschichte, Archäologie und Liturgik*, vol. i. p. 146 ff. (Tüb. 1864).

<sup>1</sup> As Vincentius expresses himself in the succeeding sentence: *Universitas, antiquitas, consensus*. Comp. c. 27.

<sup>2</sup> "*Consensus omnium vel certe pene omnium sacerdotum pariter et magistrorum*," etc. Common. c. 2 (in Migne, p. 640).

<sup>3</sup> Cap 23 (in Migne, vol 50, p. 667 sqq.).

the free Protestant study of the Scriptures. But on the other hand he would have as little toleration for new dogmas. He wished to make tradition not an independent source of knowledge and rule of faith by the side of the Holy Scriptures, but only to have it acknowledged as the true interpreter of Scripture, and as a bar to heretical abuse. The criterion of the antiquity of a doctrine, which he required, involves apostolicity, hence agreement with the spirit and substance of the New Testament. The church, says he, as the solicitous guardian of that which is intrusted to her, changes, diminishes, increases nothing. Her sole effort is to shape, or confirm, or preserve the old. Innovation is the business of heretics, not of orthodox believers. The canon of Scripture is complete in itself, and more than sufficient.<sup>1</sup> But since all heretics appeal to it, the authority of the church must be called in as the rule of interpretation, and in this we must follow universality, antiquity, and consent.<sup>2</sup> It is the custom of the Catholics, says he in the same work, to prove the true faith in two ways: first by the authority of the holy Scriptures, then by the tradition of the Catholic church; not because the canon alone is not of itself sufficient for all things, but on account of the many conflicting interpretations and perversions of the Scriptures.<sup>3</sup>

In the same spirit says pope Leo I.: "It is not permitted to depart even in one word from the doctrine of the Evangelists and the Apostles, nor to think otherwise concerning the Holy Scriptures, than the blessed apostles and our fathers learned and taught."<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Cap. 2: "Quum sit *perfectus* Scripturarum Canon et sibi *ad omnia satis superque sufficiat*," etc. Cap. 29.

<sup>2</sup> "Hoc facere curabant . . . ut divinum canonem secundum universalis ecclesie traditiones et juxta catholici dogmatis regulas interpretantur, in qua item catholica et apostolica ecclesia sequantur necesse est universitatem, antiquitatem, consensionem." Commonit. cap. 27 (in Migne, vol. 50, p. 674). Comp. c. 2-4.

Cap. 29 (in Migne, vol. 50, p. 677): "Non quia canon solus non sibi ad universam sufficiat, sed quia verba divina, pro suo plerique arbitratu interpretantes, varias opiniones erroresque concipiant," etc.

<sup>4</sup> Epist. 82 ad Episc. Marcianum Aug. (Opera, tom. I. p. 1044, ed. Ballerini, and in Migne, liv. p. 918): "Quum ab evangelica apostolicaque doctrina ne uno quidem verbo liceat dissidere, aut aliter de Scripturis divinis sapere quam beati apostoli et patres nostri didicerunt atque docuerunt," etc.

The catholic principle of tradition became more and more confirmed, as the authority of the fathers and councils increased and the learned study of the Holy Scriptures declined; and tradition gradually set itself in practice on a level with Scripture, and even above it. It fettered free investigation, and promoted a rigid, stationary and intolerant orthodoxy, which condemned men like Origen and Tertullian as heretics. But on the other hand the principle of tradition unquestionably exerted a wholesome conservative power, and saved the substance of the ancient church doctrine from the obscuring and confusing influence of the pagan barbarism which deluged Christendom.

### I.—TRINITARIAN CONTROVERSIES.

#### GENERAL LITERATURE OF THE ARIAN CONTROVERSIES.

I. SOURCES: On the *orthodox* side most of the fathers of the fourth century; especially the dogmatic and polemic works of ATHANASIUS (*Orationes c. Arianos*; *De decretis Nicænæ Synodi*; *De sententia Dionysii*; *Apologia c. Arianos*; *Apologia de fuga sua*; *Historia Arianorum*, etc., all in tom. i. pars i. ii. of the Bened. ed.), BASIL (*Adv. Eunomium*), GREGORY NAZIANZEN (*Orationes theologicæ*), GREGORY OF NYSSA (*Contra Eunom.*), EPIPHANIUS (*Ancoratus*), HILARY (*De Trinitate*), AMBROSE (*De Fide*), AUGUSTINE (*De Trinitate*, and *Contra Maximinum Arianum*), RUFINUS, and the Greek church historians.

On the *heretical* side: The fragments of the writings of ARIUS (Θάλεια, and two Epistolæ to Eusebius of Nicomedia and Alexander of Alexandria), preserved in quotations in Athanasius, Epiphanius, Socrates, and Theodoret; comp. *Fabricius*: *Biblioth. gr.* viii. p. 809. Fragments ARIANORUM about 388 in *Angelo Mai*: *Scriptorum veterum nova collect.* Rom. 1828, vol. iii. The fragments of the Church History of the Arian PHILOSTORGIUS, A. D. 350-425.

II. WORKS: TILLEMONT (R. C.): *Mémoires*, etc. tom. vi. pp. 239-825, ed. Paris, 1699, and ed. Ven. (the external history chiefly). DIONYSIUS PETAVIUS (Jesuit, † 1652): *De theologicis dogmatibus*, tom. ii., which treats of the divine Trinity in eight books; and in part tom. iv. and v. which treat in sixteen books of the Incarnation of the Word. This is still, though incomplete, the most learned work of the Roman church in the History of Doctrines; it first appeared at Paris, 1644-'50, in five volumes fol., then at Amsterdam, 1700 (in 6 vols.), and at Venice, 1757 (ed. Zacharia), and has been last edited by Passaglia and Schrader in Rome, 1857. J. M. TRAVASA (R. C.): *Storia critica della vita*

di Ario. Ven. 1746. S. J. MAIMBURE: *Histoire de l'Arianisme* Par. 1675. JOHN PEARSON (bishop of Chester, † 1686): *An Exposition of the Creed* (in the second article), 1689, 12th ed. Lond. 1741, and very often edited since by Dobson, Burton, Nichols, Chevalier, etc. GEORGE BULL (Anglican bishop of St. David's, † 1710): *Defensio fidei Nicenæ*. Ox. 1685 (Opp. Lat. fol. ed. Grabe, Lond. 1708. Complete Works, ed. Burton, Oxf. 1827, and again in 1846, vol. 5th in two parts, and in English in the Anglo-Catholic Library, 1851). This classical work endeavors, with great learning, to exhibit the Nicene faith in all the *ante-Nicene* fathers, and so belongs more properly to the previous period. DAN. WATERLAND (archdeacon of Middlesex, † 1730, next to Bull the ablest Anglican defender of the Nicene faith): *Vindication of Christ's Divinity*, 1719 ff., in Waterland's Works, ed. Mildert, vols. i. ii. iii. Oxf. 1848. (Several acute and learned essays and sermons in defence of the orthodox doctrine of the Trinity against the high Arianism of Dr. Sam. Clarke and Dr. Whitby.) CHR. W. F. WALCH: *Vollständige Historie der Ketzereien*, etc. 11 vols. Leipzig, 1762 ff. Vols. ii. and iii. (exceedingly thorough and exceedingly dry). GIBBON: *History of the Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, ch. xxi. A. MÖHLER (R. C.): *Athanasius der Grosse u. die Kirche seiner Zeit*. Mainz (1827); 2d ed. 1844 (Bk ii.-vi.). J. H. NEWMAN (at the time the learned head of Puseyism, afterwards R. C.): *The Arians of the Fourth Century*. Lond. 1838; 2d ed. (unchanged), 1854. F. CHR. BAUR: *Die christl. Lehre von der Dreieinigkeit u. Menschwerdung in ihrer geschichtl. Entwicklung*. 3 vols. Tübingen, 1841-'43. Vol. i. pp. 306-835 (to the council of Chalcedon). Comp. also BAUR's *Kirchengesch. vom 4ten bis 6ten Jahrh.* Tüb. 1859, pp. 79-123. JA. A. DÖRNER: *Entwicklungsgesch. der Lehre von der Person Christi*. 1836, 2d ed. in 2 vols. Stuttg. 1845-'53. Vol. i. pp. 773-1080 (English transl. by W. L. Alexander and D. W. Simon, in Clark's Foreign Theol. Library, Edinb. 1861). R. WILBERFORCE (at the time archdeacon of East Riding, afterwards R. C.): *The Doctrine of the Incarnation of our Lord Jesus Christ*. 4th ed. Lond. 1852. Bishop KAYE: *Athanasius and the council of Nicæa*. Lond. 1853. O. JOA. HEFELE (R. C.): *Conciliengeschichte*. Freib. 1855 ff. Vol. i. p. 219 ff. ALBERT PRINCE DE BROGLIE (R. C.): *L'église et l'empire romain, au IV. siècle*. Paris, 1856-'66, 6 vols. Vol. i. p. 331 sqq.; vol. ii. 1 sqq. W. W. HARVEY: *History and Theology of the Three Creeds*. Lond. 1856, 2 vols. H. VOIET: *Die Lehre des Athanasius von Alexandrien*. Bremen, 1861. A. P. STANLEY: *Lectures on the History of the Eastern Church*. 2d ed. 1862 (reprinted in New York). Sects. ii.-vii. (more brilliant than solid). Comp. also the relevant sections in the general Church Histories of FLEURY, SCHRÖCKH (vols. v. and vi.) NEANDER, GIESLER, and in the Doctrine Histories of MÜNSCHER-CÖLLN, BAUMGARTEN-CRUSIUS, HAGENBACH, BAUR, BROCK, SHEDD.

§ 119. *The Arian Controversy down to the Council of Nicæa.*  
318-325.

The Arian controversy relates primarily to the deity of Christ, but in its course it touches also the deity of the Holy Ghost, and embraces therefore the whole mystery of the Holy Trinity and the incarnation of God, which is the very centre of the Christian revelation. The dogma of the Trinity came up not by itself in abstract form, but in inseparable connection with the doctrine of the deity of Christ and the Holy Ghost. If this latter doctrine is true, the Trinity follows by logical necessity, the biblical monotheism being presumed; in other words: If God is one, and if Christ and the Holy Ghost are distinct from the Father and yet participate in the divine substance, God must be triune. Though there are in the Holy Scriptures themselves few texts which directly prove the Trinity, and the name Trinity is wholly wanting in them, this doctrine is taught with all the greater force in a living form from Genesis to Revelation by the main facts of the revelation of God as Creator, Redeemer, and Sanctifier, besides being indirectly involved in the deity of Christ and the Holy Ghost.

The church always believed in this Trinity of revelation, and confessed its faith by baptism into the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. This carried with it from the first the conviction, that this revelation of God must be grounded in a distinction immanent in the divine essence. But to bring this faith into clear and fixed knowledge, and to form the baptismal confession into doctrine, was the hard and earnest intellectual work of three centuries. In the Nicene age minds crashed against each other, and fought the decisive battles for and against the doctrines of the true deity of Christ, with which the divinity of Christianity stands or falls.

The controversies on this fundamental question agitated the Roman empire and the church of East and West for more than half a century, and gave occasion to the first two ecumenical councils of Nicæa and Constantinople. At last the orthodox doctrine triumphed, and in 381 was brought into the form

in which it is to this day substantially held in all orthodox churches.

The external history of the Arian controversy, of which we first sketch the main features, falls into three stages:

1. From the outbreak of the controversy to the temporary victory of orthodoxy at the council of Nicæa; A. D. 318–325.

2. The Arian and semi-Arian reaction, and its prevalence to the death of Constantius; A. D. 325–361.

3. The final victory, and the completion of the Nicene creed; to the council of Constantinople, A. D. 381.

Arianism proceeded from the bosom of the Catholic church, was condemned as heresy at the council of Nicæa, but afterwards under various forms attained even ascendancy for a time in the church, until at the second ecumenical council it was cast out forever. From that time it lost its importance as a politico-theological power, but continued as an uncatholic sect more than two hundred years among the Germanic nations, which were converted to Christianity under the Arian domination.

The roots of the Arian controversy are to be found partly in the contradictory elements of the christology of the great Origen, which reflect the crude condition of the Christian mind in the third century; partly in the antagonism between the Alexandrian and the Antiochian theology. Origen, on the one hand, attributed to Christ eternity and other divine attributes which logically lead to the orthodox doctrine of the identity of substance; so that he was vindicated even by Athanasius, the two Cappadocian Gregories, and Basil. But, on the other hand, in his zeal for the personal distinctions in the Godhead, he taught with equal clearness a separateness of essence between the Father and the Son,<sup>1</sup> and the subordination of the Son, as a second or secondary God beneath the Father,<sup>2</sup> and thus furnished a starting point for the Arian

<sup>1</sup> Ἐτερότης τῆς οὐσίας, or τοῦ ὁνομαζομένου. De orat. c. 15.

<sup>2</sup> Hence he termed the Logos δεύτερος Θεός, or Θεός (without the article, comp. John i. 1), in distinction from the Father, who is absolute God, ὁ Θεός, or αὐτόθεος *Deus per se*. He calls the Father also the root (ρίζα) and fountain (πηγή) of the whole Godhead. Comp. vol. i. § 78. Redepenning: Origenes, ii. 304 sq., and Thomasius: Origenes, p. 118 sq.

heresy. The eternal generation of the Son from the will of the Father was, with Origen, the communication of a divine but secondary substance, and this idea, in the hands of the less devout and profound Arius, who with his more rigid logic could admit no intermediate being between God and the creature, deteriorated to the notion of the primal creature.

But in general Arianism was much more akin to the spirit of the Antiochian school than to that of the Alexandrian. Arius himself traced his doctrine to Lucian of Antioch, who advocated the heretical views of Paul of Samosata on the Trinity, and was for a time excommunicated, but afterwards rose to great consideration, and died a martyr under Maximinus.

ALEXANDER, bishop of Alexandria, made earnest of the Origenistic doctrine of the eternal generation of the Son (which was afterwards taught by Athanasius and the Nicene creed, but in a deeper sense, as denoting the generation of a person of the *same* substance from the *substance* of the Father, and not of a person of *different* substance from the *will* of the Father), and deduced from it the homo-ousia or consubstantiality of the Son with the Father.

ARIUS,<sup>1</sup> a presbyter of the same city after 313, who is represented as a tall, thin, learned, adroit, austere, and fascinating man, but proud, artful, restless, and disputatious, pressed and overstated the Origenistic view of the subordination, accused Alexander of Sabellianism, and taught that Christ, while he was indeed the creator of the world, was himself a creature of God, therefore not truly divine.<sup>2</sup>

The contest between these two views broke out about the year 318 or 320. Arius and his followers, for their denial of the true deity of Christ, were deposed and excommunicated by a council of a hundred Egyptian and Libyan bishops at Alexandria in 321. In spite of this he continued to hold religious assemblies of his numerous adherents, and when driven from

<sup>1</sup> Ἀρείος.

<sup>2</sup> This, however, is manifestly contrary to Origen's view, which made Christ an intermediate being between the uncreated Father and the creature. Contra Celsum iii 84.

Alexandria, agitated his doctrine in Palestine and Nicomedia, and diffused it in an entertaining work, half poetry, half prose: *The Banquet* (Θάλεια), of which a few fragments are preserved in Athanasius. Several bishops, especially Eusebius of Nicomedia and Eusebius of Cæsarea, who either shared his view or at least considered it innocent, defended him. Alexander issued a number of circular letters to all the bishops against the apostates and Exukontians.<sup>1</sup> Bishop rose against bishop, and province against province. The controversy soon involved, through the importance of the subject and the zeal of the parties, the entire church, and transformed the whole Christian East into a theological battle-field.

Constantine, the first emperor who mingled in the religious affairs of Christendom, and who did this from a political, monarchical interest for the unity of the empire and of religion, was at first inclined to consider the contest a futile logomachy, and endeavored to reconcile the parties in diplomatic style by letters and by the personal mission of the aged bishop Hosius of Spain; but without effect. Questions of theological and religious principle are not to be adjusted, like political measures, by compromise, but must be fought through to their last results, and the truth must either conquer or (for the time) succumb. Then, in pursuance, as he thought, of a "divine inspiration," and probably also with the advice of bishops who were in friendship with him,<sup>2</sup> he summoned the first universal council, to represent the whole church of the empire, and to give a final decision upon the relation of Christ to God, and upon some minor questions of discipline, the time of Easter, and the Meletian schism in Egypt.

<sup>1</sup> Οὐ δὲ οὐκ ὄντων. So he named the Arians, for their assertion that the Son of God was made οὐκ ὄντων, out of nothing.

<sup>2</sup> At least Rufinus says, H. E. i. 1: "Ex sacerdotum sententia." Probably Hosius and Eusebius of Cæsarea had most influence with the emperor in this matter, as in others. But of any coöperation of the pope in the summoning of the council of Nicea the earliest documents know nothing.



§ 120. *The Council of Nicæa, 325.*

## SOURCES.

- (1) The twenty CANONES, the doctrinal SYMBOL, and a DECREE of the COUNCIL OF NICÆA, and several Letters of bishop Alexander of Alexandria and the emperor Constantine (all collected in Greek and Latin in *Mansi*: Collect. sacrorum Conciliorum, tom. ii. fol. 685-704). Official minutes of the transactions themselves were not at that time made; only the *decrees as adopted* were set down in writing and subscribed by all (comp. Euseb. Vita Const. iii. 14). All later accounts of voluminous acts of the council are sheer fabrications (comp. Hefele, i. p. 249 sqq.)
- (2) Accounts of eye-witnesses, especially EUSEBIUS, Vita Const. iii. 4-24 (superficial, rather Arianizing, and a panegyric of the emperor Constantine). The *Church History* of Eusebius, which should have closed with the council of Nice, comes down only to the year 324. ATHANASIUS: De decretis Synodi Nic.; Orationes iv contra Arianos; Epist. ad Afros, and other historical and anti-Arian tracts in tom. i. and ii. of his Opera, ed. Bened. and the more important of them also in the first vol. of Thilo's Bibliotheca Patrum Græc. dogmat. Lips. 1858. (Engl. transl. in the Oxford Library of the Fathers.)
- (3) The later accounts of EPIPHANIUS: Hæc. 69; SOCRATES: H. E. i. 8 sqq.; SOZOMEN: H. E. i. 17 sqq.; THEODORET: H. E. i. 1-18; RUFINUS: H. E. i. 1-6 (or lib. x., if his transl. of Eusebius be counted in). GELASIUS OYZICENUS (about 476): Commentarius actorum Concilii Nicæni (Greek and Latin in *Mansi*, tom. ii. fol. 759 sqq.; it professes to be founded on an old MS., but is filled with imaginary speeches). Comp. also the four Coptic fragments in PIERA: Spicilegium Solesmense, Par. 1852, vol. i. p. 509 sqq., and the Syriac fragments in Analecta Nicæna. Fragments relating to the Council of Nicæa. The Syriac text from an ancient MS. by H. COWPER, Lond. 1857.

## LITERATURE.

Of the historians cited at § 119 must be here especially mentioned TILLEMONT (R. C.), WALSH, SCHROÏCKH, GIBBON, HEFELE (i. pp. 249-426), A. DE BROGLIE (vol. ii. ch. iv. pp. 8-70), and STANLEY. Besides them, ITTIE: Historia concilii Nicæni, Lips. 1712. IS. BOYLE: A historical View of the Council of Nice, with a translation of Documents, New York, 1856 (in Crusé's ed. of Euseb.'s Church History). Comp. also §§ 65 and 66 above, where this in connection with the other ecumenical councils has already been spoken of.

Nicæa, the very name of which speaks of victory, was the second city of Bithynia, only twenty English miles from the

imperial residence of Nicomedia, and easily accessible by sea and land from all parts of the empire. It is now a miserable Turkish village, Is-nik,<sup>1</sup> where nothing but a rude picture in the solitary church of St. Mary remains to the memory of the event which has given the place a name in the history of the world.

Hither, in the year 325, the twentieth of his reign (therefore the festive vicennalia), the emperor summoned the bishops of the empire by a letter of invitation, putting at their service the public conveyances, and liberally defraying from the public treasury the expenses of their residence in Nicæa and of their return. Each bishop was to bring with him two presbyters and three servants.<sup>2</sup> They travelled partly in the public post carriages, partly on horses, mules, or asses, partly on foot. Many came to bring their private disputes before the emperor, who caused all their papers, without reading them, to be burned, and exhorted the parties to reconciliation and harmony.

The whole number of bishops assembled was at most three hundred and eighteen;<sup>3</sup> that is, about one sixth of all the

<sup>1</sup> *I. e.*, *Eis Nikaiav*, like Stambul, Is-tam-bul, from *eis tēn πόλιν*. Isnik now contains only some fifteen hundred inhabitants.

<sup>2</sup> The imperial letter of convocation is not extant. Eusebius says, *Vita Const.* iii. 6, the emperor by very respectful letters invited the bishops of all countries to come with all speed to Nicæa (*σπεύδειν ἀπανταχόθεν τοὺς ἐπισκόπους γράμμασι τιμητικοῖς προκαλούμενος*). Arius also was invited (*Rufinus*, H. E. i. 1). In an invitation of Constantine to the bishop of Syracuse to attend the council of Arles (as given by Eusebius, H. E. x. c. 5), the emperor directs him to bring with him two priests and three servants, and promises to defray the travelling expenses. The same was no doubt done at the council of Nice. *Comp. Eus. V. Const.* iii. 6 and 9.

<sup>3</sup> According to Athanasius (*Ad Afros*, c. 2, and elsewhere), Socrates (H. E. i. 8), Theodoret (H. E. i. 7), and the usual opinion. The spirit of mystic interpretation gave to the number 318, denoted in Greek by the letters ΤΙΗ, a reference to the cross (Τ), and to the holy name Jesus (ΙΗΣΟΥΣ). It was also (Ambrose, *De fide*, l. 18) put in connection with the three hundred and eighteen servants of Abraham, the father of the faithful (*Gen.* xiv. 14). Eusebius, however, gives only two hundred and fifty bishops (*περὶ ἑκοῦντα καὶ διακοσίων ἀριθμόν*), or a few over; but with an indefinite number of attendant priests, deacons, and acolyths (*Vit. Const.* iii. 8). The later Arabic accounts of more than two thousand bishops probably arose from confounding bishops and clergy in general. Perhaps the number of members increased towards the close, so that Eusebius with his 250, and Athanasius with his

bishops of the empire, who are estimated as at least eighteen hundred (one thousand for the Greek provinces, eight hundred for the Latin), and only half as many as were at the council of Chalcedon. Including the presbyters and deacons and other attendants the number may have amounted to between fifteen hundred and two thousand. Most of the Eastern provinces were strongly represented; the Latin church, on the contrary, had only seven delegates: from Spain Hosius of Cordova, from France Nicasius of Dijon, from North Africa Cæcilian of Carthage, from Pannonia Domnus of Strido, from Italy Eustorgius of Milan and Marcus of Calabria, from Rome the two presbyters Victor or Vitus and Vincentius as delegates of the aged pope Sylvester I. A Persian bishop John, also, and a Gothic bishop, Theophilus, the forerunner and teacher of the Gothic Bible translator Ulfilas, were present.

The formal sessions began, after preliminary disputations between Catholics, Arians, and philosophers, probably about Pentecost, or at farthest after the arrival of the emperor on the 14th of June. They closed on the 25th of July, the anniversary of the accession of Constantine; though the members did not disperse till the 25th of August.<sup>1</sup> They were held, it appears, part of the time in a church or some public building, part of the time in the emperor's house.

The formal opening of the council was made by the stately entrance of the emperor, which Eusebius in his panegyric flattery thus describes: "After all the bishops had entered the central building of the royal palace, on the sides of which very many seats were prepared, each took his place with becoming modesty, and silently awaited the arrival of the emperor. The court officers entered one after another, though

318, may both be right. The extant Latin lists of the subscribers contain the names of no more than two hundred and twenty-four bishops and chorepiscopi, and many of these are mutilated and distorted by the mistakes of transcribers, and varied in the different copies. Comp. the list from an ancient Coptic cloister in Pitra's *Spicilegium Solesmense* (Par. 1852), tom. i. p. 516 sqq.; and Hefele, *Conciliengesch.* i. 284.

<sup>1</sup> On the various dates, comp. Hefele, l. c. i. p. 261 sqq. Broglie, ii. 26, puts the arrival of the emperor earlier, on the 4th or 5th of June.

<sup>2</sup> *Vita Const.* iii. 10. The above translation is somewhat abridged.

only such as professed faith in Christ. The moment the approach of the emperor was announced by a given signal, they all rose from their seats, and the emperor appeared like a heavenly messenger of God,<sup>1</sup> covered with gold and gems, a glorious presence, very tall and slender, full of beauty, strength and majesty. With this external adornment he united the spiritual ornament of the fear of God, modesty, and humility, which could be seen in his downcast eyes, his blushing face, the motion of his body, and his walk. When he reached the golden throne prepared for him, he stopped, and sat not down till the bishops gave him the sign. And after him they all resumed their seats."

How great the contrast between this position of the church and the time of her persecution but scarcely passed! What a revolution of opinion in bishops who had once feared the Roman emperor as the worst enemy of the church, and who now greeted the same emperor in his half barbarous attire as an angel of God from heaven, and gave him, though not yet even baptized, the honorary presidency of the highest assembly of the church!

After a brief salutatory address from the bishop on the right of the emperor, by which we are most probably to understand Eusebius of Cæsarea, the emperor himself delivered with a gentle voice in the official Latin tongue the opening address, which was immediately after translated into Greek, and runs thus:—

"It was my highest wish, my friends, that I might be permitted to enjoy your assembly. I must thank God that, in addition to all other blessings, he has shown me this highest one of all: to see you all gathered here in harmony and with one mind. May no malicious enemy rob us of this happiness, and after the tyranny of the enemy of Christ [Licinius and his army] is conquered by the help of the Redeemer, the wicked demon shall not persecute the divine law with new blasphemies."

<sup>1</sup> Οὐα Θεοῦ τῆς σὺνάντιος ἄγγελος.

<sup>2</sup> According to Eusebius, l. c. iii. c. 12. Sozomen, Socrates, and Rufinus also give the emperor's speech, somewhat differently, but in substantial agreement with this.

mies. Discord in the church I consider more fearful and painful than any other war. As soon as I by the help of God had overcome my enemies, I believed that nothing more was now necessary than to give thanks to God in common joy with those whom I had liberated. But when I heard of your division, I was convinced that this matter should by no means be neglected, and in the desire to assist by my service, I have summoned you without delay. I shall, however, feel my desire fulfilled only when I see the minds of all united in that peaceful harmony which you, as the anointed of God, must preach to others. Delay not therefore, my friends, delay not, servants of God; put away all causes of strife, and loose all knots of discord by the laws of peace. Thus shall you accomplish the work most pleasing to God, and confer upon me, your fellow servant, 'an exceeding great joy.'

After this address he gave way to the (ecclesiastical) presidents of the council,<sup>1</sup> and the business began. The emperor, however, constantly took an active part, and exercised a considerable influence.

Among the fathers of the council, besides a great number of obscure mediocrities, there were several distinguished and venerable men. Eusebius of Cæsarea was most eminent for learning; the young archdeacon Athanasius, who accompanied the bishop Alexander of Alexandria, for zeal, intellect, and eloquence. Some, as confessors, still bore in their body the marks of Christ from the times of persecution: Paphnutius of the Upper Thebaid, Potamon of Heraklea, whose right eye had been put out, and Paul of Neo-Cæsarea, who had been tortured with red hot iron under Licinius, and crippled in both his hands. Others were distinguished for extraordinary ascetic holiness, and even for miraculous works; like Jacob of Nisibis, who had spent years as a hermit in forests and caves, and lived like a wild beast on roots and leaves, and Spyridion (or St. Spiro) of Cyprus, the patron of the Ionian isles, who

<sup>1</sup> Τῶ ὑμετέρῃ συνδράκοντι.

<sup>2</sup> Παρεδίδου τὸν λόγον τοῖς τῆς συνόδου προέδροις, says Euseb. *lil.* 18  
The question of the presidency in the ecumenical councils has already been spoken of in § 65.

even after his ordination remained a simple shepherd. Of the Eastern bishops, Eusebius of Cæsarea, and of the Western, Hosius, or Osius, of Cordova,<sup>1</sup> had the greatest influence with the emperor. These two probably sat by his side, and presided in the deliberations alternately with the bishops of Alexandria and Antioch.

In reference to the theological question the council was divided in the beginning into three parties.<sup>2</sup>

The orthodox party, which held firmly to the deity of Christ, was at first in the minority, but in talent and influence the more weighty. At the head of it stood the bishop (or "pope") Alexander of Alexandria, Eustathius of Antioch, Macarius of Jerusalem, Marcellus of Ancyra, Hosius of Cordova (the court bishop), and above all the Alexandrian archdeacon, Athanasius, who, though small and young, and, according to later practice not admissible to a voice or a seat in a council, evinced more zeal and insight than all, and gave promise already of being the future head of the orthodox party.

The Arians or Eusebians numbered perhaps twenty bishops, under the lead of the influential bishop Eusebius of Nicomedia (afterwards of Constantinople), who was allied with the imperial family, and of the presbyter Arius, who attended at the command of the emperor, and was often called upon to set forth his views.<sup>3</sup> To these also belonged Theognis of Nicæa, Maris of Chalcedon, and Menophantus of Ephesus; embracing in this remarkable way the bishops of the several seats of the orthodox ecumenical councils.

The majority, whose organ was the renowned historian

<sup>1</sup> Athanasius always calls him the Great, ὁ μέγας.

<sup>2</sup> The ancient and the Roman Catholic historians (and A. de Broglie, l. c. vol. ii. p. 21) generally assume only two parties, an orthodox majority and a heretical minority. But the position of Eusebius of Cæsarea, the character of his confession, and the subsequent history of the controversy, prove the existence of a middle, semi-Arian party. Athanasius, too, who usually puts all shades of opponents together, accuses Eusebius of Cæsarea and others repeatedly of insincerity in their subscription of the Nicene creed, and yet these were not proper Arians, but semi-Arians.

<sup>3</sup> Rufinus, i. 5: "Evocabatur frequenter Arius in concilium."

Eusebius of Cæsarea, took middle ground between the right and the left, but bore nearer the right, and finally went over to that side. Many of them had an orthodox instinct, but little discernment; others were disciples of Origen, or preferred simple biblical expression to a scholastic terminology; others had no firm convictions, but only uncertain opinions, and were therefore easily swayed by the arguments of the stronger party or by mere external considerations.

The Arians first proposed a creed, which however was rejected with tumultuous disapproval, and torn to pieces; whereupon all the eighteen signers of it, excepting Theonas and Sécundus, both of Egypt, abandoned the cause of Arius.

Then the church historian Eusebius, in the name of the middle party, proposed an ancient Palestinian Confession, which was very similar to the Nicene, and acknowledged the divine nature of Christ in general biblical terms, but avoided the term in question, *ὁμοούσιος*, *consubstantialis*, of the same essence. The emperor had already seen and approved this confession, and even the Arian minority were ready to accept it.

But this last circumstance itself was very suspicious to the extreme right. They wished a creed which no Arian could honestly subscribe, and especially insisted on inserting the expression *homo-usios*, which the Arians hated and declared to be unscriptural, Sabellian, and materialistic.<sup>1</sup> The emperor saw clearly that the Eusebian formula would not pass; and, as he had at heart, for the sake of peace, the most nearly unanimous decision which was possible, he gave his voice for the disputed word.

Then Hosius of Cordova appeared and announced that a confession was prepared which would now be read by the deacon (afterwards bishop) Hermogenes of Cæsarea, the secre-

<sup>1</sup> Athanasius himself, however, laid little stress on the term, and rarely used it in his theological expositions; he cared more for the thing than the name. The word *ὁμοούσιος*, from *ὁμός* and *οὐσία*, was not an invention of the council of Nice, still less of Constantine, but had previously arisen in theological language, and occurs even in Origen and among the Gnostics, though of course it is no more to be found in the Bible than the word *trinity*.

tary of the synod. It is in substance the well-known Nicene creed, with some additions and omissions of which we are to speak below. It is somewhat abrupt; the council not caring to do more than meet the immediate exigency. The direct concern was only to establish the doctrine of the true deity of the Son. The deity of the Holy Spirit, though inevitably involved, did not then come up as a subject of special discussion, and therefore the synod contented itself on this point with the sentence: "And (we believe) in the Holy Ghost."<sup>1</sup> The council of Constantinople enlarged the last article concerning the Holy Ghost. To the positive part of the Nicene confession is added a condemnation of the Arian heresy, which dropped out of the formula afterwards received.

Almost all the bishops subscribed the creed, Hosius at the head, and next him the two Roman presbyters in the name of their bishop. This is the first instance of such signing of a document in the Christian church. Eusebius of Cæsarea also signed his name after a day's deliberation, and vindicated this act in a letter to his diocese. Eusebius of Nicomedia and Theognis of Nicæa subscribed the creed without the condemnatory formula, and for this they were deposed and for a time banished, but finally consented to all the decrees of the council. The Arian historian Philostorgius, who however deserves little credit,<sup>2</sup> accuses them of insincerity in having substituted, by the advice of the emperor, for *ὁμο-ούσιος* (of the *same* essence) the semi-Arian word *ὅμοι-ούσιος* (of *like* essence). Only two Egyptian bishops, Theonas and Secundus, persistently refused to sign, and were banished with Arius to Illyria. The

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Shedd, therefore, is plainly incorrect in saying, *Hist. of Chr. Doctrine*, vol. I. p. 308: "The problem to be solved by the Nicene council was to exhibit the doctrine of the trinity in its *completeness*; to bring into the creed statement the *total* data of Scripture upon both the side of unity and trinity." This was not done till the council of Constantinople in 381, and strictly not till the still later *Symbolum Athanasianum*.

<sup>2</sup> Even Gibbon (ch. xxi.) places very little dependence on this historian: "The credibility of Philostorgius is lessened, in the eyes of the orthodox, by his Arianism; and in those of rational critics [as if the orthodox were necessarily irrational and uncritical!] by his passion, his prejudice, and his ignorance."



books of Arius were burned and his followers branded as enemies of Christianity.<sup>1</sup>

This is the first example of the *civil* punishment of heresy; and it is the beginning of a long succession of civil persecutions for all departures from the Catholic faith. Before the union of church and state ecclesiastical excommunication was the extreme penalty. Now banishment and afterwards even death were added, because all offences against the church were regarded as at the same time crimes against the state and civil society.

The two other points on which the council of Nicæa decided, the Easter question and the Meletian schism, have been already spoken of in their place. The council issued twenty canons in reference to discipline. The creed and the canons were written in a book, and again signed by the bishops. The council issued a letter to the Egyptian and Libyan bishops as to the decision of the three main points; the emperor also sent several edicts to the churches, in which he ascribed the decrees to divine inspiration, and set them forth as laws of the realm. On the twenty-ninth of July, the twentieth anniversary of his accession, he gave the members of the council a splendid banquet in his palace, which Eusebius (quite too susceptible to worldly splendor) describes as a figure of the reign of Christ on earth; he remunerated the bishops lavishly, and dismissed them with a suitable valedictory, and with letters of commendation to the authorities of all the provinces on their homeward way.

Thus ended the council of Nicæa. It is the first and most venerable of the ecumenical synods, and next to the apostolic council at Jerusalem the most important and the most illustrious of all the councils of Christendom. Athanasius calls it "a true monument and token of victory against every heresy;"

<sup>1</sup> Jerome (Adv. Lucifer, c. 20; Opera, ed. Vallars. tom. ii. p. 192 sqq.) asserts, on the authority of aged witnesses then still living, that Arius and his adherents were pardoned even before the close of the council. Socrates also says (H. E. i. c. 14) that Arius was recalled from banishment before Eusebius and Theognis, but under prohibition of return to Alexandria. This isolated statement, however, cannot well be harmonized with the subsequent recalling, and probably arose from some confusion.

Leo the Great, like Constantine, attributes its decrees to the inspiration of the Holy Ghost, and ascribes even to its canons perpetual validity; the Greek church annually observes (on the Sunday before Pentecost) a special feast in memory of it. There afterwards arose a multitude of apocryphal orations and legends in glorification of it, of which Gelasius of Cyzicus in the fifth century collected a whole volume.<sup>1</sup>

The council of Nicæa is the most important event of the fourth century, and its bloodless intellectual victory over a dangerous error is of far greater consequence to the progress of true civilization, than all the bloody victories of Constantine and his successors. It forms an epoch in the history of doctrine, summing up the results of all previous discussions on the deity of Christ and the incarnation, and at the same time regulating the further development of the Catholic orthodoxy for centuries. The Nicene creed, in the enlarged form which it received after the second ecumenical council, is the only one of all the symbols of doctrine which, with the exception of the subsequently added *filioque*, is acknowledged alike by the Greek, the Latin, and the Evangelical churches, and to this day, after a course of fifteen centuries, is prayed and sung from Sunday to Sunday in all countries of the civilized world. The Apostles' Creed indeed, is much more generally used in the West, and by its greater simplicity and more popular form is much better adapted to catechetical and liturgical purposes; but it has taken no root in the Eastern church; still less the Athanasian Creed, which exceeds the Nicene in logical precision and completeness. Upon the bed of lava grows the sweet fruit of the vine. The wild passions and the weaknesses of men, which encompassed the Nicene council, are extin-

<sup>1</sup> Stanly interweaves several of these miraculous legends with graphical minuteness into the text of his narrative, thus giving it the interest of romance, at the expense of the dignity of historical statement. The simple Spyridion performed, on his journey to the Council, the amazing feat of restoring in the dark his two mules to life by annexing the white head to the chestnut mule, and the chestnut head to its white companion, and overtook the rival bishops who had cut off the heads of the mules with the intention to prevent the rustic bishop from reaching Nicæa and hurting the cause of orthodoxy by his ignorance! According to another version of this silly legend the decapitation of the mules is ascribed to malicious Arians.

guished, but the faith in the eternal deity of Christ has remained, and so long as this faith lives, the council of Nicæa will be named with reverence and with gratitude.

§ 121. *The Arian and Semi-Arian Reaction*, A. D. 325-361.

The victory of the council of Nicæa over the views of the majority of the bishops was a victory only in appearance. It had, to be sure, erected a mighty fortress, in which the defenders of the essential deity of Christ might ever take refuge from the assaults of heresy; and in this view it was of the utmost importance, and secured the final triumph of the truth. But some of the bishops had subscribed the *homoousion* with reluctance, or from regard to the emperor, or at best with the reservation of a broad interpretation; and with a change of circumstances they would readily turn in opposition. The controversy now for the first time fairly broke loose, and Arianism entered the stage of its political development and power. An intermediate period of great excitement ensued, during which council was held against council, creed was set forth against creed, and anathema against anathema was hurled. The pagan Ammianus Marcellinus says of the councils under Constantius: "The highways were covered with galloping bishops;" and even Athanasius rebuked the restless flutter of the clergy, who journeyed the empire over to find the true faith, and provoked the ridicule and contempt of the unbelieving world. In intolerance and violence the Arians exceeded the orthodox, and contested elections of bishops not rarely came to bloody encounters. The interference of imperial politics only poured oil on the flame, and embarrassed the natural course of the theological development.

The personal history of Athanasius was interwoven with the doctrinal controversy; he threw himself wholly into the cause which he advocated. The question whether his deposition was legitimate or not, was almost identical with the question whether the Nicene Creed should prevail.

Eusebius of Nicomedia and Theognis of Nicæa threw al

their influence against the adherents of the *homoousion*. Constantine himself was turned by Eusebius of Cæsarea, who stood between Athanasius and Arius, by his sister Constantia and her father confessor, and by a vague confession of Arius, to think more favorably of Arius, and to recall him from exile. Nevertheless he afterwards, as before, thought himself in accordance with the orthodox view and the Nicene creed. The real gist of the controversy he had never understood. Athanasius, who after the death of Alexander in April, 328,<sup>1</sup> became bishop of Alexandria and head of the Nicene party, refused to reinstate the heretic in his former position, and was condemned and deposed for false accusations by two Arian councils, one at Tyre under the presidency of the historian Eusebius, the other at Constantinople in the year 335 (or 336), and banished by the emperor to Treves in Gaul in 336, as a disturber of the peace of the church.

Soon after this Arius, having been formally acquitted of the charge of heresy by a council at Jerusalem (A. D. 335), was to have been solemnly received back into the fellowship of the church at Constantinople. But on the evening before the intended procession from the imperial palace to the church of the Apostles, he suddenly died (A. D. 336), at the age of over eighty years, of an attack like cholera, while attending to a call of nature. This death was regarded by many as a divine judgment; by others, it was attributed to poisoning by enemies; by others, to the excessive joy of Arius in his triumph.<sup>2</sup>

On the death of Constantine (337), who had shortly before received baptism from the Arian Eusebius of Nicomedia, Athanasius was recalled from his banishment (338) by Constantine II. († 340), and received by the people with great enthusiasm; "more joyously than ever an emperor."<sup>3</sup> Some months after-

<sup>1</sup> According to the Syriac preface to the Syriac Festival Letters of Athanasius, first edited by Cureton in 1848. It was previously supposed that Alexander died two years earlier. Comp. Hefele, i. p. 429.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. Athanasius, *De morte Arij Epist. ad Serapionem* (Opera, tom. i. p. 340). He got his information from his priest Macarius, who was in Constantinople at the time.

<sup>3</sup> So says Gregory Nazianzen. The date of his return, according to the Festival Letters of Athanasius, was the 23d November, 338.

wards (339) he held a council of nearly a hundred bishops in Alexandria for the vindication of the Nicene doctrine. But this was a temporary triumph.

In the East Arianism prevailed. Constantius, second son of Constantine the Great, and ruler in the East, together with his whole court, was attached to it with fanatical intolerance. Eusebius of Nicomedia was made bishop of Constantinople (338), and was the leader of the Arian and the more moderate, but less consistent semi-Arian parties in their common opposition to Athanasius and the orthodox West. Hence the name *Eusebians*.<sup>1</sup> Athanasius was for a second time deposed, and took refuge with the bishop Julius of Rome (339 or 340), who in the autumn of 341 held a council of more than fifty bishops in defence of the exile and for the condemnation of his opponents. The whole Western church was in general more steadfast on the side of the Nicene orthodoxy, and honored in Athanasius a martyr of the true faith. On the contrary a synod at *Antioch*, held under the direction of the Eusebians on the occasion of the dedication of a church in 341,<sup>2</sup> issued twenty-five canons, indeed, which were generally accepted as orthodox and valid, but at the same time confirmed the deposition of Athanasius, and set forth four creeds, which rejected Arianism, yet avoided the orthodox formula, particularly the vexed *homousion*.<sup>3</sup>

Thus the East and the West were in manifest conflict.

To heal this division, the two emperors, Constantius in the East and Constans in the West, summoned a general council at *Sardica* in Illyria, A. D. 343.<sup>4</sup> Here the Nicene party and the Roman influence prevailed.<sup>5</sup> Pope Julius was represented

<sup>1</sup> *Οἱ περὶ Εὐσεβίου*.

<sup>2</sup> Hence called the council in *enactis* (*ἐγκαινίαις*), or in *dedications*.

<sup>3</sup> This apparent contradiction between orthodox canons and semi-Arian confessions has occasioned all kinds of hypotheses in reference to this Antiochian synod. Comp. on them, Hefele, i. p. 486 sqq.

<sup>4</sup> Not A. D. 347, as formerly supposed. Comp. Hefele, i. 515 sqq.

<sup>5</sup> About a hundred and seventy bishops in all (according to Athanasius) were present at Sardica, ninety-four occidentals and seventy-six orientals or Eusebians. Sozomen and Socrates, on the contrary, estimate the number at three hundred. The signatures of the acts of the council are lost, excepting a defective list of fifty-nine names of bishops in Hilary.

by two Italian priests. The Spanish bishop Hosius presided. The Nicene doctrine was here confirmed, and twelve canons were at the same time adopted, some of which are very important in reference to discipline and the authority of the Roman see. But the Arianizing Oriental bishops, dissatisfied with the admission of Athanasius, took no part in the proceedings, held an opposition council in the neighboring city of *Philippopolis*, and confirmed the decrees of the council of Antioch. The opposite councils, therefore, inflamed the discord of the church, instead of allaying it.

Constantius was compelled, indeed, by his brother to restore Athanasius to his office in 346; but after the death of Constantine, A. D. 350, he summoned three successive synods in favor of a moderate Arianism; one at Sirmium in Pannonia (351), one at Arelate or Arles in Gaul (353), and one at Milan in Italy (355); he forced the decrees of these councils on the Western church, deposed and banished bishops, like Liberius of Rome, Hosius of Cordova, Hilary of Poitiers, Lucifer of Calaris, who resisted them, and drove Athanasius from the cathedral of Alexandria during divine service with five thousand armed soldiers, and supplied his place with an uneducated and avaricious Arian, George of Cappadocia (356). In these violent measures the court bishops and Eusebia, the last wife of Constantius and a zealous Arian, had great influence. Even in their exile the faithful adherents of the Nicene faith were subjected to all manner of abuse and vexation. Hence Constantius was vehemently attacked by Athanasius, Hilary, and Lucifer, compared to Pharaoh, Saul, Ahab, Belshazzar, and called an inhuman beast, the forerunner of Antichrist, and even Antichrist himself.

Thus Arianism gained the ascendancy in the whole Roman empire; though not in its original rigorous form, but in the milder form of *homoi-ousianism* or the doctrine of *similarity* of essence, as opposed on the one hand to the Nicene *homo-ousianism* (*sameness* of essence), and on the other hand to the Arian *hetero-ousianism* (*difference* of essence).

Even the papal chair was desecrated by heresy during this Arian interregnum; after the deposition of Liberius, the deacon

Felix II., "by antichristian wickedness," as Athanasius expresses it, was elected his successor.<sup>1</sup> Many Roman historians for this reason regard him as a mere anti-pope. But in the Roman church books this Felix is inserted, not only as a legitimate pope, but even as a saint, because, according to a much later legend, he was executed by Constantius, whom he called a heretic. His memory is celebrated on the twenty-ninth of July. His subsequent fortunes are very differently related. The Roman people desired the recall of Liberius, and he, weary of exile, was prevailed upon to apostatize by subscribing an Arian or at least Arianizing confession, and maintaining church fellowship with the Eusebians.<sup>2</sup> On this condition he was restored to his papal dignity, and received with enthusiasm into Rome (358). He died in 366 in the orthodox faith, which he had denied through weakness, but not from conviction.

Even the almost centennarian bishop Hosius was induced by long imprisonment and the threats of the emperor, though not himself to compose (as Hilary states), yet to subscribe (as Athanasius and Sozomen say), the Arian formula of the second council of Sirmium, A. D. 357, but soon after repented his unfaithfulness, and condemned the Arian heresy shortly before his death.

The Nicene orthodoxy was thus apparently put down. But now the heretical majority, having overcome their common enemy, made ready their own dissolution by divisions among themselves. They separated into two factions. The

<sup>1</sup> Comp. above, § 72, p. 371.

<sup>2</sup> The apostasy of Liberius comes to us upon the clear testimony of the most orthodox fathers, Athanasius, Hilary, Jerome, Sozomen, &c., and of three letters of Liberius himself, which Hilary admitted into his sixth fragment, and accompanied with some remarks. Jerome says in his Chronicle: "Liberius, tædio victus exilii, in hæreticam pravitate subscribens Romam quasi victor intravit." Comp. his Catal. script. eccl. c. 97. He probably subscribed what is called the third Sirmian formula, that is, the collection of Semi-Arian decrees adopted at the third council of Sirmium in 358. Hefele (i. 678), from his Roman point of view, knows no way of saving him but by the hypothesis that he renounced the Nicene word (*ὁμοούσιος*), but not the Nicene faith. But this, in the case of so current a party term as *ὁμοούσιος*, which Liberius himself afterwards declared "the bulwark against all Arian heresy" (Socr. H. E. iv. 12), is entirely untenable.

right wing, the Eusebians or Semi-Arians, who were represented by Basil of Ancyra and Gregory of Laodicea, maintained that the Son was not indeed of the *same* essence (*ὁμοούσιος*), yet of *like* essence (*ὁμοιούσιος*), with the Father. To these belonged many who at heart agreed with the Nicene faith, but either harbored prejudices against Athanasius, or saw in the term *ὁμοούσιος* an approach to Sabellianism; for theological science had not yet duly fixed the distinction of substance (*οὐσία*) and person (*ὑπόστασις*), so that the *homoousia* might easily be confounded with unity of person. The left wing, or the decided Arians, under the lead of Eudoxius of Antioch, his deacon Aëtius,<sup>1</sup> and especially the bishop Eunomius of Cyzicus in Mysia<sup>2</sup> (after whom they were called also *Eunomians*), taught that the Son was of a *different* essence (*ἐτεροούσιος*), and even *unlike* the Father (*ἀνόμοιος*), and created out of nothing (*ἐξ οὐκ ὄντων*). They received also, from their standard terms, the names of *Heterousiasts*, *Anomæans*, and *Ezekontians*.

A number of councils were occupied with this internal dissension of the anti-Nicene party: two at *Sirmium* (the second, A. D. 357; the third, A. D. 358), one at *Antioch* (358), one at *Ancyra* (358), the double council at *Seleucia* and *Rimini* (359), and one at *Constantinople* (360). But the division was not healed. The proposed compromise of entirely avoiding the word *οὐσία*, and substituting *ὁμοιος*, *like*, for *ὁμοιούσιος*, *of like essence*, and *ἀνόμοιος*, *unlike*, satisfied neither party. Constantius vainly endeavored to suppress the quarrel by his imperio-episcopal power. His death in 361 opened the way for the second and permanent victory of the Nicene orthodoxy.

<sup>1</sup> He was hated among the orthodox and Semi-Arians, and called *ἄθεος*. He was an accomplished dialectician, a physician and theological author in Antioch, and died about 370 in Constantinople.

<sup>2</sup> He was a pupil and friend of Aëtius, and popularized his doctrine. He died in 392. Concerning him, comp. Klose, *Geschichte u. Lehre des Eunomius*, Kiel, 1833, and Dorner, l. c. vol. i. p. 853 sqq. Dorner calls him a deacon; but through the mediation of the bishop Eudoxius of Constantinople (formerly of Antioch) he received the bishopric of Cyzicus or Cyzicum as early as 360, before he became the head of the Arian party. Theodoret, H. E. l. ii. c. 29.



§ 122. *The Final Victory of Orthodoxy, and the Council of Constantinople, 381.*

Julian the Apostate tolerated all Christian parties, in the hope that they would destroy one another. With this view he recalled the orthodox bishops from exile. Even Athanasius returned, but was soon banished again as an "enemy of the gods," and recalled by Jovian. Now for a time the strife of the Christians among themselves was silenced in their common warfare against paganism revived. The Arian controversy took its own natural course. The truth regained free play, and the Nicene spirit was permitted to assert its intrinsic power. It gradually achieved the victory; first in the Latin church, which held several orthodox synods in Rome, Milan, and Gaul; then in Egypt and the East, through the wise and energetic administration of Athanasius, and through the eloquence and the writings of the three great Cappadocian bishops Basil, Gregory of Nazianzum, and Gregory of Nyssa.

After the death of Athanasius in 373, Arianism regained dominion for a time in Alexandria, and practised all kinds of violence upon the orthodox.

In Constantinople Gregory Nazianzen labored, from 379, with great success in a small congregation, which alone remained true to the orthodox faith during the Arian rule; and he delivered in a domestic chapel, which he significantly named *Anastasia* (the church of the Resurrection), those renowned discourses on the deity of Christ which won him the title of the *Divine*, and with it many persecutions.

The raging fanaticism of the Arian emperor Valens (364-378) against both Semi-Arians and Athanasians wrought an approach of the former party to the latter. His successor, Gratian, was orthodox, and recalled the banished bishops.

Thus the heretical party was already in reality intellectually and morally broken, when the emperor Theodosius I., or the Great, a Spaniard by birth, and educated in the Nicene faith, ascended the throne, and in his long and powerful reign (379-395) externally completed the triumph of orthodoxy in

the Roman empire. Soon after his accession he issued, in 380, the celebrated edict, in which he required all his subjects to confess the orthodox faith, and threatened the heretics with punishment. After his entrance into Constantinople he raised Gregory Nazianzen to the patriarchal chair in place of Demophilus (who honestly refused to renounce his heretical conviction), and drove the Arians, after their forty years' reign, out of all the churches of the capital.

To give these forcible measures the sanction of law, and to restore unity in the church of the whole empire, Theodosius called the second ecumenical council at Constantinople in May, 381. This council, after the exit of the thirty-six Semi-Arian Macedonians or Pneumatomachi, consisted of only a hundred and fifty bishops. The Latin church was not represented at all.<sup>1</sup> Meletius (who died soon after the opening), Gregory Nazianzen, and after his resignation Nectarius of Constantinople, successively presided. This preferment of the patriarch of Constantinople before the patriarch of Alexandria is explained by the third canon of the council, which assigns to the bishop of new Rome the first rank after the bishop of old Rome. The emperor attended the opening of the sessions, and showed the bishops all honor.

At this council no new symbol was framed, but the Nicene Creed, with some unessential changes and an important addition respecting the deity of the Holy Ghost against Macedonianism or Pneumatomachism, was adopted.<sup>2</sup> In this improved

<sup>1</sup> In the earliest Latin translation of the canons of this council, indeed, three Roman legates, Paschasius, Lucentius, and Bonifacius, are recorded among the signers (in *Mansi*, t. vi. p. 1176), but from an evident confusion of this council with the fourth ecumenical of 451, which these delegates attended. Comp. Hefele, ii. p. 3 and 393. The assertion of Baronius that in reality pope Damasus summoned the council, rests likewise on a mistake of the first council of Constantinople for the second in 382.

<sup>2</sup> This modification and enlargement of the Nicene Creed seems not to have originated with the second ecumenical council, but to have been current in substance about ten years earlier. For Epiphanius, in his *Anceoratus*, which was composed in 374, gives two similar creeds, which were then already in use in the East; the shorter one literally agrees with that of Constantinople (c. 119, ed. Migne, tom. iii. p. 231); the longer one (c. 120) is more lengthy on the Holy Ghost; both have the anathema. Hefele, ii. 10, overlooks the shorter and more important form.

form the Nicene Creed has been received, though in the Greek church without the later Latin addition: *filioque*.

In the seven genuine canons of this council the heresies of the Eunomians or Anomœans, of the Arians or Endoxians, of the Semi-Arians or Pneumatomachi, of the Sabellians, Marcellians, and Apollinarians, were condemned, and questions of discipline adjusted.

The emperor ratified the decrees of the council, and as early as July, 381, enacted the law that all churches should be given up to bishops who believed in the equal divinity of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, and who stood in church fellowship with certain designated orthodox bishops. The public worship of heretics was forbidden.

Thus Arianism and the kindred errors were forever destroyed in the Roman empire, though kindred opinions continually reappear as isolated cases and in other connections.<sup>1</sup>

But among the different barbarian peoples of the West, especially in Gaul and Spain, who had received Christianity from the Roman empire during the ascendancy of Arianism, this doctrine was perpetuated two centuries longer: among the Goths till 587; among the Suevi in Spain till 560; among the Vandals who conquered North Africa in 429 and cruelly persecuted the Catholics, till their expulsion by Belisarius in 530; among the Burgundians till their incorporation in the Frank

<sup>1</sup> John Milton and Isaac Newton cannot properly be termed Arians. Their view of the relation of the Son to the Father was akin to that of Arius, but their spirit and their system of ideas were totally different. Bishop BULL's great work, *Defensio fidei Nicenæ*, first published 1685, was directed against Socinian and Arian views which obtained in England, but purely with historical arguments drawn from the ante-Nicene fathers. Shortly afterwards the high Arian view was revived and ably defended with exegetical, patristic, and philosophical arguments by WHISTON, WHITBY, and especially by Dr. SAMUEL CLARKE (died 1729), in his treatise on the "Scripture Doctrine of the Trinity" (1712), which gave rise to a protracted controversy, and to the strongest dialectical defence (though broken and irregular in method) of the Nicene doctrine in the English language by Dr. WATERLAND. This trinitarian controversy, one of the ablest and most important in the history of English theology, is very briefly and superficially touched in the great works of Dr. BAUR (vol. iii. p. 685 ff.) and DORNER (vol. ii. p. 908 ff.); but the defect has been supplied by Prof. PATRICK FAIRBAIRN in an Appendix to the English translation of DORNER's *History of Christology*, Divis. Secd. vol. iii. p. 337 ff.

empire in 534, and among the Longobards till the close of the sixth century. These barbarians, however, held Arianism rather through accident than from conviction, and scarcely knew the difference between it and the orthodox doctrine. Alaric, the first conqueror of Rome; Genseric, the conqueror of North Africa; Theodoric the Great, king of Italy and hero of the Niebelungen Lied, were Arians. The first Teutonic translation of the Bible came from the Arian missionary Ulfilas.

§ 123. *The Theological Principles involved: Import of the Controversy.*

Here should be compared, of the works before mentioned, especially PETAVIUS (tom. sec. De sanctissima Trinitate), and MÖHLER (Athanasius, third book), of the Romanists, and BAUR, DÖRNER, and VOIGT, of the Protestants.

We pass now to the internal history of the Arian conflict, the development of the antagonistic ideas; first marking some general points of view from which the subject must be conceived.

To the superficial and rationalistic eye this great struggle seems a metaphysical subtilty and a fruitless logomachy, revolving about a Greek iota.<sup>1</sup> But it enters into the heart of Christianity, and must necessarily affect in a greater or less degree all other articles of faith. The different views of the contending parties concerning the relation of Christ to the Father involved the general question, whether Christianity is truly divine, the highest revelation, and an actual redemption, or merely a relative truth, which may be superseded by a more perfect revelation.

Thus the controversy is conceived even by Dr. Baur, who is characterized by a much deeper discernment of the philosophical and historical import of the conflicts in the history of Christian doctrine, than all other rationalistic historians. "The main question," he says, "was, whether Christianity is the

<sup>1</sup> Ὁμο-ούσιος—ἑτερο-ούσιος—ὑπο-ούσιος.

highest and absolute revelation of God, and such that by it in the Son of God the self-existent absolute being of God joins itself to man, and so communicates itself that man through the Son becomes truly one with God, and comes into such community of essence with God, as makes him absolutely certain of pardon and salvation. From this point of view Athanasius apprehended the gist of the controversy, always finally summing up all his objections to the Arian doctrine with the chief argument, that the whole substance of Christianity, all reality of redemption, everything which makes Christianity the perfect salvation, would be utterly null and meaningless, if he who is supposed to unite man with God in real unity of being, were not himself absolute God, or of one substance with the absolute God, but only a creature among creatures. The infinite chasm which separates creature from Creator, remains unfilled; there is nothing really mediatory between God and man, if between the two there be nothing more than some created and finite thing, or such a mediator and redeemer as the Arians conceive the Son of God in his essential distinction from God: not begotten from the essence of God and coeternal, but created out of nothing and arising in time. Just as the distinctive character of the Athanasian doctrine lies in its effort to conceive the relation of the Father and Son, and in it the relation of God and man, as unity and community of essence, the Arian doctrine on the contrary has the opposite aim of a separation by which, first Father and Son, and then God and man, are placed in the abstract opposition of infinite and finite. While, therefore, according to Athanasius, Christianity is the religion of the unity of God and man, according to Arius the essence of the Christian revelation can consist only in man's becoming conscious of the difference which separates him, with all the finite, from the absolute being of God. What value, however, one must ask, has such a Christianity, when, instead of bringing man nearer to God, it only fixes the chasm between God and man?"<sup>1</sup>

Arianism was a religious political war against the spirit of the Christian revelation by the spirit of the world, which, after

<sup>1</sup> Die christliche Kirche vom 4-6ten Jahrhundert, 1859, p. 97 sq.

having persecuted the church three hundred years from without, sought under the Christian name to reduce her by degrading Christ to the category of the temporal and the created, and Christianity to the level of natural religion. It substituted for a truly divine Redeemer, a created demigod, an elevated Hercules. Arianism proceeded from human reason, Athanasianism from divine revelation; and each used the other source of knowledge as a subordinate and tributary factor. The former was deistic and rationalistic, the latter theistic and supernaturalistic, in spirit and effect. The one made reasonableness, the other agreement with Scripture, the criterion of truth. In the one the intellectual interest, in the other the moral and religious, was the motive principle. Yet Athanasius was at the same time a much deeper and abler thinker than Arius, who dealt in barren deductions of reason and dialectic formulas.<sup>1</sup>

In close connection with this stood another distinction. Arianism associated itself with the secular political power and the court party; it represented the imperio-papal principle, and the time of its prevalence under Constantius was an uninterrupted season of the most arbitrary and violent encroachments of the state upon the rights of the church. Athanasius, on the contrary, who was so often deposed by the emperor, and who uttered himself so boldly respecting Constantius, is the personal representative not only of orthodoxy, but also of the independence of the church with reference to

<sup>1</sup> Baur, Newman (*The Arians*, p. 17), and others put Arianism into connection with the Aristotelian philosophy, Athanasianism with the Platonic; while Petavius, Ritter, to some extent also Voigt (*l. c.* p. 194), and others exactly reverse the relation, and derive the Arian idea of God from Platonism and Neo-Platonism. This contrariety of opinion itself proves that such a comparison is rather confusing than helpful. The empirical, rational, logical tendency of Arianism is, to be sure, more Aristotelian than Platonic; and so far Baur is right. But the Aristotelian logic and dialectics may be used equally well in the service of Catholic orthodoxy, as they were in fact in the mediæval scholasticism; while, on the other hand, the Platonic idealism, which was to Justin, Origen, and Augustine, a bridge to faith, may lead into all kinds of Gnostic and mystic error. All depends on making revelation and faith, or philosophy and reason, the starting-point and the ruling power of the theological system. Comp. also the observations of Dr. Dörner against Dr. Baur in his *Entwicklungsgesch. der Christologie*, vol. i. p. 859, note.

the secular power, and in this respect a precursor of Gregory VII. in his contest with the German imperialism.

While Arianism bent to the changing politics of the court party, and fell into diverse schools and sects the moment it lost the imperial support, the Nicene faith, like its great champion Athanasius, remained under all outward changes of fortune true to itself, and made its mighty advance only by legitimate growth outward from within. Athanasius makes no distinction at all between the various shades of Arians and Semi-Arians, but throws them all into the same category of enemies of the catholic faith.<sup>1</sup>

#### § 124. *Arianism.*

The doctrine of the ARIANS, or Eusebians, Aëtians, Euno-

<sup>1</sup> I cannot refrain from quoting the striking judgment of GEORGE BANCROFT, once a Unitarian preacher, on the import of the Arian controversy and the vast influence of the Athanasian doctrine on the onward march of true Christian civilization. "In vain," says he in his address on the *Progress of the Human Race*, delivered before the New York Historical Society in 1854, p. 25 f., "did restless pride, as that of ARIUS, seek to paganize Christianity and make it the ally of imperial despotism; to prefer a belief resting on authority and unsupported by an inward witness, over the clear revelation of which the millions might see and feel and know the divine glory; to substitute the conception, framed after the pattern of heathenism, of an agent, superhuman yet finite, for faith in the ever continuing presence of God with man; to wrong the greatness and sanctity of the Spirit of God by representing it as a birth of time. Against these attempts to subordinate the enfranchising virtue of truth to false worship and to arbitrary power reason asserted its supremacy, and the party of superstition was driven from the field. Then mooned Ashtaroth was eclipsed and Osiris was seen no more in Memphian grove; then might have been heard the crash of the falling temples of Polytheism; and instead of them, came that harmony which holds Heaven and Earth in happiest union. Amid the deep sorrows of humanity during the sad conflict which was protracted through centuries for the overthrow of the past and the reconstruction of society, the consciousness of an incarnate God carried peace into the bosom of mankind. That faith emancipated the slave, broke the bondage of woman, redeemed the captive, elevated the low, lifted up the oppressed, consoled the wretched, inspired alike the heroes of thought and the countless masses. The down-trodden nations clung to it as to the certainty of their future emancipation; and it so filled the heart of the greatest poet of the Middle Ages—perhaps the greatest poet of all time—that he had no prayer so earnest as to behold in the profound and clear substance of the eternal light, that circling of reflected glory which showed the image of man."

mians, as they were called after their later leaders, or Euxontians, Heterousiasts, and Anomœans, as they were named from their characteristic terms, is in substance as follows :

The Father alone is God ; therefore he alone is unbegotten, eternal, wise, good, and unchangeable, and he is separated by an infinite chasm from the world. He cannot create the world directly, but only through an agent, the Logos. The Son of God is pre-existent,<sup>1</sup> before all creatures, and above all creatures, a middle being between God and the world, the creator of the world, the perfect image of the Father, and the executor of his thoughts, and thus capable of being called in a metaphorical sense God, and Logos, and Wisdom.<sup>2</sup> But on the other hand, he himself is a creature, that is to say, the first creation of God, through whom the Father called other creatures into existence ; he was created out of nothing<sup>3</sup> (not out of the essence of God) by the will of the Father before all conceivable time ; he is therefore not eternal, but had a beginning, and there was a time when he was not.<sup>4</sup>

Arianism thus rises far above Ebionism, Socinianism, deism, and rationalism, in maintaining the personal pre-existence of the Son before all worlds, which were his creation ; but it agrees with those systems in lowering the Son to the sphere of the created, which of course includes the idea of temporalness and finiteness. It at first ascribed to him the predicate of unchangeableness also,<sup>5</sup> but afterwards subjected him to the vicissitudes of created being.<sup>6</sup> This contradiction, however, is solved, if need be, by the distinction between moral and physical unchangeableness ; the Son is in his nature (φύσει) changeable, but remains good (καλός) by a free act of his will. Arius, after having once robbed the Son of divine essence,<sup>7</sup> could not consistently allow him any divine attribute in the strict sense of the word ; he limited his duration, his

<sup>1</sup> Πρὸ χρόνων καὶ αἰώνων.

<sup>2</sup> Θεός, λόγος, σοφία.

<sup>3</sup> Ποίημα, κτίσμα ἐξ οὐκ ὄντων. Hence the name Euxontians.

<sup>4</sup> Ἀρχὴν ἔχει—οὐκ ἦν πρὶν γεννηθῆναι, ἤτοι κτισθῆναι—ἦν ποτε ὅτε οὐκ ἦν.

<sup>5</sup> Ἀναλλοίωτος, ἀτρέπτος ὁ υἱός.

<sup>6</sup> Τρεπτός φύσει ὡς τὰ κτίσματα.

<sup>7</sup> Οὐσία.



power, and his knowledge, and expressly asserted that the Son does not perfectly know the Father, and therefore cannot perfectly reveal him. The Son is essentially distinct from the Father,' and—as Aëtius and Eunomius afterward more strongly expressed it—unlike the Father ;' and this dissimilarity was by some extended to all moral and metaphysical attributes and conditions.' The dogma of the essential deity of Christ seemed to Arius to lead of necessity to Sabellianism or to the Gnostic dreams of emanation. As to the humanity of Christ, Arius ascribed to him only a human body, but not a rational soul, and on this point Apollinarius came to the same conclusion, though from orthodox premises, and with the intention of saving the unity of the divine personality of Christ.

The later development of Arianism brought out nothing really new, but rather revealed many inconsistencies and contradictions. Thus, for example, Eunomius, to whom clearness was the measure of truth, maintained that revelation has made everything clear, and man can perfectly know God ; while Arius denied even to the Son the perfect knowledge of God or of himself. The negative and rationalistic element came forth in ever greater prominence, and the controversy became a metaphysical war, destitute of all deep religious spirit. The eighteen formulas of faith which Arianism and Semi-Arianism produced between the councils of Nice and Constantinople, are leaves without blossoms, and branches without fruit. The natural course of the Arian heresy is downward, through the stage of Socinianism, into the rationalism which sees in Christ a mere man, the chief of his kind.

To pass now to the arguments used for and against this error :

1. The Arians drew their *exegetical* proofs from the passages of Scripture which seem to place Christ in any way in the category of that which is created,<sup>1</sup> or ascribe to the incarnate

<sup>1</sup> Ἐτεροούσιος τῷ πατρί.

<sup>2</sup> Ἀνόμοιος κατ' οὐσίαν. Hence the name Ἀνόμοιοι, Anomoeans.

<sup>3</sup> Ἀνόμοιος κατὰ πάντα.

<sup>4</sup> Such as Prov. viii. 22-25 (comp. Sir. i. 4 ; xxiv. 8 f.), where personified Wisdom, i. e., the Logos, says (according to the Septuagint) : Κύριος ἔκτισέν με [Heb

(not the pre-temporal, divine) Logos growth, lack of knowledge, weariness, sorrow, and other changing human affections and states of mind,<sup>1</sup> or teach a subordination of the Son to the Father.<sup>2</sup>

Athanasius disposes of these arguments somewhat too easily, by referring the passages exclusively to the *human* side of the person of Jesus. When, for example, the Lord says he knows not the day nor the hour of the judgment, this is due only to his human nature. For how should the Lord of heaven and earth, who made days and hours, not know them! He accuses the Arians of the Jewish conceit, that divine and human are incompatible. The Jews say: How could Christ, if he were God, become man, and die on the cross? The Arians say: How can Christ, who was man, be at the same time God? We, says Athanasius, are Christians; we do not stone Christ when he asserts his eternal Godhead, nor are we offended in him when he speaks to us in the language of

ἡμεῖς, Vulg. *possedit me*] ἀρχὴν ὁδὸν αὐτοῦ εἰς ἔργα αὐτοῦ· πρὸ τοῦ αἰῶνος ἰδεμελλοῦσίν με, κ.τ.λ. This passage seemed clearly to prove the two propositions of Arius, that the Father created the Son, and that he created him for the purpose of creating the world through him (εἰς ἔργα αὐτοῦ). Acts ii. 36: "Ὅτι καὶ κύριον αὐτὸν καὶ Χριστὸν ἐποίησεν ὁ Θεός. Heb. i. 4: Κρείττων γενόμενος τῶν ἀγγέλων Heb. iii. 2: Πιστὸν ὄντα τῷ ποιήσαντι αὐτόν. John i. 14: Ὁ λόγος σὰρξ ἐγένετο. Phil. ii. 7-9. The last two passages are of course wholly inapposite, as they treat of the incarnation of the Son of God, not of his pre-temporal existence and essence. Heb. i. 4 refers to the exaltation of the God-Man. Most plausible of all is the famous passage: πρῶτότοκος πάσης κτίσεως, Col. i. 15, from which the Arians inferred that Christ himself is a κτίσις of God, to wit, the first creature of all. But πρῶτότοκος is not equivalent to πρῶτόκτιστος or πρῶτοπλαστος: on the contrary, Christ is by this very term distinguished from the creation, and described as the Author, Upholder, and End of the creation. A creature cannot possibly be the source of life for all creatures. The meaning of the expression, therefore, is: born before every creature, i. e., before anything was made. The text indicates the distinction between the eternal generation of the Son from the essence of the Father, and the temporal creation of the world out of nothing by the Son. Yet there is a difference between *μονογενής* and *πρῶτότοκος*, which Athanasius himself makes: the former referring to the relation of the Son to the Father, the latter, to his relation to the world.

<sup>1</sup> Such as Luke ii. 52; Heb. v. 8, 9; John xii. 27, 28; Matt. xxvi. 39; Mark xiii. 52; &c.

<sup>2</sup> *E. g.*, John xiv. 28: Ὁ πατὴρ μείζων μου ἐστίν. This passage also refers not to the pre-existent state of Christ, but to the state of humiliation of the God-Man.

human poverty. But it is the peculiar doctrine of Holy Scripture to declare everywhere a double thing of Christ: that he, as Logos and image of the Father, was ever truly divine, and that he afterwards became man for our salvation. When Athanasius cannot refer such terms as "made," "created," "became," to the human nature, he takes them figuratively for "testified," "constituted," "demonstrated."<sup>1</sup>

As positive exegetical proofs against Arianism, Athanasius cites almost all the familiar proof-texts which ascribe to Christ divine names, divine attributes, divine works, and divine dignity, and which it is unnecessary here to mention in detail.

Of course his exegesis, as well as that of the fathers in general, when viewed from the level of the modern grammatical, historical, and critical method, contains a great deal of allegorizing caprice and fancy and sophistical subtilty. But it is in general far more profound and true than the heretical.

2. The *theological* arguments for Arianism were predominantly negative and rationalizing. The amount of them is, that the opposite view is unreasonable, is irreconcilable with strict monotheism and the dignity of God, and leads to Sabellian or Gnostic errors. It is true, Marcellus of Ancyra, one of the most zealous advocates of the Nicene homoousianism, fell into the Sabellian denial of the tri-personality,<sup>2</sup> but most of the Nicene fathers steered with unerring tact between the Scylla of Sabellianism, and the Charybdis of Tritheism.

Athanasius met the theological objections of the Arians with overwhelming dialectical skill, and exposed the internal

<sup>1</sup> The *ἔκτισε* and *ἐδημιώσας* in Prov. viii. 22 ff., on which the Arians laid special stress, and of which Athanasius treats quite at large in his second oration against the Arians, he refers not to the essence of the Logos (with whom the *σοφία* was by both parties identified), but to the incarnation of the Logos and to the renovation of our race through him: appealing to Eph. ii. 10: "We are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works." As to the far more important passage in Col. i. 15, Athanasius gives substantially the correct interpretation in his *Expositio fidei*, cap. 3 (ed. Bened. tom. i. 101), where he says: *πρωτότοκον εἶπεν [Παῦλος] δηλοῦν μὴ εἶναι αὐτὸν κτίσμα, ἀλλὰ γέννημα τοῦ πατρὸς· ξένον γὰρ ἐπὶ γῆς δεδότητος αὐτοῦ τὸ λέγεσθαι κτίσμα. Τὰ γὰρ πάντα ἐκτίσθησαν ὑπὸ τοῦ πατρὸς διὰ τοῦ υἱοῦ, ὃ δὲ υἱὸς μόνος ἐκ τοῦ πατρὸς αἰδίως ἐγεννήθη· διὸ πρωτότοκός ἐστι πάσης κτίσεως ὁ Θεὸς λόγος, ἄρρετος ἐξ ἀνάγκης.*

<sup>2</sup> Comp. on Marcellus of Ancyra below, § 126.

contradictions and philosophical absurdities of their positions. Arianism teaches two gods, an uncreated and a created, a supreme and a secondary god, and thus far relapses into heathen polytheism. It holds Christ to be a mere creature, and yet the creator of the world; as if a creature could be the source of life, the origin and the end of all creatures! It ascribes to Christ a pre-mundane existence, but denies him eternity, while yet time belongs to the idea of the world, and is created only therewith,<sup>1</sup> so that before the world there was nothing but eternity. It supposes a time before the creation of the pre-existent Christ; thus involving God himself in the notion of time; which contradicts the absolute being of God. It asserts the unchangeableness of God, but denies, with the eternal generation of the Son, also the eternal Fatherhood; thus assuming after all a very essential change in God.<sup>2</sup> Athanasius charges the Arians with dualism and heathenism, and he accuses them of destroying the whole doctrine of salvation. For if the Son is a creature, man remains still separated, as before, from God; no creature can redeem other creatures, and unite them with God. If Christ is not divine, much less can we be partakers of the divine nature and children of God.<sup>3</sup>

### § 125. *Semi-Arianism.*

The SEMI-ARIANS,<sup>4</sup> or, as they are called, the Homoiousiasts,<sup>5</sup> wavered in theory and conduct between the Nicene

<sup>1</sup> *Mundus non factus est in tempore, sed cum tempore*, says Augustine, although I cannot just now lay my hand on the passage. Time is the successional form of existence of all created things. Now Arius might indeed have said: Time arose with the Son as the first creature. This, however, he did not say, but put a time before the Son.

<sup>2</sup> Of less weight is the objection, which was raised by Alexander of Alexandria: Since the Son is the Logos, the Arian God must have been, until the creation of the Son, *λογος*, a being without reason.

<sup>3</sup> Comp. the second Oration against the Arians, cap. 69 ff.

<sup>4</sup> *Ἡμιόδοτοι*.

<sup>5</sup> *ὁμοιουσιαστοί*. The name *Eusebians* is used of the Arians and Semi-Arians, who both for a time made common cause, as a political party under the lead of Eusebius of Nicomedia (nrt of Cæsarea), against the Athanasians and Nicenes

orthodoxy and the Arian heresy. Their doctrine makes the impression, not of an internal reconciliation of opposites which in fact were irreconcilable, but of diplomatic evasion, temporizing compromise, flat, half and half *juste milieu*. They had a strong footing in the subordination of most of the ante-Nicene fathers; but now the time for clear and definite decision had come.

Their doctrine is contained in the confession which was proposed to the council of Nicæa by Eusebius of Cæsarea, but rejected, and in the symbols of the councils of Antioch and Sirmium from 340 to 360. Theologically they were best represented first by Eusebius of Cæsarea, who adhered more closely to his admired Origen, and later by Cyril of Jerusalem, who approached nearer the orthodoxy of the Nicene party.

The signal term of Semi-Arianism is *homoi-ousion*, in distinction from *homo-ousion* and *hetero-ousion*. The system teaches that Christ is not a creature, but co-eternal with the Father, though not of the same, but only of like essence, and subordinate to him. It agrees with the Nicene creed in asserting the eternal generation of the Son, and in denying that he was a created being; while, with Arianism, it denies the identity of essence. Hence it satisfied neither of the opposite parties, and was charged by both with logical incoherence. Athanasius and his friends held, against the Semi-Arians, that like attributes and relations might be spoken of, but not like essences or substances; these are either identical or different. It may be said of one man that he is like another, not in respect of substance, but in respect of his exterior and form. If the Son, as the Semi-Arians admit, is of the essence of the Father, he must be also of the same essence. The Arians argued: There is no middle being between created and uncreated being; if God the Father alone is uncreated, everything out of him, including the Son, is created, and consequently of different essence, and unlike him.

Thus pressed from both sides, Semi-Arianism could not long withstand; and even before the council of Constantinople it passed over, in the main, to the camp of orthodoxy.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Bull judges Semi-Arianism very contemptuously. "Semi-Arianus," says he

§ 126. *Revived Sabellianism. Marcellus and Photinus.*

- I. EUSEBIUS CÆSAR.: Two books contra Marcellum (κατὰ Μαρκελλου), and three books De ecclesiastica theologia (after his Demonstratio evang.). HILARY: Fragmenta, 1-3. BASIL THE GREAT: Epist. 52. EPIPHANIUS: Hæres. 72. RETTBERG: Marcelliana. Gött. 1794 (a collection of the Fragments of Marcellus).
- II. MONTFAUCON: Diatribe de causa Marcelli Ancy. (in Collect. nova Patr. tom. ii. Par. 1707). KLOSE: Geschichte u. Lehre des Marcellus u. Photinus. Hamb. 1887. MÖHLER: Athanasius der Gr. Buch iv. p. 818 sqq. (aiming to vindicate Marcellus, as Neander also does). BAUR: l. c. vol. i. pp. 525-558. DORNER: l. c. i. pp. 861-882. (Both against the orthodoxy of Marcellus.) HEFELE: Conciliengesch. i. 456 sq. et passim. WILLENBORG: Ueber die Orthodoxie des Marc. Münster, 1859

Before we pass to the exhibition of the orthodox doctrine, we must notice a trinitarian error which arose in the course of the controversy from an excess of zeal against the Arian subordination, and forms the opposite extreme.

MARCELLUS, bishop of Ancyra in Galatia, a friend of Athanasius, and one of the leaders of the Nicene party, in a large controversial work written soon after the council of Nicæa against Arianism and Semi-Arianism, so pushed the doctrine of the consubstantiality of Christ that he impaired the personal distinction of Father and Son, and, at least in phraseology, fell into a refined form of Sabellianism.<sup>1</sup> To save the full divinity of Christ and his equality with the Father, he denied his hypostatical pre-existence. As to the orthodoxy of Marcellus, however, the East and the West were divided, and the diversity continues even among modern scholars. A Semi-Arian council in Constantinople, A. D. 335, deposed him, and intrusted Eusebius of Cæsarea with the refutation of his work ;

(l. iv. 4, 8, vol. v. pars ii. p. 779), "et semi-Deus, et semi-creatura perinde monstra et portenta sunt, quæ sani et pii omnes merito exhorrent. Filius Dei aut verus omnino Deus, aut mera creatura statuatur necesse est; æternæ veritatis axioma est, inter Deum et creaturam, inter non factum et factum, medium esse nihil." Quite similarly Waterland: A Defence of some Queries relating to Dr. Clarke's Scheme of the Holy Trinity, Works, vol. i. p. 404.

<sup>1</sup> In his work περί ἐνότητος, De subjectione Domini Christi, founded on 1 Cor. iv. 28.

while, on the contrary, pope Julius of Rome and the orthodox council of Sardica (343), blinded by his equivocal declarations, his former services, and his close connection with Athanasius, protected his orthodoxy and restored him to his bishopric. The counter-synod of Philippopolis, however, confirmed the condemnation. Finally even Athanasius, who elsewhere always speaks of him with great respect, is said to have declared against him.<sup>1</sup> The council of Constantinople, A. D. 381, declared even the baptism of the Marcellians and Photinians invalid.<sup>2</sup>

Marcellus wished to hold fast the true deity of Christ without falling under the charge of subordinatianism. He granted the Arians right in their assertion that the Nicene doctrine of the *eternal generation* of the Son involves the subordination of the Son, and is incompatible with his own eternity. For this reason he entirely gave up this doctrine, and referred the expressions: *Son, image, firstborn, begotten*, not to the eternal metaphysical relation, but to the incarnation. He thus made a rigid separation between Logos and Son, and this is the *πρῶτον ψεύδος* of this system. Before the incarnation there was, he taught, no Son of God, but only a Logos, and by that he understood,—at least so he is represented by Eusebius,—an impersonal power, a reason inherent in God, inseparable from him, eternal, *unbegotten*, after the analogy of reason in man. This Logos was silent (therefore without word) in God before the creation of the world, but then went forth out of God as the creative word and power, the *δραστική ἐνέργεια πράξεως* of God (not as a hypostasis). This power is the principle of creation, and culminates in the incarnation, but after finishing the work of redemption returns again into the repose of God. The Son, after completing the work of redemption, resigns his kingdom to the Father, and rests again in God as in the beginning. The sonship, therefore, is only a

<sup>1</sup> Hilary, *Fragm.* ii. n. 21 (p. 1299, ed. Bened.), states that Athanasius as early as 349 renounced church fellowship with Marcellus.

<sup>2</sup> These are meant by the *οἱ ἀπὸ τῆς Γαλατῶν χάρας ἐρχόμενοι* in the 7th canon of the second ecumenical council. Marcellus and Photinus were both of Ancyra in Galatia. Comp. Hefele, *Conciliengeschichte*, vol. ii. p. 26.

temporary state, which begins with the human advent of Christ, and is at last promoted or glorified into Godhead. Marcellus reaches not a real God-Man, but only an extraordinary dynamical indwelling of the divine power in the man Jesus. In this respect the charge of Samosaténism, which the council of Constantinople in 335 brought against him, has a certain justice, though he started from premises entirely different from those of Paul of Samosata.<sup>1</sup> His doctrine of the Holy Spirit and of the Trinity is to a corresponding degree unsatisfactory. He speaks, indeed, of an extension of the indivisible divine monad into a triad, but in the Sabellian sense, and denies the three hypostases or persons.

PHOTINUS, first a deacon at Ancyra, then bishop of Sirnium in Pannonia, went still further than his preceptor Marcellus. He likewise started with a strict distinction between the notion of Logos and Son,<sup>2</sup> rejected the idea of eternal generation, and made the divine in Christ an impersonal power of God. But while Marcellus, from the Sabellian point of view, identified the Son with the Logos as to essence, and transferred to him the divine predicates attaching to the Logos, Photinus, on the contrary, quite like Paul of Samosata, made Jesus rise on the basis of his human nature, by a course of moral improvement and moral merit, to the divine dignity, so that the divine in him is a thing of growth.

Hence Photinus was condemned as a heretic by several councils in the East and in the West, beginning with the Semi-Arian council at Antioch in 344. He died in exile in 366.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dorner (l. c. 880 sq.) asserts of Marcellus, that his Sabellianism ran out to a sort of Ebionitism.

<sup>2</sup> He called God *λογωδότης*, because, in his view, God is both Father and Logos. Sabellius had used the expression *υιοπότης*, to deny the personal distinction between the Father and the Son. Photinus had to say instead of this, *λογωδότης*, because, in his view, the *λόγος*, not the *υἱός*, is eternally in God.

<sup>3</sup> Comp. on Photinus, Athanas., De syn. 26; Epiph., Hær. 71; Hilary, De trinit. vii. 3-7, etc.; Baur, l. c. vol. I. p. 542 sqq.; Dorner, l. c. <sup>1</sup> p. 881 sq.; and Hefele, l. c. i. p. 610 sqq.



§ 127. *The Nicene Doctrine of the Consubstantiality of the Son with the Father.*

Comp. the literature in §§ 119 and 120, especially the four Orations of ATHANASIUS against the Arians, and the other anti-Arian tracts of this "father of orthodoxy."

THE NICENE, HOMO-OUSIAN, or ATHANASIAN doctrine was most clearly and powerfully represented in the East by Athanasius, in whom it became flesh and blood;¹ and next to him, by Alexander of Alexandria, Marcellus of Ancyra (who however strayed into Sabellianism), Basil, and the two Gregories of Cappadocia; and in the West by Ambrose and Hilary.

The central point of the Nicene doctrine in the contest with Arianism is the identity of essence or the consubstantiality of the Son with the Father, and is expressed in this article of the (original) Nicene Creed: "[We believe] in one Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of God; who is begotten the only-begotten of the Father; that is, of the essence of the Father, God of God, and Light of Light, very God of very God, begotten, not made, being of one substance with the Father."

The term *ὁμοούσιος*, *consubstantial*, is of course no more a biblical term,² than *trinity*;³ but it had already been used,

Particularly distinguished are his four Orations against the Arians, written in 356.

¹ Καὶ εἰς ἓνα Κόριον Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν, τὸν υἱὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ· γεννηθέντα ἐκ τοῦ Πατρὸς μονογενῆ· τοῦτ' ἐστὶν ἐκ τῆς οὐσίας τοῦ Πατρὸς, Θεὸν ἐκ Θεοῦ καὶ φῶς ἐκ φωτός, Θεὸν ἀληθινὸν ἐκ Θεοῦ ἀληθινοῦ· γεννηθέντα, οὐ ποιηθέντα, ὁμοούσιον τῷ Πατρί, κ.τ.λ.

² Though John's Θεὸς ἦν ὁ λόγος (John i. 1), and Paul's τὸ εἶναι ἴσα Θεῷ (Phil. ii. 6), are akin to it. The latter passage, indeed, since ἴσα is adverbial, denotes rather divine *existence*, than divine *being* or *essence*, which would be more correctly expressed by τὸ εἶναι ἴσον Θεῷ, or by ἰσοθέος. But the latter would be equally in harmony with Paul's theology. The Jews used the masc. ἴσος, though in a polemical sense, when they drew from the way in which he called himself pre-eminently and exclusively the Son of God the logical inference, that he made himself equal with God, John v. 18: "Ὅτι . . . πατέρα ἴδιον ἔλεγε τὸν Θεόν, ἴσον αὐτὸν ποιῶν τῷ Θεῷ." The Vulgate translates: *æqualem se faciens Deo*.

³ The word *trias* and *trinitas*, in this application to the Godhead, appears first in Theophilus of Antioch and Athenagoras in the second century, and in Tertullian in the third. Confessions of faith must be drawn up in language different from the

though in a different sense, both by heathen writers<sup>1</sup> and by heretics,<sup>2</sup> as well as by orthodox fathers.<sup>3</sup> It formed a bulwark against Arians and Semi-Arians, and an anchor which moored the church during the stormy time between the first and the second ecumenical councils.<sup>4</sup> At first it had a negative meaning against heresy; denying, as Athanasius repeatedly says, that the Son is in any sense created or produced and change-

Scriptures—else they mean nothing or everything—since they are an *interpretation* of the Scriptures and intended to exclude false doctrines.

<sup>1</sup> Bull. Def. fidei Nic., Works, vol. v. P. i. p. 70: “Ὁμοούσιον α probatis Græcis scriptoribus id dicitur, quod ejusdem cum altero substantiæ, essentiæ, sive naturæ est.” He then cites some passages from profane writers. Thus Porphyry says, *De abstinentia ab esu animalium*, lib. i. n. 19: Ἐγὼ δμουύσιοι αἱ τῶν ζώων ψυχὰι ἡμετέρας, i. e., siquidem animæ animalium sunt ejusdem cum nostris essentiæ. Aristotle (in a quotation in Origen) speaks of the consubstantiality of all stars, *δμουύσια πάντα ἀστρα*, omnia astra sunt ejusdem essentiæ sive naturæ.

<sup>2</sup> First by the Gnostic Valentine, in Irenæus, *Adv. hæres.* l. i. cap. 1, § 1 and § 5 (ed. Stieren, vol. i. 57 and 66). In the last passage it is said of man that he is *ἐκτικός*, and as such very like God, indeed, but not consubstantial, *παρὰλλήσιον μὲν, ἀλλ’ οὐχ ὁμοούσιον τῷ Θεῷ*. The Manichæans called the human soul, in the sense of their emanation system, *δμουύσιον τῷ Θεῷ*. Agapius, in Photius (*Bibl. Cod.* 179), calls even the sun and the moon, in a pantheistic sense, *δμουύσια Θεῷ*. The Sabellians used the word of the trinity, but in opposition to the distinction of persons.

<sup>3</sup> Origen deduces from the figurative description *ἀπαίγασμα*, Heb. i. 8, the *δμουύσιον* of the Son. His disciples rejected the term, indeed, at the council at Antioch in 264, because the heretical Paul of Samosata gave it a perverted meaning, taking *οὐσία* for the common source from which the three divine persons first derived their being. But towards the end of the third century the word was introduced again into church use by Theognostus and Dionysius of Alexandria, as Athanasius, *De Decr. Syn. Nic.* c. 25 (ed. Bened. i. p. 230), demonstrates. Eusebius, *Ep. ad Cæsarienses* c. 7 (in Socr. H. E. i. 8, and in Athan. *Opera* i. 241), says that some early bishops and authors, learned and celebrated (τῶν παλαιῶν τινὰς λογίους καὶ ἐπιφανεῖς ἐπισκόπους καὶ συγγραφεῖς), used *δμουύσιον* of the Godhead of the Father and Son. Tertullian (*Adv. Prax.*) applied the corresponding Latin phrase *unius substantia* to the persons of the holy Trinity.

<sup>4</sup> Cunningham (*Hist. Theology*, i. p. 291) says of *δμουύσιος*: “The number of these individuals who held the substance of the Nicene doctrine, but objected to the phraseology in which it was expressed, was very small [?],—and the evil thereof, was very inconsiderable; while the advantage was invaluable that resulted from the possession and the use of a definite phraseology, which shut out all supporters of error, combined *nearly all* the maintainers of truth, and formed a rallying-point around which the whole orthodox church ultimately gathered, after the confusion and distraction occasioned by Arian cunning and Arian persecution had passed away.”

able.' But afterwards the homoousion became a positive test-word of orthodoxy, designating, in the sense of the Nicene council, clearly and unequivocally, the veritable and essential deity of Christ, in opposition to all sorts of apparent or half divinity, or mere similarity to God. The same divine, eternal, unchangeable essence, which is in an original way in the Father, is, from eternity, in a derived way, through generation, in the Son; just as the water of the fountain is in the stream, or the light of the sun is in the ray, and cannot be separated from it. Hence the Lord says: "I am in the Father, and the Father in Me;" "He that hath seen Me hath seen the Father;" "I and My Father are one." This is the sense of the expression: "God of God," "very God of very God." Christ, in His divine nature, is as fully consubstantial with the Father, as, in His human nature, He is with man; flesh of our flesh, and bone of our bone; and yet, with all this, He is an independent person with respect to the Father, as He is with respect to other men. In this view Basil turns the term *ὁμοούσιος* against the Sabellian denial of the personal distinctions in the Trinity, since it is not the same thing that is consubstantial with itself, but one thing that is consubstantial with another.\* Consubstantiality among men, indeed, is predicated of different individuals who partake of the same nature, and the term in this view might denote also unity of species in a tritheistic sense.

But in the case before us the personal distinction of the Son from the Father must not be pressed to a duality of substances of the same kind; the homoousion, on the contrary, must be understood as identity or *numerical* unity of substance, in distinction from mere generic unity. Otherwise it leads manifestly into dualism or tritheism. The Nicene doc-

\* Athanas. Epist. de Decretis Syn. Nicænæ, cap. 20 (l. p. 226); c. 26 (p. 281); and elsewhere.

\* Basil. M. Epist. lii. 3 (tom. iii. 146): Αὕτη δὲ ἡ φωνὴ καὶ τὸ τοῦ Σαβελλίου κακὸν ἐπαγορεύεται· ἀναρεῖ γὰρ τὴν ταυτότητα τῆς ὑποστάσεως καὶ εἰσάγει τελείαν τῶν προσώπων τὴν ἑνωσίαν· (tollit enim hypostaseos identitatem perfectamque personarum notionem inducit) οὐ γὰρ αὐτὸ τί ἐστὶν ἑαυτῷ ὁμοούσιον, ἀλλ' ἕτερον ἑτέρῳ (non enim idem sibi ipse consubstantialis est, sed alterum alteri).

trine refuses to swerve from the monotheistic basis, and stands between Sabellianism and tritheism; though it must be admitted that the usage of *οὐσία* and *ὑπόστασις* still wavered for a time, and the relation of the consubstantiality to the numerical unity of the divine essence did not come clearly out till a later day. Athanasius insists that the unity of the divine essence is indivisible, and that there is only one principle of Godhead.<sup>1</sup> He frequently illustrates the relation, as Tertullian had done before him, by the relation between fire and brightness,<sup>2</sup> or between fountain and stream; though in these illustrations the proverbial insufficiency of all similitudes must never be forgotten. "We must not," says he, "take the words in John xiv. 10: 'I am in the Father and the Father in Me,' as if the Father and the Son were two different interpenetrating and mutually complementary substances, like two bodies which fill one vessel. The Father is full and perfect, and the Son is the fulness of the Godhead."<sup>3</sup> "We must not imagine," says he in another place, "three divided substances<sup>4</sup> in God, as among men, lest we, like the heathen, invent a multiplicity of gods; but as the stream which is born of the fountain, and not separated from it, though there are two forms and names. Neither is the Father the Son, nor the Son the Father; for the Father is the Father of the Son, and the Son is the Son of the Father. As the fountain is not the stream, nor the stream the fountain, but the two are one and the same water which flows from the fountain into the stream; so the Godhead pours itself, without division, from the Father into the Son. Hence the

<sup>1</sup> Orat. iv. contra Arianos, c. 1 (tom. i. p. 617): "Ὡστε δύο μὲν εἶναι πατέρα καὶ υἱόν, μονάδα δὲ θεότητος ἀδιαίρετον καὶ ἄσχιστον . . . μία ἀρχὴ θεότητος καὶ οὐ δύο ἀρχαί, ἕδεν κυρίως καὶ μοναρχία ἐστίν."

<sup>2</sup> E. g., Orat. iv. c. Arianos, c. 10 (p. 624): "Ἐστὼ δὲ παράδειγμα ἀνδράπων τὸ πῦρ καὶ τὸ ἐξ αὐτοῦ ἀπαύγασμα (ignis et splendor ex eo ortus), δύο μὲν τῷ εἶναι [this is not accurate, and strictly taken would lead to two οὐσίαι] καὶ ὁρᾶσθαι, ἓν δὲ τῷ ἐξ αὐτοῦ καὶ ἀδιαίρετον εἶναι τὸ ἀπαύγασμα αὐτοῦ."

<sup>3</sup> Orat. iii. c. Arian. c. 1 (p. 551): "Πλήρης καὶ τέλειός ἐστιν ὁ πατήρ, καὶ πλήρῃμα θεότητός ἐστιν ὁ υἱός."

<sup>4</sup> *Treis ὑπεστάσεις* [here, as often in the Nicene age, synonymous with οὐσίαι] μεμερισμέναι καθ' ἑαυτάς. Athan. Expos. Fidei or Ἐκθέσις πίστεως, cap. 2 (Opera, ed. Bened. i. p. 100).

Lord says: I went forth from the Father, and come from the Father. Yet He is ever with the Father, He is in the bosom of the Father, and the bosom of the Father is never emptied of the Godhead of the Son."<sup>1</sup>

The Son is of the essence of the Father, not by division or diminution, but by simple and perfect self-communication. This divine self-communication of eternal love is represented by the figure of *generation*, suggested by the biblical terms *Father* and *Son*, the *only-begotten* Son, the *firstborn*.<sup>2</sup> The eternal generation is an internal process in the essence of God, and the Son is an immanent offspring of this essence; whereas creation is an act of the will of God, and the creature is exterior to the Creator, and of different substance. The Son, as man, is produced; as God, he is unproduced or uncreated; 'he is begotten' from eternity of the unbegotten Father. To this Athanasius refers the passage concerning the Only-begotten who is in the bosom of the Father.<sup>3</sup>

Generation and creation are therefore entirely different ideas. Generation is an immanent, necessary, and perpetual process in the essence of God himself, the Father's eternal

<sup>1</sup> *Expositio Fidei*, cap. 2: 'Ὡς γὰρ οὐκ ἔστιν ἡ πηγή ποταμός, οὐδὲ δὲ ποταμὸς πηγή, ἀμφότερα δὲ ἐν καὶ ταυτὸν ἔστιν ὕδωρ τὸ ἐκ τῆς πηγῆς μετεχουμένον, οὕτως ἡ ἐκ τοῦ πατρὸς εἰς τὸν υἱὸν θεότης ἀβρεύστως καὶ ἀδιαίρετως τυγχάνει, κ.τ.λ.

<sup>2</sup> Πατήρ, υἱός, μονογενὴς υἱός (frequent in John), πρωτότοκος πάσης κτίσεως (Col. i. 15). Waterland (Works, I. p. 368) says of this point of the Nicene doctrine, "that an explicit profession of *eternal generation* might have been dispensed with: provided only that the eternal existence of the λόγος, as a *real subsisting person*, *in and of the Father*, which comes to the same thing, might be secured. This was the point; and this was all."

<sup>3</sup> Γενητός (not to be confounded with γεννητός), ποιητός, factus. Comp. John i. 14: 'Ὁ λόγος σὰρξ ἐγένετο.

<sup>4</sup> Ἀγέννητος, οὐ ποιηθείς, non-factus, increatus; not to be confounded with ἀγέννητος, non-genitus, which belongs to the Father alone.

<sup>5</sup> Γεννητός, or, as in the Symb. Nic. γεννηθείς, genitus.

<sup>6</sup> Ἀγέννητος, non-genitus. This terminology is very frequent in the writings of Athanasius, especially in the Orat. i. contra Arianos, and in his Epist. de decretis Syn. Nic.

<sup>7</sup> John i. 18: 'Ὁ μονογενὴς υἱός, δὲ ὢν (a perpetual or eternal relation, not ἐν) εἰς (motion, in distinction from ἐν) τὸν κόλπον τοῦ πατρὸς. Comp. Athanas. Epist. de decr. S. N. c. 22 (tom. i. p. 227): Τί γὰρ ἄλλο τὸ ἐν κόλπῳ σημαίνει, ἢ τὴν γνησίαν ἐκ τοῦ πατρὸς τοῦ υἱοῦ γέννησιν;

communication of essence or self to the Son; creation, on the contrary, is an outwardly directed, free, single act of the will of God, bringing forth a different and temporal substance out of nothing. The eternal fatherhood and sonship in God is the perfect prototype of all similar relations on earth. But the divine generation differs from all human generation, not only in its absolute spirituality, but also in the fact that it does not produce a new essence of the same kind, but that the begotten is identical in essence with the begetter; for the divine essence is by reason of its simplicity, incapable of division, and by reason of its infinity, incapable of increase.<sup>1</sup> The generation, properly speaking, has no reference at all to the essence, but only to the hypostatical distinction. The Son is begotten not as God, but as Son, not as to his *natura*, but as to his *idiórn*, his peculiar property and his relation to the Father. The divine essence neither begets, nor is begotten. The same is true of the *processio* of the Holy Ghost, which has reference not to the essence, but only to the person, of the Spirit. In human generation, moreover, the father is older than the son; but in the divine generation, which takes place not in time, but is eternal, there can be no such thing as priority or posteriority of one or the other hypostasis. To the question whether the Son existed *before* his generation, Cyril of Alexandria answered: "The generation of the Son did not precede his existence, but he existed eternally, and eternally existed by generation." The Son is as necessary to the

<sup>1</sup> Bishop JOHN PEARSON, in his well-known work: *An Exposition of the Creed* (Art. II. p. 209, ed. W. S. Dobson, New York, 1851), thus clearly and rightly exhibits the Nicene doctrine in this point: "In human generations the son is of the same nature with the father, and yet is not the same man; because though he has an essence of the same kind, yet he has not the same essence; the power of generation depending on the first prolific benediction, *increase and multiply*, it must be made by way of multiplication, and thus every son becomes another man. But the divine essence, being by reason of its simplicity not subject to division, and in respect of its infinity incapable of multiplication, is so communicated as not to be multiplied; inasmuch that he who proceeds by that communication, has not only the same nature, but is also the same God. The Father God, and the Word God; Abraham man and Isaac man; but Abraham one man, Isaac another man; not as the Father one God and the Word another, but the Father and the Word both the same God."

being of the Father, as the Father to the being of the Son.

The necessity thus asserted of the eternal generation does not, however, impair its freedom, but is intended only to deny its being arbitrary and accidental, and to secure its foundation in the essence of God himself. God, to be Father, must from eternity beget the Son, and so reproduce himself; yet he does this in obedience not to a foreign law, but to his own law and the impulse of his will. Athanasius, it is true, asserts on the one hand that God begets the Son not of his will,<sup>1</sup> but by his nature,<sup>2</sup> yet on the other hand he does not admit that God begets the Son *without* will,<sup>3</sup> or of force or unconscious necessity. The generation, therefore, rightly understood, is an act at once of essence and of will. Augustine calls the Son "will of will."<sup>4</sup> In God freedom and necessity coincide.

The mode of the divine generation is and must be a mystery. Of course all human representations of it must be avoided, and the matter be conceived in a purely moral and spiritual way. The eternal generation, conceived as an intellectual process, is the eternal self-knowledge of God; reduced to ethical terms, it is his eternal and absolute love in its motion and working within himself.

In his argument for the consubstantiality of the Son, Athanasius, in his four orations against the Arians, besides adducing the proof from Scripture, which presides over and permeates all other arguments, sets out now in a practical method from the idea of redemption, now in a speculative, from the idea of God.

Christ has delivered us from the curse and power of sin, reconciled us with God, and made us partakers of the eternal, divine life; therefore he must himself be God. Or, negatively: If Christ were a creature, he could not redeem other creatures from sin and death. It is assumed that redemption is as much and as strictly a divine work, as creation.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Μὴ ἐκ βουλῆσεως.

<sup>2</sup> φύσει.

<sup>3</sup> Ἀβουλῆτως and ἀδελῆτως.

Voluntas de voluntate. De trinit. xv. 20.

<sup>5</sup> Comp. particularly the second oration contra Arianos, c. 69 sqq.

Starting from the idea of God, Athanasius argues: The relation of Father is not accidental, arising in time; else God would be changeable;<sup>1</sup> it belongs as necessarily to the essence and character of God as the attributes of eternity, wisdom, goodness, and holiness; consequently he must have been Father from eternity, and this gives the eternal generation of the Son.<sup>2</sup> The divine fatherhood and sonship is the prototype of all analagous relations on earth. As there is no Son without Father, no more is there Father without Son. An unfruitful Father were like a dark light, or a dry fountain, a self-contradiction. The non-existence of creatures, on the contrary, detracts nothing from the perfection of the Creator, since he always has the power to create when he will.<sup>3</sup> The Son is of the Father's own interior essence, while the creature is exterior to God and dependent on the act of his will.<sup>4</sup> God, furthermore, cannot be conceived without reason (*λόγος*), wisdom, power, and according to the Scriptures (as the Arians themselves concede) the Son is the Logos, the wisdom, the power, the Word of God, by which all things were made. As

<sup>1</sup> Orat. i. contra Arianos, c. 28 (p. 438): Διὰ τοῦτο ἀεὶ πατὴρ καὶ οὐκ ἐπιγέγεσθαι (accidit) τῷ Θεῷ τὸ πατὴρ, ἵνα μὴ καὶ τρεπτός εἶναι νομισθῇ. Εἰ γὰρ καλὸν τὸ εἶναι αὐτὸν πατέρα, οὐκ ἀεὶ δὲ ἦν πατὴρ, οὐκ ἀεὶ ἄρα τὸ καλὸν ἦν ἐν αὐτῷ. Though to this it might be objected that by the incarnation of the Logos and the permanent reception of human nature into fellowship with the divine, a certain change has passed, after all, upon the deity.

<sup>2</sup> Orat. ii. c. Arianos, c. 1 sqq. (p. 469 sqq.); Orat. iii. c. 66 (p. 615), and elsewhere.

<sup>3</sup> This last argument, in the formally logical point of view, may not be perfectly valid; for there may as well be a distinction between an ideal and real fatherhood, as between an ideal and real creatorship; and, on the other hand, one might reason with as good right backwards from the notion of essential omnipotence to an eternal creation, and say with Hegel: Without the world God is not God. But from the speculative and ethical point of view a difference must unquestionably be admitted, and an element of truth be acknowledged in the argument of Athanasius. The Father needed the Son for his own self-consciousness, which is inconceivable without an object. God is essentially love, and this realizes itself in the relation of Father and Son, and in the fellowship of the Spirit: *Ubi amor ibi trinitas*.

<sup>4</sup> Orat. i. c. 29 (p. 438): Τὸ ποίημα ἔξωθεν τοῦ ποιούντος ἐστίν . . . ὁ δὲ υἱὸς ἴδιον τῆς οὐσίας γέννημά ἐστι· διὸ καὶ τὸ μὲν ποίημα οὐκ ἀνάγκη ἀεὶ εἶναι, ὅτε γὰρ βούλεται ὁ δημιουργὸς ἐργάζεσθαι, τὸ δὲ γέννημα οὐ βουλήσεται ὑπάκειναι, ἀλλὰ τῆς οὐσίας ἐστὶν ἰδιότης.



light rises from fire, and is inseparable from it, so the Word from God, the Wisdom from the Wise, and the Son from the Father.<sup>1</sup> The Son, therefore, was in the beginning, that is, in the beginning of the eternal divine being, in the original beginning, or from eternity. He himself calls himself one with the Father, and Paul praises him as God blessed forever.<sup>2</sup>

Finally Christ cannot be a proper object of worship, as he is represented in Scripture and has always been regarded in the Church, without being strictly divine. To worship a creature is idolatry.

When we attentively peruse the warm, vigorous, eloquent, and discriminating controversial writings of Athanasius and his co-laborers, and compare with them the vague, barren, almost entirely negative assertions and superficial arguments of their opponents, we cannot escape the impression that, with all their exegetical and dialectical defects in particulars, they have on their side an overwhelming preponderance of positive truth, the authority of holy Scripture, the profounder speculations of reason, and the prevailing traditional faith of the early church.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Comp. the 4th Oration against the Arians, cap. 1 sqq. (p. 617 sqq.)

<sup>2</sup> The *Θεός* in the well-known passage, Rom. ix. 5, is thus repeatedly by Athanasius, *c. g.*, Orat. i. contra Arianos, c. 11; Orat. iv. c. 1, and by other fathers (Irenæus, Tertullian, Cyprian, Origen, Chrysostom), as well as by the Reformers and most of the orthodox expositors, referred to Christ. This interpretation, too, is most suitable to the connection, and in perfect harmony with the Christology of Paul, who sets forth Christ as the image of God, the possessor of the fulness of the divine life and glory, the object of worship (Phil. ii. 6; Col. i. 15 ff.; ii. 9; 2 Cor. iv. 4; Eph. v. 5; 1 Tim. iii. 16; Tit. ii. 13); and who therefore, as well as John, i. 1, could call him in the predicative sense *Θεός*, *i. e.*, of divine essence, in distinction from *ὁ Θεός* with the article.

<sup>3</sup> We say the prevailing *faith*; not denying that the theological *knowledge* and *statement* of the doctrine of the trinity had hitherto been in many respects indefinite and wavering. The learned bishop Bull, indeed, endeavored to prove, in opposition to the Jesuit Petavius, that the ante-Nicene fathers taught concerning the deity of the Son the very same things as the Nicene. Comp. the Preface to his *Defensio fidei Nicenæ*, ed. Burton, Ox. 1827, vol. v. Pars. 1, p. ix.: "De summa rei, quam aliis persuadere volo, plane ipsa, neque id temere, persuasus sum, nempe, quod de Filii divinitate contra Arium, idem re ipsa (quanquam aliis fortasse nonnunquam verbis, alioque loquendi modo) docuisse Patres ac doctores ecclesiæ probatos ad unum omnes, qui ante tempora synodi Nicenæ, ab ipsa usque apostolorum ætate, floruerunt." But this assertion can be maintained only by an artificial and forced

The spirit and tendency of the Nicene doctrine is edifying: it magnifies Christ and Christianity. The Arian error is cold and heartless, degrades Christ to the sphere of the creature, and endeavors to substitute a heathen deification of the creature for the true worship of God. For this reason also the faith in the true and essential deity of Christ has to this day an inexhaustible vitality, while the irrational Arian fiction of a half-deity, creating the world and yet himself created, long ago entirely outlived itself.<sup>1</sup>

### § 128. *The Doctrine of the Holy Spirit.*

The decision of Nicæa related primarily only to the essential deity of Christ. But in the wider range of the Arian controversies the deity of the Holy Ghost, which stands and falls with the deity of the Son, was indirectly involved. The church always, indeed, connected *faith* in the Holy Spirit with faith in the Father and Son, but considered the *doctrines* concerning the Holy Spirit as only an appendix to the doctrine concerning the Father and the Son, until the logical progress brought it to lay equal emphasis on the deity and personality of the Holy Ghost, and to place him with the Father and Son as an element of equal claim in the Trinity.

The Arians made the Holy Ghost the first creature of the Son, and as subordinate to the Son as the Son to the Father. The Arian trinity was therefore not a trinity immanent and eternal, but arising in time and in descending grades, consisting of the uncreated God and two created demi-gods. The Semi-Arians here, as elsewhere, approached the orthodox doctrine, but rejected the consubstantiality, and asserted the creation, of the Spirit. Thus especially MACEDONIUS, a moderate Semi-Arian, whom the Arian court-party had driven from the episcopal chair of Constantinople. From him the adherents

interpretation of many passages, and goes upon a mechanical and lifeless view of history. Comp. also the observations of W. Cunningham, *Historical Theology*, vol. I. p. 269 ff.

<sup>1</sup> Dorner, l. c. i. p. 883, justly says: "Not only to the mind of our time, but to

of the false doctrine concerning the Holy Spirit, were, after 362, called *MACEDONIANS*; <sup>1</sup> also *PNEUMATOMACHI*,<sup>2</sup> and *TROPICOL*.<sup>3</sup>

Even among the adherents of the Nicene orthodoxy an uncertainty still for a time prevailed respecting the doctrine of the third person of the Holy Trinity. Some held the Spirit to be an impersonal power or attribute of God; others, at farthest, would not go beyond the expressions of the Scriptures. Gregory Nazianzen, who for his own part believed and taught the consubstantiality of the Holy Ghost with the Father and the Son, so late as 380 made the remarkable concession: <sup>4</sup> "Of the wise among us, some consider the Holy Ghost an influence, others a creature, others God himself," and again others know not which way to decide, from reverence, as they say, for the Holy Scripture, which declares nothing exact in the case. For this reason they waver between worshipping and not worshipping the Holy Ghost,<sup>5</sup> and strike a middle course, which is in fact, however, a bad one." Basil, in 370, still carefully avoided calling the Holy Ghost *God*, though with the view of gaining the weak. Hilary of Poitiers believed that the Spirit, who searches the deep things of God, must be divine, but could find no Scripture passage in which he is called God, and thought that he must be content with the *existence* of the Holy Ghost, which the Scripture teaches and the heart attests.<sup>6</sup>

But the church could not possibly satisfy itself with only two in one. The baptismal formula and the apostolic benedic-

all sound reason, does it seem absurd, nay, superstitious, that an under-god, a finite, created being, should be the creator."

<sup>1</sup> Μακεδονιστοί.

<sup>2</sup> Πνευματόμαχοι.

<sup>3</sup> Τροπικοί. This name comes probably from their explaining as mere tropes (figurative expressions) or metaphors the passages of Scripture from which the orthodox derived the deity of the Holy Spirit. Comp. Athanas., *Ad Serap. Ep. i. c. 2* (tom. i. Pars ii. p. 649).

<sup>4</sup> Orat. xxxi. De Spiritu sancto, cap. 5 (Op. tom. i. p. 559, and in Thilo's *Bibliotheca P. Gr. dogm. vol. ii. p. 503*). .

<sup>5</sup> Τῶν καθ' ἡμᾶς σοφῶν οἱ μὲν ἐνέργειαν τοῦτο [τὸ πνεῦμα ἅγιον] ἐπέλαβον, οἱ δὲ ἐπίσταμα, οἱ δὲ Θεόν.

<sup>6</sup> Οὐτε σέβουσιν, οὐτε ἀτιμάζουσιν.

<sup>7</sup> De trinitate, ii. 29; and xii. 55.

tion, as well as the traditional trinitarian doxologies, put the Holy Ghost on an equality with the Father and the Son, and require a divine tri-personality resting upon a unity of essence. The divine triad tolerates in itself no inequality of essence, no mixture of Creator and creature. Athanasius well perceived this, and advocated with decision the consubstantiality of the Holy Spirit against the Pneumatomachi or Tropicists.<sup>1</sup> Basil did the same,<sup>2</sup> and Gregory of Nazianzum,<sup>3</sup> Gregory of Nyssa,<sup>4</sup> Didymus,<sup>5</sup> and Ambrose.<sup>6</sup>

This doctrine conquered at the councils of Alexandria, A. D. 362, of Rome, 375, and finally of Constantinople, 381, and became an essential constituent of the ecumenical orthodoxy.

Accordingly the Creed of Constantinople supplemented the Nicene with the important addition: "And in the Holy Ghost, who is Lord and Giver of life, who with the Father is worshipped and glorified, who spake by the prophets."<sup>7</sup>

This declares the consubstantiality of the Holy Ghost, not indeed in words, yet in fact, and challenges for him divine dignity and worship.

The exegetical proofs employed by the Nicene fathers for the deity of the Holy Ghost are chiefly the following. The Holy Ghost is nowhere in Scripture reckoned among creatures

<sup>1</sup> In the four Epistles to Serapion, bishop of Thmuis, written in 362 (Ep. ad Serapionem Thmuitanum episcopum contra illos qui blasphemant et dicunt Spiritum S. rem creatam esse), in his Opera, ed. Bened. tom. i. Pars ii. pp. 647-714; also in Thilo's Biblioth. Patr. Græc. dogmatica, vol. i. pp. 666-819.

<sup>2</sup> De Spiritu Sancto ad S. Amphilochium Iconii episcopum (Opera, ed. Bened. tom. iii. and in Thilo's Bibl. vol. ii. pp. 182-243).

<sup>3</sup> Orat. xxxi. De Spiritu Sancto (Opera, tom. i. p. 556 sqq. and in Thilo's Bibl. vol. ii. pp. 497-537).

<sup>4</sup> Orat. catech. c. 2. Comp. Rupp, Gregor v. Nyssa, p. 169 sq.

<sup>5</sup> De Spiritu S. translated by Jerome.

<sup>6</sup> De Spiritu S. libri 3.

<sup>7</sup> Similar additions had already been previously made to the Nicene Creed. Thus Epiphanius in his *Anchiratus*, c. 120, which was written in 374, gives the Nicene Creed as then already in general use with the following passage on the Holy Spirit: *Καὶ εἰς τὸ ἅγιον πνεῦμα πιστεύομεν, τὸ λαλήσαν ἐν νόμῳ, καὶ κηρύξαν ἐν τοῖς προφήταις καὶ καταβὰν ἐπὶ τὸν Ἰορδάνην, λαλοῦν ἐν ἀποστόλοις, οἰκοῦν ἐν ἁγίοις· οὕτως δὲ πιστεύομεν ἐν αὐτῷ, ὅτι ἐστὶ πνεῦμα ἅγιον, πνεῦμα Θεοῦ, πνεῦμα τέλειον, πνεῦμα παράκλητον, ἄκτιστον, ἐκ τοῦ πατρὸς ἐκπορευόμενον, καὶ ἐκ τοῦ υἱοῦ λαμβανόμενον καὶ πιστευόμενον.* His shorter Creed, Anc. c. 119 (in Migne's ed. tom. iii. 231), even

or angels, but is placed in God himself, co-eternal with God, as that which searches the depths of Godhead (1 Cor. ii. 11, 12). He fills the universe, and is everywhere present (Ps. cxxxix. 7), while creatures, even angels, are in definite places. He was active even in the creation (Gen. i. 3), and filled Moses and the prophets. From him proceeds the divine work of regeneration and sanctification (John iii. 5; Rom. i. 4; viii. 11; 1 Cor. vi. 11; Tit. iii. 5-7; Eph. iii. 16; v. 17, 19, &c). He is the source of all gifts in the church (1 Cor. xii). He dwells in believers, like the Father and the Son, and makes them partakers of the divine life. Blasphemy against the Holy Ghost is the extreme sin, which cannot be forgiven (Matt. xii. 31). Lying to the Holy Ghost is called lying to God (Acts v. 3, 4). In the formula of baptism (Matt. xxviii. 19), and likewise in the apostolic benediction (2 Cor. xiii. 13), the Holy Ghost is put on a level with the Father and the Son, and yet distinguished from both; he must therefore be truly divine, yet at the same time a self-conscious person.<sup>1</sup> The Holy Ghost is the source of sanctification, and unites us with the divine life, and thus must himself be divine. The divine trinity tolerates in itself nothing created and changeable. As the Son is begotten of the Father from eternity, so the Spirit proceeds from the Father through the Son. (The procession of the Spirit *from the Son*, on the contrary, is a subsequent inference of the Latin church from the consubstantiality of the Son, and was unknown to the Nicene fathers.)

The distinction between generation and procession is not particularly defined. Augustine calls both ineffable and inexplicable.<sup>2</sup> The doctrine of the Holy Ghost was not in any respect so accurately developed in this period, as the doctrine concerning Christ, and it shows many gaps.

literally agrees with that of Constantinople, but in both he adds the anathema of the original Nicene Creed.

<sup>1</sup> The well-known passage concerning the three witnesses in heaven, 1 John v. 7, is not cited by the Nicene fathers: a strong evidence that it was wanting in the manuscripts of the Bible at that time.

<sup>2</sup> "Ego distinguere nescio, non valeo, non sufficio, propterea quia sicut generatio ita processio inenarrabilis est."

§ 129. *The Nicene and Constantinopolitan Creed.*

We look now at the Creeds of Nicæa and Constantinople side by side, which sum up the result of these long controversies. We mark the differences by inclosing in brackets the parts of the former omitted by the latter, and italicizing the additions which the latter makes to the former.

THE NICENE CREED OF 325.<sup>1</sup> THE NICÆNO-CONSTANTINOPOLITAN CREED OF 381.<sup>2</sup>

Πιστεύομεν εἰς ἕνα Θεόν, πατέρα παντοκράτορα, πάντων ὁρατῶν τε καὶ ἀόρατων ποιητήν.

Καὶ εἰς ἕνα κύριον Ἰησοῦν Χριστόν, τὸν υἱὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ· γεννηθέντα ἐκ τοῦ πατρὸς [μονογενῆ· τοῦτ' ἐστὶν ἐκ τῆς οὐσίας τοῦ πατρὸς· Θεὸν ἐκ Θεοῦ καὶ <sup>3</sup>] φῶς ἐκ φωτός, Θεὸν ἀληθινὸν ἐκ Θεοῦ ἀληθινοῦ· γεννηθέντα, οὐ ποιηθέντα, ὁμοούσιον τῷ πατρὶ· δι' οὗ τὰ πάντα ἐγένετο [τὰ τε ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ καὶ τὰ ἐν

Πιστεύομεν εἰς ἕνα Θεόν, πατέρα παντοκράτορα, ποιητὴν οὐρανοῦ καὶ γῆς, ὁρατῶν τε πάντων καὶ ἀόρατων.

Καὶ εἰς ἕνα κύριον Ἰησοῦν Χριστόν τὸν υἱὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ τὸν μονογενῆ· τὸν ἐκ τοῦ πατρὸς γεννηθέντα πρὸ πάντων τῶν αἰώνων· φῶς ἐκ φωτός, Θεὸν ἀληθινὸν ἐκ Θεοῦ ἀληθινοῦ, γεννηθέντα, οὐ ποιηθέντα, ὁμοούσιον τῷ πατρὶ· δι' οὗ τὰ πάντα ἐγένετο· τὸν δι' ἡμᾶς τοὺς ἀνθρώπους καὶ διὰ τὴν ἡμετέραν σωτηρίαν κατ-

<sup>1</sup> It is found, together with the similar Eusebian (Palestinian) confession, in the well-known Epistle of Eusebius of Cæsarea to his diocese (Epist. ad suos parochie homines), which is given by Athanasius at the close of his Epist. de decretis Nicænae Synodi (Opera, tom. i. p. 239, and in Thilo's Bibl. vol. i. p. 84 sq.); also, though with some variations, by Theodoret, H. E. i. 12, and Socrates, H. E. i. 8. Sozomen omitted it (H. E. i. 10) from respect to the *disciplina arcani*. The Symbolum Nicænum is given also, with unessential variations, by Athanasius in his letter to the emperor Jovian, c. 3, and by Gelasius Cyzic., Lib. Synod. de Concil. Nicæno, li. 35. On the unimportant variations in the text, comp. Walch, Bibl. symbol. p. 75 sqq., and A. Hahn, Bibliothek der Symbole, 1842. Comp. also the parallel Creeds of the Nicene age in the Appendix to Pearson's Exposition of the Creed.

<sup>2</sup> Found in the Acts of the second ecumenical council in all the collections (Mansi, tom. iii. 566; Harduin, i. 814). It probably does not come directly from this council, still less from the individual authorship of Gregory of Nyssa or Gregory of Nazianzum to whom it has sometimes been ascribed, but the additions by which it is distinguished from the Nicene, were already extant in substance under different forms (in the Symbolum Epiphani, for example, and the Symb. Basilii Magni), and took shape gradually in the course of the controversy. It is striking that it is not mentioned as distinct from the Nicene by Gregory Nazianzen in his Epist. 102 to Cledonius (tom. ii. 98 ed. Paris. 1842), nor by the third ecumenical council at Ephesus. On the other hand, it was twice recited at the council of Chalcedon, twice adopted in the acts, and thus solemnly sanctioned. Comp. Hefele, li. 11, 12.

<sup>3</sup> Καὶ is wanting in Athanasius (De decretis, etc.).

τῇ γῇ·] τὸν δὲ ἡμῶς τοὺς ἀνθρώπους καὶ διὰ τὴν ἡμετέραν σωτηρίαν κατελθόντα καὶ σαρκωθέντα, καὶ ἑνανθρωπήσαντα· παθόντα<sup>3</sup> καὶ ἀναστάντα τῇ τρίτῃ ἡμέρᾳ, ἀνελθόντα εἰς τοὺς<sup>4</sup> οὐρανοὺς,<sup>5</sup> ἐρχόμενον κρῖναι ζῶντας καὶ νεκρούς.

ελθόντα ἐκ τῶν οὐρανῶν, καὶ σαρκωθέντα ἐκ πνεύματος ἁγίου καὶ Μαρίας τῆς παρθένου, καὶ ἑνανθρωπήσαντα· σταυρωθέντα τε ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν ἐπὶ Ποντίου Πιλάτου, καὶ παθόντα, καὶ ταφέντα, καὶ ἀναστάντα τῇ τρίτῃ ἡμέρᾳ κατὰ τὰς γραφάς, καὶ ἀνελθόντα εἰς τοὺς οὐρανοὺς, καὶ καθεζόμενον ἐκ δεξιῶν τοῦ πατρὸς, καὶ πάλιν ἐρχόμενον μετὰ δόξης κρῖναι ζῶντας καὶ νεκρούς· οὗ τῆς βασιλείας οὐκ ἔσται τέλος.

Καὶ εἰς τὸ ἅγιον πνεῦμα.

Καὶ εἰς τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον, τὸ κύριον, τὸ ζωοποιόν, τὸ ἐκ τοῦ πατρὸς ἐκπορευόμενον, τὸ σὺν πατρὶ καὶ υἱῷ προσκυνούμενον καὶ συνδοξαζόμενον, τὸ λαλῆσαν διὰ τῶν προφητῶν.—Εἰς μίαν ἁγίαν καθολικὴν καὶ ἀποστολικὴν ἐκκλησίαν· ὁμολογοῦμεν ἓν βάπτισμα εἰς ἅφεσιν ἁμαρτιῶν· προσδοκῶμεν ἀνάστασιν νεκρῶν καὶ ζωὴν τοῦ μέλλοντος αἰῶνος. Ἀμήν.

[Τοὺς δὲ λέγοντας, ὅτι<sup>1</sup> ἦν ποτε ὅτε οὐκ ἦν· καὶ· πρὶν γεννηθῆναι οὐκ ἦν· καὶ ὅτι ἐξ οὐκ ὄντων ἐγένετο· ἢ ἐξ ἑτέρας ὑποστάσεως ἢ οὐσίας<sup>2</sup> φάσκοντας εἶναι· ἢ κτιστὸν, ἢ τρεπτὸν, ἢ ἁλλοιωτὸν τὸν υἱὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ· ἀναθεματίζ(ει ἡ ἁγία καθολικὴ καὶ ἀποστολικὴ<sup>3</sup> ἐκκλησία.)]

"We believe in one God, the Father Almighty, Maker of all things visible and invisible.

"We believe in one God, the Father Almighty, Maker of *heaven and earth, and of* all things visible and invisible.

"And in one Lord Jesus Christ, the

"And in one Lord Jesus Christ, the

<sup>1</sup> Καὶ is wanting in Athanasius; Socrates and Gelasius have it.

<sup>2</sup> Gelasius adds ταφέντα, *buried*.

<sup>3</sup> Without the article in Athanasius.

<sup>4</sup> Al. καί.

<sup>5</sup> Athanasius omits ὅτι.

<sup>6</sup> Here *hypostasis* and *essence* are still used interchangeably; though Basil and Bull endeavor to prove a distinction. Comp. on the contrary, Petavius, *De trinit.* l. iv. c. 1 (p. 314 sqq.). Rufinus, i. 6, translates: "Ex alia subsistentia aut substantia."

<sup>7</sup> Athanasius omits ἁγία and ἀποστολική, Theodoret has both predicates, Socrates has ἀποστολική, all read καθολική.

Son of God, begotten of the Father [the only-begotten, i. e., of the essence of the Father, God of God, and] Light of Light, very God of very God, begotten, not made, being of one substance with the Father; by whom all things were made [in heaven and on earth]; who for us men, and for our salvation, came down and was incarnate and was made man; he suffered, and the third day he rose again, ascended into heaven; from thence he cometh to judge the quick and the dead.

"And in the Holy Ghost.

[<sup>1</sup> "And those who say: there was a time when he was not; and: he was not before he was made; and: he was made out of nothing, or out of another substance or thing, or the Son of God is created, or changeable, or alterable;—they are condemned by the holy catholic and apostolic church."]

*only-begotten* Son of God, begotten of the Father *before all worlds* (*æons*),<sup>1</sup> Light of Light, very God of very God, begotten, not made, being of one substance with the Father; by whom all things were made; who for us men, and for our salvation, came down *from heaven*, and was incarnate *by the Holy Ghost of the Virgin Mary*, and was made man; he was crucified for us under Pontius Pilate, and suffered, and was buried, and the third day he rose again, according to the Scriptures, and ascended into heaven, and sitteth on the right hand of the Father; from thence he cometh again, with glory, to judge the quick and the dead; whose kingdom shall have no end.<sup>2</sup>

"And in the Holy Ghost, who is Lord and Giver of life, who proceedeth from the Father, who with the Father and the Son together is worshipped and glorified, who speaks by the prophets.—In one holy catholic and apostolic church; we acknowledge one baptism for the remission of sins; we look for the resurrection of the dead, and the life of the world to come. Amen."<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> This addition appears as early as the creeds of the council of Antioch in 341.

<sup>2</sup> This addition likewise is found substantially in the Antiochian creeds of 341, and is directed against Marcellus of Ancyra, Sabellius, and Paul of Samosata, who taught that the union of the power of God (*ἐνέργεια θεαστική*) with the man Jesus will cease at the end of the world, so that the Son and His kingdom are not eternal. Comp. Hefele, i. 438 and 507 sq.

<sup>3</sup> Similar additions concerning the Holy Ghost, the catholic church, baptism and His everlasting are found in the older symbols of Cyril of Jerusalem, Basil, and the two Creeds of Epiphanius. See § 128 above, and Appendix to Pearson on the Creed, p. 594 ff.



A careful comparison shows that the Constantinopolitan Creed is a considerable improvement on the Nicene, both in its omission of the anathema at the close, and in its addition of the articles concerning the Holy Ghost and concerning the church and the way of salvation. The addition: *according to the Scriptures*, is also important, as an acknowledgment of this divine and infallible guide to the truth. The whole is more complete and symmetrical than the Nicænum, and in this respect is more like the Apostles' Creed, which, in like manner, begins with the creation and ends with the resurrection and the life everlasting, and is disturbed by no polemical dissonance; but the Apostles' Creed is much more simple in structure, and thus better adapted to the use of a congregation and of youth, than either of the others.

The Constantinopolitan Creed maintained itself for a time by the side of the Nicene, and after the council of Chalcedon in 451, where it was for the first time formally adopted, it gradually displaced the other. Since that time it has itself commonly borne the name of the Nicene Creed. Yet the original Nicene confession is still in use in some schismatic sects of the Eastern church.

The Latin church adopted the improved Nicene symbol from the Greek, but admitted, in the article on the Holy Ghost, the further addition of the well-known *filioque*, which was first inserted at a council of Toledo in 589, and subsequently gave rise to bitter disputes between the two churches.

### § 130. *The Nicene Doctrine of the Trinity. The Trinitarian Terminology.*

The doctrine of the essential deity and the personality of the Holy Ghost completed the Nicene doctrine of the Trinity; and of this doctrine as a whole we can now take a closer view.

This fundamental and comprehensive dogma secured both the unity and the full life of the Christian conception of God; and in this respect it represents, as no other dogma does, the whole of Christianity. It forms a bulwark against heathen

polytheism on the one hand, and Jewish deism and abstract monotheism on the other. It avoids the errors and combines the truth of these two opposite conceptions. Against the pagans, says Gregory of Nyssa, we hold the unity of essence; against the Jews, the distinction of hypostases. We do not reject all multiplicity, but only such as destroys the unity of the being, like the pagan polytheism; no more do we reject all unity, but only such unity as denies diversity and full vital action. The orthodox doctrine of the Trinity, furthermore, formed the true mean between Sabellianism and tritheism, both of which taught a divine triad, but at the expense, in the one case, of the personal distinctions, in the other, of the essential unity. It exerted a wholesome regulative influence on the other dogmas. It overcame all theories of emanation, established the Christian conception of creation by a strict distinction of that which proceeds from the essence of God, and is one with him, like the Son and the Spirit, from that which arises out of nothing by the free will of God, and is of different substance. It provided for an activity and motion of knowledge and love in the divine essence, without the Origenistic hypothesis of an eternal creation. And by the assertion of the true deity of the Redeemer and the Sanctifier, it secured the divine character of the work of redemption and sanctification.

The Nicene fathers did not pretend to have exhausted the mystery of the Trinity, and very well understood that all human knowledge, especially in this deepest, central dogma, proves itself but fragmentary. All speculation on divine things ends in a mystery, and reaches an inexplicable residue, before which the thinking mind must bow in humble devotion. "Man," says Athanasius, "can perceive only the hem of the garment of the triune God; the cherubim cover the rest with their wings." In his letter to the Monks, written about 358, he confesses that the further he examines, the more the mystery eludes his understanding,<sup>1</sup> and he exclaims with the Psalmist: "Such knowledge is too wonderful for me; it

<sup>1</sup> Ep. ad Monachos (Opera, tom. I. p. 843).

is high, I cannot attain unto it.”<sup>1</sup> Augustine says in one place: “If we be asked to define the Trinity, we can only say, it is not this or that.”<sup>2</sup> But though we cannot explain the how or why of our faith, still the Christian may know, and should know, what he believes, and what he does not believe, and should be persuaded of the facts and truths which form the matter of his faith.

The essential points of the orthodox doctrine of the Trinity are these:

1. There is only *one* divine *essence* or *substance*.<sup>3</sup> Father, Son, and Spirit are one in essence, or consubstantial.<sup>4</sup> They are in one another, inseparable, and cannot be conceived without each other. In this point the Nicene doctrine is thoroughly monotheistic or monarchian, in distinction from tritheism, which is but a new form of the polytheism of the pagans.

The terms *essence* (οὐσία) and *nature* (φύσις), in the philosophical sense, denote not an individual, a personality, but the *genus* or *species*; not *unum in numero*, but *ens unum in multis*. All men are of the same substance, partake of the same human nature, though as persons and individuals they are very different.<sup>5</sup> The term *homoousion*, in its strict grammatical sense, differs from *monoousion* or *toutoousion*, as well as from *heteroousion*, and signifies not numerical identity, but equality of essence or community of nature among several beings. It is clearly used thus in the Chalcedonian symbol, where it is said that Christ is “consubstantial (*homoousios*) with the Father as touching the Godhead, and consubstantial

<sup>1</sup> Ps. cxxxix. 6.

<sup>2</sup> Enarrat. in Ps. xxvi. 8. John Damascenus (Expos. fidei) almost reaches the Socratic confession, when he says: All we can know concerning the divine nature is, that it cannot be conceived. Of course, such concessions are to be understood *cum grano salis*.

<sup>3</sup> Οὐσία, *substantia*, *essentia*, φύσις, *natura*, τὸ ὄν, τὸ ὑποκείμενον. Comp. Petavius, De Trinitate, lib. iv. c. 1 (ed. Par. tom. ii. p. 311): “Christiani scriptores . . . οὐσίαν appellant non singularem individuumque, sed communem individuis substantiam.” The word ὑποκείμενον, however, is sometimes taken as equivalent to πρόσωπον.

<sup>4</sup> Ὁμοούσιον. On the import of this, comp. § 127, and in the text above.

<sup>5</sup> “We men,” says Athanasius, “consisting of body and soul, are all *μία φύσις* *καὶ οὐσία*, but many persons.”

with us [and yet individually distinct from us] as touching the manhood." The Nicene Creed does not expressly assert the singleness or numerical unity of the divine essence (unless it be in the first article: "We believe in *one* God"); and the main point with the Nicene fathers was to urge against Arianism the strict divinity and essential equality of the Son and Holy Ghost with the Father. If we press the difference of *homoousion* from *monousion*, and overlook the many passages in which they assert with equal emphasis the *monarchia* or numerical unity of the Godhead, we must charge them with tritheism.<sup>1</sup>

But in the divine Trinity consubstantiality denotes not only sameness of kind, but at the same time *numerical* unity; not merely the *unum in specie*, but also the *unum in numero*. The three persons are related to the divine substance not as three individuals to their species, as Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, or Peter, John, and Paul, to human nature; they are only one God. The divine substance is absolutely indivisible by reason of its simplicity, and absolutely inextensible and untransferable by reason of its infinity; whereas a corporeal substance can be divided, and the human nature can be multiplied by generation. Three divine substances would limit and exclude each other, and therefore could not be infinite or absolute. The whole fulness of the one undivided essence of God, with all its attributes, is in all the persons of the Trinity, though in each in his own way: in the Father as original principle, in the Son by eternal generation, in the Spirit by eternal procession. The church teaches not *one* divine essence *and* three persons, but *one* essence *in* three persons. Father, Son, and Spirit cannot be conceived as three separate individuals, but are in one another, and form a solidaric unity.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Cudworth (in his great work on the Intellectual System of the Universe, vol. II. p. 437 ff.) elaborately endeavors to show that Athanasius and the Nicene fathers actually taught three divine substances in the order of subordination. "But he makes no account of the fact that the terminology and the distinction of *ousia* and *hypostasis* were at that time not yet clearly settled.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. the passages from Athanasius and other fathers cited at § 126. "The Persons of the Trinity," says R. Hooker (Eccles. Polity, B. v. ch. 56, vol. II. p. 315

Many passages of the Nicene fathers have unquestionably a tritheistic sound, but are neutralized by others which by themselves may bear a Sabellian construction; so that their position must be regarded as midway between these two extremes. Subsequently John Philoponus, an Aristotelian and Monophysite in Alexandria about the middle of the sixth century, was charged with tritheism, because he made no distinction between *φύσις* and *ὑπόστασις*, and reckoned in the Trinity three natures, substances, and deities, according to the number of persons.<sup>1</sup>

in Keble's edition), quite in the spirit of the Nicene orthodoxy, "are not three particular substances to whom one *general* nature is common, but three that subsist by *one* substance *which itself is particular*: yet they all three have it, and their several ways of having it are that which makes their personal distinction. The Father therefore is in the Son, and the Son in Him, they both in the Spirit and the Spirit in both them. So that the Father's offspring, which is the Son, remaineth eternally in the Father; the Father eternally also in the Son, no way severed or divided by reason of the sole and single unity of their substance. The Son in the Father as light in that light out of which it floweth without separation; the Father in the Son as light in that light which it causeth and leaveth not. And because in this respect his eternal being is of the Father, which eternal being is his life, therefore he by the Father liveth." In a similar strain, Cunningham says in his exposition of the Nicene doctrine of the Trinity (Hist. Theology, i. p. 285): "The unity of the divine nature as distinguished from the nature of a creature, might be only a specific and not a numerical unity, and this nature might be possessed by more than one divine being; but the Scriptures plainly ascribe a numerical unity to the Supreme Being, and, of course, preclude the idea that there are several different beings who are possessed of the one divine nature. This is virtually the same thing as teaching us that the one divine nature is possessed only by one essence or substance, from which the conclusion is clear, that if the Father be possessed of the divine nature, and if the Son, with a distinct personality, be also possessed of the divine nature, the Father and the Son must be of one and the same substance; or rather—for it can scarcely with propriety be called a conclusion or consequence—the doctrine of the consubstantiality of the Son with the Father is just an expression or embodiment of the one great truth, the different component parts of which are each established by scriptural authority, viz.: that the Father and the Son, having distinct personality in the unity of the Godhead, are both equally possessed of the divine, as distinguished from the created, nature. Before any creature existed, or had been produced by God out of nothing, the Son existed in the possession of the divine nature. If this be true, and if it be also true that God is in any sense one, then it is likewise true—for this is just according to the established meaning of words, the current mode of expressing it—that the Father and the Son are the same in substance as well as equal in power and glory."

<sup>1</sup> On tritheism, and the doctrine of John Philoponus and John Ascoumages,

2. In this one divine essence there are *three persons*<sup>1</sup> or, to use a better term, *hypostases*,<sup>2</sup> that is, three different modes of

which is known to us only in fragments, comp. especially Baur, *Lehre von der Dreieinigkeit*, etc., vol. ii. pp. 13-32. In the English Church the error of tritheism was revived by Dean Sherlock in his "Vindication of the Doctrine of the Holy and ever Blessed Trinity," 1690. He maintained that, with the exception of a mutual consciousness of each other, which no created spirits can have, the three divine persons are "three distinct infinite minds" or "three intelligent beings." He was opposed by South, Wallis, and others. See Patrick Fairbairn's Appendix to the English translation of Dörner's *History of Christology*, vol. iii. p. 384 ff. (Edinburgh, 1863).

<sup>1</sup> *Πρόσωπα, personæ*. This term occurs very often in the New Testament, now in the sense of *person*, now of *face* or *countenance*, again of *form* or external appearance. Etymologically (from *πρός* and *ὤψ*, the eye, face), it means strictly *face*; then in general, *front*; also *mask*, *visor*, *character* (of a drama); and finally, *person*, in the grammatical sense. In like manner the Latin word *persona* (from *sonus*, sound) signifies the mask of the Roman actor, through which he made himself audible (*personatus*); then the actor himself; then any assumed or real character; and finally an individual, a reasonable being. Sabellianism used the word in the sense of face or character; tritheism, in the grammatical sense. Owing to this ambiguity of the word, the term *hypostasis* is to be preferred, though this too is somewhat inadequate. Comp. the Lexicons, and especially Petavius, *De trinit.*, lib. iv. Dr. Shedd also prefers *hypostasis*, and observes, vol. i. p. 371: "This term (*persona*), it is obvious to remark, though the more common one in English, and perhaps in Protestant trinitarianism generally, is not so well adapted to express the conception intended, as the Greek *ὑπόστασις*. It has a Sabellian leaning, because it does not with sufficient plainness indicate the *subsistence* in the Essence. The Father, Son, and Spirit are more than mere aspects or appearances of the Essence. The Latin *persona* was the mask worn by the actor in the play, and was representative of his particular character for the particular time. Now, although those who employed these terms undoubtedly gave them as full and solid a meaning as they could, and were undoubtedly true trinitarians, yet the representation of the eternal and necessary hypostatical distinctions in the Godhead, by terms derived from transitory scenical exhibitions, was not the best for purposes of science, even though the poverty of human language should justify their employment for popular and illustrative statements."

<sup>2</sup> *ὑποστάσεις, substantiæ*. Comp. Heb. i. 3. (The other passages of the New Testament where the word is used, Heb. iii. 14; xi. 1; 2 Cor. ix. 4; xi. 17, do not belong here.) *ὑπόστασις*, and the corresponding Latin *substantia*, strictly *foundation*, then *essence*, *substance*, is originally pretty much synonymous with *οὐσία*, *essentia*, and is in fact, as we have already said, frequently interchanged with it, even by Athanasius, and in the anathema at the close of the original Nicene Creed. But gradually (according to Petavius, after the council at Alexandria in 362) a distinction established itself in the church terminology, in which Gregory of Nyssa, particularly in his work: *De differentia essentiae et hypostaseos* (tom. iii. p. 32 sqq.) had an important influence. Comp. Petavius, l. c. p. 314 sqq.

subsistence' of the one same undivided and indivisible whole, which in the Scriptures are called the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost.<sup>1</sup> These distinctions are not merely different attributes, powers, or activities of the Godhead, still less merely subjective aspects under which it presents itself to the human mind; but each person expresses the whole fulness of the divine being with all its attributes, and the three persons stand in a relation of mutual knowledge and love. The Father communicates his very life to the Son, and the Spirit is the bond of union and communion between the two. The Son speaks, and as the God-*Man*, even prays, to the Father, thus standing over against him as a first person towards a second; and calls the Holy Ghost "another Comforter" whom he will send from the Father, thus speaking of him as of a third person.<sup>2</sup>

Here the orthodox doctrine forsook Sabellianism or modalism, which, it is true, made Father, Son, and Spirit strictly coördinate, but only as different denominations and forms of manifestation of the one God.

But, on the other hand, as we have already intimated, the term *person* must not be taken here in the sense current among men, as if the three persons were three different individuals, or three self-conscious and separately acting beings. The trinitarian idea of personality lies midway between that of a mere

<sup>1</sup> Τρόποι ὑπάρξεως, an expression, however, capable of a Sabellian sense.

<sup>2</sup> This question of the *tri-personality* of God must not be confounded with the modern question of the *personality* of God in general. The tri-personality was asserted by the Nicene fathers in opposition to abstract monarchianism and Sabellianism; the personality is asserted by Christian theism against pantheism, which makes a personal relation of the spirit of man to God impossible. Schleiermacher, who as a philosopher leaned decidedly to pantheism, admitted (in a note to his *Reden über die Religion*) that devotion and prayer always presume and require the personality of God. The philosophical objection, that personality necessarily includes limitation by other personalities, and so contradicts the notion of the absoluteness of God, is untenable; for we can as well conceive an absolute personality, as an absolute intelligence and an absolute will, to which, however, the power of self-limitation must be ascribed, not as a weakness, but as a perfection. The orthodox tri-personality does not conflict with this total personality, but gives it full organic life.

<sup>3</sup> John xiv. 16: ἄλλον παράκλητον, comp. v. 26; c. xv. 26: ὁ παράκλητος, ὃς ἐγὼ πέμψω ὑμῖν παρὰ πατρός,—a clear distinction of Spirit, Son, and Father.

form of manifestation, or a personation, which would lead to Sabellianism, and the idea of an independent, limited human personality, which would result in tritheism. In other words, it avoids the *monousian* or unitarian trinity of a threefold conception and aspect of one and the same being, and the *triousian* or tritheistic trinity of three distinct and separate beings.<sup>1</sup> In each person there is the same inseparable divine substance, united with the individual property and relation which distinguishes that person from the others. The word *person* is in reality only a make-shift, in the absence of a more adequate term. Our idea of God is more true and deep than our terminology, and the essence and character of God far transcends our highest ideas.\*

The Nicene fathers and Augustine endeavored, as Tertullian and Dionysius of Alexandria had already done, to illustrate the Trinity by analogies from created existence. Their figures were sun, ray, and light; fountain, stream, and flow; root,

<sup>1</sup> Comp. Petavius, l. c., who discusses very fully the trinitarian terminology of the Nicene fathers. Also J. H. Newman, *The Arians*, etc. p. 208: "The word *person*, which we venture to use in speaking of those three distinct manifestations of Himself, which it has pleased Almighty God to give us, is in its philosophical sense too wide for our meaning. Its essential signification, as applied to ourselves, is that of an *individual intelligent agent*, answering to the Greek *ὑπόστασις*, or *reality*. On the other hand, if we restrict it to its etymological sense of *persona* or *πρόσωπον*, i. e., *character*, it evidently means less than Scripture doctrine, which we wish to ascertain by it; denoting merely certain outward expressions of the Supreme Being relatively to ourselves, which are of an accidental and variable nature. The statements of Revelation then lie between this internal and external view of the Divine Essence, between Tritheism, and what is popularly called Unitarianism." Dr. Shedd, *History of Christian Doctrine*, vol. i. p. 365: "The doctrine of a subsistence in the substance of the Godhead brings to view a species of existence that is so anomalous and unique, that the human mind derives little or no aid from those analogies which assist it in all other cases. The hypostasis is a real subsistence,—a solid essential form of existence, and not a mere emanation, or energy, or manifestation,—but it is intermediate between substance and attributes. It is not identical with the substance, for there are not three substances. It is not identical with attributes, for the three Persons each and equally possess all the divine attributes. . . . Hence the human mind is called upon to grasp the notion of a species of existence that is totally *sui generis*, and not capable of illustration by any of the ordinary comparisons and analogies."

\* As Augustine says, *De trinitate*, lib. vii. cap. 4 (§ 7, ed. Bened. Venet. tom. viii. fol. 858): "Verius cogitatur Deus quam dicitur, et verius est quam cogitatur."



stem, and fruit; the colors of the rainbow; <sup>1</sup> soul, thought, and spirit; <sup>2</sup> memory, intelligence, and will; <sup>3</sup> and the idea of love, which affords the best illustration, for God is love.<sup>4</sup> Such figures are indeed confessedly insufficient as proofs, and, if pressed, might easily lead to utterly erroneous conceptions. For example: sun, ray, and light are not co-ordinate, but the two latter are merely qualities or emanations of the first. "Omne simile claudicat."<sup>5</sup> Analogies, however, here do the negative service of repelling the charge of unreasonableness from a doctrine which is in fact the highest reason, and which has been acknowledged in various forms by the greatest philosophers, from Plato to Schelling and Hegel, though often in an entirely unscriptural sense. A certain trinity undeniably runs through all created life, and is especially reflected in manifold ways in man, who is created after the image of God; in the relation of body, soul, and spirit; in the faculties of thought, feeling, and will; in the nature of self-consciousness; <sup>6</sup> and in the nature of love.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Used by Basil and Gregory of Nyssa.

<sup>2</sup> Ψυχὴ, ἐκδύμησης, πνεῦμα, in Gregory Nazianzen.

<sup>3</sup> Augustine, De trinit. x. c. 11 (§ 18), tom. viii. fol. 898: "Hæc tria, memoria, intelligentia, voluntas, quoniam non sunt tres vitæ, sed una vita, nec tres mentes, sed una mens: consequenter utique non tres substantiæ sunt, sed una substantia."

<sup>4</sup> Augustine, ib. viii. 8 (f. 875): "Immo vero vides trinitatem, si caritatem vides;" ix. 2 (f. 879): "Tria sunt, amans, et quod amatur, et amor." And in another place: "Tres sunt, amans, amatus, et mutus amor."

<sup>5</sup> This was clearly felt and confessed by the fathers themselves, who used these illustrations merely as helps to their understanding. Joh. Damascenus (De fide orthod. l. i. c. 8; Opera, tom. i. p. 137) says: "It is impossible for any image to be found in created things, representing in itself the nature of the Holy Trinity without any point of dissimilitude. For can a thing created, and compound, and changeable, and circumscribed, and corruptible, clearly express the superessential divine essence, which is exempt from all these defects?" Comp. Mosheim's notes to Cudworth, vol. ii. 422 f. (Lond. ed. of 1845).

<sup>6</sup> The trinity of self-consciousness consists in a process of becoming objective to one's self, and knowing one's self in this objectivity, according to the logical law of thesis, antithesis, and synthesis, or in the unity of the subject thinking and the subject thought. This speculative argument has been developed by Leibnitz, Hegel, and other German philosophers, and is adopted also by Dr. Shedd, Hist. of Christian Doct. i. p. 366 ff., note. But this analogy properly leads at best only to a Sabellian tri-personality, not to the orthodox.

<sup>7</sup> The ethical induction of the Trinity from the idea of love was first attempted

3. Each divine person has his *property*, as it were a characteristic individuality, expressed by the Greek word *ιδιότης*,<sup>1</sup> and the Latin *proprietas*.<sup>2</sup> This is not to be confounded with attribute; for the divine attributes, eternity, omnipresence, omnipotence, wisdom, holiness, love, etc., are inherent in the divine *essence*, and are the common possession of all the divine hypostases. The *idiotes*, on the contrary, is a peculiarity of the *hypostasis*, and therefore cannot be communicated or transferred from one to another.

To the first person fatherhood, or the being unbegotten,<sup>3</sup> is ascribed as his property; to the second, sonship, or the being begotten;<sup>4</sup> to the Holy Ghost, procession.<sup>5</sup> In other words: The Father is unbegotten, but begetting; the Son is uncreated, but begotten; the Holy Ghost proceeds from the Father (and, according to the Latin doctrine, also from the Son). But these distinctions relate, as we have said, only to the hypostases, and have no force with respect to the divine essence which is the same in all, and neither begets nor is begotten, nor proceeds, nor is sent.

4. The divine persons are in one another, mutually interpenetrate, and form a perpetual *intercommunication* and

by Augustine, and has more recently been pursued by Sartorius, J. Müller, J. P. Lange, Martensen, Liebner, Schöberlein, and others. It is suggested by the moral essence of God, which is love, the relation of the Father to the Son, and the "fellowship" of the Holy Ghost, and it undoubtedly contains a deep element of truth; but, strictly taken, it yields only *two* different personalities and an *impersonal relation*, thus proving too much for the Father and the Son, and too little for the Holy Spirit.

<sup>1</sup> Also *ἰδιον*. Gregory of Nyssa calls these characteristic distinctions *γνωριστικαὶ ἰδιότητες*, peculiar marks of recognition. The terms *ιδιότης* and *ὑπόστασις* were sometimes used synonymously. The word *ιδιότης*, fem. (from *ἴδιος*), *peculiarity*, is of course not to be confounded with *ιδιότης*, masc., which likewise comes from *ἴδιος*, but means a private man, then layman, then an imbecile, idiot.

<sup>2</sup> *Proprietas personalis*; also *character hypostaticus*.

<sup>3</sup> *Ἀγεννησία, paternitas*.

<sup>4</sup> *Γεννησία, γέννησις, generatio, filiatio*.

<sup>5</sup> *Ἐκπόρευσις, processio*; also *ἐκπεμψις, missio*; both from John xv. 16 (*πέμψω . . . ἐκπορεύεται*) and similar passages, which relate, however, not to the eternal trinity of constitution, but to the historical trinity of manifestation. Gregory Nazianzen says: *Ἰδιον πατὴρς μὲν ἡ ἀγεννησία, υἱὸν δὲ ἡ γέννησις, πνεύματος δὲ ἡ ἐκπεμψις*.

*motion* within the divine essence; as the Lord says: "I am in the Father, and the Father in me;" and "the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works."<sup>1</sup> This perfect indwelling and vital communion was afterwards designated (by John of Damascus and the scholastics) by such terms as ἐνύπαρξις, περιχώρησις,<sup>2</sup> *inexistentia*, *immanentia*, *inhabitatio*, *circulatio*, *permeatio*, *intercommunio*, *circumincessio*.<sup>3</sup>

5. The Nicene doctrine already contains, in substance, a distinction between two trinities: an *immanent* trinity of constitution,<sup>4</sup> which existed from eternity, and an *economic* trinity of manifestation;<sup>5</sup> though this distinction did not receive formal expression till a much later period. For the generation of the Son and the procession of the Spirit are, according to the doctrine, an eternal process. The perceptions and practical wants of the Christian mind start, strictly speaking, with the trinity of revelation in the threefold progressive work of the creation, the redemption, and the preservation of the

<sup>1</sup> John xiv. 10: Ὁ δὲ πατὴρ ὃ ἐν ἐμοὶ μένων, αὐτὸς ποιεῖ τὰ ἔργα; v. 11: Ἐγὼ ἐν τῷ πατρὶ, καὶ ὁ πατὴρ ἐν ἐμοί. This also refers, strictly, not to the eternal relation, but to the indwelling of the Father in the historical, incarnate Christ.

<sup>2</sup> From περιχωρεῖν (with εἰς), to circulate, go about, *progređi*, *ambulare*. Comp. Petavius, De trinit., lib. iv. c. 16 (tom. ii. p. 453 sqq.), and De incarnatione, lib. iv. c. 14 (tom. iv. p. 478 sqq.). The thing itself is clearly taught even by the Nicene fathers, especially by Athanasius in his third Oration against the Arians, c. 8 sqq., and elsewhere, with reference to the relation of the Son to the Father, although he never, so far as I know, used the word περιχώρησις. Gregory Nazianzen uses the verb περιχωρεῖν (not the noun) of the vital interpenetration of the two natures in Christ. Gibbon, in his contemptuous account of the Nicene controversy (chapter xxi.) calls the περιχώρησις or *circumincessio* "the deepest and darkest corner of the whole theological abyss," but takes no pains even to explain this idea. The old Protestant theologians defined the περιχώρησις as "immanentia, h. e. inexistentia mutua et singularissima, intima et perfectissima inhabitatio unius personae in alia." Comp. Joh. Gerhard, Loci theologici, tom. i. p. 197 (ed. Cotta).

<sup>3</sup> From *incedo*, denoting the perpetual internal *motion* of the Trinity, the *circumfusio* or *mutua commeatio*, et *communicatio personarum inter se*. Petavius (in the 2d and 4th vol. l. c.), Cudworth (Intellectual System of the Universe, vol. ii. p. 454, ed. of Harrison, Lond. 1845), and others use instead of this, *circumincessio*, from *sedeo*, which rather expresses the *repose* of the persons in one another, the *inexistentia* or *mutua existentia personarum*. This would correspond to the Greek ἀνάπαξις rather than to περιχώρησις.

<sup>4</sup> Ad intra, τρόπος υπάρξεως.

<sup>5</sup> Ad extra, τρόπος ἀποκαλύψεως.

world, but reason back thence to a trinity of being; for God has revealed himself as he is, and there can be no contradiction between his nature and his works. The eternal pre-existence of the Son and the Spirit is the background of the historical revelation by which they work our salvation. The Scriptures deal mainly with the trinity of revelation, and only hint at the trinity of essence, as in the prologue of the Gospel of John which asserts an eternal distinction between God and the Logos. The Nicene divines, however, agreeably to the metaphysical bent of the Greek mind, move somewhat too exclusively in the field of speculation and in the dark regions of the intrinsic and ante-mundane relations of the Godhead, and too little upon the practical ground of the facts of salvation.

6. The Nicene fathers still teach, like their predecessors, a certain *subordinationism*, which seems to conflict with the doctrine of consubstantiality. But we must distinguish between a subordinationism of essence (*οὐσία*) and a subordinationism of hypostasis, of order and dignity.<sup>1</sup> The former was denied, the latter affirmed. The essence of the Godhead being but one, and being absolutely perfect, can admit of no degrees. Father, Son, and Spirit all have the same divine essence, yet not in a co-ordinate way, but in an order of subordination. The Father has the essence originally and of himself, from no other; he is the primal divine subject, to whom alone absoluteness belongs, and he is therefore called preeminently God,<sup>2</sup> or the principle, the fountain, and the root of Godhead.<sup>3</sup> The Son, on the contrary, has his essence by communication from the Father, therefore, in a secondary,

<sup>1</sup> Ἡρωταγή τῶν εἰς καὶ ἀξιώματος.

<sup>2</sup> Ὁ Θεός, and αὐτόθεος, in distinction from Θεός. Waterland (Works, vol. i. p. 315) remarks on this: "The title of ὁ Θεός, being understood in the same sense with αὐτόθεος, was, as it ought to be, generally reserved to the Father, as the distinguishing *personal* character of the first Person of the Holy Trinity. And this amounts to no more than the acknowledgment of the Father's prerogative, as Father. But as it might also signify any Person who is truly and essentially God, it might properly be applied to the Son too: and it is so applied sometimes, though not so often as it is to the Father."

<sup>3</sup> Ἡ πηγή, ἡ αἰτία, ἡ ρίζα τῆς θεότητος: fons, origo, principium.

derivative way. "The Father is greater than the Son." The one is unbegotten, the other begotten; the Son is from the Father, but the Father is not from the Son; fatherhood is in the nature of the case primary, sonship secondary. The same subordination is still more applicable to the Holy Ghost. The Nicene fathers thought the idea of the divine unity best preserved by making the Father, notwithstanding the triad of persons, the monad from which Son and Spirit spring, and to which they return. .

This subordination is most plainly expressed by Hilary of Poitiers, the champion of the Nicene doctrine in the West.<sup>1</sup> The familiar comparisons of fountain and stream, sun and light, which Athanasius, like Tertullian, so often uses, likewise lead to a dependence of the Son upon the Father.<sup>2</sup> Even the Nicæno-Constantinopolitan Creed favors it, in calling the Son God of God, Light of Light, very God of very God. For if a person has anything, or is anything, of another, he has not that, or is not that, of himself. Yet this expression may be more correctly understood, and is in fact sometimes used by the later Nicene fathers, as giving the Son and Spirit only their hypostases from the Father, while the essence of deity is common to all three persons, and is co-eternal in all.

Scriptural argument for this theory of subordination was found abundant in such passages as these: "As the Father hath life in himself (ἐχει ζωὴν ἐν ἑαυτῷ), so hath he *given* (ἔδωκε) to the Son to have life in himself; and hath *given* him authority

<sup>1</sup> De trinit. iii. 12: "Et quis non Patrem potius confitebitur, ut ingenitum a genito, ut Patrem a Filio, ut eum qui miserit ab eo qui missus sit, ut volentem ab eo qui obediat? Et ipse nobis erit testis: *Pater major me est.* Hæc ita ut sunt intelligenda sunt, sed cavendum est, ne apud imperitos gloriam Filii honor Patris infirmet." In the same way Hilary derives all the attributes of the Son from the Father. Comp. also Hilary, De Synodis, seu de fide Orientalium, pp. 1178 and 1183 (Opera, ed. Bened.), and the third and eighteenth canons of the Sirinian council of 357.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. the relevant passages from Athanasius, Basil, and the Gregories, in Bull, Defensio, sect. iv. (Pars ii. p. 688 sqq.). Even John of Damascus, with whom the productive period of the Greek theology closes, still teaches the same subordination, De orthod. fide, l. 10: Πάτρα θεα ἔχει ὁ υἱὸς καὶ τὸ πνεῦμα, ἐκ τοῦ πατρὸς ἔχει, καὶ αὐτὸ τὸ εἶναι.

to execute judgment also ;”<sup>1</sup> “All things are *delivered* unto me (πάντα μοι παρεδόθη) of my Father ;”<sup>2</sup> “My Father is greater than I.”<sup>3</sup> But these and similar passages refer to the historical relation of the Father to the incarnate Logos in his estate of humiliation, or to the elevation of human nature to participation in the glory and power of the divine,<sup>4</sup> not to the eternal metaphysical relation of the Father to the Son.

In this point, as in the doctrine of the Holy Ghost, the Nicene system yet needed further development. The logical consistency of the doctrine of the consubstantiality of the Son, upon which the Nicene fathers laid chief stress, must in time overcome this decaying remnant of the ante-Nicene subordinationism.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> John v. 26, 27.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. xi. 27 ; comp. xxviii. 18.

<sup>3</sup> John xiv. 28. Cudworth (l. c. ii. 422) agrees with several of the Nicene fathers in referring this passage to the *divinity* of Christ, for the reason that the superiority of the eternal God over mortal man was no news at all. Mosheim, in a learned note to Cudworth *in loco*, protests against both interpretations, and correctly so. For Christ speaks here of his *entire divine-human person*, but in the state of *humiliation*.

<sup>4</sup> John xvii. 5 ; Phil. ii. 9-11.

<sup>5</sup> All important scholars since Petavius admit the subordinationism in the Nicene doctrine of the trinity ; e. g., Bull, who in the fourth (not third, as Gibbon says) section of his famous *Defensio fidei Nic.* (Works, vol. v. Pars ii. pp. 653-796) treats quite at large of the subordination of the Son to the Father, and in behalf of the identity of the Nicene and ante-Nicene doctrine proves that all the orthodox fathers, before and after the council of Nice, “uno ore docuerunt naturam perfectionesque divinas Patri Filioque competere non callateraliter aut coördinate, sed subordinate ; hoc est, Filium eandem quidem naturam divinam cum Patre communem habere, sed a Patre communicatam ; ita scilicet ut Pater solus naturam illam divinam a se habeat, nive a nullo alio, Filius autem a Patre ; proinde Pater divinitatis, quæ in Filio est, origo ac principium sit,” etc. So Waterland, who, in his vindication of the orthodox doctrine of the Trinity against Samuel Clarke, asserts such a supremacy of the Father as is consistent with the eternal and necessary existence, the consubstantiality, and the infinite perfection of the Son. Among modern historians Neander, Gieseler, Baur (Lehre von der Dreieinigkeit, etc. i. p. 468 ff.), and Dorner (Lehre von der Person Christi, i. p. 929 ff.) arrive at the same result. But while Baur and Dorner (though from different points of view) recognize in this a defect of the Nicene doctrine, to be overcome by the subsequent development of the church dogma, the great Anglican divines, Cudworth (Intellectual System, vol. ii. p. 421 ff.), Pearson, Bull, Waterland (and among American divines Dr. Shedd) regard the Nicene subordinationism as the true, Scriptural, and final form of the trinitarian doctrine, and

§ 181. *The Post-Nicene Trinitarian Doctrine of Augustine.*

AUGUSTINE: *De trinitate*, libri xv., begun in 400, and finished about 415; and his anti-Arian works: *Contra sermonem Arianorum*; *Collatio cum Maximino Arianorum episcopo*; *Contra Maximinum hæreticum*, libri ii. (all in his *Opera omnia*, ed. Bened. of Venice, 1733, in tom. viii. pp. 626-1004; and in Migne's ed. Par. 1845, tom. viii. pp. 688-1098).

While the Greek church stopped with the Nicene statement of the doctrine of the Trinity, the Latin church carried the development onward under the guidance of the profound and devout speculative spirit of Augustine in the beginning of the fifth century, to the formation of the Athanasian Creed. Of all the fathers, next to Athanasius, Augustine performed the greatest service for this dogma, and by his discriminating speculation he exerted more influence upon the scholastic theology and that of the Reformation, than all the Nicene divines. The points in which he advanced upon the Nicene Creed, are the following:<sup>1</sup>

1. He eliminated the remnant of subordinationism, and brought out more clearly and sharply the consubstantiality of the three persons and the numerical unity of their essence.\*

make no account of Augustine, who went beyond it. Kahnis (*Der Kirchenglaube*, II. p. 66 ff.) thinks that the Scriptures go still further than the Nicene fathers in subordinating the Son and the Spirit to the Father.

<sup>1</sup> The Augustinian doctrine of the trinity is discussed at length by Baur, *Die christl. Lehre von der Dreieinigkeit*, etc. vol. i. pp. 826-868. Augustine had but an imperfect knowledge of the Greek language, and was therefore not accurately acquainted with the writings of the Nicene fathers, but was thrown the more upon his own thinking. Comp. his confession, *De trinit.* l. iii. cap. 1 (tom. viii. f. 793, ed. Bened. Venet., from which in this section I always quote, though giving the varying chapter-division of other editions).

<sup>2</sup> *De trinit.* l. vii. cap. 6 (§ 11), tom. viii. f. 863: "Non major essentia est Pater et Filius et Spiritus Sanctus simul, quam solus Pater, aut solus Filius; sed tres simul illæ substantiæ [here equivalent to *inordæis*] sive personæ, si ita dicendæ sunt, æquales sunt singulis: quod animalis homo non percipit." Ibid. (f. 863): "Ita dicat unam essentiam, ut non existimet aliud alio vel majus, vel melius, vel aliqua ex parte divisum." Ibid. lib. viii. c. 1 (fol. 865): "Quod vero ad se dicuntur singuli, non dici pluraliter tres, sed unam ipsam trinitatem: sicut Deus Pater, Deus Filius, Deus Spiritus Sanctus; et bonus Pater, bonus Filius, bonus Spiritus Sanctus:

Yet he too admitted that the Father stood above the Son and the Spirit in this: that he alone is of no other, but is absolutely original and independent; while the Son is begotten of him, and the Spirit proceeds from him, and proceeds from him in a higher sense than from the Son.<sup>1</sup> We may speak of three men who have the same nature; but the persons in the Trinity are not three separately subsisting individuals. The divine substance is not an abstract generic nature common to all, but a concrete, living reality. One and the same God is Father, Son, and Spirit. All the works of the Trinity are joint works. Therefore one can speak as well of an incarnation of God, as of an incarnation of the Son, and the theophanies of the Old Testament, which are usually ascribed to the Logos, may also be ascribed to the Father and the Holy Ghost.

If the orthodox doctrine of the Trinity lies midway between Sabellianism and tritheism, Augustine bears rather to the Sabellian side. He shows this further in the analogies from the human spirit, in which he sees the mystery of the Trinity reflected, and by which he illustrates it with special delight and with fine psychological discernment, though with the humble impression that the analogies do not lift the veil, but only make it here and there a little more penetrable. He distinguishes in man being, which answers to the Father, knowledge or consciousness, which answers to the Son, and will, which answers to the Holy Ghost.<sup>2</sup> A similar trinity he finds in the relation of mind, word, and love; again in the

*et omnipotens Pater, omnipotens Filius, omnipotens Spiritus Sanctus; nec tamen tres Dii, aut tres boni, aut tres omnipotentes, sed unus Deus, bonus, omnipotens ipse Trinitas.*" Lib. xv. 17 (fol. 988): "*Pater Deus, et Filius Deus, et Spiritus S. Deus, et simul unus Deus.*" De civit. Dei, xi. cap. 24: "*Non tres Dii vel tres omnipotentes, sed unus Deus omnipotens.*" So the Athanasian Creed, vera. 11.

<sup>1</sup> De trinit. l. xv. c. 26 (§ 47, fol. 1000): "*Pater solus non est de alio, ideo solus appellatur ingenuus, non quidem in Scripturis, sed in consuetudine disputantium . . . Filius autem de Patre natus est: et Spiritus Sanctus de Patre principaler, et ipso sine ullo temporis intervallo dante, communiter de utroque procedit.*"

<sup>2</sup> Confess. xiii. 11: "*Dico hæc tria: esse, nosse, velle. Sum enim, et novi, et volo; sum sciens, et volens; et scio esse me, et velle; et volo esse, et scire. In his igitur tribus quam sit inseparabilis vita, et una vita, et una mens, et una essentia, quam denique inseparabilis distinctio, et tamen distinctio, videat qui potest.*" This comparison he repeats in a somewhat different form, De civit. Dei, xi. 26.



relation of memory, intelligence, and will or love, which differ, and yet are only one human nature (but of course also only one human person).<sup>1</sup>

2. Augustine taught the procession of the Holy Ghost *from the Son* as well as from the Father, though from the Father mainly. This followed from the perfect essential unity of the hypostases, and was supported by some passages of Scripture which speak of the Son sending the Spirit.<sup>2</sup> He also represented the Holy Ghost as the love and fellowship between Father and Son, as the bond which unites the two, and which unites believers with God.<sup>3</sup>

The Nicæno-Constantinopolitan Creed affirms only the processio Spiritus *a Patre*, though not with an exclusive intent, but rather to oppose the Pneumatoinachi, by giving the Spirit

<sup>1</sup> Mens, verbum, amor;—memoria, intelligentia, voluntas or caritas; for voluntas and caritas are with him essentially the same: "Quid enim est aliud caritas quam voluntas?" Again: amans, amatus, mutuus amor. On these, and similar analogies which we have already mentioned in § 180, comp. Augustine, *De civit. Dei*, l. xi. c. 24; *De trinit.* xiv. and xv., and the criticism of Baur, l. c. i. p. 844 sqq.

<sup>2</sup> John xv. 26: 'Ὁ παράκλητος, ὃν ἐγὼ πέμψω ὑμῖν παρὰ τοῦ πατρὸς, and xvi. 7: Πέμψω αὐτὸν πρὸς ὑμᾶς; compared with John xiv. 26: Τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον, ὃ πέμψει ὁ πατήρ ἐν τῷ ὀνόματί μου. Augustine appeals also to John xx. 22, where Christ breathes the Holy Ghost on his disciples, *De trinit.* iv. c. 20 (§ 29), fol. 829: "Nec possumus dicere quod Spiritus S. et a Filio non procedat, neque enim frustra idem Spiritus et Patris et Filii Spiritus dicitur. Nec video quid aliud significare voluerit, cum sufflans in faciem discipulorum ait: 'Accipite Spiritum S.'" *Tract.* 99 in *Evang. Joh.* § 9: "Spiritus S. non de Patre procedit in Filium, et de Filio procedit ad sanctificandam creaturam, sed simul de utroque procedit." But after all, he makes the Spirit proceed *mainly* from the Father: de patre *principaliter*. *De trinit.* xv. c. 26 (§ 47). Augustine moreover regards the procession of the Spirit from the Son as the gift of the Father which is implied in the communication of life to the Son. *Comp. Tract.* 99 in *Evang. Joh.* § 8: "A quo habet Filius ut sit Deus (est enim de Deo Deus), ab illo habet utique ut etiam de illo procedat Spiritus Sanctus: ac per hoc Spiritus Sanctus ut etiam de Filio procedat, sicut procedit de Patre, ab ipso habet Patre."

<sup>3</sup> *De trinit.* xv. c. 17 (§ 27) fol. 987: "Spiritus S. secundum Scripturas sacras nec Patris solius est, nec Filii solius, sed amborum, et ideo communem, qua invicem se diligunt Pater et Filius, nobis insinuat caritatem." Undoubtedly *God* is love; but this may be said in a special sense of the Holy Ghost. *De trinit.* xv. c. 17 (§ 29), fol. 988: "Ut scilicet in illa simplici summaque natura non sit aliud substantia et aliud caritas, sed substantia ipsa sit caritas, et caritas ipsa sit substantia, sive in Patre, sive in Filio, sive in Spiritu S., et tamen proprie Spiritus S. caritas nuncupetur."

a relation to the Father as immediate as that of the Son. The Spirit is not created by the Son, but eternally proceeds directly from the Father, as the Son is from eternity begotten of the Father. Everything proceeds from the Father, is mediated by the Son, and completed by the Holy Ghost. Athanasius, Basil, and the Gregories give this view, without denying procession from the Son. Some Greek fathers, Epiphanius,<sup>1</sup> Marcellus of Ancyra,<sup>2</sup> and Cyril of Alexandria,<sup>3</sup> derived the Spirit from the Father and the Son; while Theodore of Mopsuestia and Theodoret would admit no dependence of the Spirit on the Son.

Augustine's view gradually met universal acceptance in the West. It was adopted by Boëthius, Leo the Great and others.<sup>4</sup> It was even inserted in the Nicene Creed by the council of Toledo in 589 by the addition of *filiusque*, together with an anathema against its opponents, by whom are meant, however, not the Greeks, but the Arians.

Here to this day lies the main difference in doctrine between the Greek and Latin churches, though the controversy over it did not break out till the middle of the ninth century under patriarch Photius (867).<sup>5</sup> Dr. Waterland briefly sums up the points of dispute thus: "The Greeks and Latins have had

<sup>1</sup> Ancor. § 9: "Απα Θεὸς ἐκ πατρὸς καὶ υἱοῦ τὸ πνεῦμα. Yet he says not expressly: ἐκ τοῦ υἱοῦ.

<sup>2</sup> Though in a Sabellian sense.

<sup>3</sup> Who in his anathemas against Nestorius condemns also those who do not derive the Holy Ghost from Christ. Theodoret replied: If it be meant that the Spirit is of the same essence with Christ, and proceeds from the Father, we agree; but if it be intended that the Spirit has his existence through the Son, this is impious. Comp. Neander, Dogmengesch. i. p. 322.

<sup>4</sup> Comp. the passages in Hagenbach's Dogmengeschichte, vol. i. p. 267 (in the Engl. ed. by H. B. Smith, New York, 1861), and in Perthel, Leo der G. p. 138 ff. Leo says, *e. g.*, Sermon. lxxv. 2: "Huius enim beatæ trinitatis incommutabilis deitas una est in substantia, indivisa in opere, concors in voluntate, par in potentia, sequens in gloria."

<sup>5</sup> Comp. on this controversy J. G. WALCH: Historia controversiæ Græcorum Latinorumque de Processione Spir. S., Jen. 1751. Also JOHN MASON NEALE: A History of the Holy Eastern Church, Lond. 1850, vol. i. 1093. A. P. Stanley (Eastern Church, p. 142) calls this dispute which once raged so long and so violently, "an excellent specimen of the race of extinct controversies."

<sup>6</sup> Works, vol. iii. p. 287 f.

many and tedious disputes about the *procession*. One thing is observable, that though the *ancients*, appealed to by both parties, have often said that the Holy Ghost proceeds *from the Father*, without mentioning the *Son*, yet they never said that he proceeded from the Father *alone*; so that the *modern* Greeks have certainly innovated in that article in *expression* at least, if not in real sense and meaning. As to the Latins, they have this to plead, that none of the *ancients* ever condemned their doctrine; that *many* of them have expressly asserted it; that the oriental churches themselves rather condemn their taking upon them to add anything to a creed formed in a *general council*, than the *doctrine* itself; that those Greek churches that charge their doctrine as heresy, yet are forced to admit much the same thing, only in different words; and that Scripture itself is plain, that the Holy Ghost proceeds at least *by the Son*, if not *from him*; which yet amounts to the same thing."

This doctrinal difference between the Greek and the Latin Church, however insignificant it may appear at first sight, is characteristic of both, and illustrates the contrast between the conservative and stationary theology of the East, after the great ecumenical councils, and the progressive and systematizing theology of the West. The wisdom of changing an ancient and generally received formula of faith may indeed be questioned, although it must be admitted that the Nicene Creed has undergone several other changes which were embodied in the Constantinopolitan Creed, and adopted by the Greeks as well as the Latins. But in the matter of dispute itself the Latin doctrine is right. The *single* procession of the Spirit was closely connected with the ante-Nicene and Nicene subordinationism, which had to yield to a more consistent development of homoousianism. The *double* procession follows inevitably from the consubstantiality of the Father and the Son, and from the identity of the Spirit of God and the Spirit of Christ. It also forms a connecting link between the Trinity and Christology, and between Christology and Anthropology, by bringing the Holy Spirit and His work into more immediate connection with Christ, and, through Him, with the

church and the believer. It was therefore not accidental that the same Augustine, who first taught clearly the double procession, developed also those profound views of sin and grace, which took permanent root in the West, but had no influence in the East.<sup>1</sup>

### § 132. *The Athanasian Creed.*

G. JOH. VOSS (Reform.): *De tribus symbolis*, diss. ii. 1642, and in his *Opera Omnia*, Amstel. 1701 (forming an epoch in critical investigation). Archbishop USHER: *De symbolis*. 1647. J. H. HEIDEGGER (Ref.): *De symbolo Athanasiano*. Zür. 1680. EM. TENTZEL (Luth.): *Judicia eruditorum de Symb. Athan. studiose collecta*. Goth. 1687. MONTFAUCON (R. O.): *Diatrise in Symbolum Quicunque*, in the Benedictine ed. of the *Opera Athanasii*, Par. 1698, tom. ii. pp. 719-735. DAN. WATERLAND (Anglican): *A Critical History of the Athanasian Creed*. Cambridge, 1724, sec. ed. 1728 (in Waterland's Works, ed. Mildert, vol. iii. pp. 27-270, Oxf. 1843). DOM. M. SPERONI (R. O.): *De symbolo vulgo S. Athanasii*. Diss. i. and ii. Patav. 1750-'51. E. KÖLLNER (Luth.): *Symbolik aller christl. Confessionen*. Hamb. Vol. i. 1837, pp. 53-92. W. W. HARVEY (Angl.): *The History and Theology of the Three Creeds*. Lond. 1854, vol. ii. pp. 541-695. PH. SCHAFF: *The Athanasian Creed*, in the *Am. Theolog. Review*, New York, 1866, pp. 584-625. (Comp. the earlier literature, in chronological order, in Waterland, l. c. p. 108 ff., and in Köllner.)

The post-Nicene or Augustinian doctrine of the Trinity reached its classic statement in the third and last of the ecu-

<sup>1</sup> This point is well brought out in the following remarks of my esteemed friend, the Rev. Dr. E. D. Yeomans, which he kindly submitted to me in the course of translation: "The *filioque* is vitally connected with the advance of the Western church towards a strong *anthropology* (in connection with the doctrines of sin and grace), while the Eastern stopped in a weak Pelagian and synergistic view, crude and undeveloped. The procession only *de Patre per Filium* would put the church at arm's length, so to speak, from God; that is, beyond Christ, off at an extreme, or at one side, of the kingdom of divine life, rather than in the centre and bosom of that kingdom, where all things are hers. The *filioque* puts the church, which is the temple and organ of the Holy Ghost in the work of redemption, rather *between* the Father and the Son, partaking of their own fellowship, according to the great intercessory prayer of Christ Himself. It places the church in the meeting-point, or the living circuit of the interplay, of grace and nature, of the divine and the human; thus giving scope for a *strong* doctrine of both nature and grace, and to a strong doctrine also of the church itself."

menical confessions, called the *Symbolum Athanasianum*, or, as it is also named from its initial words, the *Symbolum Quicumque*; beyond which the orthodox development of the doctrine in the Roman and Evangelical churches to this day has made no advance.<sup>1</sup> This Creed is unsurpassed as a masterpiece of logical clearness, rigor, and precision; and so far as it is possible at all to state in limited dialectic form, and to protect against heresy, the inexhaustible depths of a mystery of faith into which the angels desire to look, this liturgical theological confession achieves the task. We give it here in full, anticipating the results of the Christological controversies; and we append parallel passages from Augustine and other older writers, which the unknown author has used, in some cases word for word, and has woven with great dexterity into an organic whole.<sup>2</sup>

1. Quicumque vult salvus esse, ante omnia opus est, ut teneat catholicam fidem.<sup>3</sup>

2. Quam nisi quisque integram inviolatamque servaverit, absque dubio in æternum peribit.

3. Fides autem catholica hæc est, ut

1. Whosoever will be saved, before all things it is necessary that he hold the catholic [true Christian] faith.

2. Which faith except every one do keep whole and undefiled, without doubt he shall perish everlastingly.

3. But this is the catholic faith:

<sup>1</sup> In striking contrast with this unquestionable historical eminence of this Creed is Baur's slighting treatment of it in his work of three volumes on the history of the doctrine of the Trinity, where he disposes of it in a brief note, vol. ii. p. 33, as a vain attempt to vindicate by logical categories the harsh and irreconcilable antagonism of unity and triad.

<sup>2</sup> In the Latin text we follow chiefly the careful revision of Waterland, ch. ix. (Works, vol. iii. p. 221 ff.), who also adds the various readings of the best manuscripts, and several parallel passages from the church fathers previous to 430, as he pushes the composition back before the third ecumenical council (431). We have also compared the text of Montfaucon (in his edition of Athanasius) and of Walch (Christl. Concordienbuch, 1750). The numbering of verses differs after ver. 19. Waterland puts vers. 19 and 20 in one, also vers. 25 and 26, 39 and 40, 41 and 42, making only forty verses in all. So Montfaucon, p. 735 ff. Walch makes forty-four verses.

<sup>3</sup> Comp. Augustine, *Contra Maximin. Arian.* l. ii. c. 8 (Opera, tom. viii. f. 729, ed. Venet.): "Hæc est fides nostra, quoniam hæc est fides recta, quæ etiam catholica nuncupatur."

<sup>4</sup> Some manuscripts: "inviolabilemque."

<sup>5</sup> "Absque dubio" is wanting in the Cod. reg. Paris, according to Waterland.

unum Deum in trinitate et trinitatem in unitate veneremur;<sup>1</sup>

4. Neque confundentes personas; neque substantiam separantes.<sup>2</sup>

5. Alia est enim persona Patris: alia Filii: alia Spiritus Sancti.<sup>3</sup>

6. Sed Patris et Filii et Spiritus Sancti una est divinitas: æqualis gloria, cœterna majestas.<sup>4</sup>

7. Qualis Pater, talis Filius, talis (et) Spiritus Sanctus.<sup>5</sup>

8. Increatus Pater: increatus Filius: increatus (et) Spiritus Sanctus.

9. Immensus Pater: immensus Filius: immensus Spiritus Sanctus.<sup>6</sup>

That we worship one God in trinity, and trinity in unity;

4. Neither confounding the persons; nor dividing the substance.

5. For there is one person of the Father: another of the Son: another of the Holy Ghost.

6. But the Godhead of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost is all one: the glory equal, the majesty cœternal.

7. Such as the Father is, such is the Son, and such is the Holy Ghost.

8. The Father is uncreated: the Son is uncreated: the Holy Ghost is uncreated.

9. The Father is immeasurable: the Son is immeasurable: the Holy Ghost is immeasurable.

<sup>1</sup> Gregory Naz. Orat. xxiii. p. 422: . . . *μὴ διὰ ἐν τριῖδι, καὶ τριῖδι ἐν μὴ δι᾽ ὑποκυνομένην*.

<sup>2</sup> A similar sentence occurs in two places in the Commonitorium of Vincentius of Lerinum († 450): "*Ecclesia vero catholica unam divinitatem in trinitatis plenitudine et trinitatis æqualitatem, in una atque eadem majestate veneratur, ut neque singularitas substantia personarum confundat proprietatem, neque item trinitatis distinctio unitatem separat deitatis*" (cap. 18 and 22). See the comparative tables in Montfaucon in Opera Athan. tom. ii. p. 725 sq. From this and two other parallels Anthelmi (Disquisitio de Symb. Athan., Par. 1693) has inferred that Vincentius of Lerinum was the author of the Athanasian Creed. But such arguments point much more strongly to Augustine, who affords many more parallels, and from whom Vincentius drew.

<sup>3</sup> Vincentius Lir. l. c. cap. 19: "*Alia est persona Patris, alia Filii, alia Spiritus Sancti. Sed Patris et Filii et Spiritus S. non alia et alia, sed una eademque natura.*" A similar passage is quoted by Waterland from the Symbolum Pelagii.

<sup>4</sup> Augustine, tom. viii. p. 744 (ed. Venet.): "*Patris et Filii et Spiritus Sancti unam virtutem, unam substantiam, unam deitatem, unam majestatem, unam gloriam.*"

<sup>5</sup> Faustini Fid. (cited by Waterland): "*Qualis est Pater secundum substantiam, talem genuit Filium,*" etc.

<sup>6</sup> So Augustine, except that he has *magnus* for *immensus*. Comp. below. *Immensus* is differently translated in the different Greek copies: *ἀκατάληπτος*, *ἄπειρος*, and *ἄμετρος*,—a proof that the original is Latin. Venantius Fortunatus, in his Expositio fidei Catholicae, asserts: "*Non est mensurabilis in sua natura, quia illocalis est, incircumscriptus, ubique totus, ubique præsens, ubique potens.*" The word is thus quite equivalent to omnipresent. The translation "incomprehensible" in the Anglican Book of Common Prayer is inaccurate, and probably came from the Greek translation *ἀκατάληπτος*.

10. *Æternus Pater: æternus Filius: æternus (et) Spiritus Sanctus.*<sup>1</sup>

11. *Et tamen non tres æterni: sed unus æternus.*

12. *Sicut non tres increati: nec tres immensi: sed unus increatus et unus immensus.*

13. *Similiter omnipotens Pater: omnipotens Filius: omnipotens (et) Spiritus Sanctus.*

14. *Et tamen non tres omnipotentes; sed unus omnipotens.*<sup>2</sup>

15. *Ita Deus Pater: Deus Filius: Deus (et) Spiritus Sanctus.*<sup>3</sup>

16. *Et tamen non tres Dii; sed unus est Deus.*<sup>4</sup>

17. *Ita Dominus Pater: Dominus Filius: Dominus (et) Spiritus Sanctus.*

18. *Et tamen non tres Domini; sed unus est Dominus.*<sup>5</sup>

19. *Quia sicut singulatim unamquam-*

10. The Father is eternal: the Son eternal: the Holy Ghost eternal.

11. And yet there are not three eternal; but one eternal.

12. As also there are not three uncreated: nor three immeasurable: but one uncreated, and one immeasurable.

13. So likewise the Father is almighty: the Son almighty: and the Holy Ghost almighty.

14. And yet there are not three almighties: but one almighty.

15. So the Father is God: the Son is God: and the Holy Ghost is God.

16. And yet there are not three Gods; but one God.

17. So the Father is Lord: the Son Lord: and the Holy Ghost Lord.

18. And yet not three Lords; but one Lord.

19. For like as we are compelled by

<sup>1</sup> Augustine, Op. tom. v. p. 548: "*Æternus Pater, coæternus Filius, coæternus Spiritus Sanctus.*"

<sup>2</sup> In quite parallel terms Augustine, De trinit. lib. v. cap. 8 (tom. viii. 837 sq.); "*Magnus Pater, magnus Filius, magnus Spiritus S., non tamen tres magni, sed unus magnus. . . Et bonus Pater, bonus Filius, bonus Spiritus S.; nec tres boni, sed unus bonus; de quo dictum est, 'Nemo bonus nisi unus Deus.' . . Itaque omnipotens Pater, omnipotens Filius, omnipotens Spiritus S.; nec tamen tres omnipotentes, sed unus omnipotens, 'ex quo omnia, per quem omnia, in quo omnia, ipsi gloria'* (Rom. ix. 36)."

<sup>3</sup> Comp. Augustine, De trinit. lib. viii. in Procem. to cap. 1: "*Sicut Deus Pater, Deus Filius, Deus Spiritus S.; et bonus P., bonus F., bonus Sp. S.; et omnipotens P., omnipotens F., omnipotens Sp. S.; nec tamen tres Dii, aut tres boni, aut tres omnipotentes; sed unus Deus, bonus, omnipotens, ipsa Trinitas.*"—Serm. 215 (Opera, tom. v. p. 948): "*Unus Pater Deus, unus Filius Deus, unus Spiritus S. Deus: nec tamen Pater et F. et Sp. S. tres Dii, sed unus Deus.*" De trinit. x. c. 11 (§ 18); "*Hæc igitur tria, memoria, intelligentia, voluntas, quoniam non sunt tres vitæ, sed una vitæ; nec tres mentes, sed una mens; consequenter utique nec tres substantiæ sunt, sed una substantia.*" Comp. also Ambrosius, De Spiritu S. iii. 111: "*Ergo sanctus Pater, sanctus Filius, sanctus et Spiritus; sed non tres sancti; quia unus est Deus sanctus, unus est Dominus;*" and similar places.

<sup>4</sup> Comp. the above passage from Augustine, and De trinit. l. c. 5 (al. 8): "*Et tamen hanc trinitatem non tres Deos, sed unum Deum.*" A similar passage in Vigilius of Tapsus, De trinitate, and in a sermon of Cassarius of Arles, which is ascribed to Augustine (v. 399).

<sup>5</sup> Augustine: "*Non tamen sunt duo Dii et duo Domini secundum formam Dei, sed ambo cum Spiritu suo unus est Dominus. . . sed simul omnes non tres Dominos*

que personam et Deum et Dominum confiteri christiana veritate compellimur:<sup>1</sup>

20. Ita tres Deos, aut (tres<sup>2</sup>) Dominos dicere catholica religione prohibemur.

21. Pater a nullo est factus; nec creatus; nec genitus.

22. Filius a Patre solo est:<sup>3</sup> non factus; nec creatus; sed genitus.

23. Spiritus Sanctus a Patre et Filio: non factus; nec creatus; nec genitus (est); sed procedens.<sup>4</sup>

24. Unus ergo Pater, non tres Patres: unus Filius, non tres Filii: unus Spiritus Sanctus, non tres Spiritus Sancti.<sup>5</sup>

25. Et in hac trinitate nihil prius, aut posterius: nihil maius, aut minus.<sup>6</sup>

26. Sed totæ tres personæ coæternæ sibi sunt et cœquales.

27. Ita, ut per omnia, sicut jam supra dictum est, et unitas in trinitate et trinitas in unitate veneranda sit.<sup>7</sup>

28. Qui vult ergo salvus esse, ita de trinitate sentiat.

the Christian verity to acknowledge every Person by himself to be God and Lord:

20. So are we forbidden by the catholic religion to say, there are three Gods, or three Lords.

21. The Father is made of none; neither created; nor begotten.

22. The Son is of the Father alone: not made; nor created; but begotten.

23. The Holy Ghost is of the Father and the Son: not made; neither created; nor begotten; but proceeding.

24. Thus there is one Father, not three Fathers: one Son, not three Sons: one Holy Ghost, not three Holy Ghosts.

25. And in this Trinity none is before or after another: none is greater or less than another.

26. But the whole three Persons are co-eternal together, and co-equal.

27. So that in all things, as aforesaid, the Unity in Trinity, and the Trinity in Unity is to be worshipped.

28. He therefore that will be saved, must thus think of the Trinity.

esse Deos, sed unum Dominum Deum dico." Contra Maximin. Arian. l. ii. c. 2 and 3 (Opera, viii. f. 729).

<sup>1</sup> Others read: "Deum ac Dominum."

<sup>2</sup> Waterland omits *tres*, Walch has it.

<sup>3</sup> *Solo* is intended to distinguish the Son from the Holy Ghost, who is of the Father and of the Son; thus containing already the Latin doctrine of the double procession. Hence some Greek copies strike out *alone*, while others inconsistently retain it.

<sup>4</sup> This is manifestly the Latin doctrine of the processio, which would be still more plainly expressed if it were said: "sed ab utroque procedens." Comp. Augustine, De trinit. lib. xv. cap. 26 (§ 47): "Non igitur ab utroque est genitus, sed procedit ab utroque amborum Spiritus." Most Greek copies (comp. in Montfaucon in Athan. Opera, tom. ii. p. 728 sqq.) omit *et Filio*, and read only *ἀπὸ τοῦ πατρὸς*.

<sup>5</sup> Augustine, Contra Maxim. ii. 3 (tom. viii. f. 729): "In Trinitate quæ Deus est, unus est Pater, non duo vel tres; et unus Filius, non duo vel tres; et unus amborum Spiritus, non duo vel tres."

<sup>6</sup> August. Serm. 215, tom. v. f. 948: "In hac trinitate non est aliud alio majus aut minus, nulla operum separatio, nulla dissimilitudo substantiæ." Waterland quotes also a kindred passage from the Symb. Pelagii.

<sup>7</sup> So Waterland and the Anglican Liturgy. The Lutheran Book of Concord reverses the order, and reads: trinitas in unitate, et unitas in trinitate.



29. Sed necessarium est ad æternam salutem, ut incarnationem quoque Domini nostri Jesu Christi fideliter<sup>1</sup> credat.

30. Est ergo fides recta ut credamus et confiteamur quod<sup>2</sup> Dominus noster Jesus Christus, Dei Filius, Deus pariter et Homo est.

31. Deus ex substantia Patris, ante secula genitus, et Homo ex substantia matris, in seculo natus.

32. Perfectus Deus: perfectus Homo, ex anima rationali et humana carne subsistens.

33. Æqualis Patri secundum divinitatem: minor Patre secundum humanitatem.<sup>3</sup>

34. Qui licet Deus sit et Homo; non duo tamen; sed unus est Christus.<sup>4</sup>

35. Unus autem, non conversione divinitatis in carnem, sed assumptione humanitatis in Deum.<sup>5</sup>

36. Unus omnino, non confusione substantiæ, sed unitate personæ.<sup>6</sup>

37. Nam sicut anima rationalis et caro unus est homo; ita Deus et Homo unus est Christus.<sup>7</sup>

38. Qui passus est pro salute nostra: descendit ad inferos:<sup>8</sup> tertia die resurrexit a mortuis.

29. Furthermore, it is necessary to everlasting salvation, that we believe also rightly in the incarnation of our Lord Jesus Christ.

30. Now the right faith is, that we believe and confess, that our Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of God, is God and Man.

31. God, of the substance of the Father, begotten before the worlds: and Man, of the substance of His mother, born in the world.

32. Perfect God: perfect Man, of a reasonable soul and human flesh subsisting.

33. Equal to the Father as touching His Godhead: inferior to the Father as touching His Manhood.

34. And although He be God and Man; yet He is not two, but one Christ.

35. One, not by conversion of the Godhead into flesh; but by assumption of the Manhood into God.

36. One altogether, not by confusion of substance; but by unity of person.

37. For as the reasonable soul and flesh is one man; so God and Man is one Christ.

38. Who suffered for our salvation: descended into hades: rose again the third day from the dead.

<sup>1</sup> In the Greek copies variously rendered: ὁρθῶς, or πιστῶς, or βεβαίως.

<sup>2</sup> Waterland reads *quia*.

<sup>3</sup> August. Epist. 137 (cited by Waterland): "*Æqualem Patri secundum Divinitatem, minorem autem Patri secundum carnem, hoc est, secundum hominem.*"

<sup>4</sup> Similarly Augustine, Tract. in Joh. p. 699: "*Non duo, sed unus est Christus;*" and Vincentius Lirin. l. c.: "*Unum Christum Jesum, non duos . . . unus est Christus.*"

<sup>5</sup> Vincentius, l. c. cap. 19: "*Unus autem, non . . . divinitatis et humanitatis confusione, sed unitate personæ . . . non conversione naturæ, sed personæ.*"

<sup>6</sup> August. tom. v. f. 885: "*Idem Deus qui homo, et qui Deus idem homo: non confusione naturæ, sed unitate personæ.*"

<sup>7</sup> Aug. Tract. in Joh. p. 699 (cited by Waterland): "*Sicut enim unus est homo anima rationalis et caro; sic unus est Christus Deus et homo.*"

<sup>8</sup> Some manuscripts: ad infernos, or ad inferna. The Apostles' Creed of Aquileia in Rufinus reads: descendit ad infera.

39. Adscendit ad oculos: sedet ad dexteram (Dei) Patris omnipotentis:

39. He ascended into heaven: He sitteth on the right hand of God, the Father almighty:

40. Inde venturus (est), judicare vivos et mortuos.

40. From whence He shall come to judge the quick and the dead.

41. Ad cuius adventum omnes homines resurgere habent cum corporibus suis;

41. At whose coming all men must rise again with their bodies;

42. Et reddituri sunt de factis propriis rationem.

42. And shall give account for their own works.

43. Et qui bona egerunt, ibunt in vitam eternam; qui vero mala, in ignem eternum.

43. And they that have done good shall go into life everlasting; but they that have done evil, into everlasting fire.

44. Hæc est fides catholica, quam nisi quisque fideliter firmiterque crediderit, salvus esse non poterit.

44. This is the catholic faith; which except a man believe truly and firmly, he cannot be saved.

The origin of this remarkable production is veiled in mysterious darkness. Like the Apostles' Creed, it is not so much the work of any one person, as the production of the spirit of the church. As the Apostles' Creed represents the faith of the ante-Nicene period, and the Nicene Creed the faith of the Nicene, so the Athanasian Creed gives formal expression to the post-Nicene faith in the mystery of the Trinity and the incarnation of God. The old tradition which, since the eighth century, has attributed it to Athanasius as the great champion of the orthodox doctrine of the Trinity, has been long ago abandoned on all hands; for in the writings of Athanasius and his contemporaries, and even in the acts of the third and fourth ecumenical councils, no trace of it is to be found.\* It does not appear at all in the Greek church till the eleventh or twelfth century; and then it occurs in a few manuscripts which bear the manifest character of translations, vary from one another in several points, and omit or modify the clause on the procession of the Holy Ghost from the Father and the

\* The Greek copies read either *πιστῆς* alone, or *πιστῆς τε καὶ βαβαίως*, or *ἐκ πιστεως βαβαίως πιστεύοντες*.

† Ger. Vossius first demonstrated the spuriousness of the tradition in his decisive treatise of 1642. Even Roman divines, like Quessel, Dupin, Pagi, Tillemont, Montfaucon, and Muratori, admit the spuriousness. Köllner adduces nineteen proofs against the Athanasian origin of the Creed, two or three of which are perfectly sufficient without the rest. Comp. the most important in my treatise, l. c. p. 592 ff.

Son (v. 28).<sup>1</sup> It implies the entire post-Nicene or Augustinian development of the doctrine of the Trinity, and even the Christological discussions of the fifth century, though it does not contain the anti-Nestorian test-word *θεοτόκος*, *mother of God*. It takes several passages verbally from Augustine's work on the Trinity, which was not completed till the year 415, and from the *Commonitorium* of Vincentius of Lerinum, 434; works which evidently do not quote the passages from an already existing symbol, but contribute them as stones to the building. On the other hand it contains no allusion to the Monophysite and Monothelite controversies, and cannot be placed later than the year 570; for at that date Venantius Fortunatus of Poitiers wrote a short commentary on it.

It probably originated about the middle of the fifth century, in the school of Augustine, and in Gaul, where it makes its first appearance, and acquires its first ecclesiastical authority. But the precise author or compiler cannot be discovered, and the various views of scholars concerning him are mere opinions.<sup>2</sup> From Gaul the authority of this symbol spread over the whole of Latin Christendom, and subsequently made its way into some portions of the Greek church in Europe. The various Protestant churches have either formally adopted the Athanasian Creed together with the Nicene and the Apostles', or at all events agree, in their symbolical books, with its doctrine of the trinity and the person of Christ.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Wherever the creed has come into use in the Greek churches, this verse has been omitted as a Latin interpolation.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. the catalogue of opinions in Waterland, vol. iii. p. 117; in Köllner; and in my own treatise. The majority of voices have spoken in favor of Vigilius of Tapsus in Africa, A. D. 484; others for Vincentius of Lerinum, 434; Waterland for Hilary of Arles, about 430; while others ascribe it indefinitely to the North African, or Gallic, or Spanish church in the sixth or seventh century. Harvey recently, but quite groundlessly, has dated the composition back to the year 401, and claims it for the bishop Victorius of Rouen (Hist. and Theol. of the Three Creeds, vol. ii. p. 583 f.). He thinks that Augustine quotes from it, but this father nowhere alludes to such a symbol; the author of the Creed, on the contrary, has taken several passages from Augustine, De Trinitate, as well as from Vincentius of Lerinum and other sources. Comp. the notes to the Creed above, and my treatise, p. 596 ff.

<sup>3</sup> On this agreement of the symbolical books of the Evangelical churches with the Athanasianum, comp. my treatise, l. c. p. 610 ff. Luther considers this Creed

The Athanasian Creed presents, in short, sententious articles, and in bold antitheses, the church doctrine of the Trinity in opposition to Unitarianism and tritheism, and the doctrine of the incarnation and the divine-human person of Christ in opposition to Nestorianism and Eutychianism, and thus clearly and concisely sums up the results of the trinitarian and Christological controversies of the ancient church. It teaches the numerical unity of substance and the triad of persons in the Father and the Son and the Holy Ghost, with the perfect deity and perfect humanity of Christ in one indivisible person. In the former case we have one substance or nature in three persons; in the latter, two natures in one divine-human person.

On this faith eternal salvation is made to depend. By the damnatory clauses in its prologue and epilogue the Athanasianum has given offence even to those who agree with its contents. But the original Nicene Creed contained likewise an anathema, which afterwards dropped out of it; the anathema is to be referred to the heresies, and may not be applied to particular persons, whose judge is God alone; and finally, the whole intention is, not that salvation and perdition depend on the acceptance and rejection of any theological formulary or human conception and exhibition of the truth, but that faith in the revealed truth itself, in the living God, Father, Son, and Spirit, and in Jesus Christ the God-Man and the Saviour of the world, is the thing which saves, even where the understanding may be very defective, and that unbelief is the thing which condemns; according to the declaration of the Lord: "He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned." In particular actual cases Christian humility and charity of course require the greatest caution, and leave the judgment to the all-knowing and just God.

The Athanasian Creed closes the succession of ecumenical symbols; symbols which are acknowledged by the entire

the weightiest and grandest production of the church since the time of the Apostles. In the Church of England it is still sung or chanted in the cathedrals. The Protestant Episcopal church in the United States, on the contrary, has excluded it from the Book of Common Prayer.

orthodox Christian world, except that Evangelical Protestantism ascribes to them not an absolute, but only a relative authority, and reserves the right of freely investigating and further developing all church doctrines from the inexhaustible fountain of the infallible word of God.

## II. THE ORIGENISTIC CONTROVERSIES.

- I. EPIPHANIUS: *Hæres.* 64. Several Epistles of EPIPHANIUS, THEOPHILUS of Alex., and JEROME (in Jerome's Epp. 51 and 87-100, ed. Vallarsi). The controversial works of JEROME and RUFINUS on the orthodoxy of Origen (RUFINI Præfatio ad Orig. *περὶ ἀρχῶν*; and *Apologia a. invectivarum* in Hieron.; HIERONYMI Ep. 84 ad Pammachium et Oceanum de erroribus Origenis; *Apologia adv. Rufinum libri iii*, written 402-403, etc.). PALLADIUS: *Vita Johannis Chrysostomi* (in Chrysost. Opera, vol. xiii. ed. Montfaucon). SOCRATES: H. E. vi. 8-18. SOZOMENUS: H. E. viii. 2-20. THEODORET: H. E. v. 27 sqq. PHOTIUS: *Biblioth. Cod.* 59. MANSI: *Conc. tom.* iii. fol. 1141 sqq.
- II. HUETIUS: *Origeniana* (Opera Orig. vol. iv. ed. De la Rue). DOUCIN: *Histoire des mouvements arrivés dans l'église au sujet d'Origène*. Par. 1700. WALCH: *Historie der Ketzereien*. Th. vii. p. 427 sqq. SCHROECKH: *Kirchengeschichte*, vol. x. 108 sqq. Comp. the monographs of REDEPENNING and THOMASius on Origen; and NEANDER: *Der heil. Joh. Chrysostomus*. Berl. 1848, 8d ed. vol. ii. p. 121 sqq. HEFELE (R. O.): *Origenistenstreit*, in the *Kirchenlexicon* of Wetzer and Welte, vol. vii. p. 847 sqq., and *Conciliengeschichte*, vol. ii. p. 76 sqq. O. ZÖCKLER: *Hieronymus*. Gotha, 1865, p. 288 ff; 391 ff.

### § 133. *The Origenistic Controversy in Palestine. Epiphanius, Rufinus, and Jerome, A. D. 394-399.*

Between the Arian and the Nestorian controversies, and in indirect connection with the former, come the vehement and petty personal quarrels over the orthodoxy of Origen, which brought no gain, indeed, to the development of the church doctrine, yet which have a bearing upon the history of theology, as showing the progress of orthodoxy under the twofold aspect of earnest zeal for the pure faith, and a narrow-minded intolerance towards all free speculation. The condemnation of Origen was a death blow to theological science in the Greek church, and left it to stiffen gradually into a mechanical traditionalism and formalism. We shall confine ourselves, if

possible, to the points of general interest, and omit the extremely insipid and humiliating details of personal invective and calumny.

It is the privilege of great pioneering minds to set a mass of other minds in motion, to awaken passionate sympathy and antipathy, and to act with stimulating and moulding power even upon after generations. Their very errors are often more useful than the merely traditional orthodoxy of unthinking men, because they come from an honest search after truth, and provoke new investigation. One of these minds was ORIGEN, the most learned and able divine of the ante-Nicene period, the Plato or the Schleiermacher of the Greek church. During his life-time his peculiar, and for the most part Platonizing, views already aroused contradiction, and to the advanced orthodoxy of a later time they could not but appear as dangerous heresies. Methodius of Tyre († 311) first attacked his doctrines of the creation and the resurrection; while Pamphilus († 309), from his prison, wrote an apology for Origen, which Eusebius afterwards completed. His name was drawn into the Arian controversies, and used and abused by both parties for their own ends. The question of the orthodoxy of the great departed became in this way a vital issue of the day, and rose in interest with the growing zeal for pure doctrine and the growing horror of all heresy.

Upon this question three parties arose: free, progressive disciples, blind adherents, and blind opponents.<sup>1</sup>

1. The true, independent followers of Origen drew from his writings much instruction and quickening, without committing themselves to his words, and, advancing with the demands of the time, attained a clearer knowledge of the specific doctrines of Christianity than Origen himself, without thereby losing esteem for his memory and his eminent services. Such men were Pamphilus, Eusebius of Cæsarea, Didymus of Alexandria, and in a wider sense Athanasius, Basil the Great, Gregory of Nazianzum, and Gregory of Nyssa; and among the Latin fathers, Hilary, and at first Jerome, who

<sup>1</sup> Similar parties have arisen with reference to Luther, Schleiermacher, and other great theologians and philosophers.

afterwards joined the opponents. Gregory of Nyssa, and perhaps also Didymus, even adhered to Origen's doctrine of the final salvation of all created intelligences.

2. The blind and slavish followers, incapable of comprehending the free spirit of Origen, clave to the letter, held all his immature and erratic views, laid greater stress on them than Origen himself, and pressed them to extremes. Such mechanical fidelity to a master is always apostasy to his spirit, which tends towards continual growth in knowledge. To this class belonged the Egyptian monks in the Nitrian mountains; four in particular: Dioscurus, Ammonius, Eusebius, and Enthymius, who are known by the name of the "tall brethren,"<sup>1</sup> and were very learned.

3. The opponents of Origen, some from ignorance, others from narrowness and want of discrimination, shunned his speculations as a source of the most dangerous heresies, and in him condemned at the same time all free theological discussion, without which no progress in knowledge is possible, and without which even the Nicene dogma would never have come into existence. To these belonged a class of Egyptian monks in the Scetic desert, with Pachomius at their head, who, in opposition to the mysticism and spiritualism of the Origenistic monks of Nitria, urged grossly sensuous views of divine things, so as to receive the name of Anthropomorphites. The Roman church, in which Origen was scarcely known by name before the Arian disputes, shared in a general way the strong prejudice against him as an unsound and dangerous writer.

The leader in the crusade against the bones of Origen was the bishop EPIPHANIUS of Salamis (Constantia) in Cyprus († 403), an honest, well-meaning, and by his contemporaries highly respected, but violent, coarse, contracted, and bigoted monastic saint and heresy hunter. He had inherited from the monks in the deserts of Egypt an ardent hatred of Origen as an arch-heretic, and for this hatred he gave documentary justification from the numerous writings of Origen in his *Panarion*, or chest of antidotes for eighty heresies, in which he

<sup>1</sup> Ἀδελφοὶ μακροί, on account of their bodily size.

branded him as the father of Arianism and many other errors.' Not content with this, he also endeavored by journeying and oral discourse to destroy everywhere the influence of the long departed teacher of Alexandria, and considered himself as doing God and the church the greatest service thereby.

With this object the aged bishop journeyed in 394 to Palestine, where Origen was still held in the highest consideration, especially with John, bishop of Jerusalem, and with the learned monks Rufinus and Jerome, the former of whom was at that time in Jerusalem and the latter in Bethlehem. He delivered a blustering sermon in Jerusalem, excited laughter, and vehemently demanded the condemnation of Origen. John and Rufinus resisted; but Jerome, who had previously considered Origen the greatest church teacher after the apostles, and had learned much from his exegetical writings, without adopting his doctrinal errors, yielded to a solicitude for the fame of his own orthodoxy, passed over to the opposition, broke off church fellowship with John, and involved himself in a most violent literary contest with his former friend Rufinus; which belongs to the *chronique scandaleuse* of theology. The schism was terminated indeed by the mediation of the patriarch Theophilus in 397, but the dispute broke out afresh. Jerome condemned in Origen particularly his doctrine of pre-existence, of the final conversion of the devils, and of demons, and his spiritualistic sublimation of the resurrection of the body; while Rufinus, having returned to the West (398), translated several works of Origen into Latin, and accommodated them to orthodox taste. Both were in fact equally zealous to defend themselves against the charge of Origenism, and to fasten it upon each other, and this not by a critical analysis and calm investigation of the teachings of Origen, but by personal denunciations and miserable invectives.\*

Rufinus was cited before pope Anastasius (398-402), who condemned Origen in a Roman synod; but he sent a satisfactory

\* Hær. 64. Compare also his Epistle to bishop John of Jerusalem, written 394 and translated by Jerome into Latin (Ep. 51, ed. Vallarsi), where he enumerates eight heresies of Origen relating to the trinity, the doctrine of man, of angels, of the world, and the last things.

\* Comp. the description of their conduct by Zöckler, Hieronymus, p. 396 ff.



defense, and found an asylum in Aquileia. He enjoyed the esteem of such men as Paulinus of Nola and Augustine, and died in Sicily (410).

§ 134. *The Origenistic Controversy in Egypt and Constantinople. Theophilus and Chrysostom. A. D. 399-407.*

Meanwhile a second act of this controversy was opened in Egypt, in which the unprincipled, ambitious, and intriguing bishop THEOPHILUS of Alexandria plays the leading part. This bishop was at first an admirer of Origen, and despised the anthropomorphite monks, but afterwards, through a personal quarrel with Isidore and the "four tall brethren," who refused to deliver the church funds into his hands, he became an opponent of Origen, attacked his errors in several documents (399-403),<sup>1</sup> and pronounced an anathema on his memory, in which he was supported by Epiphanius, Jerome, and the Roman bishop Anastasius. At the same time he indulged in the most violent measures against the Origenistic monks, and banished them from Egypt. Most of these monks fled to Palestine; but some fifty, among whom were the four tall brethren, went to Constantinople, and found there a cordial welcome with the bishop JOHN CHRYSOSTOM in 401.

In this way that noble man became involved in the dispute. As an adherent of the Antiochian school, and as a practical theologian, he had no sympathy with the philosophical speculation of Origen, but he knew how to appreciate his merits in the exposition of the Scriptures, and was impelled by Christian love and justice to intercede with Theophilus in behalf of the persecuted monks, though he did not admit them to the holy communion till they proved their innocence.

Theophilus now set every instrument in motion to overthrow the long envied Chrysostom, and employed even Epiphanius,

<sup>1</sup> In his *Epistola Synodica ad episcopos Palestinos et ad Cyprios*, 400, and in three successive *Epistolae Paschales*, from 401-403, all translated by Jerome and forming Epp. 92, 96, 98, and 100 of his *Epistles*, according to the order of Vallarsi. They enter more deeply into the topics of the controversy than Jerome's own writings against Origen. Jerome (*Ep. 99 ad Theophilum*) pays him the compliment: "Rhetoricæ eloquentiæ jungis philosophos, et Demosthenem atque Platonem nobis consocias."

then almost an octogenarian, as a tool of his hierarchical plans. This old man journeyed in mid-winter in 402 to Constantinople, in the imagination that by his very presence he would be able to destroy the thousand-headed hydra of heresy, and he would neither hold church fellowship with Chrysostom, who assembled the whole clergy of the city to greet him, nor pray for the dying son of the emperor, until all Origenistic heretics should be banished from the capital, and he might publish the anathema from the altar. But he found that injustice was done to the Nitrian monks, and soon took ship again to Cyprus, saying to the bishops who accompanied him to the sea shore: "I leave to you the city, the palace, and hypocrisy; but I go, for I must make great haste." He died on the ship in the summer of 403.

What the honest coarseness of Epiphanius failed to effect, was accomplished by the cunning of Theophilus, who now himself travelled to Constantinople, and immediately appeared as accuser and judge. He well knew how to use the dissatisfaction of the clergy, of the empress Eudoxia, and of the court with Chrysostom on account of his moral severity and his bold denunciations.<sup>1</sup> In Chrysostom's own diocese, on an estate "at the oak"<sup>2</sup> in Chalcedon, he held a secret council of thirty-six bishops against Chrysostom, and there procured, upon false charges of immorality, unchurchly conduct, and high treason, his deposition and banishment in 403.<sup>3</sup> Chrysostom was recalled indeed in three days in consequence of an earthquake and the dissatisfaction of the people, but was again condemned by a council in 404, and banished from the court, because, incensed by the erection of a silver statue of Eudoxia

<sup>1</sup> According to Socrates (H. E. vi. 4) another special reason for the disaffection was, that Chrysostom always ate alone, and never accepted an invitation to a banquet, either on account of dyspepsia or habitual abstemiousness. But by the people he was greatly esteemed and loved as a man and as a preacher.

<sup>2</sup> Πρὸς τὴν ὄκυν, Synodus ad Quercum. The estate belonged to the imperial prefect Rufinus, and had a palace, a large church, and a monastery. Sozomen, viii. 17.

<sup>3</sup> Among the twenty-nine charges were these: that Chrysostom called the saint Epiphanius a fool and demon; that he wrote a book full of abuse of the clergy; that he received visits from females without witnesses; that he bathed alone, and ate alone! See Hefele, ii. p. 78 sqq.

close to the church of St. Sophia, and by the theatrical performances connected with it, he had with unwise and unjust exaggeration opened a sermon on Mark vi. 17 ff., in commemoration of John the Baptist with the personal allusion: "Again Herodias rages, again she raves, again she dances, and again she demands the head of John [this was Chrysostom's own name] upon a charger."<sup>1</sup> From his exile in Cucusus and Arabissus he corresponded with all parts of the Christian world, took lively interest in the missions in Persia and Scythia, and appealed to a general council. His opponents procured from Arcadius an order for his transportation to the remote desert of Pityus. On the way thither he died at Comana in Pontus, A. D. 407, in the sixtieth year of his age, praising God for everything, even for his unmerited persecutions.<sup>2</sup>

Chrysostom was venerated by the people as a saint, and thirty years after his death, by order of Theodosius II. (438), his bones were brought back in triumph to Constantinople, and deposited in the imperial tomb. The emperor himself met the remains at Chalcedon, fell down before the coffin, and in the name of his guilty parents, Arcadius and Eudoxia, implored the forgiveness of the holy man. The age could not indeed understand and appreciate the bold spirit of Origen, but was still accessible to the narrow piety of Epiphanius and the noble virtues of Chrysostom.

In spite of this prevailing aversion of the time to free speculation, Origen always retained many readers and admirers, especially among the monks in Palestine, two of whom, Domitian and Theodorus Askidas, came to favor and influence at the court of Justinian I. But under this emperor the dispute on the orthodoxy of Origen was renewed about the middle of the sixth century in connection with the controversy on the Three Chapters, and ended with the condemnation of

<sup>1</sup> Πάλιν Ἡρώδης μαίνεται, πάλιν ταρασσεται, πάλιν ὀρχεῖται, πάλιν ἐπὶ πινυαὶ τῆς κεφαλῆς τοῦ Ἰωάννου ζητεῖ λαβεῖν. Comp. Socr. H. E. vi. 18. Eudoxia was a young and beautiful woman, who despised her husband, and indulged her passions. She died four years after the birth of her son Theodosius the Younger, whose true father is said to have been the comes John. Comp. Gibbon, ch. xxxii.

<sup>2</sup> Δόξα τῷ Θεῷ πάντων ἕνεκεν, were his last words, the motto of his life and work.

fifteen propositions of Origen at a council in 544.<sup>1</sup> Since then no one has ventured until recent times to raise his voice for Origen, and many of his works have perished.

With Cyril of Alexandria the theological productivity of the Greek church, and with Theodoret the exegetical, became almost extinct. The Greeks thenceforth contented themselves for the most part with revisions and collections of the older treasures. A church which no longer advances, goes backwards, or falls in stagnation.

### III. THE CHRISTOLOGICAL CONTROVERSIES.

Among the works on the whole field of the Christological controversies should be compared especially the already cited works of PETAVIUS (tom. iv. De incarnatione Verbi), WALCH (Ketzerhistorie, vol. v.-ix.), BAUR, and DÖRNER. The special literature will be given at the heads of the several sections.

#### § 135. *General View. The Alexandrian and Antiochian Schools.*

The Trinity and Christology, the two hardest problems and most comprehensive dogmas of theology, are intimately connected. Hence the settlement of the one was immediately followed by the agitation and study of the other. The speculations on the Trinity had their very origin in the study of the person of Christ, and led back to it again. The point of union is the idea of the incarnation of God. But in the Arian controversy the Son of God was viewed mainly in his essential, pre-mundane relation to the Father; while in the Christological contest the incarnate historical Christ and the constitution of his divine-human person was the subject of dispute.

The notion of redemption, which forms the centre of Chris-

<sup>1</sup> It was only a *σύνodus ἐκκλησιαστικὴ*, i. e., a council of the bishops just then in Constantinople, and is not to be confounded with the fifth *ecumenical* council at Constantinople in 553, which decided only the controversy of the Three Chapters. Comp. Mansi, Conc. tom. ix. fol. 395-399 (where the fifteen canons are given); Walch, Ketzerhistorie, vii. 660; and Gieseler, K. Gesch. i. ii. p. 363.

tian thinking, demands a Redeemer who unites in his person the nature of God and the nature of man, yet, without confusion. In order to be a true Redeemer, the person must possess all divine attributes, and at the same time enter into all relations and conditions of mankind, to raise them to God. Four elements thus enter into the orthodox doctrine concerning Christ: He is true God; he is true man; he is one person; and the divine and human in him, with all the personal union and harmony, remain distinct.

The result of the Arian controversies was the general acknowledgment of the essential and eternal deity of Christ. Before the close of that controversy the true humanity of Christ at the same time came in again for treatment; the church having indeed always maintained it against the Gnostic Docetism, but now, against a partial denial by Apollinarianism, having to express it still more distinctly and lay stress on the reasonable soul. And now came into question, further, the relation between the divine and the human natures in Christ. Origen, who gave the impulse to the Arian controversy, had been also the first to provoke deeper speculation on the mystery of the person of Christ. But great obscurity and uncertainty had long prevailed in opinions on this great matter. The orthodox Christology is the result of powerful and passionate conflicts. It is remarkable that the notorious *rabies theologorum* has never in any doctrinal controversy so long and violently raged as in the controversies on the person of the Reconciler, and in later times on the love-feast of reconciliation.

The Alexandrian school of theology, with its characteristic speculative and mystical turn, favored a connection of the divine and human in the act of the incarnation so close, that it was in danger of losing the human in the divine, or at least of mixing it with the divine;<sup>1</sup> while, conversely, the Antio-

<sup>1</sup> Even Athanasius is not wholly free from this leaning to the monophysite view, and speaks of an *ἑνωσις φυσική* of the Logos with his flesh, and of *one* incarnate nature of the divine Logos, *μία φύσις τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγου σεσαρκωμένη*, which with his flesh is to be worshipped; see his little tract *De incarnatione Dei Verbi* (*περὶ τῆς σαρκώσεως τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγου*) in the 3d tom. of the Bened. ed. p. 1. But in the first

chian or Syrian school, in which the sober intellect and reflection prevailed, inclined to the opposite extreme of an abstract separation of the two natures.<sup>1</sup> In both cases the mystery of the incarnation, the veritable and permanent union of the divine and human in the one person of Christ, which is essential to the idea of a Redeemer and Mediator, is more or less weakened or altered. In the former case the incarnation becomes a transmutation or mixture (*σύγκρασις*) of the divine and human; in the latter, a mere indwelling (*ἐνόκησις*) of the Logos in the man, or a moral union (*συνάφεια*) of the two natures, or rather of the two persons.

It was now the problem of the church, in opposition to both these extremes, to assert the personal unity and the distinction of the two natures in Christ with equal solicitude and precision. This she did through the Christological controversies which agitated the Greek church for more than two hundred years with extraordinary violence. The Roman church,

place it must be considered that this tract (which is not to be confounded with his large work *De incarnatione Verbi Dei*, *περὶ τῆς ἐνανθρωπήσεως τοῦ λόγου*, in the first tom. P. i. of the Bened. ed. pp. 47-97), is by many scholars (Montfaucon, Möhler, Hefele) denied to Athanasius, though on insufficient grounds; and further, that at that time *φύσις*, *οὐσία*, and *ὑπόστασις* were often interchanged, and did not become sharply distinguished till towards the end of the Nicene age. "In the indefiniteness of the notions of *φύσις* and *ὑπόστασις*," says Neander (*Dogmengeschichte*, i. p. 340), "the Alexandrians were the more easily moved, for the sake of the one *ὑπόστασις*, to concede also only one *φύσις* in Christ, and set the *ἑνωσις φυσική* against those who talked of two natures." Comp. Petavius, *De incarn. Verbi*, lib. ii. c. 3 (tom. iv. p. 120, de vocabulis *φύσεως* et *ὑποστάσεως*); also the observations of Dorner, l. c. i. p. 1072, and of Hefele, *Conciliengesch.* ii. p. 128 f. The two Gregories speak, indeed, of *δύο φύσεις* in Christ, yet at the same time of a *σύγκρασις* and *ἀνέκρσις*, i. e., mingling of the two.

<sup>1</sup> Theodore, bishop of Mopsuestia in Cilicia, the head of the Antiochian school, compares the union of the divine and human in Christ with the marriage union of man and woman, and says that one cannot conceive a complete nature without a complete person (*ὑπόστασις*). Comp. Neander, l. c. i. p. 343; Dorner, ii. p. 39 ff.; Fritzsche: *De Theodori Mopsuest. vita et scriptis*, Halle, 1837, and an article by W. Möller in *Herzog's Encycl.* vol. xv. p. 715 ff. Of the works of Theodore of Mopsuestia we have only fragments, chiefly in the acts of the fifth ecumenical council (in Mansi, *Conc.* tom. ix. fol. 203 sqq.), and a commentary on the twelve Prophets, which cardinal Angelo Mai discovered, and edited in 1854 at Rome in his *Nova Bibliotheca SS. Patrum*, tom. vii. Pars i. pp. 1-408, together with some fragments of commentaries on New Testament books, edited by Fritzsche, jun., Turici, 1847; and by Pitra in *Spicileg. Solesm.* tom. i. Par. 1852.

though in general much more calm, took an equally deep interest in this work by some of its more eminent leaders, and twice decided the victory of orthodoxy, at the fourth general council and at the sixth, by the powerful influence of the bishop of Rome.

We must distinguish in this long drama five acts :

1. The **APOLLINARIAN** controversy, which comes in the close of the Nicene age, and is concerned with the *full* humanity of Christ, that is, the question whether Christ, with his human body and human soul (*anima animans*), assumed also a human spirit (*νοῦς, πνεῦμα, anima rationalis*).

2. The **NESTORIAN** controversy, down to the rejection of the doctrine of the *double* personality of Christ by the third ecumenical council of Ephesus, A. D. 431.

3. The **EUTYCHIAN** controversy, to the condemnation of the doctrine of *one* nature, or more exactly of the absorption of the human in the divine nature of Christ; to the fourth ecumenical council at Chalcedon, A. D. 451.

4. The **MONOPHYSITE** dispute; the partial reaction towards the Eutychian theory; down to the fifth general council at Constantinople, A. D. 553.

5. The **MONOTHELITE** controversy, A. D. 633-680, which terminated with the rejection of the doctrine of *one* will in Christ by the sixth general council at Constantinople in 680, and lies this side of our period.

### § 136. *The Apollinarian Heresy*, A. D. 362-381.

#### SOURCES.

- I. **APOLLINARIUS**: *Περὶ σαρκώσεως*,—*Περὶ πίστεως*,—*Περὶ ἀναστάσεως*,—*Κατὰ κεφάλαιον*,—and controversial works against Porphyry, and Eunomius, biblical commentaries, and epistles. Only fragments of these remain in the answers of Gregory of Nyssa and Theodoret, and in Angelo Mai: *Nov. Biblioth. Patrum*, tom. vii. (Rom. 1854), *Pars secunda*, pp. 82-91 (commentary on Ezekiel), in Leontius Byzantinus, and in the *Catenæ*, especially the *Catena in Evang. Joh.*, ed. Corderius, 1680.
- II. Against Apollinaris: **ATHANASIUS**: *Contra Apollinarium*, libri ii. (*Περὶ σαρκώσεως τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν* 'I. X. κατὰ Ἀπολλινάριον, in *Opera*, tom. i. *pars secunda*, pp. 921-955, ed. Bened., and in Thilo's *Bibl. Patr. Gr. dogm.*, vol. i. pp. 862-937). This work was written about

the year 372 against Apollinarianism in the *wider* sense, without naming Apollinaris or his followers; so that the title above given is wanting in the oldest codices. Similar errors, though in like manner without direct reference to Apollinaris, and evading his most important tenet, were combated by ATHANASIUS in the Epist. ad Epictetum episcopum Corinthi contra hæreticos (Opp. i. ii. 900 sqq., and in Thilo, i. p. 820 sqq.), which is quoted even by Epiphanius. GREGORY OF NYSSA: *Λόγος ἀντιρρητικός πρὸς τὰ Ἀπολλιναρίου*, first edited by L. A. Zacagni from the treasures of the Vatican library in the unfortunately incomplete *Collectanea monumentorum veterum ecclesiæ Græcæ et Latinae*, Romæ, 1698, pp. 128–287, and then by *Gallandi*, *Bibliotheca Vet. Patrum*, tom. vi. pp. 517–577. GREGORY NAZ.: Epist. ad Nectarium, and Ep. i. and ii. ad Cledonium (or Orat. 46 and 51–52; comp. Ullmann's *Gregor v. Naz.* p. 401 sqq.). BASILIUS M.: Epist. 265 (A. D. 377), in the new Bened. ed. of his Opera, Par. 1839, tom. iii. Pars ii. p. 591 sqq. EPIPHANIUS: Hær. 77. THEODORET: *Fabul. hær.* iv. 8; v. 9; and *Dialog.* i.–iii.

## LITERATURE.

DION. PETAVIUS: De incarnatione Verbi, lib. i. cap. 6 (in the fourth vol. of the *Theologicorum dogmatum*, pp. 24–34, ed. Par. 1650). JAC. BASNAGE: *Dissert. de hist. hær. Apollinar.* Ultraj. 1687. C. W. F. WALCH: l. c. iii. 119–229. BAUR: l. c. vol. i. pp. 585–647. DORNER: l. c. i. pp. 974–1080. H. VOIGT: *Die Lehre des Athanasias*, &c. Bremen, 1861. Pp. 306–345.

APOLLINARIS,<sup>1</sup> bishop of Laodicea in Syria, was the first to apply the results of the trinitarian discussions of the Nicene age to Christology, and to introduce the long Christological controversies. He was the first to call the attention of the Church to the psychical and pneumatic side of the humanity of Christ, and by contradiction brought out the doctrine of a reasonable human soul in him more clearly and definitely than it had before been conceived.

Apollinaris, like his father (Apollinaris the Elder, who was a native of Alexandria, and a presbyter in Laodicea), was distinguished for piety, classical culture, a scholarly vindication

<sup>1</sup> The name is usually written *Apollinaris*, even by Petavius, Baur, and Dorner, and by all English writers. We have no disposition to disturb the established usage in a matter of so little moment. But the Greek fathers always write Ἀπολλινάριος, and hence *Apollinarius* (as in Jerome, *De viris illustr.*, c. 104) is more strictly correct.



of Christianity against Porphyry and the emperor Julian, and adhesion to the Nicene faith. He was highly esteemed, too, by Athanasius, who, perhaps through personal forbearance, never mentions him by name in his writings against his error.

But in his zeal for the true deity of Christ, and his fear of a double personality, he fell into the error of denying his integral humanity. Adopting the psychological trichotomy, he attributed to Christ a human body, and a human (animal) soul,<sup>1</sup> but not a human spirit or reason; <sup>2</sup> putting the divine Logos in the place of the human spirit. In opposition to the idea of a mere connection of the Logos with the man Jesus, he wished to secure an organic unity of the two, and so a true incarnation; but he sought this at the expense of the most important constituent of man. He reaches only a *θεὸς σαρκοφόρος*, as Nestorianism only an *ἄνθρωπος θεοφόρος*, instead of the proper *θεάνθρωπος*. He appealed to the fact that the Scripture says, the word was made flesh—not spirit; <sup>3</sup> God was manifest in the flesh, &c.; to which Gregory Nazianzen justly replied that in these passages the term *σάρξ* was used by synecdoche for the whole human nature. In this way Apollinaris established so close a connection of the Logos with human flesh, that all the divine attributes were transferred to the human nature, and all the human attributes to the divine, and the two were merged in *one* nature in Christ. Hence he could speak of a crucifixion of the Logos, and a worship of his flesh. He made Christ a middle being between God and man, in whom, as it were, one part divine and two parts human were fused in the unity of a new nature.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Σῶμα*.

<sup>2</sup> *Ψυχὴ ἄλογος*, the inward vitality which man has in common with animals.

<sup>3</sup> *Νοῦς, πνεῦμα*, or the *ψυχὴ λογικὴ*, *anima rationalis*, the motive, self-active, free element, the *αὐτοκίνητον*, the thinking and willing, immortal spirit, which distinguishes man from animals. Apollinaris followed the psychological trichotomy of Plato. *Ὁ ἄνθρωπος*, says he in Gregory of Nyssa, *εἰς ἐστὶν ἐκ πνεύματος καὶ ψυχῆς καὶ σώματος*, for which he quotes 1 Thess. v. 23, and Gal. v. 17. But in another fragment he designates the whole spiritual principle in man by *ψυχὴ*, and makes the place of it in Christ to be supplied by the Logos. Comp. the passages in Gieseler, vol. i. Div. II. p. 73 (4th ed.). From this time the triple division of human nature was unjustly accounted heterodox.

<sup>4</sup> He even ventured to adduce created analogies, such as the mule, midway between the horse and the ass; the grey color, a mixture of white and black; and

Epiphanius expresses himself concerning the beginning of the controversy in these unusually lenient and respectful terms. "Some of our brethren, who are in high position, and who are held in great esteem with us and all the orthodox, have thought that the spirit (*ὁ νοῦς*) should be excluded from the manifestation of Christ in the flesh, and have preferred to hold that our Lord Christ assumed flesh and soul, but not our spirit, and therefore not a perfect man. The aged and venerable Apollinarius of Laodicea, dear even to the blessed father Athanasius, and in fact to all the orthodox, has been the first to frame and promulgate this doctrine. At first, when some of his disciples communicated it to us, we were unwilling to believe that such a man would put this doctrine in circulation. We supposed that the disciples had not understood the deep thoughts of so learned and so discerning a man, and had themselves fabricated things which he did not teach," &c.

So early as 362, a council at Alexandria rejected this doctrine (though without naming the author), and asserted that Christ possessed a reasonable soul. But Apollinarius did not secede from the communion of the Church, and begin to form a sect of his own, till 375. He died in 390. His writings, except numerous fragments in the works of his opponents, are lost.

Apollinarius, therefore, taught the deity of Christ, but denied the completeness (*τελειότης*) of his humanity, and, taking his departure from the Nicene postulate of the *homoousion*, ran into the Arian heresy, which likewise put the divine Logos in the place of the human spirit in Christ, but which asserted besides this the changeableness (*τρεπτότης*) of Christ; while Apollinarius, on the contrary, aimed to establish more firmly the unchangeableness of Christ, to beat the Arians with their own weapons, and provide a better vindication of the Nicene dogma. He held the union of full divinity with full humanity in one person, therefore, of two wholes in one whole, to be impossible.<sup>1</sup> He supposed the unity of the person of Christ, and

spring in distinction from winter and summer. Christ, says he, is *οὐτε ἄνθρωπος ἐλας, οὐτε θεός, ἀλλὰ θεοῦ καὶ ἀνθρώπου μίξις*.

<sup>1</sup> The result of this construction he called *ἀνθρωπόθεος*, a sort of monstrosity

at the same time his sinlessness, could be saved only by the excision of the human spirit; since sin has its seat, not in the will-less soul, nor in the body, but in the intelligent, free, and therefore changeable will or spirit of man. He also charged the Church doctrine of the full humanity of Christ with limiting the atoning suffering of Christ to the human nature, and so detracting from the atoning virtue of the work of Christ; for the death of a man could not destroy death. The divine nature must participate in the suffering throughout. His opponents, for this reason, charged him with making deity suffer and die. He made, however, a distinction between two sides of the Logos, the one allied to man and capable of suffering, and the other allied to God and exalted above all suffering. The relation of the divine pneumatic nature in Christ to the human psychical and bodily nature Apollinaris illustrated by the mingling of wine and water, the glowing fire in the iron, and the union of soul and body in man, which, though distinct, interpenetrate and form one thing.

His doctrine, however, in particulars, is variously represented, and there arose among his disciples a complex mass of opinions, some of them differing strongly from one another. According to one statement Apollinaris asserted that Christ brought even his human nature from heaven, and was from eternity *ἔνσαρκος*; according to another this was merely an opinion of his disciples, or an unwarranted inference of opponents from his assertion of an eternal determination to incarnation, and from his strong emphasizing of the union of the Logos with the flesh of Christ, which allowed that even the flesh might be worshipped without idolatry.<sup>1</sup>

which he put in the same category with the mythological figures of the minotaur, the well-known Cretan monster with human body and bull's head, or the body of a bull and the head of a man. But the Apollinarian idea of the union of the Logos with a truncated human nature might be itself more justly compared with this monster.

<sup>1</sup> Dorner, who has treated this section of the history of Christology, as well as others, with great thoroughness, says, i. 977: "That the school of Apollinaris did not remain in all points consistent with itself, nor true to its founder, is certain; but it is less certain whether Apollinaris himself always taught the same thing." Theodoret charges him with a change of opinion, which Dorner attributes to different stages of the development of his system.

The Church could not possibly accept such a half Docetic incarnation, such a mutilated and stunted humanity of Christ, despoiled of its royal head, and such a merely partial redemption as this inevitably involved. The incarnation of the Logos is his becoming completely man.<sup>1</sup> It involves, therefore, his assumption of the entire undivided nature of man, spiritual and bodily, with the sole exception of sin, which in fact belongs not to the original nature of man, but has entered from without, as a foreign poison, through the deceit of the devil. Many things in the life of Jesus imply a reasonable soul: sadness, anguish, and prayer. The spirit is just the most essential and most noble constituent of man, the controlling principle,<sup>2</sup> and it stands in the same need of redemption as the soul and the body. Had the Logos not assumed the human spirit, he would not have been true man at all, and could not have been our example. Nor could he have redeemed the spirit; and a half-redemption is no redemption at all. To be a full Redeemer, Christ must also be fully man, τέλειος ἄνθρωπος. This was the weighty doctrinal result of the Apollinarian controversy.

Athanasius, the two Gregories, Basil, and Epiphanius combated the Apollinarian error, but with a certain embarrassment, attacking it rather from behind and from the flank, than in front, and unprepared to answer duly its main point, that two integral persons cannot form one person. The later orthodox doctrine surmounted this difficulty by teaching the impersonality of the human nature of Christ, and by making the personality of Christ to reside wholly in the Logos.

The councils at Rome under Damasus, in 377 and 378, and likewise the second ecumenical council, in 381, condemned the Apollinarians.<sup>3</sup> Imperial decrees pursued them, in 388, 397, and 428. Some of them returned into the catholic church; others mingled with the Monophysites, for whose doctrine Apollinaris had, in some measure, prepared the way.

<sup>1</sup> Ἐνσάρκωσις is at the same time ἰσχυροδότησις. Christ was really ἄνθρωπος, not merely ὡς ἄνθρωπος, as Apollinaris taught on the strength of Phil. ii. 7.

<sup>2</sup> τὸ κυριώτατον.

<sup>3</sup> Conc. Constant. i. can. 1, where, with the Arians, semi-Arians, Pneumatomachi, Sabellians, and Marcellians or Photinians, the Apollinarians also are anathematized.

With the rejection of this error, however, the question of the proper relation of the divine and human natures in Christ was not yet solved, but rather for the first time fairly raised. Those church teachers proved the necessity of a reasonable human soul in Christ. But respecting the mode of the union of the two natures their views were confused and their expressions in some cases absolutely incorrect and misleading.<sup>1</sup> It was through the succeeding stages of the Christological controversies that the church first reached a clear insight into this great mystery: God manifest in the flesh.

### § 187. *The Nestorian Controversy*, A. D. 428-431.

#### SOURCES.

- I. NESTORIUS: 'Ομιλίαι, Sermones; Anathematismi. Extracts from the Greek original in the *Acts* of the council of *Ephesus*; in a Latin translation in *Marius Mercator*, a North African layman who just then resided in Constantinople, Opera, ed. Garnerius, Par. 1673. Pars ii, and better ed. Baluzius, Par. 1684; also in Gallandi, Bibl. vet. P. P. viii pp. 615-735, and in Migne's Patrol. tom. 48. Nestorius' own account (Evagr. H. E. i. 7) was used by his friend ΙΕΡΕΝΑΙΟΣ (comes, then bishop of Tyre till 448) in his Tragödia s. comm. de rebus in synodo Ephesina ac in Oriente toto gestis, which, however, is lost; the documents attached to it were revised in the 6th century in the Synodicon adversus tragödiam Irenæi, in Mansi, tom. v. fol. 731 sqq. In favor of Nestorius, or at least of his doctrine, THEODORET († 457) in his works against Cyril, and in three dialogues entitled 'Ερανιστής (Beggars). Comp. also the fragments of THEODORE OF MOPSUESTIA († 429).
- II. Against Nestorius: CYRIL OF ALEX.: 'Αναθεματισμοί, Five Books κατὰ Νεστορίου, and several Epistles against Nest., and Theod., in vol. vi. of Aubert's ed. of his Opera, Par. 1638 (in Migne's ed. t. ix.). SOCRATES: vii. c. 29-35 (written after 431, but still before the death of Nestorius; comp. c. 84). EVAGRIUS: H. E. i. 2-7. LIBERATUS (deacon of Carthage about 553): Breviarium causæ Nestorianorum et Eutychianorum (ed. Garnier, Par. 1675, and printed in Gallandi, Bibl. vet. Patr. tom. xii. pp. 121-161). LEONTIUS BYZANT. (monachus): De sectis; and contra Nestorium et Eutychen (in Gallandi, Bibl. tom. xii. p. 625 sqq., and 658-700). A complete collection of all the acts of the Nestorian controversy in MANSI, tom. iv. fol. 567 sqq., and tom. v. vii. ix.

<sup>1</sup> This is true even of Athanasius. Comp. the note on him in § 185, p. 706 f.

## LATER LITERATURE.

PETAVIUS: Theolog. dogmatum tom. iv. (de incarnatione), lib. i. c. 7 sqq.  
 Jo. GARNIER: De hæresi et libris Nestorii (in his edition of the Opera  
 Marii Mercator. Par. 1678, newly edited by Migne, Par. 1846). GIB-  
 BON: Decline and Fall of the R. E. ch. 47. P. E. JABLONSKI: De Nes-  
 torianismo. Berol. 1724. GENGLER (R. C.): Ueber die Verdammung  
 des Nestorius (Tübinger Quartalschrift, 1835, No. 2). SCHRÖCKH: K.  
 Geschichte, vol. xviii. pp. 176-812. WALOH: Ketzerhist. v. 289-286.  
 NEANDER: K. Gesch. vol. iv. pp. 856-992. GIESLER: vol. i. Div. ii.  
 pp. 131 ff. (4th ed.). BAUR: Dreieinigkeit, vol. i. 693-777. DORNER:  
 Christologie, vol. ii. pp. 60-98. HEFELE (R. C.): Conciliengesch., vol.  
 ii. pp. 184 ff. H. H. MILMAN: History of Latin Christianity, vol. i.  
 ch. iii. pp. 195-252. (STANLEY, in his History of the Eastern Church,  
 has seen fit to ignore the Nestorian, and the other Christological con-  
 troversies—the most important in the history of the Greek church!)  
 Comp. also W. MÜLLER: Article Nestorius, in *Herzog's Theol. Encykl.*  
 vol.-i. (1858) pp. 288-296, and the relevant sections in the works on  
 Doctrine History.

APOLLINARIANISM, which sacrificed to the unity of the person  
 the integrity of the natures, at least of the human nature, an-  
 ticipated the Monophysite heresy, though in a peculiar way,  
 and formed the precise counterpart to the Antiochian doctrine,  
 which was developed about the same time, and somewhat later  
 by Diodorus, bishop of Tarsus (died 394), and Theodore, bishop  
 of Mopsuestia (393-428), and which held the divine and human  
 in Christ so rigidly apart as to make Christ, though not pro-  
 fessedly, yet virtually a double person.

From this school proceeded Nestorius, the head and mar-  
 tyr of the Christological heresy which bears his name. His  
 doctrine differs from that of Theodore of Mopsuestia only in  
 being less speculative and more practical, and still less solici-  
 tous for the unity of the person of Christ.<sup>1</sup> He was originally  
 a monk, then presbyter in Antioch, and after 428 patriarch of  
 Constantinople. In Constantinople a second Chrysostom was  
 expected in him, and a restorer of the honor of his great prede-  
 cessor against the detraction of his Alexandrian rival. He  
 was an honest man, of great eloquence, monastic piety, and the  
 spirit of a zealot for orthodoxy, but impetuous, vain, imprudent,

<sup>1</sup> So Dorner also states the difference, vol. ii. p. 62 f.

and wanting in sound, practical judgment. In his inaugural sermon he addressed Theodosius II. with these words: "Give me, O emperor, the earth purified of heretics, and I will give thee heaven for it; help me to fight the heretics, and I will help thee to fight the Persians."<sup>1</sup>

He immediately instituted violent measures against Arians, Novatians, Quartodecimanians, and Macedonians, and incited the emperor to enact more stringent laws against heretics. The Pelagians alone, with whose doctrine of free will (but not of original sin) he sympathized, he treated indulgently, receiving to himself Julian of Eclanum, Coelestius, and other banished leaders of that party, interceding for them in 429 with the emperor and with the pope Celestine, though, on account of the very unfavorable reports concerning Pelagianism which were spread by the layman Marius Mercator, then living in Constantinople, his intercessions were of no avail. By reason of this partial contact of the two, Pelagianism was condemned by the council of Ephesus together with Nestorianism.

But now Nestorius himself fell out with the prevailing faith of the church in Constantinople. The occasion was his opposition to the certainly very bold and equivocal expression *mother of God*, which had been already sometimes applied to the virgin Mary by Origen, Alexander of Alexandria, Athanasius, Basil, and others, and which, after the Arian controversy, and with the growth of the worship of Mary, passed into the devotional language of the people.<sup>2</sup>

It was of course not the sense, or monstrous nonsense, of this term, that the creature bore the Creator, or that the eternal Deity took its beginning from Mary; which would be the most absurd and the most wicked of all heresies, and a shocking

<sup>1</sup> Socrates, H. E., vii. 29.

<sup>2</sup> Θεοτόκος, Deipara, genitrix Dei, mater Dei. On the earlier use of this word comp. Petavius: De incarnatione, lib. v. c. 15 (tom. iv. p. 471 sqq., Paris ed. of 1650). In the Bible the expression does not occur, and only the approximate μήτηρ τοῦ κυρίου, in Luke i. 43; but μήτηρ Ἰησοῦ, on the contrary, is frequent. Cyril appeals to Gal. iv. 4: "God sent forth his Son, made of a woman." To the Protestant mind Θεοτόκος is offensive on account of its undeniable connection with the Roman Catholic worship of Mary, which certainly reminds us of the pagan mothers of gods Comp. §§ 82 and 83.

blasphemy; but the expression was intended only to denote the indissoluble union of the divine and human natures in Christ, and the veritable incarnation of the Logos, who took the human nature from the body of Mary, came forth God-Man from her womb, and as God-Man suffered on the cross. For Christ was borne as a *person*, and suffered as a *person*; and the personality in Christ resided in his divinity, not in his humanity. So, in fact, the reasonable soul of man, which is the centre of the human personality, participates in the suffering and the death-struggle of the body, though the soul itself does not and cannot die.

The Antiochian theology, however, could not conceive a human nature without a human personality, and this it strictly separated from the divine Logos. Therefore Theodore of Mopsuestia had already disputed the term *theotokos* with all earnestness. "Mary," says he, "bore Jesus, not the Logos, for the Logos was, and continues to be, omnipresent, though he dwelt in Jesus in a special manner from the beginning. Therefore Mary is strictly the mother of *Christ*, not the mother of *God*. Only in a figure, *per anaphoram*, can she be called also the mother of God, because God was in a peculiar sense in Christ. Properly speaking, she gave birth to a man in whom the union with the Logos had begun, but was still so incomplete that he could not yet (till after his baptism) be called the Son of God." He even declared it "insane" to say that God was born of the Virgin; "not God, but the temple in which God dwelt, was born of Mary."

In a similar strain Nestorius, and his friend Anastasius, a priest whom he had brought with him from Antioch, argued from the pulpit against the *theotokon*. Nestorius claimed that he found the controversy already existing in Constantinople, because some were calling Mary mother of *God* (*Θεοτόκος*), others, mother of *Man* (*ἀνδρωποτόκος*). He proposed the middle expression, mother of *Christ* (*Χριστοτόκος*), because Christ was at the same time God and man. He delivered several discourses on this disputed point. "You ask," says he in his first sermon, "whether Mary may be called *mother of God*. Has God then a mother? If so, heathenism itself is



excusable in assigning mothers to its gods; but then Paul is a liar, for he said of the deity of Christ that it was without father, without mother, and without descent.<sup>1</sup> No, my dear sir, Mary did not bear God; . . . the creature bore not the uncreated Creator, but the man who is the instrument of the God-head; the Holy Ghost conceived not the Logos, but formed for him, out of the virgin, a temple which he might inhabit (John ii. 21). The incarnate God did not die, but quickened him in whom he was made flesh. . . . This garment, which he used, I honor on account of the God which was covered therein and inseparable therefrom; . . . *I separate the natures, but I unite the worship.* Consider what this must mean. He who was formed in the womb of Mary, was not himself God, but God assumed him [*assumsit, i. e.,* clothed himself with humanity], and on account of Him who assumed, he who was assumed is also called *God*.”<sup>2</sup>

From this word the Nestorian controversy took its rise; but this word represented, at the same time, a theological idea and a mighty religious sentiment; it was intimately connected with the growing veneration of Mary; it therefore struck into the field of devotion, which lies much nearer the people than that of speculative theology; and thus it touched the most vehement passions. The word *theotokos* was the watchword of the orthodox party in the Nestorian controversy, as the term *homoousios* had been in the Arian; and opposition to this word meant denial of the mystery of the incarnation, or of the true union of the divine and human natures in Christ.

And unquestionably the Antiochian Christology, which was represented by Nestorius, did not make the Logos truly *become* man. It asserted indeed, rightly, the duality of the natures, and the continued distinction between them; it denied, with equal correctness, that God, as such, could either be born, or suffer and die; but it pressed the distinction of the two natures to double personality. It substituted for the idea of the incar-

<sup>1</sup> Heb. vii. 8: ἀπὸ πατρὸς, ἀμῆτρω, ἔνευ γενεαλογίας.

<sup>2</sup> In the original in Mansi, iv. 1197; in a Latin translation in Marius Mercator ed. Garnier, Migne, p. 757 ff. Comp. this and similar passages also in Hefele, ii. p. 187, and Gieseler, i. 2, 139.

nation the idea of an assumption of human nature, or rather of an entire man, into fellowship with the Logos,<sup>1</sup> and an indwelling of Godhead in Christ.<sup>2</sup> Instead of God-Man,<sup>3</sup> we have here the idea of a mere God-bearing man;<sup>4</sup> and the person of Jesus of Nazareth is only the instrument or the temple,<sup>5</sup> in which the divine Logos dwells. The two natures form not a personal unity,<sup>6</sup> but only a moral unity, an intimate friendship or conjunction.<sup>7</sup> They hold an outward, mechanical relation to each other,<sup>8</sup> in which each retains its peculiar attributes,<sup>9</sup> forbidding any sort of *communicatio idiomatum*. This union is, in the first place, a gracious condescension on the part of God,<sup>10</sup> whereby the Logos makes the man an object of the divine pleasure; and in the second place, an elevation of the man to higher dignity and to sonship with God.<sup>11</sup> By virtue of the condescension there arises, in the third place, a practical fellowship of operation,<sup>12</sup> in which the humanity becomes the instrument and temple of the deity and the *ἑνωσις σχετική* culminates. Theodore of Mopsuestia, the able founder of the Antiochian Christology, set forth the elevation of the man to sonship with God (starting from Luke ii. 53) under the aspect of a gradual moral process, and made it dependent on the progressive virtue and meritoriousness of Jesus, which were completed in the resurrection, and earned for him the unchangea-

<sup>1</sup> Πρόσληψις. Theodore of Mopsuestia says (Act. Conc. Ephes. in Mansi, iv. fol. 1349): 'Ὁ θεσπότης δεῖτε λόγος ἑνδρωπὸν εἰληφε τέλειον (hominem perfectum assumpsit), instead of φύσιν ἀνθρώπου εἰληφε, or σάρξ ἐγένετα.

<sup>2</sup> Ἐνωίησις, in distinction from ἐνσάρκωσις.

<sup>3</sup> Θεάνθρωπος.

<sup>4</sup> Θεοφόρος, also θεοδόχος, from δέχεσθαι, God-assuming.

<sup>5</sup> Instrumentum, templum, *vaas*, a favorite term with the Nestorians.

<sup>6</sup> Ἐνωσις κατ' ὑπόστασιν.

<sup>7</sup> Συνάφεια, conjunction, affinity, intercourse, attachment, in distinction from ἑνωσις, true interior union. Cyril of Alexandria charges Nestorius, in his Epist. ad Constantinum: Φεύγει πανταχοῦ τὸ λέγειν, τὴν ἑνωσιν, ἀλλ' ὀνομάζει τὴν συνάφειαν, ὡς περ ἐστὶν ὁ ἕξωθεν.

<sup>8</sup> Ἐνωσις σχετική, a unity of relation (from σχέσις, condition, relation) in distinction from a ἑνωσις φυσική, or σύγκρασις, physical unity or commixture. (C)

<sup>9</sup> Ἰδιώματα.

<sup>10</sup> Ἐνωσις κατὰ χάριν, or κατ' εὐδοκίαν.

<sup>11</sup> Ἐνωσις κατ' ἐξίαν, κατ' υἱοθεσίαν.

<sup>12</sup> Ἐνωσις κατ' ἐνέργειαν.

bleness of the divine life as a reward for his voluntary victory of virtue.

The Antiochian and Nestorian theory amounts therefore, at bottom, to a duality of person in Christ, though without clearly avowing it. It cannot conceive the reality of the two natures without a personal independence for each. With the theanthropic unity of the person of Christ it denies also the theanthropic unity of his work, especially of his sufferings and death; and in the same measure it enfeebles the reality of redemption.<sup>1</sup>

From this point of view Mary, of course, could be nothing more than mother of the man Jesus, and the predicate *theotokos*, strictly understood, must appear absurd or blasphemous. Nestorius would admit no more than that God passed through (*transiit*) the womb of Mary.

This very war upon the favorite shibboleth of orthodoxy provoked the bitterest opposition of the people and of the monks, whose sympathies were with the Alexandrian theology. They contradicted Nestorius in the pulpit, and insulted him on the street; while he, returning evil for evil, procured corporal punishments and imprisonment for the monks, and condemned the view of his antagonists at a local council in 429.<sup>2</sup>

His chief antagonist in Constantinople was Proclus, bishop of Cyzicum, perhaps an unsuccessful rival of Nestorius for the patriarchate, and a man who carried the worship of Mary to an excess only surpassed by a modern Roman enthusiast for the dogma of the immaculate conception. In a bombastic

<sup>1</sup> Cyril charges upon Nestorius (Epist. ad Coslest.), that he does not say the Son of God died and rose again, but always only the man Jesus died and rose. Nestorius himself says, in his second homily (in Mar. Merc. 763 sq.): It may be said that the Son of God, in the wider sense, died, but not that God died. Moreover, the Scriptures, in speaking of the birth, passion, and death, never say *God*, but *Christ*, or *Jesus*, or the *Lord*,—all of them names which suit both natures. A born, dead, and buried God, cannot be worshipped. Pilate, says he in another sermon, did not crucify the Godhead, but the clothing of the Godhead, and Joseph of Arimathea did not shroud and bury the Logos (in Marius Merc. 789 sqq.).

<sup>2</sup> According to a partisan report of Basilius to the emperor Theodosius, Nestorius struck, with his own hand, a presumptuous monk who forbade the bishop, as an obstinate heretic, to approach the altar, and then made him over to the officers, who flogged him through the streets and then cast him out of the city.

sermon in honor of the Virgin<sup>1</sup> he praised her as "the spotless treasure-house of virginity; the spiritual paradise of the second Adam; the workshop, in which the two natures were annealed together; the bridal chamber in which the Word wedded the flesh; the living bush of nature, which was unharmed by the fire of the divine birth; the light cloud which bore him who sat between the Cherubim; the stainless fleece, bathed in the dews of Heaven, with which the Shepherd clothed his sheep; the handmaid and the mother, the Virgin and Heaven."

Soon another antagonist, far more powerful, arose in the person of the patriarch CYRIL of Alexandria, a learned, acute, energetic, but extremely passionate, haughty, ambitious, and disputatious prelate. Moved by interests both personal and doctrinal, he entered the field, and used every means to overthrow his rival in Constantinople, as his like-minded uncle and predecessor, Theophilus, had overthrown the noble Chrysostom in the Origenistic strife. The theological controversy was at the same time a contest of the two patriarchates. In personal character Cyril stands far below Nestorius, but he excelled him in knowledge of the world, shrewdness, theological learning and acuteness, and had the show of greater veneration for Christ and for Mary on his side; and in his opposition to the abstract separation of the divine and human he was in the right, though he himself pressed to the verge of the opposite error of mixing or confusing the two natures in Christ.<sup>2</sup> In him we have a striking proof that the value of a doctrine cannot always be judged by the personal worth of its representatives. God uses for his purposes all sorts of instruments, good, bad, and indifferent.

Cyril first wrote to Nestorius; then to the emperor, the empress Eudokia, and the emperor's sister Pulcheria, who took lively interest in church affairs; finally to the Roman bishop Celestine; and he warned bishops and churches east

<sup>1</sup> See Mansi, tom. iv. 578; and the remarks of Walch, vol. v. 878 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. in particular his assertion of a *ἑνωσις φυσική* in the third of his Anathematismi against Nestorius; Hefele (ii. 155), however, understands by this not a *ἑνωσις εἰς μίαν φύσιν*, but only a real union in *one being, one existence*.

and went against the dangerous heresies of his rival. Celestine, moved by orthodox instinct, flattered by the appeal to his authority, and indignant at Nestorius for his friendly reception of the exiled Pelagians, condemned his doctrine at a Roman council, and deposed him from the patriarchal chair, unless he should retract within ten days (430).

As Nestorius persisted in his view, Cyril, despising the friendly mediation of the patriarch John of Antioch, hurled twelve anathemas, or formulas of condemnation, at the patriarch of Constantinople from a council at Alexandria by order of the pope (430).<sup>1</sup>

Nestorius replied with twelve counter-anathemas, in which he accused his opponents of the heresy of Apollinarius.<sup>2</sup> Theodoret of Cyros, the learned expositor and church historian, also wrote against Cyril at the instance of John of Antioch.

The controversy had now become so general and critical, that it could be settled only by an ecumenical council.

### § 138. *The Ecumenical Council of Ephesus, A. D. 431. The Compromise.*

For the Acts of the Council, see MANSI (tom. iv. fol. 567-1482, and a part of tom. v.), HARDUIN, and FUCHS, and an extended history of the council and the transactions connected with it in WALCH, SCHRÖCKH, and HEFELE (ii. pp. 162-271). We confine ourselves to the decisive points.

Theodosius II., in connection with his Western colleague, Valentinian III., summoned a universal council on Pentecost, A. D. 431, at Ephesus, where the worship of the Virgin mother of God had taken the place of the worship of the light and life dispensing virgin Diana. This is the third of the ecumenical councils, and is held, therefore, by all churches, in high regard. But in moral character this council stands far beneath that of Nicæa or of the first council of Constantinople. An uncharitable, violent, and passionate spirit ruled the transactions. The doctrinal result, also, was mainly only negative ;

<sup>1</sup> Cyrilli Opera, tom. iii. 67; in Mansi, iv. fol. 1067 sqq.; in Gieseler, i. ii. p. 14 ff. (§ 88, not. 20); in Hefele, ii. 155 ff.

<sup>2</sup> In Marius Mercator, p. 909; Gieseler, i. ii. 145 f.; Hefele, ii. 158 ff.

that is to say, condemnation of Nestorianism. The positive and ecumenical character of the council was really secured only by the subsequent transactions, and the union of the dominant party of the council with the protesting minority of Oriental bishops.<sup>1</sup>

Nestorius came first to Ephesus with sixteen bishops, and with an armed escort, as if he were going into battle. He had the imperial influence on his side, but the majority of the bishops and the prevailing voice of the people in Ephesus, and also in Constantinople, were against him. The emperor himself could not be present in person, but sent the captain of his body-guard, the comes Candidian. Cyril appeared with a numerous retinue of fifty Egyptian bishops, besides monks, parabolani, slaves, and seamen, under the banner of St. Mark and of the holy Mother of God. On his side was the archbishop

<sup>1</sup> It is with reference to this council mainly that Dean Milman (*Latin Christianity*, i. 227) passes the following harsh and sweeping judgment on the ecumenical councils of the ancient church: "Nowhere is Christianity less attractive, and, if we look to the ordinary tone and character of the proceedings, less authoritative, than in the councils of the church. It is in general a fierce collision of two rival factions, neither of which will yield, each of which is solemnly pledged against conviction. Intrigue, injustice, violence, decisions on authority alone, and that the authority of a turbulent majority, decisions by wild acclamation rather than after sober inquiry, detract from the reverence, and impugn the judgments, at least of the later councils. The close is almost invariably a terrible anathema, in which it is impossible not to discern the tones of human hatred, of arrogant triumph, of rejoicing at the damnation imprecated against the humiliated adversary. Even the venerable council of Nicaea commenced with mutual accusations and recriminations, which were suppressed by the moderation of the emperor; and throughout the account of Eusebius there is an adulation of the imperial convert, with something of the intoxication, it might be of pardonable vanity, at finding themselves the objects of royal favor, and partaking in royal banquets. But the more fatal error of that council was the solicitation, at least the acquiescence in the infliction, of a civil penalty, that of exile, against the recalcitrant prelates. The degeneracy is rapid from the council of Nicaea to that of Ephesus, where each party came determined to use every means of haste, manoeuvre, court influence, bribery, to crush his adversary; where there was an encouragement of, if not an appeal to, the violence of the populace, to anticipate the decrees of the council; where each had his own tumultuous foreign rabble to back his quarrel; and neither would scruple at any means to obtain the ratification of their anathemas through persecution by the civil government." This is but the dark side of the picture. In spite of all human passions and imperfections truth triumphed at last, and this alone accounts for the extraordinary effect of these ecumenical councils, and the authority they still enjoy in the whole Christian world.

Memnon of Ephesus, with forty of his Asiatic suffragans and twelve bishops from Pamphilia; and the clergy, the monks, and the people of Asia Minor were of the same sentiment. The pope of Rome—for the first time at an ecumenical council—was represented by two bishops and a priest, who held with Cyril, but did not mix in the debates, as they affected to judge between the contending parties, and thus maintain the papal authority. This deputation, however, did not come in at the beginning.<sup>1</sup> The patriarch John of Antioch, a friend of Nestorius, was detained on the long journey with his bishops.

Cyril refused to wait, and opened the council in the church of St. Mary with a hundred and sixty bishops<sup>2</sup> sixteen days after Pentecost, on the 22d of June, in spite of the protest of the imperial commissioner. Nestorius was thrice cited to appear, but refused to come until all the bishops should be assembled. The council then proceeded without him to the examination of the point in dispute, and to the condemnation of Nestorius. The bishops unanimously cried: "Whosoever does not anathematize Nestorius, let himself be anathema; the true faith anathematizes him; the holy council anathematizes him. Whosoever holds fellowship with Nestorius, let him be anathema. We all anathematize the letter and the doctrines of Nestorius. We all anathematize Nestorius and his followers, and his ungodly faith, and his ungodly doctrine. We all anathematize Nestorius," &c.<sup>3</sup> Then a multitude of Christological expressions of the earlier fathers and several passages from the writings of Nestorius were read, and at the close of the first session, which lasted till late in the night, the following sentence of deposition was adopted and subscribed by about two hundred

<sup>1</sup> St. Augustine also was one of the Western bishops who were summoned, the emperor having sent a special officer to him; but he had died shortly before, on the 28th of August, 430.

<sup>2</sup> Before the sentence of deposition came to be subscribed, the number had increased to a hundred and ninety-eight. According to the Roman accounts Cyril presided in the name and under the commission of the pope; but in this case he should have yielded the presidency in the second and subsequent sessions, at which the papal legates were present; which he did not do.

<sup>3</sup> In Mansi, tom. iv. p. 1170 sq.; Hefele, ii. 169.

bishops: "The Lord Jesus Christ, who is blasphemed by him [Nestorius], determines through this holy council that Nestorius be excluded from the episcopal office, and from all sacerdotal fellowship."<sup>1</sup>

The people of Ephesus hailed this result with universal jubilee, illuminated the city, and accompanied Cyril with torches and censers in state to his house.<sup>2</sup>

On the following day Nestorius was informed of the sentence of deposition in a laconic edict, in which he was called a new Judas. But he indignantly protested against the decree, and made complaint in an epistle to the emperor. The imperial commissioner declared the decrees invalid, because they were made by only a portion of the council, and he prevented as far as possible the publication of them.

A few days after, on the 26th or 27th of June, John of Antioch at last reached Ephesus, and immediately, with forty-two bishops of like sentiment, among whom was the celebrated Theodoret, held in his dwelling, under the protection of the imperial commissioner and a body-guard, a counter council or conciliabulum, yielding nothing to the haste and violence of the other, deposed Cyril of Alexandria and Memnon of Ephesus from all priestly functions, as heretics and authors of the whole disorder, and declared the other bishops who voted with them excommunicate until they should anathematize the heretical propositions of Cyril.<sup>3</sup>

Now followed a succession of mutual criminations, invectives, arts of church diplomacy and politics, intrigues, and violence, which give the saddest picture of the uncharitable and unspiritual Christianity of that time. But the true genius of Christianity is, of course, far elevated above its unworthy organs, and overrules even the worst human passions for the cause of truth and righteousness.

<sup>1</sup> 'Ο βλασφημῶνς τῶν παρ' αὐτοῦ κύριος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς ὤρισεν διὰ τῆς παρούσης ἀγιωτάτης συνόδου, ἀλλότριον εἶναι τὸν αὐτὸν Νεστόριον τοῦ ἐπισκοπικοῦ ἐξιώματος καὶ παντὸς συλλόγου ἱερατικοῦ. Mansi, iv. fol. 1211; Hefele, ii. 172.

<sup>2</sup> So Cyril himself complacently relates in a letter to his friends in Egypt. See Mansi, tom. iv. 1241 sq.

<sup>3</sup> The Acts of this counter council in Mansi, tom. iv. 1259 sqq. (Acta Conciliabuli). Comp. also Hefele, ii. 178 ff.



On the 10th of July, after the arrival of the papal legates, who bore themselves as judges, Cyril held a second session, and then five more sessions (making seven in all), now in the house of Memnon, now in St. Mary's church, issuing a number of circular letters and six canons against the Nestorians and Pelagians.

Both parties applied to the weak emperor, who, without understanding the question, had hitherto leaned to the side of Nestorius, but by public demonstrations and solemn processions of the people and monks of Constantinople under the direction of the aged and venerated Dalmatius, was awed into the worship of the mother of God. He finally resolved to confirm both the deposition of Nestorius and that of Cyril and Memnon, and sent one of the highest civil officers, John, to Ephesus, to publish this sentence, and if possible to reconcile the contending parties. The deposed bishops were arrested. The council, that is the majority, applied again to the emperor and his colleague, deplored their lamentable condition, and desired the release of Cyril and Memnon, who had never been deposed by them, but on the contrary had always been held in high esteem as leaders of the orthodox doctrine. The Antiochians likewise took all pains to gain the emperor to their side, and transmitted to him a creed which sharply distinguished, indeed, the two natures in Christ, yet, for the sake of the *unconfused union* of the two (*ἀσύνχυτος ἕνωσις*), conceded to Mary the disputed predicate *theotokos*.

The emperor now summoned eight spokesmen from each of the two parties to himself to Chalcedon. Among them were, on the one side, the papal deputies, on the other John of Antioch and Theodoret of Cyros, while Cyril and Memnon were obliged to remain at Ephesus in prison, and Nestorius at his own wish was assigned to his former cloister at Antioch, and on the 25th of October, 431, Maximian was nominated as his successor in Constantinople. After fruitless deliberations, the council of Ephesus was dissolved in October, 431, Cyril and Memnon set free, and the bishops of both parties commanded to go home.

The division lasted two years longer, till at last a sort of

compromise was effected. John of Antioch sent the aged bishop Paul of Emisa a messenger to Alexandria with a creed which he had already, in a shorter form, laid before the emperor, and which broke the doctrinal antagonism by asserting the duality of the natures against Cyril, and the predicate *mother of God* against Nestorius.<sup>1</sup> "We confess," says this symbol, which was composed by Theodoret, "that our Lord Jesus Christ, the only begotten Son of God, is perfect God and perfect man, of a reasonable soul and body subsisting .<sup>2</sup> as to his Godhead begotten of the Father before all time, but as to his manhood, born of the Virgin Mary in the end of the days for us and for our salvation; of the same essence with the Father as to his Godhead, and of the same substance with us as to his manhood;<sup>3</sup> for two natures are united with one another.<sup>4</sup> Therefore we confess *one* Christ, *one* Lord, and *one* Son. By reason of this *union*, which yet is *without confusion*,<sup>5</sup> we also confess that the holy Virgin is *mother of God*, because God the Logos was made flesh and man, and united with himself the temple [humanity] even from the conception; which temple he took from the Virgin. But concerning the words of the Gospel and Epistles respecting Christ, we know that theologians apply some which refer to the *one person* to the two natures in common, but separate others as referring to the two natures, and assign the expressions which become God to the Godhead of Christ, but the expressions of humiliation to his manhood."<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> In Mansi, tom. v. fol. 305; Hefele, ii. 246; and Gieseler, i. ii. p. 150.

<sup>2</sup> Θεὸν τέλειον καὶ ἄνθρωπον τέλειον ἐκ ψυχῆς λογικῆς (against Apollinarius) καὶ σῶματος.

<sup>3</sup> Ὁμοούσιον τῷ πατρὶ κατὰ τὴν θεότητα, καὶ ὁμοούσιον ἡμῖν κατὰ τὴν ἀνθρωπότητα. Here *homoeousios*, at least in the second clause, evidently does not imply numerical unity, but only generic unity.

<sup>4</sup> Δύο γὰρ φύσεις ἑνωσίς γέγονε, in opposition to the *μία φύσις* of Cyril.

<sup>5</sup> Κατὰ ταύτην τὴν τῆς ἐσσυχύτου (against Cyril) ἐνώσεως ἑνωσίαν.

<sup>6</sup> Καὶ τὰς μὲν θεωρεῖται κατὰ τὴν θεότητα τοῦ Χριστοῦ, τὰς δὲ ταπεινὰ κατὰ τὴν ἀνθρωπότητα αὐτοῦ παραδιδόντας. Gieseler says (i. ii. p. 152), Nestorius never asserted anything but what agrees with this confession which Cyril subscribed. But he pressed the distinction of the natures in Christ so far that it amounted, in substance, though not in expression, to two persons; he taught not a true *becoming* man, but the union of the Logos with a τέλειος ἄνθρωπος, a human person there-

Cyril assented to this confession, and repeated it verbally, with some further doctrinal explanations, in his answer to the irenical letter of the patriarch of Antioch, but insisted on the condemnation and deposition of Nestorius as the indispensable condition of church fellowship. At the same time he knew how to gain the imperial court to the orthodox side by all kinds of presents, which, according to the Oriental custom of testifying submission to princes by presents, were not necessarily regarded as bribes. The Antiochians, satisfied with saving the doctrine of two natures, thought it best to sacrifice the person of Nestorius to the unity of the church, and to anathematize his "wicked and unholy innovations."<sup>1</sup> Thus in 433 union was effected, though not without much contradiction on both sides, nor without acts of imperial force.

The unhappy Nestorius was dragged from the stillness of his former cloister, the cloister of Euprepus before the gates of Antioch, in which he had enjoyed four years of repose, from one place of exile to another, first to Arabia, then to Egypt, and was compelled to drink to the dregs the bitter cup of persecution which he himself, in the days of his power, had forced upon the heretics. He endured his suffering with resignation and independence, wrote his life under the significant title of *Tragedy*,<sup>2</sup> and died after 439, no one knows where nor when. Characteristic of the fanaticism of the times is the statement quoted by Evagrius,<sup>3</sup> that Nestorius, after having his tongue gnawed by worms in punishment for his blasphemy, passed to the harder torments of eternity. The Monophysite Jacobites are accustomed from year to year to cast

fore not nature; and he constantly denied the *theotokos*, except in an improper sense. His doctrine was unquestionably much distorted by his cotemporaries; but so also was the doctrine of Cyril.

<sup>1</sup> Τὰς φάβας αὐτοῦ καὶ βεβήλους καινοφωρίας.

<sup>2</sup> Fragments in Evagrius, H. E. i. 7, and in the Synodicon adversus Tragedian. Irenæi, c. 6. That the book bore the name of *Tragedy*, is stated by Ebedjesu, a Nestorian metropolitan. The imperial commissioner, Irenæus, afterwards bishop of Tyre, a friend of Nestorius, composed a book concerning him and the ecclesiastical history of his time, likewise under the title of *Tragedy*, fragments of which, in a Latin translation, are preserved in the so-called Synodicon, in Mansi, v. 781 sqq.

<sup>3</sup> Hist. Ecc. i. 6.

stones upon his supposed grave in Upper Egypt, and have spread the tradition that it has never been moistened by the rain of heaven, which yet falls upon the evil and the good. The emperor, who had formerly favored him, but was now turned entirely against him, caused all his writings to be burned, and his followers to be named after Simon Magnus, and stigmatized as Simonians.<sup>1</sup>

The same orthodox zeal turned also upon the writings of Theodore of Mopsuestia, the long deceased teacher of Nestorius and father of his error. Bishop Rabulas of Edessa († 435) pronounced the anathema upon him and interdicted his writings; and though his successor Ibas (436–457) again interested himself in Theodore, and translated several of his writings into Syriac (the ecclesiastical tongue of the Persian church), yet the persecution soon broke out afresh, and the theological school of Edessa where the Antiochian theology had longest maintained its life, and whence the Persian clergy had proceeded, was dissolved by the emperor Zeno in 489. This was the end of Nestorianism in the Roman empire.

### § 139. *The Nestorians.*

Jos. SIM. ASSEMANI: *De Syris Nestorianis*, in his *Bibliotheca Orientalis*. Rom. 1719–1728, fol. tom. iii. P. ii. EBEDJESU (Nestorian metropolitan of Nisibis, † 1818): *Liber Margaritæ de veritate fidei* (a defence

<sup>1</sup> For his sad fate and his upright character Nestorius, after having been long abhorred, has in modern times, since Luther, found much sympathy; while Cyril by his violent conduct has incurred much censure. Walch, l. c. v. p. 817 ff., has collected the earlier opinions. Gieseler and Neander take the part of Nestorius against Cyril, and think that he was unjustly condemned. So also Milman, who would rather meet the judgment of the Divine Redeemer loaded with the errors of Nestorius than with the barbarities of Cyril, but does not enter into the theological merits of the controversy. (*History of Latin Christianity*, i. 210.) Petavius, Baur, Hefele, and Ebrard, on the contrary, vindicate Cyril against Nestorius, not as to his personal conduct, which was anything but Christian, but in regard to the particular matter in question, viz., the defence of the unity of Christ against the division of his personality. Dorner (ii. 81 ff.) justly distributes right and wrong, truth and error, on both sides, and considers Nestorius and Cyril representatives of two equally one-sided conceptions, which complement each other. Cyril's strength lay on the religious and speculative side of Christology, that of Nestorius on the ethical and practical. Kahnis gives a similar judgment, *Dogmatik*, ii. p. 86.

of Nestorianism), in *Ang. Mai's Scrip. vet. nova collect.* x. ii. 317  
 GIBBON: Chap. xlvii, near the end. E. SMITH and H. G. O. DWIGHT:  
*Researches in Armenia; with a visit to the Nestorian and Chaldean*  
*Christians of Oormiah and Salmas.* 2 vols. Bost. 1838. JUSTIN  
 PERKINS: *A Residence of eight years in Persia.* Andover, 1848.  
 WILTSON: *Kirchliche Geographie u. Statistik.* Berl. 1848, i. 214 ff.  
 GEO. PERCY BADGER: *The Nestorians and their Rituals.* Illustrated  
 (with colored plates), 2 vols. Lond. 1852. H. NEWCOMB: *A Cyclo-*  
*pædia of Missions.* New York, 1856, p. 558 ff. PETERMANN: Article  
*Nestorianer*, in Herzog's *Theol. Encykl.* vol. x. (1858), pp. 279-288.

While most of the heresies of antiquity, Arianism not excepted, have been utterly obliterated from history, and only raise their heads from time to time as individual opinions under peculiar modifications, the Christological heresies of the fifth century, Nestorianism and Monophysitism, continue in organized sects to this day. These schismatic churches of the East are the petrified remains or ruins of important chapters in the history of the ancient church. They are sunk in ignorance and superstition; but they are more accessible to Western Christianity than the orthodox Greek church, and offer to the Roman and Protestant churches an interesting field of missions, especially among the Nestorians and the Armenians.

The NESTORIANS differ from the orthodox Greek church in their repudiation of the council of Ephesus and of the worship of Mary as mother of God, of the use of images (though they retain the sign of the cross), of the doctrine of purgatory (though they have prayers for the dead), and of transubstantiation (though they hold the real presence of Christ in the eucharist), as well as in greater simplicity of worship. They are subject to a peculiar hierarchical organization with eight orders, from the catholicus or patriarch to the sub-deacon and reader. The five lower orders, up to the priests, may marry; in former times even the bishops, archbishops, and patriarchs had this privilege. Their fasts are numerous and strict. The feast-days begin with sunset, as among the Jews. The patriarch eats no flesh; he is chosen always from the same family; he is ordained by three metropolitans. Most of the ecclesiastical books are written in the Syriac language.

After Nestorianism was exterminated from the Roman

empire it found an asylum in the kingdom of Persia, whither several teachers of the theological school of Edessa fled. One of them, Barsumas, became bishop of Nisibis (435-489),<sup>1</sup> founded a new theological seminary there, and confirmed the Persian Christians in their aversion to the Cyrillian council of Ephesus, and in their adhesion to the Antiochian and Nestorian theology. They were favored by the Persian kings, from Pherozes, or Firuz, onward (461-488), out of political opposition to Constantinople. At the council of Seleucia (498) they renounced all connection with the orthodox church of the empire. They called themselves, after their liturgical language, CHALDEAN or ASSYRIAN Christians, while they were called by their opponents NESTORIANS. They had a patriarch, who after the year 496 resided in the double city of Seleucia-Ctesiphon, and after 762 in Bagdad (the capital of the Saracenic empire), under the name of *Yazeliak* (catholicus), and who, in the thirteenth century, had no less than twenty-five metropolitans under his supervision.

The Nestorian church flourished for several centuries, spread from Persia, with great missionary zeal, to India, Arabia, and even to China and Tartary, and did good service in scholarship and in the founding of schools and hospitals. Mohammed is supposed to owe his imperfect knowledge of Christianity to a Nestorian monk, Sergius; and from him the sect received many privileges, so that it obtained great consideration among the Arabians, and exerted an influence upon their culture, and thus upon the development of philosophy and science in general.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Not to be confounded with the contemporary Monophysite abbot Barsumas, a saint of the Jacobites.

<sup>2</sup> The observations of Alex. von Humboldt, in the 2d vol. of his *Kosmos* (Stuttg. and Tüb. 1847, p. 247 f.), on the connection of Nestorianism with the culture and physical science of the Arabians, are worthy of note: "It was one of the wondrous arrangements in the system of things, that the Christian sect of the Nestorians, which has exerted a very important influence on the geographical extension of knowledge, was of service even to the Arabians before the latter found their way to learned and disputatious Alexandria; that Christian Nestorianism, in fact, under the protection of the arms of Islam, was able to penetrate far into Eastern Asia. The Arabians, in other words, gained their first acquaintance with Grecian literature through the Syrians, a kindred Semitic race; while the Syrians themselves, scarcely

Among the Tartars, in the eleventh century, it succeeded in converting to Christianity a king, the priest-king Presbyter John (Prester John) of the Kerait, and his successor of the same name.<sup>1</sup> But of this we have only uncertain accounts, and at all events Nestorian Christianity has since left but slight traces in Tartary and in China.

Under the Mongol dynasty the Nestorians were cruelly persecuted. The terrible Tamerlane, the scourge and the destroyer of Asia, towards the end of the fourteenth century almost exterminated them. Yet they have maintained themselves on the wild mountains and in the valleys of Kurdistan and in Armenia under the Turkish dominion to this day, with a separate patriarch, who from 1559 till the seventeenth century resided at Mosul, but has since dwelt in an almost

a century and a half before, had first received the knowledge of Grecian literature through the anathematized Nestorians. Physicians who had been educated in the institutions of the Greeks, and at the celebrated medical school founded by the Nestorian Christians at Edessa in Mesopotamia, were, so early as the times of Mohammed, living, befriended by him and by Abu-Bekr, in Mecca.

"The school of Edessa, a model of the Benedictine schools of Monte Casino and Salerno, awakened the scientific search for *materia medica* in the mineral and vegetable kingdoms. When it was dissolved by Christian fanaticism under Zeno the Isaurian, the Nestorians scattered towards Persia, where they soon attained political importance, and established a new and thronged medical institute at Dschondisapur in Khuzistan. They succeeded in spreading their science and their faith to China towards the middle of the seventh century under the dynasty of Thang, five hundred and seventy-two years after Buddhism had penetrated thither from India.

"The seed of Western culture, scattered in Persia by educated monks, and by the philosophers of the last Platonic school of Athens who were persecuted by Justinian, took beneficent root among the Arabians during their first Asiatic campaign. Feeble as the science of the Nestorian priests may have been, it could still, with its peculiar medical and pharmaceutic turn, act genially upon a race which had long lived in free converse with nature, and had preserved a more fresh sensibility to every sort of study of nature, than the people of Greek and Italian cities. What gives the Arabian epoch the universal importance which we must here insist upon, is in great part connected with the trait of national character just indicated. The Arabians, we repeat, are to be regarded as the proper founders of the *physical sciences*, in the sense which we are now accustomed to attach to the word."

<sup>1</sup> On this fabulous priest-kingdom, which the popes endeavored by unsuccessful embassies to unite to the Roman church, and whose light was quenched by the tide of the conquests of Zengis Khan, comp. MOSHEIM: *Historia Tartarorum eccles.* Helmst. 1741; NEANDER: *Kirchengesch.* vol. v. p. 84 ff. (9th part of the whole work, ed. 1841); and RITTER: *Erdkunde*, part ii. vol. i. pp. 256, 283 (2d ed. 1832).

inaccessile valley on the borders of Turkey and Persia. They are very ignorant and poor, and have been much reduced by war, pestilence, and cholera.

A portion of the Nestorians, especially those in cities, united from time to time, under the name of Chaldeans, with the Roman church, and have a patriarch of their own at Bagdad.

And on the other side, Protestant missionaries from America have made vigorous and successful efforts, since 1833, to evangelize and civilize the Nestorians by preaching, schools, translations of the Bible, and good books.<sup>1</sup>

The THOMAS-CHRISTIANS in East India are a branch of the Nestorians, named from the apostle Thomas, who is supposed to have preached the gospel on the coast of Malabar. They honor the memory of Theodore and Nestorius in their Syriac liturgy, and adhere to the Nestorian patriarchs. In the sixteenth century they were, with reluctance, connected with the Roman church for sixty years (1599–1663) through the agency of Jesuit missionaries. But when the Portuguese power in India was shaken by the Dutch, they returned to their independent position, and since the expulsion of the Portuguese they have enjoyed the free exercise of their religion on the coast of Malabar. The number of the Thomas-Christians is said still to amount to seventy thousand souls, who form a province by themselves under the British empire, governed by priests and elders.

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Justin Perkins, Asabel Grant, Rhea, Stoddard, Wright, and other missionaries of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions. The centre of their labors is Oormiah, a city of 25,000 inhabitants, of whom 1,000 are Nestorians. Comp. on this subject Newcomb, l. c. 556 ff., especially the letter of Dr. Perkins of 1854, p. 564 ff., on the present condition of this mission; also Joseph P. Thompson: *Memoir of the Rev. David Tappan Stoddard, missionary to the Nestorians*, Boston, 1858; and a pamphlet issued by the American B. C. F. M.: *Historical Sketch of the Mission to the Nestorians by Justin Perkins, and of the Assyrian Mission by Rev. Thomas Laurie*, New York, 1862. The American Board of Foreign Missions look upon the Nestorian and Armenian missions as a means and encouraging pledge of the conversion of the millions of Mohammedans, among whom Providence has placed and preserved those ancient sects, as it would seem, for such an end.



§ 140. *The Eutychian Controversy. The Council of Robbers,*  
A. D. 449.

Comp. the Works at § 187.

SOURCES.

Acts of the council of CHALCEDON, of the local council of CONSTANTINOPLÉ, and of the Robber Synod of EPHEBUS. The correspondence between LEO and FLAVIAN, etc. For these acts, letters, and other documents, see MANSI, Conc. tom. v. vi. and vii. (GELASIUS?): *Breviculus historiarum Eutychianistarum s. gesta de nomine Acacii* (extending to 486, in *Mansi*, vii. 1060 sqq.). LIBERATUS: *Breviarium causæ Nest. et Eutych.* LEONTIUS BYZANT.: *Contra Nest. et Eutych.* The last part of the SYNODICON adv. tragediam Irenæi (in *Mansi*, v. 781 sqq.). EVAGRIUS: H. E. i. 9 sqq. THEODORET: *Ἐπιμνησὶς* (the Beggar) or *Πολύμορφος* (the Multiformed),—a refutation of the Egyptian Eutychian system of doctrines (which begged together so much from various old heresies, as to form a new one), in three dialogues, written in 447 (*Opera*, ed. Schulze, vol. iv.).

LITERATURE.

PETAVIUS: *De incarnatione Verbi*, lib. i. c. 14-18, and the succeeding books, particularly iii., iv., and v. (*Theolog. dogmatum*, tom. iv. p. 65 sqq. ed. Par. 1650). TILLEMONT: *Mémoires*, tom. xv. pp. 479-719. O. A. SALIG: *De Eutychianismo ante Eutychen*. Wolfenb. 1723. WALCH: *Ketzerhist.* vol. vi. 3-640. SCHROCKH: vol. xviii. 493-492. NEANDER: *Kirchengesch.* iv. pp. 942-992. BAUR: *Gesch. der Lehre von d. Dreieinigkeit*, etc. i. 800-825. DORNER: *Gesch. d. Lehre v. d. Pers. Chr.* ii. 99-149. HEFELE (R. O.): *Conciliengesch.* ii. pp. 295-545. W. CUNNINGHAM: *Historical Theology*, i. pp. 311-'15. Comp. also the Monographs of ARENDT (1835) and PERTHEL (1843) on Leo I.

The result of the third universal council was rather negative than positive. The council condemned the Nestorian error, without fixing the true doctrine. The subsequent union of the Alexandrians and the Antiochians was only a superficial peace, to which each party had sacrificed somewhat of its convictions. Compromises are generally of short duration; principles and systems must develop themselves to their utmost consequences; heresies must ripen, and must be opened to the core. As the Antiochian theology begot Nestorianism, which stretched the distinction of the human and divine natures in

Christ to double personality; so the Alexandrian theology begot the opposite error of Eutychianism or Monophysitism, which urged the personal unity of Christ at the expense of the distinction of natures, and made the divine Logos absorb the human nature. The latter error is as dangerous as the former. For if Christ is not true man, he cannot be our example, and his passion and death dissolve at last into mere figurative representations or docetistic show.

A large portion of the party of Cyril was dissatisfied with the union creed, and he was obliged to purge himself of inconsistency. He referred the duality of natures spoken of in the symbol to the abstract distinction of deity and humanity, while the two are so made one in the one Christ, that after the union all separation ceases, and only one nature is to be recognized in the incarnate Son. The Logos, as the proper subject of the one nature, has indeed all human, or rather divine-human, attributes, but without a human nature. Cyril's theory of the incarnation approaches Patripassianism, but differs from it in making the Son a distinct hypostasis from the Father. It mixes the divine and human; but it mixes them only in Christ, and so is Christo-theistic, but not pantheistic.<sup>1</sup>

On the other side, the Orientals or Antiochians, under the lead of John, Ibas, and especially Theodoret, interpreted the union symbol in their sense of a distinction of the two natures continuing in the one Christ even after the incarnation, and actually obtained the victory for this moderate Nestorianism, by the help of the bishop of Rome, at the council of Chalcedon.

<sup>1</sup> Cyril's true view is most clearly expressed in the following propositions (comp. Mansi, v. 320, and Niedner, p. 364): The *ἐνσάρκωσις* was a *φυσικὴ ἔνωσις*, or becoming man, on the part of God, so that there is only *μία σεσαρκωμένη φύσις τοῦ λόγου*. 'Ὁ Θεὸς λόγος, ἐνωθεὶς σαρκὶ κατ' ὑπόστασιν, ἐγένετο ἄνθρωπος, οὐ συνήφθη ἄνθρωπος. *Μία ἤδη νοεῖται φύσις μετὰ τὴν ἔνωσιν, ἡ αὐτοῦ τοῦ λόγου σεσαρκωμένη*. 'Ἡ τοῦ κυρίου σὰρξ ἐστὶν ἰδίᾳ τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγου, οὐχ ἑτέρου τιῶς παρ' αὐτόν. The *ἔνωσις τῶν φύσεων* is not, indeed, exactly a *σύγχυσις τῶν φύσεων*, but at all events excludes all *διαίρεσις*, and demands an absolute co-existence and interpenetration of the *λόγος* and the *σὰρξ*. The consequence of this incarnation is the existence of a new entity, a divine-human subject, which is in nothing *only* God or *only* man, but in everything is both in one, and whose attributes (proprietary, *idionomata*) are not, some divine and others human, but all divine-human.

The new controversy was opened by the party of monophysite sentiment.

Cyril died in 444. His arch-deacon, Dioscurus (*Διόσκορος*), who had accompanied him to the council at Ephesus, succeeded him in the patriarchal chair of Alexandria (444-451), and surpassed him in all his bad qualities, while he fell far behind him in intellect and in theological capacity.<sup>1</sup> He was a man of unbounded ambition and stormy passion, and shrank from no measures to accomplish his designs and to advance the Alexandrian see to the supremacy of the entire East; in which he soon succeeded at the Council of Robbers. He put himself at the head of the monophysite party, and everywhere stirred the fire of a war against the Antiochian Christology.

The theological representative, but by no means the author, of the monophysite heresy which bears his name, was EUTYCHES,<sup>2</sup> an aged and respected, but not otherwise important presbyter and archimandrite (head of a cloister of three hundred monks) in Constantinople, who had lived many years in monastic seclusion, and had only once appeared in public, to raise his voice, in that procession, for the Cyrillian council of Ephesus and against Nestorius. His relation to the Alexandrian Christology is like that of Nestorius to the Antiochian; that is, he drew it to a head, brought it to popular expression, and adhered obstinately to it; but he is considerably inferior to Nestorius in talent and learning. His connection with this controversy is in a great measure accidental.

Eutyches, like Cyril, laid chief stress on the divine in Christ, and denied that two natures could be spoken of after the incarnation. In our Lord, after his birth, he worshipped

<sup>1</sup> Towards the memory of Cyril he behaved very recklessly. He confiscated his considerable estate (Cyril was of wealthy family), accused him of squandering the church funds in his war against Nestorius, and unseated several of his relatives. He was himself charged, at the council of Chalcedon, with embezzlement of the moneys of the church and of the poor.

<sup>2</sup> That is, *the Fortunate*. His opponents said he should rather have been named *Atyches, the Unfortunate*. He must not be confounded with the deacon Eutyches, who attended Cyril to the council of Ephesus. Leo the Great, in his renowned letter to Flavian, calls him "very ignorant and unskilled," *multum imprudens et nimis imperitus*, and justly attributes his error rather to *imperitia* than to *versutia*. So also Potavius and Hefele (ii. p. 800).

only one nature, the nature of God become flesh and man.<sup>1</sup> The impersonal human nature is assimilated and, as it were, deified by the personal Logos, so that his body is by no means of the same substance (*ὁμοούσιον*) with ours, but a divine body.<sup>2</sup> All human attributes are transferred to the one subject, the humanized Logos. Hence it may and must be said: God is born, God suffered, God was crucified and died. He asserted, therefore, on the one hand, the capability of suffering and death in the Logos-personality, and on the other hand, the deification of the human in Christ.

Theodoret, in three dialogues composed in 447, attacked this Egyptian Eutychian type of doctrine as a beggar's basket of Docetistic, Gnostic, Apollinarian, and other heresies,<sup>3</sup> and advocated the qualified Antiochian Christology, i. e., the doctrine of the unfused union of two natures in one person. Dioscurus accused him to the patriarch Domnus in Antioch of dividing the one Lord Christ into two Sons of God; and Theodoret replied to this with moderation. Dioscurus, on his part, endeavored to stir up the court in Constantinople against the whole church of Eastern Asia. Domnus and Theodoret likewise betook themselves to the capital, to justify their doctrine. The controversy now broke forth with greater violence, and concentrated on the person of Eutyches in Constantinople.

At a local synod of the patriarch Flavian at Constantino-

<sup>1</sup> *Μίαν φύσιν προσκυνεῖν, καὶ τὰ τὴν Θεοῦ σαρκωθέντος καὶ ἰστανδρωθέντος, ὡς* as he declared before the synod at Constantinople: *Ὁμολογῶ ἐκ δύο φύσεων γεγενῆσθαι τὸν κύριον ἡμῶν πρὸς τῆς ἐνέσεως· μετὰ δὲ τὴν ἔνωσιν μίαν φύσιν ὁμολογῶ.* Mansi, tom. vi. fol. 744. In behalf of his view he appealed to the Scriptures, to Athanasius and Cyril, and to the council of Ephesus in 431.

<sup>2</sup> The other side imputed to Eutychianism the doctrine of a heavenly body, or of an apparent body, or of the transformation of the Logos into flesh. So Theodoret, *Fab. her. iv. 13*. Eutyches said, Christ had a *σῶμα ἀνθρώπου*, but not a *σῶμα ἀνθρώπινον*, and he denied the consubstantiality of his *σῶμα* with ours. Yet he expressly guarded himself against Docetism, and against all speculation: *Φυσιολογεῖν ἐμμενῆς οὐκ ἐπιτρέπω*. He was really neither a philosopher nor a theologian, but only insisted on some theological opinions and points of doctrine with great tenacity and obstinacy.

<sup>3</sup> Hence the title of the dialogues: *Ἐραριστής*, Beggar, and *Πολύμορφος*, the Multiform. Under this name the Eutychian speaker is introduced. Theodoret also wrote an *ἀπελογία ἐπὶ τοῦ Διοδώρου καὶ Θεοδοίου*, which is lost.

ple in 448<sup>1</sup> Eutyches was charged with his error by Eusebius, bishop of Dorylæum in Phrygia, and upon his wilful refusal, after repeated challenges, to admit the dyophysitism after the incarnation, and the consubstantiality of Christ's body with our own, he was deposed and put under the ban of the church. On his way home, he was publicly insulted by the populace. The council confessed its faith that "Christ, after the incarnation, consisted of two natures<sup>2</sup> in one hypostasis and in one person, one Christ, one Son, one Lord."

Both parties endeavored to gain the public opinion, and addressed themselves to distant bishops, especially to Leo I. of Rome. Leo, in 449, confirmed the decision of the council in several epistles, especially in a letter to Flavian, which forms an epoch in the history of Christology, and in which he gave a masterly, profound, and clear analysis of the orthodox doctrine of two natures in one person.<sup>3</sup> But Eutyches had powerful friends among the monks and at the court, and a special patron in Dioscurus of Alexandria, who induced the emperor Theodosius II. to convoke a general council.

This synod met at Ephesus, in August, 449, and consisted of one hundred and thirty-five bishops. It occupies a notorious place in the *chronique scandaleuse* of church history. Dioscurus presided, with brutal violence, protected by monks and an armed soldiery; while Flavian and his friends hardly dared open their lips, and Theodoret was entirely excluded. When an explanation from Eusebius of Dorylæum, who had been the accuser of Eutyches at the council of Constantinople, was pre-

<sup>1</sup> *Χρόνος ἐνθημούσα*. Its acts are incorporated in the acts of the council of Chalcedon, in Mansi, vi. 649 sqq.

<sup>2</sup> *Ἐκ δύο φύσεων*, or, as others more accurately said, *ἐν δύο φύσεσι*,—an essential difference, which reappears in the Creed of the council of Chalcedon. Comp. Mansi, tom. vi. fol. 685, and Neander, iv. p. 988. The first form may be taken also in a monophysite sense.

<sup>3</sup> This *Epistola Dogmatica ad Flavianum* (Ep. 28 in Ballerini, 24 in Quesnell), which Leo transmitted, with letters to the emperor and the emperor's sister, Pulcheria, and the Robber Synod, by his legates, was afterwards formally approved at the council of Chalcedon in 451, and invested with almost symbolical authority. It may be found in the *Opera Leonis*, ed. Baller. tom. i. pp. 801-838; in Mansi, tom. v. fol. 1359; and in Hefele (Latin and German), ii. 335-346. Comp. on it also Walch, vi. p. 182 ff., and Baur, i. 809 ff.

sented, many voices exclaimed: "Let Eusebius be burnt; let him be burnt alive. As he has cut Christ in two, so let him be cut in two."<sup>1</sup> The council affirmed the orthodoxy and sanctity of Eutyches, who defended himself in person; adopted the twelve anathematisms of Cyril; condemned dyophysitism as a heresy, and deposed and excommunicated its advocates, including Theodoret, Flavian, and Leo. The three Roman delegates (the bishops Julius and Renatus, and the deacon Hilarus) dared not even read before the council the epistle addressed to it by Leo,<sup>2</sup> and departed secretly, that they might not be compelled to subscribe its decisions.<sup>3</sup> Flavian was so grossly maltreated by furious monks that he died of his wounds a few days later, in banishment, having first appealed to a new council. In his stead the deacon Anatolius, a friend and agent of Dioscorus, was chosen patriarch of Constantinople. He, however, afterwards went over to the orthodox party, and effaced the infamy of his elevation by his exquisite Greek hymns.

The conduct of these unpriestly priests was throughout so arbitrary and tyrannical, that the second council of Ephesus has ever since been branded with the name of the "Council of Robbers."<sup>4</sup> "Nothing," Neander justly observes,<sup>5</sup> "could be more contradictory to the spirit of the gospel than the fanatical zeal of the dominant party in this council for

<sup>1</sup> Conc. Chalced. Actio i. in Harduin, tom. ii. fol. 161.

<sup>2</sup> This, moreover, made reference to the famous *Epistola Dogmatica*, addressed to Flavian, which was also intended to be read before the council. Comp. Hefele, ii. 352.

<sup>3</sup> Leo at least asserts this in reference to the deacon Hilarus. The two other delegates appear to have returned home before the council broke up. Renatus does not appear at all in the Acta, but Theodoret praises him for his courage at the Synod of Robbers. With the three delegates Leo sent also a notary, Dulcitus.

<sup>4</sup> Σύνοδος ληστρικὴ, latrocinium Ephesinum; first so called by pope Leo in a letter to Pulcheria, dated July 20th, 451 (Ep. 95, ed. Ballerini, alias Ep. 75). The official Acta of the Robber Synod were read before the council of Chalcedon, and included in its records. These of themselves show dark enough. But with them must be compared the testimony of the defeated party, which was also rendered at the council of Chalcedon; the contemporaneous correspondence of Leo; and the accounts of the old historians. Comp. the details in Tillemont, Walch, Schröckh, Neander, and Hefele.

<sup>5</sup> Kirchengesch. iv. p. 969 (2d Germ. ed. 1847).

dogmatical formulas, in which they fancied they had Christ, who is spirit and life, although in temper and act they denied Him." Dioscurus, for example, dismissed a charge of unchastity and other vices against a bishop, with the remark: "If you have an accusation against his orthodoxy, we will receive it; but we have not come together to pass judgment concerning unchastity."<sup>1</sup> Thus fanatical zeal for doctrinal formulas outweighed all interests of morality, as if, as Theodoret remarks, Christ had merely prescribed a system of doctrine, and had not given also rules of life.

§ 141. *The Ecumenical Council of Chalcedon, A. D. 451.*

Comp. the *Acta Concilii*, together with the previous and subsequent epistolary correspondence, in MANSI (tom. vii.), HARDUIN (tom. ii.), and FUCHS, and the sketches of EVAGRIUS: H. E. l. ii. c. 4; among later historians: WALOH; SCHROCKH; NEANDER; HEFELE, l. c. The latter, ii. 392, gives the literature in detail.

Thus the party of Dioscurus, by means of the court of the weak Theodosius II., succeeded in subjugating the Eastern church, which now looked to the Western for help.

Leo, who occupied the papal chair from 440 to 461, with an ability, a boldness, and an unction displayed by none of his predecessors, and by few of his successors, and who, moreover, on this occasion represented the whole Occidental church, protested in various letters against the Robber Synod, which had presumed to depose him; and he wisely improved the perplexed state of affairs to enhance the authority of the papal see. He wrote and acted with imposing dignity, energy, circumspection, and skill, and with a perfect mastery of the question in controversy;—manifestly the greatest mind and character of his age, and by far the most distinguished among the popes of the ancient Church. He urged the calling of a new council in free and orthodox Italy, but afterwards advised a postponement, ostensibly on account of the disquiet caused in the West by Attila's ravages, but probably in the hope of reaching a

<sup>1</sup> At the third session of the council of Chalcedon, Dioscurus himself was accused of gross intemperance and other evil habits. Comp. Hefele, ii. p. 429.

satisfactory result, even without a council, by inducing the bishops to subscribe his *Epistola Dogmatica*.<sup>1</sup>

At the same time a political change occurred, which, as was often the case in the East, brought with it a doctrinal revolution. Theodosius died, in July, 450, in consequence of a fall from his horse; he left no male heirs, and the distinguished general and senator Marcian became his successor, by marriage with his sister Pulcheria,<sup>2</sup> who favored Pope Leo and the dyophysite doctrine. The remains of Flavian were honorably interred, and several of the deposed bishops were reinstated.

To restore the peace of the empire, the new monarch, in May, 451, in his own name and that of his Western colleague, convoked a general council; not, however, to meet in Italy, but at Nicæa, partly that he might the better control it, partly that he might add to its authority by the memories of the first ecumenical council. The edict was addressed to the metropolitans, and reads as follows:

"That which concerns the true faith and the orthodox religion must be preferred to all other things. For the favor of God to us insures also the prosperity of our empire. Inasmuch, now, as doubts have arisen concerning the true faith, as appears from the letters of Leo, the most holy archbishop of Rome, we have determined that a holy council be convened at Nicæa, in Bithynia, in order that by the consent of all the truth may be tested, and the true faith dispassionately and more ex-

<sup>1</sup> Respecting this apparent inconsistency of Leo, see Hefele, who considers it at length, ii. 387 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Who, however, stipulated as a condition of the marriage, that she still be allowed to keep her vow of perpetual virginity. Marcian was a widower, sixty years of age, and had the reputation of great ability and piety. Some authors place him, as emperor, by the side of Constantine and Theodosius, or even above them. Comp. Leo's Letters, Baronius (*Annales*), Tillemont (*Emper. iii. 284*), and Gibbon (at the end of ch. xxxiv.). The last-named author says of Marcian: "The zeal which he displayed for the orthodox creed, as it was established by the council of Chalcedon, would alone have inspired the grateful eloquence of the Catholics. But the behavior of Marcian, in a private life, and afterwards on the throne, may support a more rational belief, that he was qualified to restore and invigorate an empire, which had been almost dissolved by the successive weakness of two hereditary monarchs. . . His own example gave weight to the laws which he promulgated for the reformation of manners."



plicitly declared, that in time to come no doubt nor division may have place concerning it. Therefore let your holiness, with a convenient number of wise and orthodox bishops from among your suffragans, repair to Nicæa, on the first of September ensuing. We ourselves also, unless hindered by wars, will attend in person the venerable synod."<sup>1</sup>

Leo, though dissatisfied with the time and place of the council, yielded, sent the bishops Paschasinus and Lucentius, and the priest Boniface, as legates, who, in conjunction with the legates already in Constantinople, were to represent him at the synod, over which Paschasinus was to preside in his name.<sup>2</sup>

The bishops assembled at Nicæa, in September, 451, but, on account of their turbulent conduct, were soon summoned to CHALCEDON, opposite Constantinople, that the imperial court and senate might attend in person, and repress, as far as possible, the violent outbreaks of the religious fanaticism of the two parties. Here, in the church of St. Euphemia, on a hill commanding a magnificent prospect, and only two stadia or twelve hundred paces from the Bosphorus, the fourth ecumenical council was opened on the 8th of October, and sat till the 1st of November. In number of bishops it far exceeded all other councils of the ancient Church,<sup>3</sup> and in doctrinal importance is second only to the council of Nicæa. But all the five or six hundred bishops, except the papal delegates and two Africans, were Greeks and Orientals. The papal delegates had, therefore, to represent the whole of Latin Christendom. The imperial commissioners,<sup>4</sup> who conducted the external course of the proceedings, in the name of the emperor, with the senators present, sat in the middle of the church, before the screen of

<sup>1</sup> This promise was in fact fulfilled, although only at one session, the sixth.

<sup>2</sup> Evagrius, H. E. ii. c. 4: "The bishops Paschasinus and Lucentius, and the presbyter Boniface, were the representatives of Leo, archpriest of the elder Rome." Besides them bishop Julian of Cos, Leo's legate at Constantinople, also frequently appears in the council, but he had his seat among the bishops, not the papal delegates.

<sup>3</sup> There are only imperfect registers of the subscriptions yet extant, and the statements respecting the number of members vary from 520 to 680.

<sup>4</sup> Ἀρχιερεῖς, judices. There were six of them.

the sanctuary. On the left sat the Roman delegates, who, for the first time at an ecumenical council, conducted the internal proceedings, as spiritual presidents; next them sat Anatolius, of Constantinople, Maximus, of Antioch, and most of the bishops of the East;—all opponents of Eutychianism. On the right sat Dioscurus, of Alexandria (who, however, soon had to give up his place and sit in the middle), Juvenal, of Jerusalem, and the other bishops of Egypt, Illyricum, and Palestine;—the Eutychians.

The proceedings were, from the outset, very tumultuous, and the theological fanaticism of the two parties broke out at times in full blaze, till the laymen present were compelled to remind the bishops of their clerical dignity.<sup>1</sup> When Theodoret, of Cyrus, was introduced, the Orientals greeted him with enthusiasm, while the Egyptians cried: "Cast out the Jew, the enemy of God, the blasphemer of Christ!" The others retorted, with equal passion: "Cast out the murderer Dioscurus! Who is there that knows not his crimes?" The feeling against Nestorius was so strong, that Theodoret could only quiet the council by resolving (in the eighth session) to utter the anathema against his old friend, and against all who did not call Mary "mother of God," and who divided the one Christ into two sons. But the abhorrence of Eutyches and the Council of Robbers was still stronger, and was favored by the court. Under these influences most of the Egyptians soon went over to the left, and confessed their error, some excusing themselves by the violent measures brought to bear upon them at the Robber Synod. The records of that Synod, and of the previous one at Constantinople (in 448), with other official documents, were read by the secretaries, but were continually interrupted by incidental debates, acclamations, and imprecations, in utter opposition to all our modern conceptions of parliamentary decorum, though experience is continually presenting us with fresh examples of the uncontrollable vehemence of human passions in excited assemblies.

So early as the close of the first session the decisions of the

<sup>1</sup> Such tumultuous outcries (*ἐκβοήσεις δημοτικά*), said the commissioners and senators, ill-beseemed bishops, and were of no advantage to either side.

obber Synod had been annulled, the martyr Flavian declared orthodox, and Dioscurus of Alexandria, Juvenal of Jerusalem, and other chiefs of Eutychianism, deposed. The Orientals exclaimed: "Many years to the Senate! Holy God, holy mighty, holy immortal God, have mercy upon us. Many years to the emperors! The impious must always be overthrown! Dioscurus, the murderer [of Flavian], Christ has deposed! This is a righteous judgment, a righteous senate, a righteous council!"

Dioscurus was in a subsequent session three times cited in order to defend himself against various charges of avarice, intemperance, adultery, and other vices, and divested of all spiritual functions; while the five other deposed bishops acknowledged their error, and were readmitted into the council.

At the second session, on the 10th of October, Dioscurus having already departed, the Nicæno-Constantinopolitan symbol, two letters of Cyril (but not his anathemas), and the famous *Epistola Dogmatica* of Leo to Flavian, were read before the council amid loud applause—the bishops exclaiming: "That is the faith of the fathers! That is the faith of the fathers! So we all believe! So the orthodox believe! Anathema to him who believes otherwise! Through Leo, Peter has spoken. Even so did Cyril teach! That is the true faith!"

In the fifth and most important session, on the 22d of October, the positive confession of faith was adopted, which embodied the Nicæno-Constantinopolitan symbol, and then, passing the point in controversy, expresses itself as follows, almost in the words of Leo's classical epistle:—

"Knowing the holy fathers, we unanimously teach one and the same Lord Jesus Christ, complete as to his Godhead, and complete as to his manhood; truly God, and truly man, of a reasonable soul and human flesh; consubstantial with the Father as to his Godhead, and

tom. vi. 971: Αὐτὴ ἡ πίστις τῶν πατέρων, αὐτὴ ἡ πίστις τῶν ἀποστόλων, πιστεύομεν, οἱ ὁρῶντες οὕτως πιστεύουσιν, ἀντίθετα τῷ μὴ οὕτως πιστεύειν

see in Mansi, tom. vii. f. 111-118. The Creed is also given by Evagrius.

consubstantial also with us as to his manhood; ' like unto us in all things, yet without sin; ' as to his Godhead begotten of the Father before all worlds, but as to his manhood, in these last days born, for us men and for our salvation, of the Virgin Mary, the mother of God; ' one and the same Christ, Son, Lord, Only-begotten, known *in (of) two natures*,<sup>4</sup> *without*

<sup>1</sup> 'Ὁμοούσιος is used in both clauses, though with a shade of difference: Christ's *homousios* with the Father implies numerical unity or identity of substance (God being one in essence, *monousios*); Christ's *homousios* with men means only generic unity or equality of nature. Compare the remarks in § 180, p. 672 f.

<sup>2</sup> "Ενα και αὐτὸν υἱὸν τὸν κύριον ἡμῶν Ἰ. Χριστὸν τὸν αὐτὸν ἐν θεότητι καὶ τέλει τὸν αὐτὸν ἐν ἀνθρωπότητι, δεδὸν ἀληθῶς καὶ ἄνθρωπον ἀληθῶς τὸν αὐτὸν, ἐκ ψυχῆς λογικῆς [against Apollinaris] καὶ σώματος, ὁμοούσιον τῷ Πατρὶ κατὰ τὴν θεότητα; καὶ ὁμοούσιον τὸν αὐτὸν ἡμῖν κατὰ τὴν ἀνθρωπότητα, κατὰ πάντα ὁμοιον ἡμῖν ὡς πρὸς ἁμαρτίας.

<sup>3</sup> Τῆς θεοτόκου, against Nestorius. This, however, is immediately after modified by the phrase κατὰ τὴν ἀνθρωπότητα (in distinction from κατὰ τὴν θεότητα). Mary was the mother not merely of the human nature of Jesus, but of the theanthropic person Jesus Christ; not, however, according to his eternal Godhead, but according to his humanity. In like manner, the subject of the passion was the theanthropic person, yet not according to his divine impassible nature, but according to his human nature.

<sup>4</sup> "Εν δύο φύσεσιν, and the Latin translation, *in duabus naturis*, is directed against Eutyches. The present Greek text reads, it is true, ἐκ δύο φύσεων, which, however, signifies, and according to the connection, can only signify, essentially the same thing, but is also capable of being understood in an Eutychian and Monophysite sense, namely, that Christ has arisen from the confluence of two natures, and since the incarnation has only one nature. Understood in this sense, Dioscurus at the council was very willing to accept the formula ἐκ δύο φύσεων. But for this very reason the Orientals, and also the Roman legates, protested with one voice against ἐκ, and insisted upon another formula with ἐν, which was adopted. Baur (l. c. i. p. 820 f.) and Dorner (ii. p. 129) assert that ἐκ is the accurate and original expression, and is a concession to Monophysitism, that it also agrees better (?) with the verb γινώσκωμεν (to recognize by certain tokens) but that it was from the very beginning changed by the Occidentals into ἐν. But we prefer the view of Gieseler, Neander (iv. 988), Hefele (ii. 451 f.), and Beck (Dogmengeschichte, p. 251), that ἐν δύο φύσεσιν was the original reading of the symbol, and that it was afterwards altered in the interest of Monophysitism. This is proved by the whole course of the proceedings at the fifth session of the council of Chalcedon, where the expression ἐκ δύο φύσεων was protested against, and is proved by the testimony of the abbot Euthymius, a cotemporary, and by that of Severus, Evagrius, and Leontius of Byzantium. Severus, the Monophysite patriarch of Antioch since 518, charges the fathers of Chalcedon with the inexcusable crime of having taught: ἐν δύο φύσεσιν ἁδιαπρέπαις γινώσκειν τὸν Θεόν (see Mansi, vii. 889). Evagrius (H. E. ii. 5) maintains that both formulas amount to essentially the same thing, and reciprocally condition each other. Dorner also affirms the same. His words are: "The Latin formula has 'to acknowledge Christ as Son in two natures,' the Greek has 'to rec-

*confusion, without conversion, without severance, and without division ;*<sup>1</sup> the distinction of the natures being in no wise abolished by their union, but the peculiarity of each nature being maintained, and both concurring in one person and hypostasis.<sup>2</sup> We confess not a Son divided and sundered into two persons, but one and the same Son, and Only-begotten, and God-Logos, our Lord Jesus Christ, even as the prophets had before proclaimed concerning him, and he himself hath taught us, and the symbol of the fathers hath handed down to us.

"Since now we have drawn up this decision with the most comprehensive exactness and circumspection, the holy and ecumenical synod<sup>3</sup> hath ordained, that no one shall presume to propose, orally, or in writing, another faith, or to entertain or teach it to others; and that those who shall dare to give another symbol or to teach another faith to converts from heathenism or Judaism, or any heresy, shall, if they be bishops or clergymen, be deposed from their bishopric and spiritual function, or if they be monks or laymen, shall be excommunicated."

After the public reading of this confession, all the bishops exclaimed: "This is the faith of the fathers; this is the faith of the apostles; to this we all agree; thus we all think."

The symbol was solemnly ratified at the sixth session (Oct. 25th), in the presence of the emperor and the empress. The emperor thanked Christ for the restoration of the unity of faith, and threatened all with heavy punishment, who should hereafter stir up new controversies; whereupon the synod exclaimed: "Thou art both priest and king, victor in war, and saviour of the faith."

At its subsequent sessions the synod was occupied with the appeal of Ibas, bishop of Edessa, who had been deposed by the Robber Synod, and was now restored; with other cases of discipline; with some personal matters; and with the enactment of twenty-eight canons, which do not concern us here.<sup>4</sup>

nize Christ as Son *from* two natures,' which is plainly the same thought. The Latin formula is only a free, but essentially faithful translation, only that its coloring presses somewhat more definitely still Christ's subsisting in two natures, and is therefore more literally conformable to the Roman type of doctrine" (L. a. ii. p. 129

<sup>1</sup> Ἀσυγχύτως, ἀτρέπτως [against Eutyches], ἀδιαίρετως, ἀχωρίτως [against Nestorius] γνωρίζμενον.

<sup>2</sup> Eis ἓν πρόσωπον καὶ μίαν ὑπόστασιν.

<sup>3</sup> Ἡ ἁγία καὶ οἰκουμένη σὺνδοδος.

<sup>4</sup> Respecting the famous 28th canon of the council, which gives the bishop of

The emperor, by several edicts, gave the force of law to the decisions of the council, and commanded that all Eutychians should be banished from the empire, and their writings burned.<sup>1</sup> Pope Leo confirmed the doctrinal confession of the council, but protested against the twenty-eighth canon, which placed the patriarch of Constantinople on an equality with him. Notwithstanding these ratifications and rejoicings, the peace of the Church was only apparent, and the long Monophysite troubles were at hand.<sup>2</sup>

But before we proceed to these, we must enter into a more careful exposition of the Chalcedonian Christology, which has become the orthodox doctrine of Christendom.

### § 142. *The Orthodox Christology—Analysis and Criticism.*

The first council of Nicæa had established the eternal pre-existent Godhead of Christ. The symbol of the fourth ecu-

Constantinople equal rights with the bishop of Rome, and places him next after him in rank, comp. above § 56 (p. 279 ff.).

<sup>1</sup> Eutyches, who, in the very beginning of the controversy, said of himself, that he had lived seventy years a monk, died probably soon after the meeting of the council. Dioscurus was banished to Gangra, in Paphlagonia, and lived till 454. Comp. Schröckh, Th. xviii. p. 492.

<sup>2</sup> Dörner judges very unfavorably of the council of Chalcedon (ii. p. 88), and denies it all vocation, inward or outward, to render a positive decision of the great question in controversy; forgetting that the third ecumenical council, which condemned Nestorius, was, in Christian spirit and moral dignity, decidedly inferior to the fourth. "Notwithstanding its 680 bishops," says he (ii. 130), "it is very far from being able to claim canonical authority. The fathers of this council exhibit neither the harmony of an assembly animated by the Holy Ghost, nor that certainty of judgment, past wavering and inconsistency, nor that manly courage in maintaining a well-gained conviction, which is possible where, out of antitheses long striving for unity, a bright and clear persuasion, shared by the general body, has arisen." Kahnis (*Der Kirchenglaube*, Bd. ii. 1864, p. 89) judges as follows: "The significance of the Chalcedonian symbol does not lie in the ecumenical character of this council, for ecumenical is an exceedingly elastic idea; nor in its results being a development of those of the council of Ephesus (431), for, while at Ephesus the doctrine of the unity, here that of the distinction, in Christ's person, was the victorious side; nor in the spirit with which all the proceedings were conducted, for passions, intrigues, political views, tumultuous disorder, &c., prevailed in it in abundant measure: but it lies rather in the unity of acknowledgment which it has received in the Church even to our day, and in the inner unity of its definitions."

l council relates to the incarnate Logos, as he walked  
arth and sits on the right hand of the Father, and it is  
d against errors which agree with the Nicene Creed as  
ed to Arianism, but put the Godhead of Christ in a false  
on to his humanity. It substantially completes the or-  
x Christology of the ancient Church; for the definitions  
l by the Monophysite and Monothelite controversies are  
nd comparatively unessential.

he same doctrine, in its main features, and almost in its  
words (though with less definite reference to Nestorianism  
Eutychianism), was adopted in the second part of the  
do-Athanasian Creed,<sup>1</sup> and in the sixteenth century passed  
all the confessions of the Protestant churches.<sup>2</sup> Like the  
ene doctrine of the Trinity, it is the common inheritance  
reek, Latin, and Evangelical Christendom; except that  
testantism, here as elsewhere, reserves the right of search-  
to ever new depths, the inexhaustible stores of this mys-  
y in the living Christ of the Gospels and the apostolic  
tings.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Comp. above § 132.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. my article cited in § 132 upon the Symbolum *Quicumque*. One of the  
ifest and clearest Protestant definitions of the person of Christ in the sense of the  
lcedonian formula, is the one in the Westminster (Presbyterian) Shorter Cate-  
ism: "Dominus Jesus Christus est electorum Dei Redemptor unicus, qui eternus  
i filius cum esset factus est homo; adeoque fuit, est eritque *ἑαυτοῦ*, e [in]  
turis duabus distinctis persona unica in sempiternum;" or, as it is in English: "The  
ly Redeemer of God's elect is the Lord Jesus Christ, *who, being the eternal Son*  
*God, became man, and so was, and continueth to be, God and Man, in two distinct*  
*natures, and one person forever."* The Westminster Confession formulates this  
ctrine (ch. viii. sec. 21) in very nearly the words of the Chalcedonian symbol:  
The Son of God, the second person in the Trinity, being very and eternal God, of  
ne substance and equal with the Father, did, when the fulness of time was come,  
ke upon Him man's nature, with all the essential properties and common infirmi-  
es thereof, yet without sin; being conceived by the power of the Holy Ghost, in  
ie womb of the Virgin Mary, of her substance. So that two whole, perfect, and  
istinct natures,—the Godhead and the manhood,—were inseparably joined together  
one person, without conversion, composition, or confusion. Which person is very  
od and very man, yet one Christ, the only Mediator between God and man."

<sup>3</sup> The Lutheran Church has framed the doctrine of a threefold *communicatio*  
*nomatum*, and included it in the Formula Concordiæ. The controversy between  
ie Lutheran theologians of Giessen and Tübingen, in the seventeenth century, con-  
erning the *κτῆσις* (the possession), the *χρησις* (the use), the *κρύψις* (the secret use),

The person of Jesus Christ in the fulness of its theanthropic life cannot be exhaustively set forth by any formulas of human logic. Even the imperfect, finite personality of man has a mysterious background, that escapes the speculative comprehension; how much more then the perfect personality of Christ, in which the tremendous antitheses of Creator and creature, Infinite and finite, immutable, eternal Being and changing, temporal becoming, are harmoniously conjoined! The formulas of orthodoxy can neither beget the true faith, nor nourish it; they are not the bread and the water of life, but a standard for theological investigation and a rule of public teaching.<sup>1</sup>

Such considerations suggest the true position and the just value of the Creed of Chalcedon, against both exaggeration and disparagement. That symbol does not aspire to comprehend the Christological mystery, but contents itself with setting forth the facts and establishing the boundaries of orthodox doctrine. It does not mean to preclude further theological discussion, but to guard against such erroneous conceptions as would mutilate either the divine or the human in Christ, or would place the two in a false relation. It is a light-house, to point out to the ship of Christological speculation the channel between Scylla and Charybdis, and to save it from stranding upon the reefs of Nestorian dyophysitism or of Eutychian monophysitism. It contents itself with settling, in clear outlines, the eternal *result* of the theanthropic process of incarnation, leaving the study of the *process* itself to scientific theology. The dogmatic letter of Leo, it is true, takes a step beyond this, towards a theological interpretation of the doctrine; but for

and the *κένωσις* (the entire abdication) of the divine attributes by the incarnate Logos, led to no definite results, and was swallowed up in the thirty years' war. It has been resumed in modified form by modern German divines.

<sup>1</sup> Comp. Cunningham (Historical Theology, vol. i. p. 319): "The chief use now to be made of an examination of these controversies [the Eutychian and Nestorian] is not so much to guard us against errors [?] which may be pressed upon us, and into which we may be tempted to fall, but rather to aid us in forming clear and definite conceptions of the truths regarding the person of Christ, which all profess to believe; in securing precision and accuracy of language in explaining them, and especially to assist us in realizing them; in habitually regarding as great and actual realities the leading features of the constitution of Christ's person, which the word of God unfolds to us."



this very reason it cannot have the same binding and normative force as the symbol itself.

As the Nicene doctrine of the Trinity stands midway between tritheism and Sabellianism, so the Chalcedonian formula strikes the true mean between Nestorianism and Eutychianism.

It accepts dyophysitism; and so far it unquestionably favored and satisfied the moderate Antiochian party rather than the Egyptian.<sup>1</sup> But at the same time it teaches with equal distinctness, in opposition to consistent Nestorianism, the inseparable unity of the person of Christ.

The following are the leading ideas of this symbol:

1. A true *incarnation* of the Logos, or of the second person in the Godhead.<sup>2</sup> The motive is the unfathomable love of God; the end, the redemption of the fallen race, and its reconciliation with God. This incarnation is neither a conversion of God into a man, nor a conversion of a man into God; neither a humanizing of the divine, nor a deification or apotheosis of the human; nor on the other hand is it a mere outward, transitory connection of the two factors; but an actual and abiding union of the two in one personal life.

It is primarily and pre-eminently a condescension and self-humiliation of the divine Logos to human nature, and at the same time a consequent assumption and exaltation of the human nature to inseparable and eternal communion with the divine person. The Logos assumes the body, soul, and spirit of man, and enters into all the circumstances and infirmities of human life on earth, with the single exception of sin, which indeed is not an essential or necessary element of humanity, but acci-

<sup>1</sup> Accordingly in Leo's *Epistola Dogmatica* also, which was the basis of the Creed, Nestorius is not even mentioned, while Eutyches, on the other hand, is refuted at length. But in a later letter of Leo, addressed to the emperor, A. D. 457 (Ep. 156, ed. Ballerini), he classes Nestorius and Eutyches together, as equally dangerous heretics. The Creed of Chalcedon is also regarded by Baur, Niedner, and Dörner as exhibiting a certain degree of preference for the Nestorian dyophysitism.

<sup>2</sup> *Ἐνανθρώπησις Θεοῦ, ἐνσάρκωσις, incarnation*,—in distinction from a mere *συνάφεια, conjunctio*, or *σχετική ἔνωσις*, of the divine and human, by *πρόσληψις* (from *προλαμβάνω*), *assumptio*, of the human, and *ἐνοίκησις* of the divine; and on the other hand, from a *φυσική ἔνωσις*, or *κρῆσις, σύγχυσις*, or *σάρκωσις* in the sense of transmutation. The diametrical opposite of the *Ἐνανθρώπησις Θεοῦ* is the heathen *ἀποθέωσις ἀνθρώπων*.

dental to it. "The Lord of the universe," as Leo puts the matter in his epistle, "took the form of a servant; the impassible God became a suffering man; the Immortal One submitted himself to the dominion of death; Majesty assumed into itself lowliness; Strength, weakness; Eternity, mortality." The same, who is true God, is also true man, without either element being altered or annihilated by the other, or being degraded to a mere accident.

This mysterious union came to pass, in an incomprehensible way, through the power of the Holy Ghost, in the virgin womb of Mary. But whether the miraculous conception was only the beginning, or whether it at the same time completed the union, is not decided in the Creed of Chalcedon. According to his human nature at least, Christ submitted himself to the laws of gradual development and moral conflict, without which, indeed, he could be no example at all for us.

2. The precise distinction between *nature* and *person*. Nature or substance is the totality of powers and qualities which constitute a being; person is the Ego, the self-conscious, self-asserting, and acting subject. There is no person without nature, but there may be nature without person (as in irrational beings).<sup>1</sup> The Church doctrine distinguishes in the Holy Trinity three persons (though not in the ordinary human sense of the word) in one divine nature or substance which they have in common; in its Christology it teaches, conversely, two natures in one person (in the usual sense of person) which pervades both. Therefore it cannot be said: The Logos assumed a human *person*,<sup>2</sup> or united himself with a definite human individual: for then the God-Man would consist of two persons; but he took upon himself the human *nature*, which is common to all men; and therefore he redeemed not a particular man,

<sup>1</sup> Compare the weighty dissertation of BOLTERIUS: *De duabus naturis et una persona Christi, adversus Eutychen et Nestorium* (Opera, ed. Basil., 1546, pp. 948-957), in which he defines *natura* (φύσις or οὐσία), *substantia* (ὁντοτασις), and *persona* (πρόσωπον). "*Natura*," he says, "est cujuslibet substantia specificata proprietate; *persona* vero rationabilis nature individua subsistentia."

<sup>2</sup> Τελειον ἄνθρωπον ἐλήφε, as Theodore of Mopsuestia and the strict Nestorians expressed themselves

but all men, as partakers of the same nature or substance.<sup>1</sup> The personal Logos did not become an individual *ἄνθρωπος*, but *σάρξ*, flesh, which includes the whole of human nature, body, soul, and spirit. The personal self-conscious Ego resides in the Logos. But into this point we shall enter more fully below.

3. The result of the incarnation, that infinite act of divine love, is the *God-Man*. Not a (Nestorian) *double* being, with *two* persons; nor a compound (Apollinarian or Monophysite) *middle* being, a *tertium quid*, *neither* divine *nor* human; but *one* person, who is *both* divine *and* human. Christ has a rational human soul, and—according to a definition afterwards added—a human will,<sup>2</sup> and is therefore in the full sense of the

<sup>1</sup> As Augustine says: *Deus Verbum non accepit personam hominis, sed naturam, et in eternam personam divinitatis accepit temporalem substantiam carnis*. And again: "*Deus naturam nostram, id est, animam rationalem carnemque hominis Christi suscepit.*" (*De corrept. et grat.* § 80, tom. x. f. 766.) Comp. Johannes Damascenus, *De fide orthod.* iii. c. 6, 11. The Anglican theologian, Richard Hooker, styled on account of his sober equipoise of intellect "the judicious Hooker," sets forth this point of the Church doctrine as follows: "He took not angels but the seed of Abraham. It pleased not the Word or Wisdom of God to take to itself some one person amongst men, for then should that one have been advanced which was assumed, and no more, but Wisdom to the end she might save many built her house of that Nature which is common unto all, she made not *this or that man* her habitation, but dwelt in *us*. If the Son of God had taken to himself a man now made and already perfected, it would of necessity follow, that there are in Christ two persons, the one assuming, and the other assumed; whereas the Son of God did not assume a man's *person* into his own, but a man's *nature* to his own person; and therefore took *semen*, the seed of Abraham, the very first original and element of our nature, before it was come to have any personal human subsistence. The flesh and the conjunction of the flesh with God began both at one instant; his making and taking to himself our flesh was but one act, so that in Christ there is no personal subsistence but one, and that from everlasting. By taking only the nature of man he still continueth one person, and changeth but the manner of his subsisting, which was before in the glory of the Son of God, and is now in the habit of our flesh." (*Ecclesiastical Polity*, book v. ch. 52, in Keble's edition of Hooker's works, vol. ii. p. 286 f.) In just the same manner Anastasius Sinaita and John of Damascus express themselves. Comp. Dorner, ii. p. 183 ff. Hooker's allusion to Heb. ii. 16 (*ὃ γὰρ θῆπον ἀγγέλων ἐπιλαμβάνεται, ἀλλὰ σπέρματος Ἀβραὰμ ἐπιλαμβάνεται*), it may be remarked, rests upon a false interpretation, since *ἐπιλαμβάνεσθαι* does not refer to the incarnation, but signifies: to take hold of in order to help or redeem (as in Sirach, iv. 11). Comp. *βοηθῆσαι*, Heb. ii. 18.

<sup>2</sup> The sixth ecumenical council, held at Constantinople, A. D. 680, condemned monothelitism, and decided in favor of dyothelitism, or the doctrine of two wills

word the Son of man; while yet at the same time he is the eternal Son of God in one person, with one undivided self-consciousness.

4. The *duality of the natures*. This was the element of truth in Nestorianism, and on this the council of Chalcedon laid chief stress, because this council was principally concerned with the condemnation of Eutychianism or monophysitism, as that of Ephesus (431) had been with the condemnation of Nestorianism, or abstract dyophysitism. Both views, indeed, admitted the distinction of the natures, but Eutychianism denied it after the act of the incarnation, and (like Apollinarianism) made Christ a middle being, an amalgam, as it were, of the two natures, or, more accurately, one nature in which the human element is absorbed and deified.

Against this it is affirmed by the Creed of Chalcedon, that even after the incarnation, and to all eternity, the distinction of the natures continues, without confusion or conversion,<sup>1</sup> yet, on the other hand, without separation or division,<sup>2</sup> so that the divine will remain ever divine, and the human, ever human,<sup>3</sup> and yet the two have continually one common life, and interpenetrate each other, like the persons of the Trinity.<sup>4</sup>

(or volitions) in Christ, which are necessary to the ethical conflict and victory of his own life and to his office as an example for us. This council teaches (Mansi, tom. xi. 637): Ὁ ὁμοούσιος θεὸς ἡμεῖς ἡμεῖς ἐν αὐτῷ καὶ ὁμοούσιος ἐνέργειας ἀδιαίρετος, ἀτρέπτως, ἀμερίστως, ἀσυγχύτως . . . κηρύττομεν. These wills are not opposite to one another, but the human will is ever in harmony with the divine, and in all things obedient to it. "Not my will, but thine be done:" therein is found the distinction and the unity.

<sup>1</sup> Ἀσυγχύτως and ἀτρέπτως.

<sup>2</sup> Ἀδιαίρετος and ἀχωρίστως.

<sup>3</sup> "Tenet," says Leo, in his epistle to Flavian, "sine defectu proprietatem suam utraque natura, et sicut formam servi Dei formam non adimit, ita formam Dei servi forma non minuit. . . . Agit utraque cum alterius communione quod proprium est; Verbo scilicet operante quod Verbi est, et carne exsequente quod carnis est. Unum horum coruscet miraculis, aliud succumbit injuriis."

<sup>4</sup> Here belongs John of Damascus' doctrine of the *περιχώρησις*, *permeatio*, *circummeatio*, *circulatio*, *circumincensio*, *intercommunio*, or reciprocal indwelling and pervasion, which has relation not merely to the Trinity, but also to Christology. The verb *περιχεῖν* is, so far as I know, first applied by Gregory of Nyssa (Contra Apollinarianum) to the interpenetration and reciprocal pervasion of the two natures in Christ. On this rested also the doctrine of the exchange or communication of at-

The continuance of the divine nature unaltered is involved in its unchangeableness, and was substantially conceded by all parties. The controversy, therefore, had reference only to the human nature.

And here the Scriptures are plainly not on the Eutychian side. The Christ of the Gospels by no means makes the impression of a person in whom the human nature had been absorbed, or extinguished, or even weakened by the divine; on the contrary, he appears from the nativity to the sepulchre as genuinely and truly human in the highest and fairest sense of the word. The body which he had of the substance of Mary, was born, grew, hungered and thirsted, slept and woke, suffered and died, and was buried, like any other human body. His rational soul felt joy and sorrow, thought, spoke, and acted after the manner of men. The only change which his human nature underwent, was its development to full manhood, mental and physical, in common with other men, according to the laws of growth, yet normally, without sin or inward schism; and its ennoblement and completion by its union with the divine.

5. The *unity of the person*.<sup>1</sup> This was the element of truth in Eutychianism and the later monophysitism, which, however, they urged at the expense of the human factor. There is only one and the self-same Christ, one Lord, one Redeemer. There is an unity in the distinction, as well as a distinction in the unity. "The same who is true God," says Leo, "is also true man, and in this unity there is no deceit;

tributes, ἀντίθεσις, ἀντιμετάστασις, κοινωνία ἰδιωμάτων, *communicatio idiomatum*. The ἀντιμετάστασις τῶν ὀνομάτων, also ἀντιμεδίστασις, *transmutatio proprietatum*, transmutation of attributes, is, strictly speaking, not identical with ἀντίθεσις, but a deduction from it, and the rhetorical expression for it. The doctrine of the *communicatio idiomatum*, however, awaited a full development much later, in the Lutheran church, where great subtlety was employed in perfecting it. This Lutheran doctrine has never found access into the Reformed church, and least of all the ubiquitarian hypothesis invented as a prop to consubstantiation; although a certain measure of truth lies at the basis of this, if it is apprehended dynamically, and not materially.

<sup>1</sup> The ἐνότης κατὰ ὑπόστασιν, or ἐνότης ὑποστατική, *unio hypostatica* or *personalis*, *unitas personarum*. The *unio personalis* is the *status unionis*, the result of the union or incarnation.

for in it the lowliness of man and the majesty of God perfectly pervade one another. . . . Because the two natures make only one person, we read on the one hand: 'The Son of *man* came down from heaven' (John iii. 13), while yet the Son of *God* took flesh from the Virgin; and on the other: 'The Son of *God* was crucified and buried' (1 Cor. ii. 8), while yet he suffered not in his Godhead as co-eternal and consubstantial with the Father, but in the weakness of human nature."

Here again the Chalcedonian formula has a firm and clear basis in Scripture. In the gospel history this personal unity everywhere unmistakably appears. The self-consciousness of Christ is not divided. It is one and the self-same theanthropic subject that speaks, acts, and suffers, that rises from the dead, ascends to heaven, sits at the right hand of God, and shall come again in glory to judge the quick and the dead.

The divine and the human are as far from forming a double personality in Christ, as the soul and the body in man, or as the regenerate and the natural life in the believer. As the human personality consists of such a union of the material and the spiritual natures that the spirit is the ruling principle and personal centre: so does the person of Christ consist in such a union of the human and the divine natures that the divine nature is the seat of self-consciousness, and pervades and animates the human.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Comp. the Athanasian Creed: "Sicut anima rationalis et caro unus est homo, ita Deus et homo unus est Christus." In the same way does Augustine express himself, and indeed this passage in the Creed, as well as several others, appears to be taken from him. Dr. Shedd (*History of Christian Doctrine*, i. p. 402) carries out vividly this analogy of the human personality with that of Christ, as follows: "This union of the two natures in one self-conscious Ego may be illustrated by reference to man's personal constitution. An individual man is one person. But this one person consists of two natures,—a material nature and a mental nature. The personality, the self-consciousness, is the resultant of the *union* of the two. Neither one of itself makes the person." [This is not quite exact. Personality lies in the reasonable soul, which can maintain its self-conscious existence without the body, even as in Christ His personality resides in the divine nature, as Dr. Shedd himself clearly states on p. 406.] "Both body and soul are requisite in order to a complete individuality. The two natures do not make two individuals. The material nature, taken by itself, is not the man; and the mental part, taken by itself, is not the man. But only the *union* of the two is. Yet in this intimate union of two such diverse

I may refer also to the familiar ancient analogy of the fire and the iron.

6. The whole *work* of Christ is to be referred to his *person*, and not to be attributed to the one or the other nature exclusively. It is the one divine-human Christ, who wrought miracles of almighty power,—by virtue of the divine nature dwelling in him,—and who suffered and was buried,—according to his passible, human nature. The person was the subject, the human nature the seat and the sensorium, of the passion. It is by this hypostatical union of the divine and the human natures in all the stages of the humiliation and exaltation of Christ, that his work and his merits acquire an infinite and at the same time a genuinely human and exemplary significance for us. Because the *God-Man* suffered, his death is the reconciliation of the world with God; and because he suffered as *Man*, he has left us an example, that we should follow his steps.<sup>1</sup>

substances as matter and mind, body and soul, there is not the slightest alteration of the properties of each substance or nature. The body of a man is as truly and surely material as a piece of granite; and the immortal mind of a man is as truly and purely spiritual and immaterial as the Godhead itself. Neither the material part nor the mental part, taken by itself, and in separation, constitutes the personality; otherwise every human individual would be two persons in juxtaposition. There is therefore a material 'nature,' but no material 'person,' and there is a mental 'nature,' but no mental 'person.' The person is the *union* of these two natures, and is not to be denominated either material or mental, but *human*. In like manner the person of Christ takes its denomination of *theanthropic*, or *divine-human*, neither from the divine nature alone, nor the human nature alone, but from the *union* of both natures."

<sup>1</sup> Here also the orthodox Protestant theology is quite in agreement with the old Catholic. We cite two examples from the two opposite wings of English Protestantism. The Episcopalian theologian, Richard Hooker, says, with evident reference to the above-quoted passage from the letter of Leo: "To Christ we ascribe both working of wonders and suffering of pains, we use concerning Him speeches as well of humility as of divine glory, but the one we apply unto that nature which He took of the Virgin Mary, the other to that which was in the beginning" (*Eccles. Polity*, book v. ch. 52, vol. ii. p. 291, Keble's edition). The great Puritan theologian of the seventeenth century, John Owen, says, yet more explicitly: "In all that Christ did as the King, Priest, and Prophet of the church,—in all that He did and suffered, in all that He continueth to do for us, in or by virtue of whether nature soever it be done or wrought,—it is not to be considered as the act and work of this or that nature in Him alone, but it is the act and work of the whole person,—of Him that

7. The *anhypostasia*, *impersonality*, or, to speak more accurately, the *enhypostasia*, of the human nature of Christ. This is a difficult point, but a necessary link in the orthodox doctrine of the one God-Man; for otherwise we must have two persons in Christ, and, after the incarnation, a fourth person, and that a human, in the divine Trinity. The impersonality of Christ's human nature, however, is not to be taken as absolute, but relative, as the following considerations will show.

The centre of personal life in the God-Man resides unquestionably in the Logos, who was from eternity the second person in the Godhead, and could not lose his personality. He united himself, as has been already observed, not with a human person, but with human nature. The divine nature is therefore the root and basis of the personality of Christ. Christ himself, moreover, always speaks and acts in the full consciousness of his divine origin and character; as having come from the Father, having been sent by him, and, even during his earthly life, living in heaven and in unbroken communion with the Father.<sup>1</sup> And the human nature of Christ had no independent personality of its own, besides the divine; it had no existence at all before the incarnation, but began with this act, and was so incorporated with the pre-existent Logos-personality as to find in this alone its own full self-

is both God and man in one person." (Declaration of the Glorious Mystery of the Person of Christ; chap. xviii., in Owen's Works, vol. i. p. 234). Comp. also the admirable exposition of the article *Passus est* in Bishop Pearson's Exposition of the Creed (ed. Dobson, p. 288 ff.).

<sup>1</sup> The Logos is, according to the scholastic terminology of the later Greek theologians, especially John of Damascus, *ἰδιούσματος*, or *ἰδιονύσματος*, i. e., per se subsistens, and *ἰδιωπερίοριστος*, proprio termino circumscriptus. "Hæc et similia vocabula," says the learned Petavius (Theol. Dogm. tom. iv. p. 430), "demonstrant hypostasim non aliena ope fultam ac sustentatam existere, sed per semet ipsam, ac proprio termino definitam." Schleiermacher's Christology therefore, on this point, forms the direct opposite of the Chalcedonian; it makes the *man* Jesus the bearer of the personality, that is, transfers the proper centre of gravity in the personality to the human individuality of Christ, and views the divine nature as the supreme revelation of God in Him, as an impersonal principle, as a vital power. In this view the proper idea of the incarnation is lost. The same thing is true of the Christology of Hase, Keim, Beyschlag (and R. Rothe).



consciousness, and to be permeated and controlled by it in every stage of its development. But the human nature forms a necessary element in the divine personality, and in this sense we may say with the older Protestant theologians, that Christ is a persona *σύνθετος*, which was divine and human at once.<sup>1</sup>

Thus interpreted, the church doctrine of the enhypostasia presents no very great metaphysical or psychological difficulty. It is true we cannot, according to our modern way of thinking, conceive a complete human nature without personality. We make personality itself consist in intelligence and free will, so that without it the nature sinks to a mere abstraction of powers, qualities, and functions.<sup>2</sup> But the human nature of Jesus never was, in fact, alone; it was from the beginning inseparably united with another nature, which is personal, and which assumed the human into a unity of life with itself. The Logos-personality is in this case the light of self-consciousness, and the impelling power of will, and pervades as well the human nature as the divine.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The correct Greek expression is, therefore, not *ἐνυπόστασις*, but *ἐνυπόστασις*. The human nature of Christ was *ἀνυπόστατος*, impersonalis, before the incarnation, but became *ἐνυπόστατος* by the incarnation, that is, *ἐν αὐτῇ τῇ τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγου ὑποτάσει ὑποστάσα*, and also *ἑτερουπόστατος*, and *συνυπόστατος* (compersonata), i. e., quod per se et proprio modo non subsistit, sed inest in alio per se subsistente et substantia cum eo copulatur. Christ did not assume a human person, but a human nature, in qua ipse Deus homo nasceretur. The doctrine of the enhypostasia, impersonalitas, or rather enhypostasia, of the human nature of Christ, is already observed, in incipient form, in Cyril of Alexandria, and was afterwards more fully developed by John of Damascus (De orthodoxa fide, lib. iii.), who, however, did not, or all this, conceive Christ as a mere generic being typifying mankind, but as a concrete human individual. Comp. Petavius, De incarnatione, l. v. c. 5-8 (tom. iv. p. 21 sqq.); Dorner, l. c. ii. p. 282 ff.; and J. P. Lange, Christliche Dogmatik, Part . p. 718.

<sup>2</sup> Even in the scholastic era this difficulty was felt. Peter the Lombard says Sentent. iii. d. 5 d.): Non accepit Verbum Dei *personam* hominis, sed *naturam*; uia non erat ex carne illa una composita persona, quam Verbum accepit, sed accipiendo univit et uniendo accepit. *R:* A quibusdam opponitur, quod persona sumpsit personam. Persona enim est substantia naturalis individuum naturae, hoc item est anima. Ergo si animam assumpsit et personam. Quod ideo non sequitur, uia anima non est persona, quando alii rei unita est personaliter, sed quando per se st. Illa autem anima nunquam fuit quin esset alii rei conjuncta.

<sup>3</sup> The Puritan theologian, John Owen (Works, vol. i. p. 223), says of the human nature of Christ quite correctly, and in agreement with the Chalcedonian Christolo-

8. *Criticism and development.* This Chalcedonian Christology has latterly been subjected to a rigorous criticism, and has been charged now with dualism, now with docetism, according as its distinction of two natures or its doctrine of the impersonality of the human nature has most struck the eye.<sup>1</sup>

But these imputations neutralize each other, like the imputations of tritheism and modalism which may be made

gy: "In itself it is *ἀνυπόστατος*—that which hath not a subsistence of its own, which should give it individuation and distinction from the same nature in any other person. But it hath its subsistence in the person of the Son, which thereby is its own. The divine nature, as in that person, is its *suppositum*."

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Baur (*Geschichte der Trinitätslehre*, Bd. i. p. 823 f.) imputes to the Creed of Chalcedon "untenable inconsistency, equivocal indefiniteness, and discordant incompleteness," but ascribes to it the merit of insisting upon the human in Christ as having equal claims with the divine, and of thus leaving the possibility of two equally legitimate points of view. Dr. Dorner, who regards the Chalcedonian statement as premature and inadequate (*Geschichte der Christologie*, Bd. ii. pp. 88, 180), raises against it the double objection of leaning to docetism on the one hand and to dualism on the other. He sums up his judgment of the labors of the ancient church down to John of Damascus in the sphere of Christology in the following words (ii. 273): "If we review the result of the Christological speculation of the ancient church, it is undeniable that the satisfying and final result cannot be found in it, great as its traditional influence even to this day is. It mutilates the human nature, inasmuch as, in an Apollinarian way, it joins to the trunk of a human nature the head of the divine hypostasis, and thus sacrifices the integrity of the humanity to the unity of the person. Yet after all—and this is only the converse of the same fault—in its whole doctrine of the natures and the will, it gives the divine and the human only an outward connection, and only, as it were, pushes the two natures into each other, without modification even of their properties. We discover, it is true, endeavors after something better, which indicate that the Christological image hovering before the mind, has not yet, with all the apparent completeness of the theory, found its adequate expression. But these endeavors are unfruitful." Dr. W. Beyerslag, in his essay before the German *Evangelische Kirchentag* at Altenburg, held in 1864, concurs with these remarks, and says of the Chalcedonian dogma: "Instead of starting from the living intuition of the God-filled humanity of Christ, it proceeded from the defective and abstract conception of two separate natures, to be, as it were, added together in Christ; introduced thereby an irremediable dualism into his personal life; and at the same time, by transferring the personality wholly to the divine nature, depressed the humanity which *in these* it recognized, to a mere unsubstantial accident of the Godhead, at bottom only apparent and docetic." But Beyerslag denies the real personal pre-existence of Christ and consequently a proper incarnation, and has by this denial caused no small scandal among the believing party in Germany. Dorner holds firmly to the pre-existence and incarnation, but makes the latter a gradual ethical unification of the Logos and the human nature, consummated in the baptism and the exaltation of Christ.

against the orthodox doctrine of the Trinity when either the tripersonality or the consubstantiality is taken alone. This, indeed, is the peculiar excellence of the creed of Chalcedon, that it exhibits so sure a tact and so wise a circumspection in uniting the colossal antitheses in Christ, and seeks to do justice alike to the distinction of the natures and to the unity of the person.<sup>1</sup> In Christ all contradictions are reconciled.

Within these limits there remains indeed ample scope for further Christological speculations on the possibility, reality, and mode of the incarnation; on its relation to the revelation of God and the development of man; on its relation to the immutability of God and the trinity of essence and the trinity of revelation:—questions which, in recent times especially, have been earnestly and profoundly discussed by the Protestant theologians of Germany.<sup>2</sup>

The great want, in the present state of the Christological

<sup>1</sup> F. R. Hasse (Kirchengeschichte, i. p. 177): "By the Creed of Chalcedon justice has been done to both the Alexandrian and the Antiochian Christology; the antagonism of the two is adjusted, and in the dogma of the one *θεοδιδρακτος* done away."

<sup>2</sup> Witness the Christological investigations of Schleiermacher, R. Rothe, Göschel, Dörner, Liebner, Lange, Thomasius, Martensen, Gess, Ebrard, Schöberlein, Plitt, Beyschlag, and others. A thorough criticism of the latest theories is given by Dörner, in his large work on Christology, Bd. ii. p. 1260 ff. (Eng. transl. Div. 2d, vol. iii. p. 100 ff.), and in several dissertations upon the immutability of God, found in his *Jahrbücher für Deutsche Theologie*, 1856 and 1858; also by Philippi, *Kirchliche Glaubenslehre*, iv. i. pp. 344-382; Plitt, *Evangelische Glaubenslehre* (1868), i. p. 360 ff.; and Woldemar Schmidt, *Das Dogma vom Gottmenschen, mit Beziehung auf die neusten Lösungsversuche der Gegensätze*, Leipzig, 1865. The English theology has contented itself with the traditional acceptance and vindication of the old Catholic doctrine of Christ's person, without instituting any special investigations of its own, while the doctrine of the Trinity has been thoroughly reproduced and vindicated by Cudworth, Bull, and Waterland, without, however, being developed further. Dr. Shedd also considers the Chalcedonian symbol as the *ne plus ultra* of Christological knowledge, "beyond which it is probable the human mind is unable to go, in the endeavor to unfold the mystery of Christ's complex person, which in some of its aspects is even more baffling than the mystery of the Trinity" (*History of Christian Doctrine*, i. p. 408). This is probably also the reason why this work, in surprising contrast with every other History of Doctrine, makes no mention whatever of the Monophysite, Monothelite, Adoptian, Scholastic, Lutheran, Socinian, Rationalistic, and later Evangelical controversies and theories respecting this central dogma of Christianity.

sontroversy, is, on the one hand, a closer discussion of the Pauline idea of the *kenosis*, the self-limitation, self-renunciation of the Logos, and on the other hand, a truly human portrait of Jesus in his earthly development from childhood to the full maturity of manhood, without prejudice to his deity, but rather showing forth his absolute uniqueness and sinless perfection as a proof of his Godhead. Both these tasks can and should be so performed, that the enormous labor of deep and earnest thought in the ancient church be not condemned as a sheer waste of strength, but in substance confirmed, expanded, and perfected.

And even among believing Protestant scholars, who agree in the main views of the theanthropic glory of the person of Christ, opinions still diverge. Some restrict the *kenosis* to the laying aside of the divine form of existence, or divine dignity and glory;¹ others strain it in different degrees, even to a partial or entire emptying of the divine essence out of himself, so that the inner trinitarian process between Father and Son, and the government of the world through the Son, were partially or wholly suspended during his earthly life.² Some, again, view the incarnation as an instantaneous act, consummated in the miraculous conception and nativity; others as a gradual process, an ethical unification of the eternal Logos and the man Jesus in continuous development, so that the complete God-Man would be not so much the beginning as the consummation of the earthly life of Jesus.

But all these more recent inquiries, earnest, profound, and valuable as they are, have not as yet led to any important or generally accepted results, and cannot supersede the Chalcedonian Christology. The theology of the church will ever return anew to deeper and still deeper contemplation and

¹ Of the *ἑἑα θεοῦ*, John xvii. 5; the *μωφθῆ θεοῦ*, Phil. ii. 6 ff.

² Among these modern Kenotics, W. F. Gess goes the farthest in his *Lehre vom der Person Christi* (Basel, 1856). Dörner opposes the theory of the Kenotics and calls them Theopaschites and Patripassians (ii. 126 ff.). There is, however, an essential distinction, inasmuch as the ancient Monophysite Theopaschitism reduces the human nature of Christ to a mere accident of his Godhead, while Thomasius, Gess, and the other German Kenotics or Kenosists acknowledge the full humanity of Christ, and lay great stress on it.

adoration of the theanthropic person of Jesus Christ, which is, and ever will be, the sun of history, the miracle of miracles, the central mystery of godliness, and the inexhaustible fountain of salvation and life for the lost race of man.

### § 143. *The Monophysite Controversies.*

- I. The Acts in MANSI, tom. vii.-ix. The writings already cited of LIBERATUS and LEONTIUS BYZANT. EVAGRIUS: H. E. ii. v. NIOEPHORUS: H. E. xvi. 25. PROCOPIUS († about 552): 'Ανέκδοτα, Hist. arcana (ed. Orelli, Lips. 1827). FAUNDUS (bishop of Hermiane in Africa, but residing mostly in Constantinople): Pro defensione trium capitulorum, in 12 books (written A. D. 547, ed. Sirmond, Paris, 1629, and in Galland. xi. 665). FULGENTIUS FERRANDUS (deacon in Carthage, † 551): Pro tribus capitulis (in Gall. tom. xi.). ANASTASIUS SINAITA (bishop of Antioch, 564): 'Οδὴγός adv. Acephalos. ANGELO MAI: Script vet. nova collectio, tom. vii. A late, though unimportant, contribution to the history of Monophysitism (from 581 to 588) is the Church History of the Monophysite bishop JOHN OF EPHEBUS (of the sixth century): The Third Part of the Eccles. History of John, bishop of Ephesus, Oxford, 1858 (edited by W. Cureton from the Syrian literature of the Nitrian convent).
- II. PETAVIUS: De Incarnatione, lib. i. c. 16-18 (tom. iv. p. 74 sqq.). WALOH: Bd. vi.-viii. СОНРЪОКН: Th. xviii. pp. 493-686. NEANDER: Kirchengeschichte, iv. 993-1038. GIESELER: i. ii. pp. 347-376 (4th ed.), and his Commentatio qua Monophysitarum veterum variae de Christi persona opiniones . . . illustrantur (1835 and 1836). BAUR: Geschichte der Trinitätslehre, Bd. ii. pp. 87-96. DORNER: Geschichte der Christologie, ii. pp. 150-198. HEFELÉ (R. C.): Conciliengeschichte, ii. 545 ff. F. RUD. HASSE: Kirchengeschichte (1864), Bd. i. p. 177 ff. A. EBERARD: Handbuch der Kirchen- und Dogmengeschichte (1865), Bd. i. pp. 268-279.

The council of Chalcedon did not accomplish the intended pacification of the church, and in Palestine and Egypt it met with passionate opposition. Like the council of Nicæa, it must pass a fiery trial of conflict before it could be universally acknowledged in the church. "The *metaphysical* difficulty," says Niedner, "and the *religious* importance of the problem, were obstacles to the acceptance of the ecumenical authority of the council." Its opponents, it is true, rejected the Eutychian theory of an *absorption* of the human nature into the

divine, but nevertheless held firmly to the doctrine of *one* nature in Christ; and on this account, from the time of the Chalcedonian council they were called *Monophysites*,<sup>1</sup> while they in return stigmatized the adherents of the council as Dyophysites and Nestorians. They conceded, indeed, a composite nature (*μία φύσις σύνθετος* or *μία φύσις διττή*), but not two natures. They assumed a diversity of qualities without corresponding substances, and made the humanity in Christ a mere accident of the immutable divine substance.

Their main argument against Chalcedon was, that the doctrine of two natures necessarily led to that of two persons, or subjects, and thereby severed the one Christ into two Sons of God. They were entirely at one with the Nestorians in their use of the terms "nature" and "person," and in rejecting the orthodox distinction between the two. They could not conceive of human nature without personality. From this the Nestorians reasoned that, because in Christ there are two natures, there must be also two independent hypostases; the Monophysites, that, because there is but one person in Christ, there can be only one nature. They regarded the nature as something common to all individuals of a species (*κοινόν*), yet as never existing simply as such, but only in individuals. According to them, therefore, *φύσις* or *οὐσία* is in fact always an individual existence.<sup>2</sup>

The liturgical shibboleth of the Monophysites was: *God has been crucified*. This they introduced into their public worship as an addition to the Trisagion: "Holy God, holy Mighty, holy Immortal, who *has been crucified for us*, have mercy upon us."<sup>3</sup> From this they were also called Theopaschites.<sup>4</sup> This formula is in itself orthodox, and forms the requisite counterpart to *Θεοτόκος*, provided we understand by God the Logos, and in thought supply: "according to the

<sup>1</sup> *Μονοφυσίται*, from *μόνη* or *μία*, *φύσις*. They conceded the *ἐκ δύο φύσεων* (as even Eutyches and Dioscurus had done), but denied the *ἐν δύο φύσεσιν* after the *ἁρσέν*.

<sup>2</sup> *ἰδικόν*.

<sup>3</sup> "Ἅγιος ὁ Θεός, Ἅγιος Ἰσχυρός, Ἅγιος Ἀθάνατος, ὁ σταυρωθεὶς δι' ἡμᾶς, ἐλέησον ἡμᾶς. An extension of the seraphic ascription, Isa. vi. 3.

<sup>4</sup> *Θεοπασχίται*.

flesh," or "according to the human nature." In this qualified sense it was afterwards in fact not only sanctioned by Justinian in a dogmatical decree, but also by the fifth ecumenical council, though not as an addition to the Trisagion. For the theanthropic *person* of Christ is the *subject*, as of the nativity, so also of the passion; his human nature is the *seat* and the *organ* (*sensorium*) of the passion. But as an addition to the Trisagion, which refers to the Godhead generally, and therefore to the Father, and the Holy Ghost, as well as the Son, the formula is at all events incongruous and equivocal. Theopaschitism is akin to the earlier Patripassianism, in subjecting the impassible divine essence, common to the Father and the Son, to the passion of the God-Man on the cross; yet not, like that, by confounding the Son with the Father, but by confounding person with nature in the Son.

Thus from the council of Chalcedon started those violent and complicated Monophysite controversies which convulsed the Oriental church, from patriarchs and emperors down to monks and peasants, for more than a hundred years, and which have left their mark even to our day. They brought theology little appreciable gain, and piety much harm; and they present a gloomy picture of the corruption of the church. The intense concern for practical religion, which animated Athanasius and the Nicene fathers, abated or went astray; theological speculation sank towards barren metaphysical refinements; and party watchwords and empty formulas were valued more than real truth. We content ourselves with but a summary of this wearisome, though not unimportant chapter of the history of doctrines, which has recently received new light from the researches of Gieseler, Baur, and Dorner.<sup>1</sup>

The external history of the controversy is a history of outrages and intrigues, depositions and banishments, commotions, divisions, and attempted reunions. Immediately after the council of Chalcedon bloody fights of the monks and the rabble broke out, and Monophysite factions went off in schis-

<sup>1</sup> The *external* history of Monophysitism is related with wearisome minuteness by Walch in three large volumes (vi.-viii.) of his *Entwurf einer vollständigen Historie der Ketzereien*, etc., bis auf die Zeiten der Reformation.

matic churches. In Palestine Theodosius (451–453) thus set up in opposition to the patriarch Juvenal of Jerusalem; in Alexandria, Timotheus *Ælurus*<sup>1</sup> and Peter Mongus<sup>2</sup> (454–460), in opposition to the newly-elected patriarch Protarius, who was murdered in a riot in Antioch; Peter the Fuller<sup>3</sup> (463–470). After thirty years' confusion the Monophysites gained a temporary victory under the protection of the rude pretender to the empire, Basiliscus (475–477), who in an encyclical letter,<sup>4</sup> enjoined on all bishops to condemn the council of Chalcedon (476). After his fall, Zeno (474–475 and 477–491), by advice of the patriarch Acacius of Constantinople, issued the famous formula of concord, the *Henoticon*, which proposed, by avoiding disputed expressions, and condemning both Eutychianism and Nestorianism alike, to reconcile the monophysite and dyophysite views, and tacitly set aside the Chalcedonian formula (482). But this was soon followed by two more schisms, one among the Monophysites themselves, and one between the East and the West. Felix II., bishop of Rome, immediately rejected the *Henoticon*, and renounced communion with the East (484–519). The strict Monophysites were as ill content with the *Henoticon*, as the adherents of the council of Chalcedon; and while the former revolted from their patriarchs, and became *Acephali*,<sup>5</sup> the latter attached themselves to Rome. It was not till the reign of the emperor Justin I. (518–527), that the authority of the council of Chalcedon was established under stress of a popular tumult, and peace with Rome was restored. The Monophysite bishops were now deposed, and fled for the most part to Alexandria, where their party was too powerful to be attacked.

The internal divisions of the Monophysites turned especially on the *degree* of essential difference between the humanity of Christ and ordinary human nature, and the degree, therefore,

<sup>1</sup> *Αἰλουρος*, Cat.

<sup>2</sup> *Μόγγος*, the Stammerer; literally, the Hoarse.

<sup>3</sup> Fullo, *γραφεύς*. He introduced the formula: Θεὸς ἐσταυρώθη δι' ἡμᾶς into the liturgy. He was in 486 again raised to the patriarchate.

<sup>4</sup> *Ἐγκύκλιον*. This, however, excited so much opposition, that the usurper in 477 revoked it in an *ἀντεγκύκλιον*.

<sup>5</sup> *Ἀκέφαλοι*, without head.



of their deviation from the orthodox doctrine of the full consubstantiality of the humanity of Christ with ours.<sup>1</sup> The most important of these parties were the SEVERIANS (from Severus, the patriarch of Antioch) or PETHARTOLATERS (adorers of the corruptible),<sup>2</sup> who taught that the body of Christ *before* the resurrection was mortal and corruptible; and the JULIANISTS (from bishop Julian of Halicarnassus, and his contemporary Xenajas of Hierapolis) or APHTHARTODOCTÆ,<sup>3</sup> who affirmed the body of Christ to have been originally incorruptible, and who bordered on docetism. The former conceded to the Catholics, that Christ as to the flesh was consubstantial with us (κατὰ σάρκα ὁμοούσιος ἡμῖν). The latter argued from the commingling (σύγχυσις) of the two natures, that the corporeality of Christ became from the very beginning partaker of the incorruptibleness of the Logos, and was subject to corruptibleness merely κατ' οἰκονομίαν. They appealed in particular to Jesus' walking on the sea. Both parties were agreed as to the incorruptibleness of the body of Christ *after* the resurrection. The word φθορά, it may be remarked, was sometimes used in the sense of frailty, sometimes in that of corruptibleness.

The solution of this not wholly idle question would seem to be, that the body of Christ before the resurrection was similar to that of Adam before the fall; that is, it contained the germ of immortality and incorruptibleness; but before its glorification it was subject to the influence of the elements, was destructible, and was actually put to death by external violence, but, through the indwelling power of the sinless spirit, was preserved from corruption, and raised again to imperishable life. A relative immortality thus became absolute.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Petavius, l. c. lib. l. c. 17, enumerates twelve factions of the Monophysites.

<sup>2</sup> Φαρτολάτραι (from φαρτός, corruptible, and λάτρης, servant, worshipper), corrupticolas.

<sup>3</sup> Ἀφθαρτοδοκῆται, also called PHANTASTÆ, because they appeared to acknowledge only a *seeming* body of Christ. Gieseler, however, in the second part of the above-mentioned dissertation, has shown that the Julianist view was not strictly docetic, but kindred with the view of Clement of Alexandria, Origen, Hilary, Gregory of Nyssa, and Apollinarius.

<sup>4</sup> Comp. the Augustinian distinction of immortalitas minor and immortalitas major.

So far we may without self-contradiction affirm both the identity of the body of Christ before and after his resurrection, and its glorification after resurrection.<sup>1</sup>

The Severians were subdivided again, in respect to the question of Christ's omniscience, into THEODOSIANS, and THEMISTIANS, or AGNOETÆ.<sup>2</sup> The Julianists were subdivided into KTISTOLATÆ,<sup>3</sup> and AKTISTETÆ,<sup>4</sup> according as they asserted or denied that the body of Christ was a created body. The most consistent Monophysite was the rhetorician Stephanus Niobes (about 550), who declared every attempt to distinguish between the divine and the human in Christ inadmissible, since they had become absolutely one in him.<sup>5</sup> An abbot of Edessa, Bar Sudaili, extended this principle even to the creation, which he maintained would at last be wholly absorbed in God. John Philoponus (about 530) increased the confusion; starting with Monophysite principles, taking φύσις in a concrete instead of an abstract sense, and identifying it with ὑπόστασις, he distinguished in God three individuals, and so became involved in tritheism. This view he sought to justify by the Aristotelian categories of *genus*, *species*, and *individuum*.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> As was done by Augustine and Leo the Great. The latter affirms, Sermo 69, De resurrectione Domini, c. 4: "Resurrectio Domini non finis carnis, sed commutatio fuit, nec virtutis augmento consumpta substantia est. Qualitas transiit, non natura deficit; et factum est corpus impassibile, immortale, incorruptibile . . . nihil remansit in carne Christi infirmum, ut et ipsa sit per essentiam et non sit ipsa per gloriam." Comp. moreover, respecting the Aphthartodocetic controversy of the Monophysites, the remarks of Dorner, ii. 159 ff. and of Ebrard, Kirchen- und Dogmengeschichte, i. 268 f.

<sup>2</sup> After their leader Themistius, deacon of Alexandria; also called by their opponents, AGNOETÆ, Ἀγνοηταί, because they taught that Christ in his condition of humiliation was not omniscient, but shared our ignorance of many things (comp. Luke ii. 52; Mark xiii. 32). This view leads necessarily to dyophysitism, and accordingly was rejected by the strict Monophysites.

<sup>3</sup> Κτιστολάτραι, or, from their founder, GAJANITÆ. These viewed the body of Christ as created, κτιστόν.

<sup>4</sup> Ἀκτιστηταί. These said that the body of Christ in itself was created, but that by its union with the Logos it became increate, and therefore also incorruptible.

<sup>5</sup> His adherents were condemned by the other Monophysites as NIOBITE.

<sup>6</sup> His followers were called PHILOPONIACI, TRITHEISTÆ. Philoponus, it may be remarked, was not the first promulgator of this error; but (as appears from Assem. Bibl. orient. tom. ii. p. 327; comp. Hefele, ii. 555) the Monophysite John Aakm-

§ 144. *The Three Chapters, and the Fifth Ecumenical Council*, A. D. 553.

Comp., besides the literature already cited, H. NORIS (R. O.): *Historia Pelagiana et dissertatio de Synodo Quinta œcumen. in qua Origenis et Th. Mopsuesteni Pelagiani erroris auctorum justa damnatio, et Aquilejense schisma describitur*, etc. Padua, 1673, fol., and Verona, 1729. JOHN GARNIER (R. O.): *Dissert. de V. Synodo*. Paris, 1675 (against Card. Noris). HEFELE (R. O.): vol. ii. 775-899.—The Greek Acta of the 5th council, with the exception of the 14 anathemas and some fragments, have been lost; but there is extant an apparently contemporary Latin translation (in Mansi, tom. ix. 168 sqq.), respecting whose genuineness and completeness there has been much controversy (comp. Hefele, ii. p. 831 ff.).

The further fortunes of Monophysitism are connected with the emperor Justinian I. (527-565). This learned and unweariedly active ruler, ecclesiastically devout, but vain and ostentatious, aspired, during his long and in some respects brilliant reign of nearly thirty years, to the united renown of a lawgiver and theologian, a conqueror and a champion of the true faith. He used to spend whole nights in prayer and fasting, and in theological studies and discussions; he placed his throne under the special protection of the Blessed Virgin and the archangel Michael; in his famous Code, and especially in the *Novelles*, he confirmed and enlarged the privileges of the clergy; he adorned the capital and the provinces with costly temples and institutions of charity; and he regarded it as his especial mission to reconcile heretics, to unite all parties of the church, and to establish the genuine orthodoxy for all time to come. In all these undertakings he fancied himself the chief actor, though very commonly he was but the instrument of the empress, or of the court theologians and eunuchs; and his efforts to compel a general uniformity only increased the divisions in church and state.

Justinian was a great admirer of the decrees of Chalcedon,

nages, who ascribed to Christ only *one* nature, but to each person in the Godhead a separate nature, and on this account was banished by the emperor and excommunicated by the patriarch of Constantinople. Among the more famous Tritheists we have also Stephen Gobarus, about 800.

and ratified the four ecumenical councils in his Code of Roman law. But his famous wife Theodora, a beautiful, crafty, and unscrupulous woman, whom he—if we are to believe the report of Procopius<sup>1</sup>—raised from low rank, and even from a dissolute life, to the partnership of his throne, and who, as empress, displayed the greatest zeal for the church and for ascetic piety, was secretly devoted to the Monophysite view, and frustrated all his plans. She brought him to favor the liturgical formula of the Monophysites: "God was crucified for us," so that he sanctioned it in an ecclesiastical decree (533).<sup>2</sup>

Through her influence the Monophysite Anthimus was made patriarch of Constantinople (535), and the characterless Vigilius bishop of Rome (538), under the secret stipulation that he should favor the Monophysite doctrine. The former, however, was soon deposed as a Monophysite (536), and the latter did not keep his promise.<sup>3</sup> Meanwhile the Origenistic controversies were renewed. The emperor was persuaded, on the one hand, to condemn the Origenistic errors in a letter to Mennas of Constantinople; on the other hand, to condemn by an edict the Antiochian teachers most odious to the Monophysites: Theodore of Mopsuestia (the teacher of Nestorius), Theodoret of Cyros, and Ibas of Edessa (friends of Nestorius); though the last two had been expressly declared orthodox by the council of Chalcedon. Theodore he condemned absolutely, but Theodoret only as respected his writings against Cyril and the third ecumenical council at Ephesus, and Ibas as respected his letter to the Persian bishop Maris, in which he complains of the outrages of Cyril's party in Edessa, and denies the *communicatio idiomatum*. These are the so-called *Three Chapters*, or

<sup>1</sup> *Historia Arcana*, c. 9.

<sup>2</sup> This addition remained in use among the Catholics in Syria till it was thrown out by the *Concilium Quinisextum* (can. 81). Thenceforth it was confined to the Monophysites and Monothelites. The opinion gained ground among the Catholics, that the formula taught a quaternity, instead of a trinity. Gieseler, i. P. ii. p. 366 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Hefele (ii. p. 552) thinks that Vigilius was never a Monophysite at heart, and that he only gave the promise in the interest of "his craving ambition." The motive, however, of course cannot alter the fact, nor weaken the argument, furnished by his repeated recantations, against the claims of the papal see to infallibility.

formulas of condemnation, or rather the persons and writings designated and condemned therein.<sup>1</sup>

Thus was kindled the violent controversy of the *Three Chapters*, of which it has been said that it has filled more volumes than it was worth lines. The East yielded easily to craft and force; the West resisted.<sup>2</sup> Pontianus of Carthage declared that neither the emperor nor any other man had a right to sit in judgment upon the dead. Vigilius of Rome, however, favored either party according to circumstances, and was excommunicated for awhile by the dyophysite Africans, under the lead of Facundus of Hermiane. He subscribed the condemnation of the Three Chapters in Constantinople, A. D. 548, but refused to subscribe the second edict of the emperor against the Three Chapters (551), and afterwards defended them.

To put an end to this controversy, Justinian, without the concurrence of the pope, convoked at Constantinople, A. D. 553, the *Fifth Ecumenical Council*, which consisted of a hundred and sixty-four bishops, and held eight sessions, from the 5th of May to the 2d of June, under the presidency of the patriarch Eutychius of Constantinople. It anathematized the Three Chapters; that is, the *person* of Theodore of Mopsuestia, the anti-Cyrrillian *writings* of Theodoret, and the *letter* of Ibas,<sup>3</sup> and sanctioned the formula "God was crucified," or "One of the Trinity has suffered," yet not as an addition to the Trisagion.<sup>4</sup> The dogmatic decrees of Justinian were thus

<sup>1</sup> *Τρία κεφάλαια*, tria capitula. "Chapters" are properly articles, or brief propositions, under which certain errors are summed up in the form of anathemas. The twelve anathemas of Cyril against Nestorius were also called *κεφάλαια*. By the Three Chapters, however, are to be understood in this case: 1. The *person* and *writings* of Theodore of Mopsuestia; 2. the anti-Cyrrillian *writings* of Theodoret; 3. the *letter* of Ibas to Maris. Hence the appellation *impia capitula*, ἀσεβῆ κεφάλαια. This deviation from ordinary usage has occasioned much confusion.

<sup>2</sup> Especially the African Fulgentius Ferrandus, Liberatus, and Facundus of Hermiane, who wrote in defence of the Three Chapters; also the Roman deacon Rusticus.

<sup>3</sup> These anathemas are found in the concluding sentence of the council (Mansi, tom. ix. 876): "Prædicta igitur tria capitula anathematizamus, id est Theodorum impium Mopsuestenum, cum nefandis ejus conscriptis, et quæ impie Theodoretus conscripsit, et impiam epistolam, quæ dicitur Ibasæ."

<sup>4</sup> Collect. viii. can. 10: Εἰ τις οὐκ ὁμολογῇ τὸν ἐσταυρωμένον σὰρκι κῆριον ἡμῶν

sanctioned by the church. But no further mention appears to have been made of Origenism; and in truth none was necessary, since a local synod of 544 had already condemned it. Perhaps also Theodore Askidas, a friend of the Origenists, and one of the leaders of the council, prevented the ecumenical condemnation of Origen. But this is a disputed point, and is connected with the difficult question of the genuineness and completeness of the Acts of the council.<sup>1</sup>

Vigilius at first protested against the Council, which, in spite of repeated invitations, he had not attended, and by which he was suspended; but he afterwards signified his adherence, and was permitted, after seven years' absence, to return to Rome, but died on the journey, at Syracuse, in 555. His fourfold change of opinion does poor service to the claim of papal infallibility. His successor, Pelagius I., immediately acknowledged the council. But upon this the churches in Northern Italy, Africa, and Illyria separated themselves from the Roman see, and remained in schism till Pope Gregory I. induced most of the Italian bishops to acknowledge the council.

The result of this controversy, therefore, was the condemnation of the Antiochian theology, and the partial victory of the Alexandrian monophysite doctrine, so far as it could be reconciled with the definitions of Chalcedon. But the Chalcedonian dyophysitism afterwards reacted, in the form of dyothelitism, and at the *sixth* ecumenical council, at Constantinople, A. D. 680 (called also Concilium Trullanum I.), under the influence of a letter of pope Agatho, which reminds us of

*Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν εἶναι Θεὸν ἀληθινὸν καὶ κύριον τῆς δόξης, καὶ ἓνα τῆς ἁγίας τριάδος, ὁ τοιοῦτος ἀνάθεμα ἔστω.* "Whoever does not acknowledge that our Lord Jesus Christ, who was crucified in the flesh, is true God and Lord of glory, and one of the Holy Trinity, let him be anathema."

<sup>1</sup> In the 11th anathema, it is true, the name of Origen is condemned along with other heretics (Arius, Eunomius, Macedonius, Apollinarius, Nestorius, Eutyches), but the connection is incongruous, and the name is regarded by Halloix, Garnier, Jacob Basnage, Walch, and others, as an interpolation. Noris and Hefele (ii. p. 874) maintain its genuineness. At all events the fifteen anathemas against Origen do not belong to it, but to an earlier Constantinopolitan synod, held in 544. Comp. Hefele, ii. p. 768 ff.

the *Epistola Dogmatica* of Leo, it gained the victory over the Monothelite view, which so far involves the Monophysite, as the ethical conception of *one will* depends upon the physical conception of *one nature*.

But notwithstanding the concessions of the fifth ecumenical council, the Monophysites remained separated from the orthodox church, refusing to acknowledge in any manner the dyophysite council of Chalcedon. Another effort of Justinian to gain them, by sanctioning the Aphthartodocetic doctrine of the incorruptibleness of Christ's body (564), threatened to involve the church in fresh troubles; but his death soon afterwards, in 565, put an end to these fruitless and despotic plans of union. His successor Justin II. in 565 issued an edict of toleration, which exhorted all Christians to glorify the Lord, without contending about persons and syllables. Since that time the history of the Monophysites has been distinct from that of the catholic church.

§ 145. *The Monophysite Sects: Jacobites, Copts, Abyssinians, Armenians, Maronites.*

EUSEB. RENAUDOT (R. O., † 1720): *Historia patriarcharum Alexandrinorum Jacobitarum a D. Marco usque ad finem sæc. xiii.* Par. 1713. Also by the same: *Liturgiarum orientalium collectio.* Par. 1716, 2 vols. 4to. JOS. SIM. ASSEMANI (R. O., † 1768): *Bibliotheca orientalis.* Rom. 1719 sqq., 4 vols. folio (vol. ii. treats *De scriptoribus Syris Monophysitis*). MICHAEL LE QUIEN (R. C., † 1788): *Oriens Christianus.* Par. 1740, 8 vols. folio (vols. 2 and 3). VEYSSIERE DE LA CROZE: *Histoire du Christianisme d'Ethiope et d'Armenie.* La Haye, 1739. GIBBON: Chapter xlvii. towards the end. MAKRIZI (Mohammedan, an historian and jurist at Cairo, died 1441): *Historia Coptorum Christianorum* (Arabic and Latin), ed. H. J. Weteer, Sulzbach, 1828; a better edition by F. Wüstenfeld, with translation and annotations, Göttingen, 1845. J. E. T. WILSON: *Kirchliche Statistik.* Berlin, 1846, Bd. i. p. 225 ff. JOHN MASON NEALE (Anglican): *The Patriarchate of Alexandria.* London, 1847, 2 vols. Also: *A History of the Holy Eastern Church.* Lond. 1850, 2 vols. (vol. ii. contains among other things the Armenian and Copto-Jacobite Liturgy). E. DULAURIER: *Histoire, dogmes, traditions, et liturgie de l'Eglise Armenienne.* Par. 1859. ARTHUR PENRYN STANLEY: *Lectures on the History of the Eastern Church.* New

York, 1862, Lect. i. p. 92 ff. Respecting the present condition of the Jacobites, Copts, Armenians, and Maronites, consult also works of Eastern travel, and the numerous accounts in missionary magazines and other religious periodicals.

The Monophysites, like their antagonists, the Nestorians, have maintained themselves in the East as separate sects under their own bishops and patriarchs, even to the present day ; thus proving the tenacity of those Christological errors, which acknowledge the full Godhead and manhood of Christ, while those errors of the ancient church, which deny the Godhead, or the manhood (Ebionism, Gnosticism, Manichæism, Arianism, etc.), as sects, have long since vanished. These Christological schismatics stand, as if enchanted, upon the same position which they assumed in the fifth century. The Nestorians reject the third ecumenical council, the Monophysites the fourth; the former hold the distinction of two natures in Christ even to abstract separation, the latter the fusion of the two natures in one with a stubbornness which has defied centuries, and forbids their return to the bosom of the orthodox Greek church. They are properly the ancient *national* churches of Egypt, Syria, and Armenia, in distinction from the orthodox Greek church, and the *united* or Roman church of the East.

The Monophysites are scattered upon the mountains and in the valleys and deserts of Syria, Armenia, Assyria, Egypt, and Abyssinia, and, like the orthodox Greeks of those countries, live mostly under Mohammedan, partly under Russian, rule. They supported the Arabs and Turks in weakening and at last conquering the Byzantine empire, and thus furthered the ultimate victory of Islam. In return, they were variously favored by the conquerors, and upheld in their separation from the Greek church. They have long since fallen into stagnation, ignorance, and superstition, and are to Christendom as a praying corpse to a living man. They are isolated fragments of the ancient church history, and curious petrifications from the Christological battle fields of the fifth and sixth centuries, coming to view amidst Mohammedan scenes. But Providence has preserved them, like the Jews, and doubtless not without de-



sign, through storms of war and persecution, unchanged until the present time. Their very hatred of the orthodox Greek church makes them more accessible both to Protestant and Roman missions, and to the influences of Western Christianity and Western civilization.

On the other hand, they are a door for Protestantism to the Arabs and the Turks; to the former through the Jacobites, to the latter through the Armenians. There is the more reason to hope for their conversion, because the Mohammedans despise the old Oriental churches, and must be won, if at all, by a purer type of Christianity. In this respect the American missions among the Armenians in the Turkish empire, are, like those among the Nestorians in Persia, of great prospective importance, as outposts of a religion which is destined sooner or later to regenerate the East.

With the exception of the Chalcedonian Christology, which they reject as Nestorian heresy, most of the doctrines, institutions, and rites of the Monophysite sects are common to them with the orthodox Greek church. They reject, or at least do not recognize, the *filioque*; they hold to the mass, or the Eucharistic sacrifice, with a kind of transubstantiation; leavened bread in the Lord's Supper; baptismal regeneration by trine immersion; seven sacraments (yet not explicitly, since they either have no definite term for sacrament, or no settled conception of it); the patriarchal polity; monasticism; pilgrimages, and fasting; the requisition of a single marriage for priests and deacons (bishops are not allowed to marry);<sup>1</sup> the prohibition of the eating of blood or of things strangled.<sup>2</sup> On the other hand, they know nothing of purgatory and indulgences, and have a simpler worship than the Greeks and Romans. According to their doctrine, all men after death go into Hades, a place alike without sorrow or joy; after the general judgment they enter into heaven or are cast into hell; and meanwhile the intercessions and pious works of the living

<sup>1</sup> Laymen are allowed to marry twice, but a third marriage is regarded as fornication.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. Acts xv. 20. The Latin church saw in this ordinance of the apostolic council merely a temporary measure during the existence of Jewish Christianity.

have an influence on the final destiny of the departed. Like the orthodox Greeks, they honor pictures and relics of the saints, but not in the same degree. Scripture and tradition are with them coördinate sources of revelation and rules of faith. The reading of the Bible is not forbidden, but is limited by the ignorance of the people themselves. They use in worship the ancient vernacular tongues, which, however, are now dead languages to them.

There are four branches of the Monophysites: the Syrian JACOBITES; the COPTS, including the ABYSSINIANS; the ARME-  
NIANS; and the less ancient MARONITES.

I. The JACOBITES in Syria, Mesopotamia, and Babylonia. Their name comes down from their ecumenical 'metropolitan JACOB, surnamed BARADAI, or ZANZALUS.' This remarkable man, in the middle of the sixth century, devoted himself for seven and thirty years (541-578), with unwearied zeal to the interests of the persecuted Monophysites. "Light-footed as Asahel,"<sup>1</sup> and in the garb of a beggar, he journeyed hither and thither amid the greatest dangers and privations; revived the patriarchate of Antioch; ordained bishops, priests, and deacons; organized churches; healed divisions; and thus saved the Monophysite body from impending extinction.

The patriarch bears the title of patriarch of Antioch, because the succession is traced back to Severus of Antioch; but he commonly resides in Diarbekir, or other towns or monasteries. Since the fourteenth century, the patriarch has always borne the name Ignatius, after the famous martyr and bishop of Antioch. The Jacobite monks are noted for gross superstition and rigorous asceticism. A part of the Jacobites have united with the church of Rome. Lately some Protestant

<sup>1</sup> *Ecumenical*, i. e., not restricted to any particular province.

<sup>2</sup> From his beggarly clothing. Barâdai signifies in Arabic and Syriac horse blanket, of coarse cloth, and τριτάλον is *vile aliquid et tritum* (see Rödiger in Herzog's Encycl. vi. 401).

<sup>3</sup> 2 Sam. ii. 18.

missionaries from America have also found entrance among them.

II. The Copts,<sup>1</sup> in Egypt, are in nationality the genuine descendants of the ancient Egyptians, though with an admixture of Greek and Arab blood. Soon after the council of Chalcedon, they chose Timotheus Ælurus in opposition to the patriarch Proterius. After varying fortunes, they have, since 536, had their own patriarch of Alexandria, who, like most of the Egyptian dignitaries, commonly resides at Cairo. He accounts himself the true successor of the evangelist Mark, St. Athanasius, and Cyril. He is always chosen from among the monks, and, in rigid adherence to the traditionary *nolo episcopari*, he is elected against his will; he is obliged to lead a strict ascetic life, and at night is waked every quarter of an hour for a short prayer. He alone has the power to ordain, and he performs this function not by imposition of hands, but by breathing on and anointing the candidate. His jurisdiction extends over the churches of Egypt, Nubia, and Abyssinia, or Ethiopia. He chooses and anoints the Abuna (i. e., Our Father), or patriarch for Abyssinia. Under him are twelve bishops, some with real jurisdiction, some titular; and under these again other clergy, down to readers and exorcists. There are still extant two incomplete Coptic versions of the Scriptures, the Upper Egyptian or Thebaic, called also, after the Arabic name of the province, the Sahidic, i. e., Highland version; and the Lower Egyptian or Memphitic.<sup>2</sup>

The Copts were much more numerous than the Catholics, whom they scoffingly nicknamed *Melchites*,<sup>3</sup> or *Cæsar-Christians*. They lived with them on terms of deadly enmity, and facilitated the conquest of Egypt by the Saracens (641). But they were afterwards cruelly persecuted by these very Sara-

<sup>1</sup> From αἰγυπτιοί, Gupotos, and not, as some suppose, from the town Koptos, nor from an abbreviation of *Jacobite*. They are the most ancient, but Christian Egyptians, in distinction from the Pharaonic (Chem), those of the Old Testament (Mizrim), the Macedonian or Greek (αἰγ.), and the modern Arab Egyptians (Misr).

<sup>2</sup> Of this latter H. Tattam and P. Bötticher (1852) have lately published considerable fragments.

<sup>3</sup> From the Hebrew *melech*, king.

cens,<sup>1</sup> and dwindled from some two millions of souls to a hundred and fifty or two hundred thousand, of whom about ten thousand, or according to others from thirty to sixty thousand, live in Cairo, and the rest mostly in Upper Egypt. They now in common with all other religious sects, enjoy toleration. They and the Abyssinians are distinguished from the other Monophysites by the Jewish and Mohammedan practice of circumcision, which is performed by lay persons (on both sexes), and in Egypt is grounded upon sanitary considerations. They still observe the Jewish law of meats. They are sunk in poverty, ignorance, and semi-barbarism. Even the clergy, who indeed are taken from the lowest class of the people, are a beggarly set, and understand nothing but how to read mass, and perform the various ceremonies. They do not even know the Coptic or old Egyptian, their own ancient ecclesiastical language. They live by farming, and their official fees. The literary treasures of their convents in the Coptic, Syriac, and Arabic languages, have been of late secured for the most part to the British Museum, by Tattam and other travellers.

Missions have lately been undertaken among them, especially by the Church Missionary Society of England (commencing in 1825), and the United Presbyterians of America, but with little success so far.<sup>2</sup>

The ABYSSINIAN church is a daughter of the Coptic, and was founded in the fourth century by two missionaries from Alexandria, Frumentius and Aedesius. It presents a strange mixture of barbarism, ignorance, superstition, and Christianity.

<sup>1</sup> So that even their Arabic historian Makrizi was moved to compassion for them.

<sup>2</sup> A detailed, but very unfavorable description of the Copts is given by Edward W. Lane in his "Manners and Customs of the Modern Egyptians," 1833. Notwithstanding this they stand higher than the other Egyptians. A. P. Stanley (Hist. of the Eastern Church, p. 95) says of them: "The Copts are still, even in their degraded state, the most civilized of the natives: the intelligence of Egypt still lingers in the Coptic scribes, who are on this account used as clerks in the offices of their conquerors, or as registrars of the water-marks of the Nile." Comp. also the occasional notices of the Copts in the Egyptological writings of Wilkinson, Bunsen, Lepsius, Brugsch, and others.

Its Ethiopic Bible, which dates perhaps from the first missionaries, includes in the Old Testament the apocryphal book of Enoch. The Chronicles of Axuma (the former capital of the country), dating from the fourth century, receive almost the same honor as the Bible. The council of Chalcedon is accounted an assembly of fools and heretics. The Abyssinian church has retained even more Jewish elements than the Coptic. It observes the Jewish Sabbath together with the Christian Sunday; it forbids the use of the flesh of swine and other unclean beasts; it celebrates a yearly feast of general lustration or rebaptizing of the whole nation; it retains the model of a sacred ark, called the ark of Zion, to which gifts and prayers are offered, and which forms the central point of public worship. It believes in the magical virtue of outward ceremonies, especially immersion, as the true regeneration. Singularly enough it honors Pontius Pilate as a saint, because he washed his hands of innocent blood. The endless controversies respecting the natures of Christ, which have died out elsewhere, still rage there. The Abyssinians honor saints and pictures, but not images; crosses, but not the crucifix. Every priest carries a cross in his hand, and presents it to every one whom he meets, to be kissed. The numerous churches are small and dome-shaped above, and covered with reeds and straw. On the floor lie a number of staves and crutches, on which the people support themselves during the long service, as, like all the Orientals, they are without benches. Slight as are its remains of Christianity, Abyssinia still stands, in agriculture, arts, laws, and social condition, far above the heathen countries of Africa—a proof that even a barbaric Christianity is better than none.

The influences of the West have penetrated even to Abyssinia. The missions of the Jesuits in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, and of the Protestants in the nineteenth, have been prosecuted amidst many dangers and much self-denial, yet hitherto with but little success.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Especially worthy of note are the labors of the Basle missionaries, Samuel Gobat (now Anglican bishop in Jerusalem), Kugler, Isenberg, Blumhardt, and Krapf since 1830. Comp. GOBAT in the *Basler Missionsmagazin* for 1834, Part I

III. The ARMENIANS. These are the most numerous, interesting, and hopeful of the Monophysite sects, and now the most accessible to evangelical Protestantism. Their nationality reaches back into hoary antiquity, like Mount Ararat, at whose base lies their original home. They were converted to Christianity in the beginning of the fourth century, under King Tiridates, by Gregory the Enlightener, the first patriarch and ecclesiastical writer and the greatest saint of the Armenians.<sup>1</sup> They were provided by him with monasteries and seminaries, and afterwards by Mesrob<sup>2</sup> with a version of the Scriptures, made from the Greek with the help of the Syriac Peschito; which at the same time marks the beginning of the Armenian literature, since Mesrob had first to invent his alphabet. The Armenian canon has four books found in no other Bible; in the Old Testament, the History of Joseph and Asenath, and the Testament of the twelve Patriarchs, and in the New, the Epistle of the Corinthians to Paul and a Third, but spurious, Epistle of Paul to the Corinthians. The next oldest work in the Armenian language is the history of their land and people, by Moses Chorenensis, a half century later.

The Armenians fell away from the church of the Greek

and 2. ISKENDERG: *Abyssinien und die evangelische Mission*, Bonn, 1844, 2 Bde. and ISKENDERG and KRAFF: *Journals*, 1843. Also HARRIS: *Highlands of Ethiopia*, 1844. The imported fragments of an Abyssinian translation of the Bible, dating from the fourth or fifth century, have drawn the attention of Western scholars. Prof. A. Dillmann (now in Giessen) has since 1854 published the Æthiopic Old Testament, a grammar, and a lexicon of the Æthiopic language. Of the older works on Abyssinia the principal are LUDOLPHUS: *Historia Æthiopica*, Frankf. 1681; GEDDES: *Church History of Æthiopia*, Lond. 1696, and LA CROZE: *Histoire du Christianisme d'Ethiopie et d'Armenie*, La Haye, 1739. They have all drawn their principal materials from the Jesuits, especially from the general history of Tellez, published 1660.

<sup>1</sup> *Գրիգորիս*, Illuminator. He was married and had several sons. He was urgently invited to the Nicene council, but sent his son Aristax in his stead, to whom he resigned his office, and then withdrew himself for the rest of his life into a mountain-cave. There are homilies of his still extant, which were first printed in 1737 in Constantinople.

<sup>2</sup> Called Mesrop, Mjesrob, Mjesrop, and Marchtoz. Comp. respecting this man and the origin of the Armenian version of the Bible, the chronicle of his pupil, Moses Chorenensis, and the article by Petermann in Herzog's *Encycl. Bd. ix. p. 370 ff.*

Empire in 552, from which year they date their era. The Persians favored the separation on political grounds, but were themselves thoroughly hostile to Christianity, and endeavored to introduce the Zoroastrian religion into Armenia. The Armenian church, being left unrepresented at the council of Chalcedon through the accidental absence of its bishops, accepted in 491 the Henoticon of the emperor Zeno, and at the synod of Twin (Tevin or Tovin, the capital at that time), held A. D. 595, declared decidedly for the Monophysite doctrine. The *Confessio Armenica*, which in other respects closely resembles the Nicene Creed, is recited by the priest at every morning service. The Armenian church had for a long time only one patriarch or Catholicos, who at first resided in Sebaste, and afterwards in the monastery of Etschmiezín (Edschmiadsin), their holy city, at the foot of Mount Ararat, near Erivan (now belonging to Russia), and had forty-two archbishops under him. At his consecration the dead hand of Gregory the Enlightener is even yet always used, as the medium of tactual succession. Afterwards other patriarchal sees were established, at Jerusalem (in 1311), at Sis, in Cilicia (in 1440), and after the fall of the Greek empire in Constantinople (1461).<sup>1</sup> In 637 Armenia fell under Mohammedan dominion, and belongs now partly to Turkey and partly to Russia. But the varying fortunes and frequent oppressions of their country have driven many thousands of the Armenians abroad, and they are now scattered in other parts of Russia and Turkey, as well as in Persia, India, and Austria.

The Armenians of the diaspora are mostly successful traders and brokers, and have become a nation and a church of merchant princes, holding great influence in Turkey. Their dispersion, and love of trade, their lack of political independence, their tenacious adherence to ancient national customs and rites, the oppressions to which they are exposed in foreign countries, and the influence which they nevertheless exercise upon these countries, make their position in the Orient, espe-

<sup>1</sup> Respecting the patriarchal and metropolitan sees and the bishoprics of the Armenians, comp. Le Quien, *tom. i.*, and Wiltsh, *Kirchliche Geographie und Statistik*, ii. p. 375 ff.

cially in Turkey, similar to that of the Jews in the Christian world.

The whole number of the Armenians is very variously estimated, from two and a half up to fifteen millions.<sup>1</sup>

The Armenian church, it may be remarked, has long been divided into two parts, which, although internally very similar, are inflexibly opposed to each other. The *united* Armenians, since the council of Florence, A. D. 1439, have been connected with the church of Rome. To them belongs the congregation of the Mechitarists, which was founded by the Abbot Mechitar († 1749), and possesses a famous monastery on the island of San Lazzaro near Venice, from which centre it has successfully labored since 1702 for Armenian literature and education in the interest of the Roman Catholic church.<sup>2</sup> The *schismatical* Armenians hold firmly to their peculiar ancient doctrines and polity. They regard themselves as the orthodox, and call the united or Roman Armenians schismatics.

Since 1830, the Protestant Missionary, Tract, and Bible societies of England, Basle, and the United States, have labored among the Armenians, especially among the Monophysite portion, with great success. The American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions,<sup>3</sup> in particular, has distributed Bibles and religious books in the Armenian and Armeno-Turkish<sup>4</sup> language, and founded flourishing churches and schools in Constantinople, Broosa, Nicomedia, Trebizond, Erzroom, Aintab, Kharpoot, Diarbekir, and elsewhere. Several of these churches have already endured the crucial test of persecution, and jus-

<sup>1</sup> Stanley (History of the Eastern Church, p. 92), supported by Neale and Hart- hausen (Transcaucasia), estimates the number of the Armenians at over eight mil- lions. But Dr. G. W. Wood, of New York, formerly a missionary among them, in- forms me that their total number probably does not exceed six millions, of whom about two and a half millions are probably in Turkey.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. C. F. NEUMANN: Geschichte der armenischen Literatur nach den Wer- ken der Mechitaristen, Leipzig, 1836. The chief work of the Mechitarists is the history of Armenia, by P. Michael Tschamtschean († 1823), in three vols., Venice, 1784.

<sup>3</sup> This oldest and most extensive of American missionary societies was founded A. D. 1810, and is principally supported by the Congregationalists and New School Presbyterians.

<sup>4</sup> The Armeno-Turkish is the Turkish language written in Armenian characters.



tify bright hopes for the future. As the Jewish synagogues of the diaspora were witnesses for monotheism among idolaters, and preparatory schools of Christianity, so are these Protestant Armenian churches, as well as the Protestant Nestorian, outposts of evangelical civilization in the East, and perhaps the beginning of a resurrection of primitive Christianity in the lands of the Bible, and harbingers of the future conversion of the Mohammedans.<sup>1</sup>

IV. The youngest sect of the Monophysites, and the solitary memorial of the Monothelite controversy, are the **MARONITES**, so called from St. Maron, and the eminent monastery founded by him in Syria (400).<sup>2</sup> They inhabit the range of Lebanon, with its declivities and valleys, from Tripolis on the North to the neighborhood of Tyre and the lake of Genesaret on the South, and amount at most to half a million. They have also small churches in Aleppo, Damascus, and other places. They are pure Syrians, and still use the Syriac language in their liturgy, but speak Arabic. They are subject to a patriarch, who commonly resides in the monastery of Kanobin on Mt. Lebanon. They were originally Monothelites, even after the doctrine of one Will of Christ, which is the ethical complement of the doctrine of one nature, had been rejected at the sixth ecumenical council (A. D. 680). But after the Crusades (1182), and especially after 1596, they began to go over to the Roman

<sup>1</sup> Compare, respecting the Armenian mission of the American Board, the publications of this Society; ELI SMITH and H. G. O. DWIGHT: *Missionary Researches in Armenia*, Boston, 1833; Dr. H. G. O. DWIGHT: *Christianity revived in the East*, New York, 1850; H. NEWCOMB: *Cyclopædia of Missions*, pp. 124-154. The principal missionaries among the Armenians are H. G. O. Dwight, W. Goodell, C. Hamlin, G. W. Wood, E. Riggs, D. Ladd, P. O. Powers, W. G. Schauffler (a Würtemberger, but educated at the Theol. Seminary of Andover, Mass.), and Benj. Schneider (a German from Pennsylvania, but likewise a graduate of Andover).

<sup>2</sup> He is probably the same Maron whose life Theodoret wrote, and to whom Chrysostom addressed a letter when in exile. He is not to be confounded with the later John Maron, of the seventh century, who, according to the legendary traditions of the Catholic Maronites, acting as papal legate at Antioch, converted the whole of Lebanon to the Roman church, and became their first patriarch. The name "Maronites" occurs first in the eighth century, and that as a name of heretics, in John of Damascus.

church, although retaining the communion under both kinds, their Syriac missal, the marriage of priests, and their traditional fast-days, with some saints of their own, especially St. Maron.

From these came, in the eighteenth century, the three celebrated Oriental scholars, the Assemani, Joseph Simon († 1768), his brother Joseph Aloysius, and their cousin Stephen Evodius. These were born on Mt. Lebanon, and educated at the Maronite college at Rome.

There are also Maronites in Syria, who abhor the Roman church.<sup>1</sup>

#### IV. THE ANTHROPOLOGICAL CONTROVERSIES.

##### WORKS ON THE PELAGIAN CONTROVERSY IN GENERAL

###### SOURCES:

- I. **PELAGIUS**: *Expositiones in epistolas Paulinas* (composed before 410); *Epistola ad Demetriadem*, in 80 chapters (written A. D. 418); *Libellus fidei ad Innocentium I.* (417, also falsely called *Explanatio Symboli ad Damasum*). These three works have been preserved complete, as supposed works of Jerome, and have been incorporated in the *Opera* of this father (tom. xi. ed. of Vallarsius). Of the other writings of Pelagius (*De natura*; *De libero arbitrio*; *Capitula*; *Epist. ad Innocent. I.*, which accompanied the *Libellus fidei*), we have only fragments in the works of his opponents, especially Augustine. In like manner we have only fragments of the writings of **CŒLESTIUS**: *Definitiones*; *Symbolum ad Zosimum*; and of **JULIANUS OF ECLANUM**: *Libri iv. ad Turbantium episcopum contra Augustini primum de nuptiis*; *Libri viii. ad Florum contra Augustini secundum de nuptiis*. Large and literal extracts in the extended replies of Augustine to Julian.
- II. **AUGUSTINUS**: *De peccatorum meritis et remissione* (412); *De spiritu et littera* (418); *De natura et gratia* (415); *De gestis Pelagii* (417); *De gratia Christi et de peccato originali* (418); *De nuptiis et concupiscentia* (419); *Contra duas Epistolas Pelagianorum* (420); *Contra Julianum, libri vi.* (421); *Opus imperfectum contra Julianum* (429); *De*

<sup>1</sup> Respecting the present condition of the Maronites, comp. also Robinson's *Palestine*, Ritter's *Erdkunde*, Bd. xvii. Abtheil. 1, and Rödiger's article in Herzog's *Encycl.* Bd. x. p. 176 ff. A few years ago (1860), the Maronites drew upon themselves the sympathies of Christendom by the cruelties which their old hereditary enemies, the Druses, perpetrated upon them.

gratia et libero arbitrio (426 or 427); De correptione et gratia (427); De prædestinatione sanctorum (428 or 429); De dono perseverantiam (429); and other anti-Pelagian writings, which are collected in the 10th volume of his Opera, in two divisions, ed. Bened. Par. 1690, and again Venet. 1738. (It is the Venice Bened. edition from which I have quoted throughout in this section. In Migne's edition of Aug., Par. 1841, the anti-Pelagian writings form likewise the tenth tomos of 1912 pages.) **HIERONYMUS**: Ep. 138 (in Vallarsi's, and in Migne's ed.; or, Ep. 48 in the Bened. ed.) ad Ctesiphontem (815); *Dialogi contra Pelagianos, libri iii.* (Opera, ed. Vallars. vol. ii. f. 698-806, and ed. Migne, ii. 495-590). **P. OROSIUS**: *Apologeticon c. Pelag. libri iii.* (Opera, ed. Haverkamp). **MARIUS MERCATOR**, a learned Latin monk in Constantinople (428-451): *Commonitoria*, 429, 431 (ed. Baluz. Paris, 1684, and Migne, Par. 1846). Collection of the *Acta in Mansi*, tom. iv.

#### LITERATURE:

**GERH. JOH. VOSSIUS**: *Hist. de controversiis, quas Pelagius ejusque reliquæ moverunt*, libri vii. Lugd. Batav. 1618 (auct. ed. Amstel. 1655). **Cardinal HENR. NORISIUS**: *Historia Pelagiana et dissert. de Synodo Quinta Œcumen.* Batavii, 1678, fol. (and in Opera, Veron. 1729, i.). **GARNIER** (Jesuit): *Dissert. vii. quibus integra continentur Pelagianorum hist.* (in his ed. of the Opera of Marius Mercator, i. 113). The *Præfatio* to the 10th vol. of the *Benedictine* edition of Augustine's Opera. **CORN. JANSENIUS** († 1638): *Augustinus, sive doctrina S. Augustini de humanæ naturæ sanitate, ægritudine, medicina, adv. Pelagianos et Massilienses.* Lovan. 1640, fol. (He read Augustine twenty times, and revived his system in the Catholic church.) **TILLEMONT**: *Mémoires*, etc. Tom. xiii. pp. 1-1075, which is entirely devoted to the life of Augustine. **CH. WILH. FR. WALCH**: *Ketzehistorie.* Leipz. 1770. Bd. iv. and v. **SCHROÖKH**: *Kirchengeschichte.* Parts xiv. and xv. (1790). **G. F. WIEGERS** (sen.): *Versuch einer pragmatischen Darstellung des Augustinismus und Pelagianismus, in zwei Theilen.* Hamburg, 1838. (The first part appeared 1821 in Berlin; the second, which treats of Semi-Pelagianism, in 1833 at Hamburg. The common title-page bears date 1838. The first part has also been translated into English by Prof. EMERSON, Andover, 1840). **J. L. JACOBI**: *Die Lehre des Pelagius.* Leipzig, 1842. **F. BÖHRINGER**: *Die Kirche Christi in Biographien.* Bd. i. Th. 3, pp. 444-626, Zürich, 1845. **GIESLER**: *Kirchengeschichte.* Bd. i. Abth. 2 pp. 106-181 (4th ed. 1845, entirely favorable to Pelagianism). **NEANDER**: *Kirchengeschichte.* Bd. iv. (2d ed. 1847, more Augustinian). **SCHAFF**: *The Pelagian Controversy, in the Bibliotheca Sacra*, Andover, May, 1848 (No. xviii.). **THEOD. GANGAUF**: *Metaphysische Psychologie des heiligen Augustinus.* Augsburg. 1852. Thorough, but not completed. **H. HART**

## § 146. CHARACTER OF THE PELAGIAN CONTROVERSY. 785

MILMAN: History of Latin Christianity. New York, 1860, vol. i. ch. ii. pp. 164-194. JUL. MÜLLER: Die christliche Lehre von der Sünde. Bresl. 1838, 5th ed. 1866, 2 vols. (An English translation by *Puleford*, Edinburgh.) THE SAME: Der Pelagianismus. Berlin, 1854. (A brief but admirable essay.) HEFELE: Conciliengeschichte. Bd. ii. 1856 p. 91 ff. W. CUNNINGHAM: Historical Theology. Edinburgh, 1863, vol. i. pp. 321-358. FR. WÖRTER (R. C.): Der Pelagianismus nach seinem Ursprung und seiner Lehre. Freiburg, 1866. NOURRISSON: La philosophie de S. Augustin. Par. 1866, 2 vols. (vol. i. 452 ff.; ii. 352 ff.). Comp. also the literature in § 178, and the relevant chapters in the Doctrine-Histories of MÜNCHER, BAUMGARTEN-ORUSIUS, HAGENBAUGH, NEANDER, BAUR, BECK, SHEDD.

## § 146. *Character of the Pelagian Controversy.*

While the Oriental Church was exhausting her energies in the Christological controversies, and, with the help of the West, was developing the ecumenical doctrine of the person of Christ, the Latin church was occupied with the great anthropological and soteriological questions of sin and grace, and was bringing to light great treasures of truth, without either help from the Eastern church or influence upon her. The third ecumenical council, it is true, condemned Pelagianism, but without careful investigation, and merely on account of its casual connection with Nestorianism. The Greek historians, Socrates, Sozomen, Theodoret, and Evagrius, although they treat of that period, take not the slightest notice of the Pelagian controversies. In this fact we see the predominantly practical character of the West, in contradistinction to the contemplative and speculative East. Yet the Christological and anthropologico-soteriological controversies are vitally connected, since Christ became man for the redemption of man. The person and the work of the Redeemer presuppose on the one hand man's capability of redemption, and on the other his need of redemption. Manichæism denies the former, Pelagianism the latter. In opposition to these two fundamental anthropological heresies, the church was called to develop the whole truth.

Before Augustine the anthropology of the church was exceedingly crude and indefinite. There was a general agree-

ment as to the apostasy and the moral accountability of man, the terrible curse of sin, and the necessity of redeeming *grace*; but not as to the extent of native corruption, and the relation of human *freedom* to divine *grace* in the work of regeneration and conversion. The Greek, and particularly the Alexandrian fathers, in opposition to the dualism and fatalism of the Gnostic systems, which made evil a necessity of nature, laid great stress upon human freedom, and upon the indispensable coöperation of this freedom with divine grace; while the Latin fathers, especially Tertullian and Cyprian, Hilary and Ambrose, guided rather by their practical experience than by speculative principles, emphasized the hereditary sin and hereditary guilt of man, and the sovereignty of God's grace, without, however, denying freedom and individual accountability.<sup>1</sup> The Greek church adhered to her undeveloped *synergism*,<sup>2</sup> which coördinates the human will and divine grace as factors in the work of conversion; the Latin church, under the influence of Augustine, advanced to the system of a *divine monergism*,<sup>3</sup> which gives God all the glory, and makes freedom itself a result of grace; while Pelagianism, on the contrary, represented the principle of a *human monergism*, which ascribes the chief merit of conversion to man, and reduces grace to a mere external auxiliary. After Augustine's death, however, the intermediate system of *Semi-Pelagianism*, akin to the Greek synergism, became prevalent in the West.

Pelagius and Augustine, in whom these opposite forms of monergism were embodied, are representative men, even more strictly than Arius and Athanasius before them, or Nestorius and Cyril after them. The one, a Briton, more than once convulsed the world by his errors; the other, an African, more than once by his truths. They represented principles and

<sup>1</sup> On the anthropology of the ante-Nicene and Nicene fathers, comp. the relevant sections in the larger works on Doctrine History, and Wiggers, l. c. vol. i. p. 407 ff.

<sup>2</sup> From *σύν* and *ἐργον*. There are, it may be remarked, different forms of synergism. The synergism of Melancthon subordinates the human activity to the divine, and assigns to grace the initiative in the work of conversion.

<sup>3</sup> From *μόνον* and *ἐργον*.

tendencies, which, in various modifications, extend through the whole history of the church, and reappear in its successive epochs. The Gottschalk controversy in the ninth century, the Reformation, the synergistic controversy in the Lutheran church, the Arminian in the Reformed, and the Jansenistic in the Roman Catholic, only reproduce the same great contest in new and specific aspects. Each system reflects the personal character and experience of its author. Pelagius was an upright monk, who without inward conflicts won for himself, in the way of tranquil development, a legal piety which knew neither the depths of sin nor the heights of grace. Augustine, on the other hand, passed through sharp convulsions and bitter conflicts, till he was overtaken by the unmerited grace of God, and created anew to a life of faith and love. Pelagius had a singularly clear, though contracted mind, and an earnest moral purpose, but no enthusiasm for lofty ideals; and hence he found it not hard to realize his lower standard of holiness. Augustine had a bold and soaring intellect, and glowing heart, and only found peace after he had long been tossed by the waves of passion; he had tasted all the misery of sin, and then all the glory of redemption, and this experience qualified him to understand and set forth these antagonistic powers far better than his opponent, and with a strength and fulness surpassed only by the inspired apostle Paul. Indeed, Augustine, of all the fathers, most resembles, in experience and doctrine, this very apostle, and stands next to him in his influence upon the Reformers.

The Pelagian controversy turns upon the mighty antithesis of sin and grace. It embraces the whole cycle of doctrine respecting the ethical and religious relation of man to God, and includes, therefore, the doctrines of human freedom, of the primitive state, of the fall, of regeneration and conversion, of the eternal purpose of redemption, and of the nature and operation of the grace of God. It comes at last to the question, whether redemption is chiefly a work of God or of man; whether man needs to be born anew, or merely improved. The soul of the Pelagian system is human freedom; the soul of the Augustinian is divine grace. Pelagius starts from the

natural man, and works up, by his own exertions, to righteousness and holiness. Augustine despairs of the moral sufficiency of man, and derives the new life and all power for good from the creative grace of God. The one system proceeds from the liberty of choice to legalistic piety; the other from the bondage of sin to the evangelical liberty of the children of God. To the former Christ is merely a teacher and example, and grace an external auxiliary to the development of the native powers of man; to the latter he is also Priest and King, and grace a creative principle, which begets, nourishes, and consummates a new life. The former makes regeneration and conversion a gradual process of the strengthening and perfecting of human virtue; the latter makes it a complete transformation, in which the old disappears and all becomes new. The one loves to admire the dignity and strength of man; the other loses itself in adoration of the glory and omnipotence of God. The one flatters natural pride, the other is a gospel for penitent publicans and sinners. Pelagianism begins with self-exaltation and ends with the sense of self-deception and impotency. Augustinianism casts man first into the dust of humiliation and despair, in order to lift him on the wings of grace to supernatural strength, and leads him through the hell of self-knowledge up to the heaven of the knowledge of God. The Pelagian system is clear, sober, and intelligible, but superficial; the Augustinian sounds the depths of knowledge and experience, and renders reverential homage to mystery. The former is grounded upon the philosophy of common sense, which is indispensable for ordinary life, but has no perception of divine things; the latter is grounded upon the philosophy of the regenerate reason, which breaks through the limits of nature, and penetrates the depths of divine revelation. The former starts with the proposition: *Intellectus præcedit fidem*; the latter with the opposite maxim: *Fides præcedit intellectum*. Both make use of the Scriptures; the one, however, conforming them to reason, the other subjecting reason to them. Pelagianism has an unmistakable affinity with rationalism, and supplies its practical side. To the natural will of the former system corresponds the natural reason of the latter; and as

the natural will, according to Pelagianism, is competent to good, so is the natural reason, according to rationalism, competent to the knowledge of the truth. All rationalists are Pelagian in their anthropology; but Pelagius and Coelestius were not consistent, and declared their agreement with the traditional orthodoxy in all other doctrines, though without entering into their deeper meaning and connection. Even divine mysteries may be believed in a purely external, mechanical way, by inheritance from the past, as the history of theology, especially in the East, abundantly proves.

The true solution of the difficult question respecting the relation of divine grace to human freedom in the work of conversion, is not found in the denial of either factor; for this would either elevate man to the dignity of a self-redeemer, or degrade him to an irrational machine, and would ultimately issue either in fatalistic pantheism or in atheism; but it must be sought in such a reconciliation of the two factors as gives full weight both to the sovereignty of God and to the responsibility of man, yet assigns a preëminence to the divine agency corresponding to the infinite exaltation of the Creator and Redeemer above the sinful creature. And although Augustine's solution of the problem is not altogether satisfactory, and although in his zeal against the Pelagian error he has inclined to the opposite extreme; yet in all essential points, he has the Scriptures, especially the Epistles of Paul, as well as Christian experience, and the profoundest speculation, on his side. Whoever reads the tenth volume of his works, which contains his Anti-Pelagian writings in more than fourteen hundred folio columns (in the Benedictine edition), will be moved to wonder at the extraordinary wealth of thought and experience treasured in them for all time; especially if he considers that Augustine, at the breaking out of the Pelagian controversy, was already fifty-seven years old, and had passed through the Manichæan and Donatist controversies. Such giants in theology could only arise in an age when this queen of the sciences drew into her service the whole mental activity of the time.

The Pelagian controversy was conducted with as great an



expenditure of mental energy, and as much of moral and religious earnestness, but with less passion and fewer intrigues, than the Trinitarian and Christological conflicts in the East. In the foreground stood the mighty genius and pure zeal of Augustine, who never violated theological dignity, and, though of thoroughly energetic convictions, had a heart full of love. Yet even he yielded so far to the intolerant spirit of his time as to justify the repression of the Donatist and Pelagian errors by civil penalties.

§ 147. *External History of the Pelagian Controversy,*  
A. D. 411-431.

Pelagius<sup>1</sup> was a simple monk, born about the middle of the fourth century in Britain, the extremity of the then civilized world. He was a man of clear intellect, mild disposition, learned culture, and spotless character; even Augustine, with all his abhorrence of his doctrines, repeatedly speaks respectfully of the man.<sup>2</sup> He studied the Greek theology, especially that of the Antiochian school, and early showed great zeal for the improvement of himself and of the world. But his morality was not so much the rich, deep life of faith, as it was the external legalism, the ascetic self-discipline and self-righteousness of monkery. It was characteristic, that, even before the controversy, he took great offence at the well-known saying of Augustine: "Give what thou commandest, and command what thou wilt."<sup>3</sup> He could not conceive, that

<sup>1</sup> His British name is said to have been *Morgan*, that is, Of the sea, *Marigona*, in Greek Πελάγιος.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. the passages where Augustine speaks of Pelagius, in Wiggers, l. c. i. p. 35 f. Yet Augustine, not without reason, accuses him of duplicity, on account of his conduct at the synod of Diospolis in Palestine. Wiggers (l. p. 40) says of him: "It must be admitted that Pelagius was not always sufficiently straightforward; that he did not always express his views without ambiguity; that, in fact, he sometimes in synods condemned opinions which were manifestly his own. This may have arisen, it is true, in great part from his love of peace and the slight value which he attached to theoretical opinions."

<sup>3</sup> "Da quod jubes, et jube quod vis," Confess. l. x. c. 29, et passim. Augustine himself relates the above-mentioned fact, De dono persever. c. 20 (or § 53, tom. x. f. 851): "Quæ mea verba, Pelagius Romæ, cum a quodam fratre et cœpiscopo

the power to obey the commandment must come from the same source as the commandment itself. Faith, with him, was hardly more than a theoretical belief; the main thing in religion was moral action, the keeping of the commandments of God by one's own strength. This is also shown in the introductory remarks of his letter to Demetrias, a noble Roman nun, of the gens Anicia, in which he describes a model virgin as a proof of the excellency of human nature: "As often as I have to speak concerning moral improvement and the leading of a holy life, I am accustomed first to set forth the power and quality of human nature, and to show what it can accomplish." For never are we able to enter upon the path of the virtues, unless hope, as companion, draws us to them. For every longing after anything dies within us, so soon as we despair of attaining that thing."

In the year 409, Pelagius, already advanced in life, was in Rome, and composed a brief commentary on the Epistles of Paul. This commentary, which has been preserved among the works of Jerome, displays a clear and sober exegetical talent.\* He labored quietly and peacefully for the improvement of the corrupt morals of Rome, and converted the advocate Cœlestius,

*meo fuissent eo præsente commemorata, ferre non potuit, et contradicens aliquanto commotus pene cum eo, qui illa commemoraverat, litigavit."*

<sup>1</sup> "Soleo prius humanæ naturæ vim qualitatemque monstrare, et quid efficere possit, ostendere." *Ep. ad Demetr. c. 2.*

<sup>2</sup> It found its way among the works of Jerome (tom. xi. ed. Vallars., and in Migne's edition, tom. xi. f. 643-902) before the breaking out of the controversy, but has received doctrinal emendations from Cassiodorus, at least in the Epistle to the Romans. The confounding of Pelagius with Jerome arose partly from his accommodation to the ecclesiastical terminology, partly from his actual agreement with the prevailing tendency of monasticism. It is remarkable that both wrote an ascetic letter to the nun Demetrias. *Comp. Jerome, Ep. 130 (ed. Vallarsi, and Migne, or 97 in the Bened. ed.) ad Demetriadem de servanda Virginitate (written in 414).* She had also correspondence with Augustine. Semler has published the letters of Augustine, Jerome, and Pelagius to Demetrias in a separate form (Halle, 1775). Some have also ascribed to Pelagius the ascetic *Epistola ad Celantiam matronam de ratione pie vivendi*, which, like his *Ep. ad Demetriadem*, has found its way into the Epistles of Jerome (*Ep. 148 in Vallarsi's ed. tom. i. 1095, and in Migne's ed. tom. i. 1204*). The monasticism of Pelagius, however, was much cooler, more sober, and more philosophical than that of the enthusiastic Jerome, inclined as he was to all manner of extravagances.

of distinguished, but otherwise unknown birth, to his monastic life, and to his views. It was from this man, younger, more skilful in argument, more ready for controversy, and more rigorously consistent than his teacher, that the controversy took its rise. Pelagius was the moral author, Cœlestius the intellectual author, of the system represented by them.<sup>1</sup> They did not mean actually to found a new system, but believed themselves in accordance with Scripture and established doctrine. They were more concerned with the ethical side of Christianity than with the dogmatic; but their endeavor after moral perfection was based upon certain views of the natural power of the will, and these views proved to be in conflict with anthropological principles which had been developed in the African church for the previous ten years under the influence of Augustine.

In the year 411, the two friends, thus united in sentiment, left Rome, to escape the dreaded Gothic King Alaric, and went to Africa. They passed through Hippo, intending to visit Augustine, but found that he was just then at Carthage, occupied with the Donatists. Pelagius wrote him a very courteous letter, which Augustine answered in a similar tone; intimating, however, the importance of holding the true doctrine concerning sin. "Pray for me," he said, "that God may really make me that which you already take me to be." Pelagius soon proceeded to Palestine. Cœlestius applied for presbyters' orders in Carthage, the very place where he had most reason to expect opposition. This inconsiderate step brought on the crisis. He gained many friends, it is true, by his talents and his ascetic zeal, but at the same time awakened suspicion by his novel opinions.

The deacon Paulinus of Milan, who was just then in Car-

<sup>1</sup> To this extent Pelagius and Cœlestius appear to sustain a relation to Pelagianism similar to that which Dr. Pusey and John Henry Newman did to Puseyism. Jerome (in his letter to Ctesiphon) says of Cœlestius, that he was, although the disciple of Pelagius, yet teacher and leader of the whole array (*magister et totius ductor exercitus*). Augustine calls Pelagius more dissembling and crafty, Cœlestius more frank and open (*De peccato orig. c. 12*). Marius Mercator ascribes to Cœlestius an *incredibilis loquacitas*. But Augustine and Julian of Eclanum also mutually reproach each other with a *vagabunda loquacitas*.

thage, and who shortly afterwards at the request of Augustine wrote the life of Ambrose, warned the bishop Aurelius against Coelestius, and at a council held by Aurelius at Carthage in 412,<sup>1</sup> appeared as his accuser. Six or seven errors, he asserted he had found in the writings of Coelestius :

1. Adam was created mortal, and would have died, even if he had not sinned.
2. Adam's fall injured himself alone, not the human race.
3. Children come into the world in the same condition in which Adam was before the fall.
4. The human race neither dies in consequence of Adam's fall, nor rises again in consequence of Christ's resurrection.
5. Unbaptized children, as well as others, are saved.<sup>2</sup>
6. The law, as well as the gospel, leads to the kingdom of heaven.
7. Even before Christ there were sinless men.

The principal propositions were the second and third, which are intimately connected, and which afterwards became the especial subject of controversy.

Coelestius returned evasive answers. He declared the propositions to be speculative questions of the schools, which did not concern the substance of the faith, and respecting which different opinions existed in the church. He refused to recant the errors charged upon him, and the synod excluded him from the communion of the church. He immediately went to Ephesus, and was there ordained presbyter.

Augustine had taken no part personally in these transactions. But as the Pelagian doctrines found many adherents even in Africa and in Sicily, he wrote several treatises in refu-

<sup>1</sup> According to Mansi and the common view. The brothers Ballerini and Hefele (ii. 91) decide in favor of the year 411. The incomplete Acta of the council are found in Mansi, tom. iv. fol. 289 sqq., and in the *Commonitorium Marii Mercatoris ibidem*, f. 298.

<sup>2</sup> Marius Mercator, it is true, does not cite this proposition among the others, f. 292, but he brings it up subsequently, f. 296: "In ipsa autem accusatione capitulorum, quæ eidem Pelagio tum objecta sunt, etiam hæc continentur, cum aliis execrandis, quæ Coelestius ejus discipulus sentiebat, id est, *infantes etiam si non baptizantur, habere vitam æternam*."

tation of them so early as 412 and 415, expressing himself, however, with respect and forbearance.<sup>1</sup>

### § 148. *The Pelagian Controversy in Palestine.*

Meanwhile, in 414, the controversy broke out in Palestine, where Pelagius was residing, and where he had aroused attention by a letter to the nun Demetrias. His opinions gained much wider currency there, especially among the Origenists; for the Oriental church had not been at all affected by the Augustinian views, and accepted the two ideas of freedom and grace, without attempting to define their precise relation to each other. But just then there happened to be in Palestine two Western theologians, Jerome and Orosius; and they instituted opposition to Pelagius.

Jerome, who lived a monk at Bethlehem, was at first decidedly favorable to the synergistic theory of the Greek fathers, but at the same time agreed with Ambrose and Augustine in the doctrine of the absolutely universal corruption of sin.<sup>2</sup> But from an enthusiastic admirer of Origen he had been changed to a bitter enemy. The doctrine of Pelagius concerning free will and the moral ability of human nature he attributed to the influence of Origen and Rufinus; and he took as a personal insult an attack of Pelagius on some of his writings.<sup>3</sup> He therefore wrote against him, though from wounded pride and contempt he did not even mention his name; first in a letter answering inquiries of a certain Ctesiphon at Rome (415);<sup>4</sup> then more at length in a dialogue of

<sup>1</sup> De peccatorum meritis et remissione; De spiritu et litera; De natura et gratia; De perfectione justitiæ hominis.

<sup>2</sup> Compare, respecting his relation to Pelagianism, O. ZÖCKLER: Hieronymus (1865), p. 810 ff. and p. 420 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Comp. Jerome: Præfat. libri i. in Jeremiam (Opera, ed. Vallarsi, tom. iv. 834 sq.), where he speaks very contemptuously of Pelagius: "Nuper indoctus calumniator erupit, qui commentarios meos in epistolam Pauli ad Ephesios reprehendendos putat." Soon afterwards he designates Grunnius, i. e., Rufinus, as his præcursor, and thus connects him with the Origenistic heresies. Pelagius had also expressed himself unfavorably respecting his translation of the Old Testament from the Hebrew.

<sup>4</sup> Epist. 133 ad Ctesiphont. adv. Pelag. (Opera, i. 1025-1042).

three books against the Pelagians, written towards the end of the year 415, and soon after the acquittal of Pelagius by the synod of Jerusalem.<sup>1</sup> Yet in this treatise and elsewhere Jerome himself teaches the freedom of the will, and only a conditional predestination of divine foreknowledge, and thus, with all his personal bitterness against the Pelagians, stands on Semi-Pelagian ground, though Augustine eulogizes the dialogue.<sup>2</sup>

A young Spanish ecclesiastic, Paul Orosius, was at that time living with Jerome for the sake of more extended study, and had been sent to him by Augustine with letters relating to the Origenistic and Pelagian controversy.

At a diocesan synod, convoked by the bishop John of Jerusalem in June, 415,<sup>3</sup> this Orosius appeared against Pelagius, and gave information that a council at Carthage had condemned Coelestius, and that Augustine had written against his errors. Pelagius answered with evasion and disparagement: "What matters Augustine to me?" Orosius gave his opinion, that a man who presumed to speak contumeliously of the bishop to whom the whole North African church owed her restoration (alluding apparently to the settlement of the Donatist controversies), deserved to be excluded from the communion of the whole church. John, who was a great admirer of the condemned Origen, and made little account of the authority of Augustine, declared: "I am Augustine,"<sup>4</sup> and undertook the defence of the accused. He permitted Pelagius, although only a monk and layman, to take his seat among the presbyters.<sup>5</sup> Nor did he find fault with Pelagius' assertion,

<sup>1</sup> *Dialogus c. Pelag.* (Opera, tom. II. 693-806).

<sup>2</sup> *Op. imperf. contra Jul.* iv. 88, where he says of it: *Mira et ut talem fidem decebat, venustate composuit.* The judgment is just as to the form, but too favorable as to the contents of this dialogue. Comp. ZÜCKLER, *Hieronymus*, p. 428.

<sup>3</sup> The Acta of the *Conventus Hierosolymitanus*, according to a report of Orosius, in his *Apologia pro libertate arbitrii*, cap. 3 and 4, are found in *Mansi*, iv. 801 sqq.

<sup>4</sup> "*Augustinus ego sum.*" To this Orosius replied not infelicitously: "*Si Augustini personam sumis, Augustini sententiam sequere.*" *Mansi*, iv. 808.

<sup>5</sup> Orosius was much scandalized by the fact that a bishop should order "*laicum in consensu presbyterorum, reum hæreseos manifestæ in medio catholicorum sedere.*"

that man can easily keep the commandments of God, and become free from sin, after the latter had conceded, in a very indefinite manner, that for this the help of God is necessary. Pelagius had the advantage of understanding both languages, while John spoke only Greek, Orosius only Latin, and the interpreter often translated inaccurately. After much discussion it was resolved, that the matter should be laid before the Roman bishop, Innocent, since both parties in the controversy belonged to the Western church. Meanwhile these should refrain from all further attacks on each other.

A second Palestinian council resulted still more favorably to Pelagius. This consisted of fourteen bishops, and was held at Diospolis or Lydda, in December of the same year, under the presidency of Eulogius, bishop of Cæsarea, to judge of an accusation preferred by two banished bishops of Gaul, Heros and Lazarus, acting in concert with Jerome.<sup>1</sup> The charges were unskillfully drawn up, and Pelagius was able to avail himself of equivocations, and to condemn as folly, though not as heresy, the teachings of Cœlestius, which were also his own. The synod, of which John of Jerusalem was a member, did not go below the surface of the question, nor in fact understand it, but acquitted the accused of all heresy. Jerome is justified in calling this a "miserable synod;"<sup>2</sup> although Augustine is also warranted in saying: "It was not heresy, that was there acquitted, but the man who denied the heresy."<sup>3</sup>

Jerome's polemical zeal against the Pelagians cost him dear. In the beginning of the year 416, a mob of Pelagianizing monks, ecclesiastics, and vagabonds broke into his monastery at Bethlehem, maltreated the inmates, set the building on fire, and compelled the aged scholar to take to flight. Bishop John of Jerusalem let this pass unpunished. No wonder that

<sup>1</sup> The scattered accounts of the Concilium Diospolitenum are collected in *Mansi*, tom. iv. 311 sqq. Comp. Hefele, ii. p. 95 ff.

<sup>2</sup> "Quidquid in illa miserabili synodo Diospolitana dixisse se denegat, in hoc opere confitetur," he wrote, A. D. 419, in a letter to Augustine (Ep. 143, ed. Vallara, tom. i. 1067). Comp. *Mansi*, iv. 315.

<sup>3</sup> Comp. Augustine, *De gestis Pelagii*, c. 1 sqq. (tom. x. fol. 192 sqq.). Pope Innocent I. (402-417) wrote a consoling letter to Jerome, and a letter of reproof to John of Jerusalem for his inaction. Epp. 186 and 187 in *Jerome's Epistles*.

Jerome, even during the last years of his life, in several epistles indulges in occasional sallies of anger against Pelagius, whom he calls a second Catiline.

§ 149. *Position of the Roman Church. Condemnation of Pelagianism.*

The question took another turn when it was brought before the Roman see. Two North African synods, in 416, one at Carthage and one at Mileve (now Mela), again condemned the Pelagian error, and communicated their sentence to pope Innocent.<sup>1</sup> A third and more confidential letter was addressed to him by five North African bishops, of whom Augustine was one.<sup>2</sup> Pelagius also sent him a letter and a confession of faith, which, however, were not received in due time.

Innocent understood both the controversy and the interests of the Roman see. He commended the Africans for having addressed themselves to the church of St. Peter, before which it was seemly that all the affairs of Christendom should be brought; he expressed his full agreement with the condemnation of Pelagius, Coelestius, and their adherents; but he refrained from giving judgment respecting the synod of Diospolis.<sup>3</sup>

But soon afterwards (in 417) Innocent died, and was succeeded by Zosimus, who was apparently of Oriental extraction (417–418).<sup>4</sup> At this juncture, a letter from Pelagius to Innocent was received, in which he complained of having suffered wrong, and gave assurance of his orthodoxy. Coelestius appeared personally in Rome, and succeeded by his written and oral explanations in satisfying Zosimus. He, like Pelagius, demonstrated with great fulness his orthodoxy on points not at all in question, represented the actually controverted points as

<sup>1</sup> See the proceedings of the Concilium Carthaginense in Mansi, iv. 321 sqq., and of the Concilium Milevitanum, ibid. f. 326 sqq.

<sup>2</sup> Mansi, iv. 337 sqq.

<sup>3</sup> The answers of Innocent are found in Mansi, tom. iii. f. 1071 sqq.

<sup>4</sup> The notices of his life, as well as the *Epistolæ* and *Decreta* Zosimi pape, are collected in Mansi, iv. 345 sqq.



unimportant questions of the schools, and professed himself ready, if in error, to be corrected by the judgment of the Roman bishop.

Zosimus, who evidently had no independent theological opinion whatever, now issued (417) to the North African bishops an encyclical letter accompanied by the documentary evidence, censuring them for not having investigated the matter more thoroughly, and for having aspired, in foolish, over-curious controversies, to know more than the Holy Scriptures. At the same time he bore emphatic testimony to the orthodoxy of Pelagius and Coelestius, and described their chief opponents, Heros and Lazarus, as worthless characters, whom he had visited with excommunication and deposition. They in Rome, he says, could hardly refrain from tears, that such men, who so often mentioned the *gratia Dei* and the *adjutorium divinum*, should have been condemned as heretics. Finally he entreated the bishops to submit themselves to the authority of the Roman see.<sup>1</sup>

This temporary favor of the bishop of Rome towards the Pelagian heresy is a significant presage of the indulgence of later popes for Pelagianizing tendencies, and of the papal condemnation of Jansenism.

The Africans were too sure of their cause, to yield submission to so weak a judgment, which, moreover, was in manifest conflict with that of Innocent. In a council at Carthage, in 417 or 418, they protested, respectfully but decidedly, against the decision of Zosimus, and gave him to understand that he was allowing himself to be greatly deceived by the indefinite explanations of Coelestius. In a general African council held at Carthage in 418, the bishops, over two hundred in number, defined their opposition to the Pelagian errors, in eight (or nine) Canons, which are entirely conformable to the Augustinian view.<sup>2</sup> They are in the following tenor:

<sup>1</sup> See the two epistles of Zosimus ad Africanos episcopos, in Mansi, iv. 350 and 353.

<sup>2</sup> It is the 16th Carthaginian synod. Mansi gives the canons in full, tom. iii. 810-823 (comp. iv. 377). So also Wiggers, i. 214 ff. Hefele, ii. pp. 102-106, gives only extracts of them.

1. Whosoever says, that Adam was created mortal, and would, even without sin, have died by natural necessity, let him be anathema.

2. Whoever rejects infant baptism, or denies original sin in children, so that the baptismal formula, "for the remission of sins," would have to be taken not in a strict, but in a loose sense, let him be anathema.

3. Whoever says, that in the kingdom of heaven, or elsewhere, there is a certain middle place, where children dying without baptism live happy (*beate vivant*), while yet without baptism they cannot enter into the kingdom of heaven, i. e., into eternal life, let him be anathema.<sup>1</sup>

The fourth canon condemns the doctrine that the justifying grace of God merely effects the forgiveness of sins already committed; and the remaining canons condemn other superficial views of the grace of God and the sinfulness of man.

At the same time the Africans succeeded in procuring from the emperor Honorius edicts against the Pelagians.

These things produced a change in the opinions of Zosimus, and about the middle of the year 418, he issued an encyclical letter to all the bishops of both East and West, pronouncing the anathema upon Pelagius and Cœlestius (who had meanwhile left Rome), and declaring his concurrence with the decisions of the council of Carthage in the doctrines of the corruption of human nature, of baptism, and of grace. Whoever refused to subscribe the encyclical, was to be deposed, banished from his church, and deprived of his property.<sup>2</sup>

Eighteen bishops of Italy refused to subscribe, and were

<sup>1</sup> It is significant, that the third canon, which denies the salvation of unbaptized children, is of doubtful authenticity, and is wanting in Isidore and Dionysius. Hence the difference in the number of the canons against the Pelagians, as to whether there are 8 or 9.

<sup>2</sup> *Epistola tractoria*, or *tractatoria*, of which only some fragments are extant. Comp. Mansi, iv. 370. This letter was written *after* and not *before* the African council of 418 and the promulgation of the *sacrum rescriptum* of Honorius against the Pelagians, as Tillemont (xiii. 788) and the Benedictines (in the Preface to the 10th volume of the *Opera August.* § 18) have proved, in opposition to Baronius, Ncria, and Garnier.

deposed. Several of these afterwards recanted, and were restored.

The most distinguished one of them, however, the bishop Julian, of Eclanum, a small place near Capua in Campania, remained steadfast till his death, and in banishment vindicated his principles with great ability and zeal against Augustine, to whom he attributed all the misfortunes of his party, and who elaborately confuted him.<sup>1</sup> Julian was the most learned, the most acute, and the most systematic of the Pelagians, and the most formidable opponent of Augustine; deserving respect for his talents, his uprightness of life, and his immovable fidelity to his convictions, but unquestionably censurable for excessive passion and overbearing pride.<sup>2</sup>

Julian, Coelestius, and other leaders of the exiled Pelagians, were hospitably received in Constantinople, in 429, by the patriarch Nestorius, who sympathized with their doctrine of the moral competency of the will, though not with their denial of original sin, and who interceded for them with the emperor and with pope Celestine, but in vain. Theodosius, instructed by Marius Mercator in the merits of the case, commanded the heretics to leave the capital (429). Nestorius, in a still extant letter to Coelestius,<sup>3</sup> accords to him the highest titles of honor, and comforts him with the examples of John the Baptist and the persecuted apostles. Theodore of Mopsuestia († 428), the author of the Nestorian Christology, wrote in 419 a book against the Augustinian anthropology, of which fragments only are left.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> In two large works: *Contra Julianum*, libri vi. (Opera, tom. x. f. 497-711), and in the *Opus imperfectum contra secundam Juliani responsionem*, in six books (tom. x. P. ii. f. 874-1386), before completing which he died (A. D. 430).

<sup>2</sup> Gennadius, in his *Liber de scriptoribus ecclesiasticis*, calls Julian of Eclanum "vir acer ingenio, in divinis scripturis doctus, Græca et Latina lingua scholasticus." By Augustine, however, in the *Opus imperf. contra Jul.* l. iv. 50 (Opera, x. P. ii. fol. 1163), he is called "in disputatione loquacissimus, in contentione calumniosissimus, in professione fallacissimus," because he maligned the Catholics, while giving himself out for a Catholic. He was married.

<sup>3</sup> In Marius Mercator, in a Latin translation, ed. Garnier-Migne, p. 182.

<sup>4</sup> In Photius, *Bibl. cod.* 177, and in the Latin translation of Marius Mercator, also in the works of Jerome, tom. ii. 807-814 (ed. Vall.). The book was written *contra Hiramum*, i. e., Hieronymum, and was entitled: *Πρὸς τοὺς Λέγοντας φέρεται*

Of the subsequent life of Pelagius and Coelestius we have no account. The time and place of their death are entirely unknown. Julian is said to have ended his life a schoolmaster in Sicily, A. D. 450, after having sacrificed all his property for the poor during a famine.

Pelagianism was thus, as early as about the year 430, externally vanquished. It never formed an ecclesiastical sect, but simply a theological school. It continued to have individual adherents in Italy till towards the middle of the fifth century, so that the Roman bishop, Leo the Great, found himself obliged to enjoin on the bishops by no means to receive any Pelagian to the communion of the church without an express recantation.

At the third ecumenical council in Ephesus, A. D. 431 (the year after Augustine's death), Pelagius (or more properly Coelestius) was put in the same category with Nestorius. And indeed there is a certain affinity between them: both favor an abstract separation of the divine and the human, the one in the person of Christ, the other in the work of conversion, forbidding all organic unity of life. According to the epistle of the council to pope Celestine, the Western Acta against the Pelagians were read at Ephesus and approved, but we do not know in which session. We are also ignorant of the discussions attending this act. In the canons, Coelestius, it is true, is twice condemned together with Nestorius, but without statement of his teachings.<sup>1</sup>

The position of the Greek church upon this question is only negative; she has in name condemned Pelagianism, but has never received the positive doctrines of Augustine. She continued to teach synergistic or Semi-Pelagian views, without,

καὶ οὐ γνῶναι πταίειν τοὺς ἀνθρώπους λόγοι πένητε, against those who say that men sin by nature, and not by free will.

<sup>1</sup> Can. i. and Can. iv. The latter reads: "If clergymen fall away and either secretly or publicly hold with Nestorius or Coelestius, the synod decrees that they also be deposed." Dr. Shedd (H. 191) observes with justice: "The condemnation of Pelagianism which was finally passed by the council of Ephesus, seems to have been owing more to a supposed connection of the views of Pelagius with those of Nestorius, than to a clear and conscientious conviction that his system was contrary to Scripture and the Christian experience."

however, entering into a deeper investigation of the relation of human freedom to divine grace.<sup>1</sup>

§ 150. *The Pelagian System: Primitive State and Freedom of Man; the Fall.*

The peculiar anthropological doctrines, which Pelagius clearly apprehended and put in actual practice, which Coelestius dialectically developed, and bishop Julian most acutely defended, stand in close logical connection with each other, although they were not propounded in systematic form. They commend themselves at first sight by their simplicity, clearness, and plausibility, and faithfully express the superficial, self-satisfied morality of the natural man. They proceed from a merely empirical view of human nature, which, instead of going to the source of moral life, stops with its manifestations, and regards every person, and every act of the will, as standing by itself, in no organic connection with a great whole.

We may arrange the several doctrines of this system according to the great stages of the moral history of mankind.

I. The PRIMITIVE STATE of mankind, and the doctrine of FREEDOM.

The doctrine of the primitive state of man holds a subordinate position in the system of Pelagius, but the doctrine of freedom is central; because in his view the primitive state substantially coincides with the present, while freedom is the characteristic prerogative of man, as a moral being, in all stages of his development.

Adam, he taught, was created by God sinless, and entirely competent to all good, with an immortal spirit and a mortal body. He was endowed with reason and free will. With his reason he was to have dominion over irrational creatures; with his free will he was to serve God. Freedom is the supreme good, the honor and glory of man, the *bonum naturæ*, that cannot be lost. It is the sole basis of the ethical relation

<sup>1</sup> Comp. Münscher, *Dogmengeschichte*, vol. iv. 238, and Neander, *Dogmengeschichte*, vol. i. p. 412.

of man to God, who would have no unwilling service. It consists, according to Pelagius, essentially in the *liberum arbitrium*, or the *possibilitas boni et mali*; the freedom of choice, and the absolutely equal ability at every moment to do good or evil.<sup>1</sup> The ability to do evil belongs necessarily to freedom, because we cannot will good without at the same time being able to will evil. Without this power of contrary choice, the choice of good itself would lose its freedom, and therefore its moral value. Man is not a free, self-determining moral subject, until good and evil, life and death, have been given into his hand.<sup>2</sup>

This is the only conception of freedom which Pelagius has, and to this he and his followers continually revert. He views freedom in its *form* alone, and in its *first* stage, and there fixes and leaves it, in perpetual equipoise between good and evil, ready at any moment to turn either way. It is without past or future; absolutely independent of everything without or within; a vacuum, which may make itself a plenum, and then becomes a vacuum again; a perpetual *tabula rasa*, upon which

<sup>1</sup> De gratia Christi et de pecc. origin. c. 18 (§ 19, tom. x. fol. 238) where Augustine cites the following passage from the treatise of Pelagius, De libero arbitrio: "Habemus possibilitatem utriusque partis a Deo insitam, velut quamdam, ut ita dicam, radicem fructiferam et fecundam, quæ ex voluntate hominis diversa gignat et pariat, et quæ possit ad proprii cultoris arbitrium, vel nitere flore virtutum, vel sentibus horrere vitiorum." Against this Augustine cites the declaration of our Lord, Matt. vii. 18, that "a good tree cannot bear evil fruit, nor a corrupt tree good fruit," that therefore there cannot be "una eademque radix bonorum et malorum."

<sup>2</sup> Ep. ad Demet. cap. 8: "In hoc enim gemini itineris discrimine, in hoc utriusque libertate partis, rationabilis animæ decus positum est. Hinc, inquam, totus naturæ nostræ honor consistit, hinc dignitas, hinc denique optimi quique laudem merentur, hinc præmium. Nec esset omnino virtus ulla in bono perseverantis, si is ad malum transire non potuisset. Volens namque Deus rationabilem creaturam voluntarii boni munere [al. munire] et liberi arbitrii potestate donare, utriusque partis possibilitatem homini inserendo, proprium ejus fecit esse quod velit, ut boni ac mali capax, naturaliter utrumque posset, et ad alterutrum voluntatem defleceret. Neque enim aliter spontaneum habere poterat bonum, nisi æque etiam ea creatura malum habere potuisset. Utrumque nos posse voluit optimus Creator, sed unum facere, bonum scilicet, quod et imperavit; malique facultatem ad hoc tantum dedit, ut voluntatem ejus ex nostra voluntate faceremus. Quod ut ita sit, hoc quoque ipsum, quia etiam mala facere possumus, bonum est. Bonum, inquam, quia boni partem meliorem facit. Facit enim ipsam voluntariam sui juris, non necessitate devinctam, sed judicio liberam."

man can write whatsoever he pleases; a restless choice, which, after every decision, reverts to indecision and oscillation. The human will is, as it were, the eternal Hercules at the cross-road, who takes first a step to the right, then a step to the left, and ever returns to his former position. Pelagius knows only the antithesis of free choice and constraint; no stages of development, no transitions. He isolates the will from its acts, and the acts from each other, and overlooks the organic connection between habit and act. Human liberty, like every other spiritual power, has its development; it must advance beyond its equilibrium, beyond the mere ability to sin or not to sin, and decide for the one or the other. When the will decides, it so far loses its indifference, and the oftener it acts, the more does it become fixed; good or evil becomes its habit, its second nature; and the will either becomes truly free by deciding for virtue, and by practising virtue, or it becomes the slave of vice.<sup>1</sup> "Whosoever committeth sin, is the servant of sin." Goodness is its own reward, and wickedness is its own punishment. Liberty of choice is not a power, but a weakness, or rather a crude energy, waiting to assume some positive form, to reject evil and commit itself to good, and to become a moral self-control, in which the choice of evil, as in Christ, is a moral, though not a physical, impossibility. Its impulse towards exercise is also an impulse towards self-annihilation, or at least towards self-limitation. The right use of the freedom of choice leads to a state of holiness; the abuse of it, to a state of bondage under sin. The state of the will is affected by its acts, and settles towards a permanent character

<sup>1</sup> Pelagius himself, it must be admitted, recognized to some extent the power of habit and its effect upon the will (Ep. ad Demetr. c. 8); but Coelestius and Julian carried out his idea of the freedom of choice more consistently to the conception of a purely qualitative or formal power which admits of no growth or change by actual exercise, but remains always the same. Comp. Niedner (in the posthumous edition of his *Lehrbuch der Kirchengeschichte*, Berlin, 1866, p. 345 f.), who justly remarks, in opposition to Baur's defense of the Pelagian conception of freedom: "Freedom in its first stage, as the power of choice, is a moral (as well as a natural) faculty, and hence capable of development either by way of deterioration into a sinful inclination, or by rising to a higher form of freedom. This is the point which Coelestius and Julian ignored: they attached too little weight to the use of freedom."

of good or evil. Every act goes to form a moral state or habit; and habit is in turn the parent of new acts. Perfect freedom, is one with moral necessity, in which man no longer *can* do evil because he *will* not do it, and *must* do good because he *wills* to do it; in which the finite will is united with the divine in joyful obedience, and raised above the possibility of apostasy. This is the blessed freedom of the children of God in the state of glory. There is, indeed, a subordinate sphere of natural virtue and civil justice, in which even fallen man retains a certain freedom of choice, and is the artificer of his own character. But as respects his relation to God, he is in a state of alienation from God, and of bondage under sin; and from this he cannot rise by his own strength, by a bare resolution of his will, but only by a regenerating act of grace, received in humility and faith, and setting him free to practise Christian virtue. Then, when born again from above, the will of the new man co-operates with the grace of God, in the growth of the Christian life.<sup>1</sup>

Physical *death* Pelagius regarded as a law of nature, which would have prevailed even without sin.<sup>2</sup> The passages of Scripture which represent death as the consequence of sin, he referred to moral corruption or eternal damnation.<sup>3</sup> Yet he conceded that Adam, if he had not sinned, might by a special privilege have been exempted from death.

## II. The FALL of Adam and its CONSEQUENCES.

Pelagius, destitute of all idea of the organic wholeness of the race or of human nature, viewed Adam merely as an isolated individual; he gave him no representative place, and therefore his acts no bearing beyond himself.

In his view, the sin of the first man consisted in a single,

<sup>1</sup> Comp. the thorough and acute criticism of the Pelagian conception of freedom by Julius Müller, *Die christliche Lehre von der Sünde*, Bd. ii. p. 49 ff. (3d ed. 1849).

<sup>2</sup> Celestius in Marius Mercator. *Common.* ii. p. 133: "Adam mortalem factum, qui sive peccaret, sive non peccaret, moriturus fuisset."

<sup>3</sup> The words of God to Adam, Gen. iii. 19: "Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return," Julian interpreted not as a curse, but as a consolation, and as an argument for the natural mortality of Adam, by straining the "Dust thou art." See August. *Opus imperfectum contra Julian.* l. vi. cap. 27 (x. fol. 1846 sqq.).



isolated act of disobedience to the divine command. Julian compares it to the insignificant offence of a child, which allows itself to be misled by some sensual bait, but afterwards repents its fault. "Rude, inexperienced, thoughtless, having not yet learned to fear, nor seen an example of virtue,"<sup>1</sup> Adam allowed himself to be enticed by the pleasant look of the forbidden fruit, and to be determined by the persuasion of the woman. This single and excusable act of transgression brought no consequences, either to the soul or the body of Adam, still less to his posterity, who all stand or fall for themselves.

There is, therefore, according to this system, no *original* sin, and no *hereditary* guilt. Pelagius merely conceded, that Adam, by his disobedience, set a *bad example*, which exerts a more or less injurious influence upon his posterity. In this view he condemned at the synod of Diospolis (415) the assertion of Cœlestius, that Adam's sin injured himself alone, not the human race.<sup>2</sup> He was also inclined to admit an increasing corruption of mankind, though he ascribed it solely to the habit of evil, which grows in power the longer it works and the farther it spreads.<sup>3</sup> Sin, however, is not born with man; it is not a product of nature, but of the will.<sup>4</sup> Man is born both without virtue and without vice, but with the capacity for either.<sup>5</sup> The universality of sin must be ascribed to the power of evil example and evil custom.

<sup>1</sup> "Rudis, imperitus, incautus, sine experimento timoris, sine exemplo justitiæ."

<sup>2</sup> "Adm peccatum ipsi soli obfuisse, et non generi humano; et infantes qui nascuntur, in eo statu esse, in quo fuit Adam ante prævaricationem." In Augustine's De pecc. orig. c. 13 (f. 258).

<sup>3</sup> Ep. ad Demet. cap. 8: "Longa consuetudo vitiorum, quæ nos infecit a parvo paulatimque per multos corruptit annos, et ita postea obligates sibi et addictos tenet, ut vim quodammodo videatur habere natura." He also says of consuetudo, that it "aut vitia aut virtutes alit."

<sup>4</sup> Cœlestius, Symb. fragm. i.: "In remissionem autem peccatorum baptizandos infantes non idcirco diximus, ut *peccatum ex traduce* [or, *peccatum naturæ, peccatum naturale*] firmare videamur, quod longe a catholico sensu alienum est; quia peccatum non cum homine nascitur, quod postmodum exercetur ab homine quia non naturæ delictum, sed voluntatis esse demonstratur."

<sup>5</sup> Pelagius, in the first book of the Pro libero arbitrio, cited in Augustine's De pecc. orig. cap. 13 (§ 14, tom. x. f. 258): "Omne bonum ac malum, quo vel laudabiles vel vituperabiles sumus, non nobiscum *oritur*, sed *agitur* a nobis: capaces enim utriusque rei, non pleni nascimur, et ut sine virtute, ita et sine vitio procrea-

And there are exceptions to it. The "all" in Rom. v. 12 is to be taken relatively for the majority. Even before Christ there were men who lived *free from sin*, such as righteous Abel, Abraham, Isaac, the Virgin Mary, and many others.' From the silence of the Scriptures respecting the sins of many righteous men, he inferred that such men were without sin.' In reference to Mary, Pelagius is nearer the present Roman Catholic view than Augustine, who exempts her only from actual sin, not from original.' Jerome, with all his reverence for the blessed Virgin, does not even make this exception, but says, without qualification, that every creature is under the power of sin and in need of the mercy of God.'

With original *sin*, of course; hereditary *guilt* also disappears; and even apart from this connection, Pelagius views it

mur; atque ante actionem propriæ voluntatis id solum in homine est, quod Deus condidit." It is not, however, very congruous with this, that in another place he speaks of a *natural* or inborn holiness. Ad Demet. c. 4: "Est in animis nostris *naturalis* quædam, ut ita dixerim, *sanctitas*."

<sup>1</sup> Comp. Pelagius, Com. in Rom. v. 12, and in August. De natura et gratia, cap. 36 (§ 42, Opera, tom. x. fol. 144): "Deinde commemorat [Pelagius] eos, qui non modo non peccasse, verum etiam juste vixisse referuntur, Abel, Enoch, Melchisedech, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Jesu Nove, Phineas, Samuel, Nathan, Elias, Joseph, Elizeus, Micheas, Daniel, Ananias, Agarias, Meisaël, Ezechiel, Mardocheus, Simeon, Joseph, cui despondata erat virgo Maria, Johannes. Adjungit etiam feminas, Deborah, Annam, Samuelis matrem, Judith, Esther, alteram Annam filiam Phanuel, Elizabeth, ipsam etiam Domini ac Salvatoris nostri matrem, quam dicit sine peccato confiteri necesse esse pietati."

<sup>2</sup> "De illis, quorum justitiæ meminit [Scriptura sacra] et peccatorum sine dubio meminisset, si qua eos peccasse sensisset." In Aug. De nat. et grat. c. 37 (§ 43; tom. x. fol. 145).

<sup>3</sup> In the passage cited, Augustine agrees with Pelagius in reference to Mary "propter honorem Domini," but only as respects actual sin, of which the connection shows him to be speaking; for in other passages he affirms the conception of Mary in sin. Comp. Enarratio in Psalmum xxxiv. vs. 18 (ed. Migne, tom. iv. 335): "Maria ex Adam mortua *propter peccatum*, Adam mortuus propter peccatum, et caro Domini ex Maria mortua est propter *delenda* peccata." De Genesi ad literam, lib. x. c. 18 (§ 32), where he discusses the origin of Christ's soul, and says: "Quid incoquinatus illo utero Virginis, cujus caro *etiamsi de peccati propagine venit*, non tamen de peccati propagine concepit . . .?" See above, § 80, p. 418.

<sup>4</sup> Adv. Pelag. l. ii. c. 4 (tom. ii. 744, ed. Vallarsi): "Ἀναμάρτητος, id est sine peccato esse [hominem posse] nego, id enim soli Deo competit, omnisque creatura peccato subjacet, et indiget misericordia Dei, dicente Scriptura: Misericordia Domini plena est terra."

as irreconcilable with the justice of God. From this position a necessary deduction is the salvation of unbaptized infants. Pelagius, however, made a distinction between *vita æterna*, or a lower degree of salvation, and the *regnum cælorum* of the baptized saints; and he affirmed the necessity of baptism for entrance into the kingdom of heaven.<sup>1</sup>

In this doctrine of the fall we meet with the same disintegrating view of humanity as before. Adam is isolated from his posterity; his disobedience is disjoined from other sins. He is simply an individual, like any other man, not the representative of the whole race. There are no creative starting-points; every man begins history anew. In this system Paul's exhibitions of Adam and Christ as the representative ancestors of mankind have no meaning. If the act of the former has merely an individual significance, so also has that of the latter. If the sin of Adam cannot be imputed, neither can the merit of Christ. In both cases there is nothing left but the idea of example, the influence of which depends solely upon our own free will. But there is an undeniable solidarity between the sin of the first man and that of his posterity.

In like manner sin is here regarded almost exclusively as an isolated act of the will, while yet there is also such a thing as sinfulness; there are sinful states and sinful habits, which are consummated and strengthened by sins of act, and which in turn give birth to other sins of act.

There is a deep truth in the couplet of Schiller, which can easily be divested of its fatalistic intent:

"This is the very curse of evil deed,  
That of new evil it becomes the seed."<sup>2</sup>

Finally, the essence and root of sin is not sensuality, as Pelagius was inclined to assume (though he did not express himself very definitely on this point), but self-seeking, including pride and sensuality as the two main forms of sin. The

<sup>1</sup> August. De peccatorum meritis et remissione, lib. i. c. 21 (§ 30, tom. x. f. 17): De hæresibus, cap. 88.

<sup>2</sup> "Das eben ist der Fluch der bösen That,  
Dass sie, for:zeugend, immer Böses muss gebären."

sin of Satan was a pride that aimed at equality with God rebellion against God; and in this the fall of Adam began, and was inwardly consummated before he ate of the forbidden fruit.

§ 151. *The Pelagian System Continued: Doctrine of Human Ability and Divine Grace.*

III. The PRESENT MORAL CONDITION of man is, according to the Pelagian system, in all respects the same as that of Adam before the fall. Every child is born with the same moral powers and capabilities with which the first man was created by God. For the freedom of choice, as we have already seen, is not lost by abuse, and is altogether the same in heathens, Jews, and Christians, except that in Christians it is aided by grace.<sup>1</sup> Pelagius was a creationist, holding that the body alone is derived from the parents, and that every soul is created directly by God, and is therefore sinless. The sin of the father, inasmuch as it consists in isolated acts of will, and does not inhere in the nature, has no influence upon the child. The only difference is, that, in the first place, Adam's posterity are born children, and not, like him, created full-grown; and secondly, they have before them the bad example of his disobedience, which tempts them more or less to imitation, and to the influence of which by far the most—but not all—succumb.

Julian often appeals to the virtues of the heathen, such as valor, chastity, and temperance, in proof of the natural goodness of human nature.

He looked at the matter of moral action as such, and judged it accordingly. "If the chastity of the heathen," he objects to Augustine's view of the corrupt nature of heathen virtue, "were no chastity, then it might be said with the same propriety that the bodies of unbelievers are no bodies; that the

<sup>1</sup> Pelagius, in Aug. De gratia Christi, c. 31 (x. 244): "Liberi arbitrii potestatem dicimus in omnibus esse generaliter, in Christianis, Judæis atque gentilibus. In omnibus est liberum arbitrium æqualiter per naturam, sed in solis Christianis juvatur gratia."

eyes of the heathen could not see; that grain which grew in their fields was no grain."

Augustine justly ascribed the value of a moral act to the inward disposition or the direction of the will, and judged it from the unity of the whole life and according to the standard of love to God, which is the soul of all true virtue, and is bestowed upon us only through grace. He did not deny altogether the existence of natural virtues, such as moderation, lenity, benevolence, generosity, which proceed from the Creator, and also constitute a certain merit among men; but he drew a broad line of distinction between them and the specific Christian graces, which alone are good in the proper sense of the word, and alone have value before God.

The Holy Scriptures, history, and Christian experience, by no means warrant such a favorable view of the natural moral condition of man as the Pelagian system teaches. On the contrary, they draw a most gloomy picture of fearful corruption and universal inclination to all evil, which can only be overcome by the intervention of divine grace. Yet Augustine also touches an extreme, when, on a false application of the passage of St. Paul: "Whatsoever is not of faith, is sin" (Rom. xiv. 23), he ascribes all the virtues of the heathen to ambition and love of honor, and so stigmatizes them as vices.<sup>1</sup> And in fact he is in this inconsistent with himself. For, according to his view, the nature which God created, remains, as to its substance, good; the divine image is not wholly lost, but only defaced; and even man's sorrow in his loss reveals a remaining trace of good.<sup>2</sup>

Pelagius distinguishes three elements in the idea of good: *power*, *will*, and *act* (*posse*, *velle*, and *esse*). The first appertains to man's nature, the second to his free will, the third to his conduct. The power or ability to do good, the ethical

<sup>1</sup> De civit. Dei, v. 13-20 and xix. 25. In the latter place he calls the virtues, which do not come from true religion, vices. "Virtutes . . . nisi ad Deum retulerit, etiam ipsa vitia sunt potius quam virtutes." From this is doubtless derived the sentence so often attributed to Augustine: "The virtues of the heathen are splendid vices," which, however, in this form and generality, does not, to my knowledge, occur in his writings. More on this point, see below, § 156.

<sup>2</sup> De Genesi ad lit. viii. 14; Retract. ii. 24. Comp. Wiggers, i. p. 120 ff.

constitution, is grace, and comes therefore from God, as an original endowment of the nature of man. It is the condition of volition and action, though it does not necessarily produce them. Willing and acting belong exclusively to man himself.<sup>1</sup> The power of speech, of thought, of sight, is God's gift; but whether we shall really think, speak, or see, and whether we shall think, speak, or see well or ill, depends upon ourselves.<sup>2</sup>

Here the nature of man is mechanically sundered from his will and act; and the one is referred exclusively to God, the others to man. Moral ability does not exist over and above the will and its acts, but in them, and is increased by exercise; and thus its growth depends upon man himself. On the other hand, the divine help is indispensable even to the willing and doing of good; for God works in us both to will and to do.<sup>3</sup> The Pelagian system is founded unconsciously upon the deistic conception of the world as a clock, made and wound up by God, and then running of itself, and needing at most some subsequent repairs. God, in this system, is not the omnipresent and everywhere working Upholder and Governor of the world, in whom the creation lives and moves and has its being, but a more or less passive spectator of the operation of the universe.<sup>4</sup> Jerome therefore fairly accuses the Pelagians

<sup>1</sup> Pelagius, *Pro libero arbitrio*, cited in Augustine's *De gratia Christi*, c. 4 (§ 5, tom. x. fol. 232): "*Posse in natura, velle in arbitrio, esse in effectu locamus. Primum illud, id est posse, ad Deum proprie pertinet, qui illud creaturæ suæ contulit, duo vero reliqua, hoc est velle et esse, ad hominem referenda sunt, quia de arbitrii fonte descendunt. Ergo in voluntate et opere bono laus hominis est: immo et hominis et Dei, qui ipsius voluntatis et operis possibilitatem dedit, quique ipsam possibilitatem gratiæ suæ adjuvat semper auxilio.*"

<sup>2</sup> "Quod possumus videre oculis, nostrum non est: quod vero bene aut male videmus, hoc nostrum est. . . . Quod loqui possumus, Dei est: quod vero bene vel male loquimur, nostrum est." Quoted in Augustine's *De gratia Christi*, c. 15 and 16 (fol. 237 and 238). Augustine cites against these examples Ps. cxix. 37: "*Averte oculos meos, ne videant vanitatem.*"

<sup>3</sup> Phil. ii. 13. Augustine appeals to this passage, *De gratia Christi*, c. 5 (f. 232 sq.) with great emphasis, as if Paul with prophetic eye had had in view the error of Pelagius.

<sup>4</sup> It is against this deistic view that the pregnant lines of Goethe are directed:

"Was wär' ein Gott, der nur von aussen stiesse,  
Im Kreis das All am Finger laufen liesse;

(without naming them) of denying the absolute dependence of man on God, and cites against them the declaration of Christ, John v. 17, concerning the uninterrupted activity of God.<sup>1</sup>

#### IV. The doctrine of the GRACE of God.

The sufficiency of the natural reason and will of man would seem to make supernatural revelation and grace superfluous. But this Pelagius does not admit. Besides the *natural* grace, as we may call his concreated ability, he assumes also a *supernatural* grace, which through revelation enlightens the understanding, and assists man to will and to do what is good.<sup>2</sup> This grace confers the negative benefit of the forgiveness of past sins, or justification, which Pelagius understands in the Protestant sense of *declaring* righteous, and not (like Augustine) in the Catholic sense of *making* righteous;<sup>3</sup>

Ihm ziem't's, die Welt im Innern zu bewegen,  
Natur in sich, sich in Natur zu hegen,  
So dass, was in ihm lebt und webt und ist,  
Nie seine Kraft, nie seinen Geist vermisst."

"What were a God who only from without  
Upon his finger whirled the universe about?  
'Tis his within itself to move the creature;  
Nature in him to warm, himself in nature;  
So that what in him lives and moves and is,  
Shall ever feel some living breath of his."

<sup>1</sup> Epistola ad Ctesiphontem. Dr. Neander (Church History, vol. ii. p. 604 ff. Torrey's transl.) regards this difference of view concerning the relation of the Creator to the creature as the most original and fundamental difference between the Augustinian and Pelagian system, although it did not clearly come to view in the progress of the controversy.

<sup>2</sup> Pelagius, in Aug. De gratia Christi, c. 7 (§ 8, x. f. 233): "... Deus . . . gratiæ suæ auxilium subministrat, ut quod per liberum homines facere jubentur arbitrium, *facilius possent implere per gratiam.*"

<sup>3</sup> Pelag. Com. in Rom. iv. 6: "Ad hoc fides prima ad justitiam reputatur, ut de præterito absolvetur et de præsentī justificatur, et ad futura fidei opera præparatur." Similarly Julian of Eclanum. Augustine, on the contrary, has the evangelical conception of faith and of grace, but not of justification, which he interprets subjectively as a progressive making righteous, like the Roman church. Comp. De gratia Christi, c. 47 (§ 52, x. f. 251): "... gratiam Dei . . . in qua nos sua, non nostræ justitiæ *justos facit*, ut ea sit vera nostra justitia quæ nobis ab illo est." In another passage, however, he seems to express the Protestant view. De spir. et lit. a.

and the positive benefit of a strengthening of the will by the power of instruction and example. As we have been followers of Adam in sin, so should we become imitators of Christ in virtue. "In those not Christians," says Pelagius, "good exists in a condition of nakedness and helplessness; but in Christians it acquires vigor through the assistance of Christ."<sup>1</sup> He distinguishes different stages of development in grace corresponding to the increasing corruption of mankind. At first, he says, men lived righteous by nature (*justitia per naturam*), then righteous under the law (*justitia sub lege*), and finally righteous under grace (*justitia gratiæ*), or the gospel.<sup>2</sup> When the inner law, or the conscience, no longer sufficed, the outward or Mosaic law came in; and when this failed, through the overmastering habit of sinning, it had to be assisted by the view and imitation of the virtue of Christ, as set forth in his example.<sup>3</sup> Julian of Eclanum also makes kinds and degrees of the grace of God. The first gift of grace is our creation out of nothing; the second, our rational soul; the third, the written law; the fourth, the gospel, with all its benefits. In the gift of the Son of God grace is completed.<sup>4</sup>

Grace is therefore a useful external help (*adjutorium*) to the development of the powers of nature, but is not absolutely necessary. Coelestinus laid down the proposition, that grace is not given for single acts.<sup>5</sup> Pelagius, it is true, condemned those who deny that the grace of God in Christ is necessary for every moment and every act; but this point was a conces-

26 (§ 45, tom. x. 109): "Certe ita dictum est: *justificabuntur*, ac si diceretur: *justi habebuntur*, *justi deputabuntur*, sicut dictum est de quodam: *Ille autem volens se justificare* (Luc. x. 29), i. e., ut *justus haberetur et deputaretur*."

<sup>1</sup> In Aug. De gratia Chr. c. 31 (tom. x. fol. 244): "In illis nudum et inerme est conditionis bonum; in his vero qui ad Christum pertinent, Christi munitur auxilio."

<sup>2</sup> Aug. De pecc. orig. c. 26 (§ 30, tom. x. f. 266): "Non, sicut Pelagius et ejus discipuli, tempora dividamus dicentes: *primum vixisse justos homines ex natura, deinde sub lege, tertio sub gratia*."

<sup>3</sup> Cited from Pelagius, l. c.: "Postquam nimia, sicut disputant, peccandi consuetudo prævaluit, cui sanandæ lex parum valeret, Christus advenit et tanquam morbo desperatissimo non per discipulos, sed per se ipsum medicus ipse subvenit."

<sup>4</sup> In Augustine's Opus imperf. i. 94 (tom. x. f. 928)

<sup>5</sup> "Gratiam Dei et adjutorium non ad singulos actus dari."



sion wrung from him in the controversy, and does not follow logically from his premises.<sup>1</sup>

Grace moreover, according to Pelagius, is intended for all men (not, as Augustine taught, for the elect few only), but it must first be deserved. This, however, really destroys its freedom.<sup>2</sup> "The heathen," he says, "are liable to judgment and damnation, because they, notwithstanding their free will, by which they are able to attain unto faith and to deserve God's grace, make an evil use of the freedom bestowed upon them; Christians, on the other hand, are worthy of reward, because they through good use of freedom deserve the grace of God, and keep his commandments."<sup>3</sup>

Pelagianism, therefore, extends the idea of grace too far, making it include human nature itself and the Mosaic law; while, on the other hand, it unduly restricts the specifically Christian grace to the force of instruction and example. Christ is indeed the Supreme Teacher, and the Perfect Example, but He is also High-priest and King, and the Author of a new spiritual creation. Had He been merely a teacher, He would not have been specifically distinct from Moses and Socrates, and could not have redeemed mankind from the guilt and bondage of sin. Moreover, He does not merely influence believers from without, but lives and works in them through the Holy Ghost, as the principle of their spiritual life. Hence Augustine's wish

<sup>1</sup> Comp., respecting this, Augustine, *De gratia Christi*, cap. 2 (tom. x. fol. 229 sq.).

<sup>2</sup> Comp. Rom. iv. 4, 5; Eph. ii. 8, 9. Shakespeare has far better understood the nature of grace than Pelagius, in the famous speech of Portia in the *Merchant of Venice* (Act IV. Sc. 1):

"The quality of mercy is not strained:  
It droppeth as the gentle rain from heaven  
Upon the place beneath; it is twice blessed,  
It blesseth him that gives and him that takes."

<sup>3</sup> Pelagius in Aug. *De gratia Chr.* c. 31 (x. f. 245). The *illi*, according to the connection, must refer to those not Christians, the *hi* to Christians. Yet according to his principles we might in turn fairly subdivide each class, since according to him there are good heathens and bad Christians. Against this Augustine urges: "Ubi est illud apostoli: Justificati gratis per gratiam ipsius (Rom. iii. 24)? Ubi est illud: Gratia salvi facti estis (Eph. ii. 8)?" He concludes with the just proposition: "Non est gratia, nisi gratuita."

for his opponent: "Would that Pelagius might confess that grace which not merely promises us the excellence of future glory, but also brings forth in us the faith and hope of it; a grace, which not merely admonishes to all good, but also from within inclines us thereto; not merely reveals wisdom, but also inspires us with the love of wisdom."<sup>1</sup> This superficial conception of grace is inevitable, with the Pelagian conception of sin. If human nature is uncorrupted, and the natural will competent to all good, we need no Redeemer to create in us a new will and a new life, but merely an improver and ennobler; and salvation is essentially the work of man. The Pelagian system has really no place for the ideas of redemption, atonement, regeneration, and new creation. It substitutes for them our own moral effort to perfect our natural powers, and the mere addition of the grace of God as a valuable aid and support. It was only by a happy inconsistency, that Pelagius and his adherents traditionally held to the church doctrines of the Trinity and the person of Christ. Logically their system led to a rationalistic Christology.<sup>2</sup>

Pelagianism is a fundamental anthropological heresy, denying man's *need* of redemption, and answering to the Ebionistic Christology, which rejects the divinity of Christ. It is the opposite of Manichæism, which denies man's *capability* of redemption, and which corresponds to the Gnostic denial of the true humanity of Christ.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> De gratia Christi, c. 10 (tom. x. f. 235).

<sup>2</sup> Wiggers, l. c. vol. I. p. 457, judges similarly. Also Neander, in his Dogmengeschichte, Bd. i. p. 384: "The Pelagian principles would logically have led to rationalistic views, to an entire rejection of the supernatural element, and to the belief that mankind needs only to develop itself from within itself, without the revelation and self-impartation of God, in order to attain the good. But they do not develop their first principles so consistently as this, and what Biblical elements they incorporate with their system are unquestionably not taken in merely by way of accommodation, but through the persuasion that a supernatural revelation is necessary, in order to realize the destiny of mankind." Comp. Cunningham, Hist. Theology, i. p. 329: "Modern Socinians and Rationalists are the only consistent Pelagians. When men reject what Pelagius rejected, they are bound in consistency to reject *everything* that is peculiar and distinctive in the Christian system as a remedial scheme."

<sup>3</sup> Comp. Augustine, Contra duas Epist. Pelagianorum, l. ii. c. 2, where he de

§ 152. *The Augustinian System: The Primitive State of Man, and Free Will.*

Augustine (354-430) had already in his *Confessions*, in the year 400, ten years before the commencement of the Pelagian controversy, set forth his deep and rich experiences of human sin and divine grace. This classical autobiography, which every theological student should read, is of universal application, and in it every Christian may bewail his own wanderings, despair of himself, throw himself unconditionally into the arms of God, and lay hold upon unmerited grace.<sup>1</sup> Augustine had in his own life passed through all the earlier stages of the history of the church, and had overcome in theory and in practice the heresy of Manichæism, before its opposite, Pelagianism, appeared. By his theological refutation of this latter heresy, and by his clear development of the Biblical anthropology, he has won the noblest and most lasting renown. As in the events recorded in his *Confessions* he gives views of the evangelical doctrines of sin and of grace, so in the doctrines of his anti-Pelagian writings he sets forth his personal experience. He teaches nothing which he has not felt. In him the philosopher and the living Christian are everywhere fused. His loftiest metaphysical speculation passes unconsciously into adoration. The living aroma of personal experience imparts to his views a double interest, and an irresistible attraction for all earnest minds.<sup>2</sup>

scribes Manichæism and Pelagianism at length as the two opposite extremes, and opposes to them the Catholic doctrine.

<sup>1</sup> An ingenious but somewhat far-fetched parallel is drawn by Dr. Kleinert between Augustine and Faust, as two antipodal representatives of mankind, in a brochure: *Augustin und Goethe's Faust*, Berlin, 1866. A more obvious comparison is that of the *Confessions* of Augustine with the *Confessions* of Rousseau, and with Goethe's *Wahrheit und Dichtung*.

<sup>2</sup> Dr. Baur, in his posthumous *Vorlesungen über die Dogmengeschichte*, published by his son (1866, Bd. I. P. ii. p. 26), makes the fine remark respecting him: "With Augustine himself everything lies in the individuality of his nature, as it was shaped by the course of his life, by his experiences and circumstances." He should have added, however, that in so magnificent a personality as Augustine's, that which is most individual is also the most universal, and the most subjective is the most objective.

Yet his system was not always precisely the same; it became perfect only through personal conflict and practical tests. Many of his earlier views—e. g., respecting the freedom of choice, and respecting faith as a work of man—he himself abandoned in his *Retractations*;¹ and hence he is by no means to be taken as an infallible guide. He holds, moreover, the evangelical doctrines of sin and grace not in the Protestant sense, but, like his faithful disciples, the Jansenists, in connection with the sacramental and strict churchly system of Catholicism; he taught the necessity of baptismal regeneration and the damnation of all unbaptized children, and identified justification in substance with sanctification, though he made sanctification throughout a work of free grace, and not of human merit. It remains the exclusive prerogative of the inspired apostles to stand above the circumstances of their time, and never, in combating one error, to fall into its opposite. Nevertheless, Augustine is the brightest star in the constellation of the church fathers, and diffuses his light through the darkest periods of the middle ages, and among Catholics and Protestants alike, even to this day.²

His anthropology may be exhibited under the three stages of the religious development of mankind, the *status integritatis*, the *status corruptionis*, and the *status redemptionis*.

#### I. The PRIMITIVE STATE of man, or the STATE of INNOCENCE.

Augustine's conception of paradise is vastly higher than the Pelagian, and involves a far deeper fall and a far more

¹ *Retract.* l. i. c. 9.

² Baur, l. c. p. 82 f.: "From the time that Augustine directed the development of the Christian system to the two doctrines of sin and grace, this tendency always remained in the Occidental dogmatics the prevailing one, and so great and increasingly predominant in the course of time did the authority of Augustine become in the church, that even those who had departed from his genuine teachings, which many were unwilling to follow out with rigid consistency, yet believed themselves bound to appeal to his authority, which his writings easily gave them opportunity to do, since his system, as the result of periods of development so various, and antitheses so manifold, offers very different sides, from which it can be interpreted."

glorious manifestation of redeeming grace. The first state of man resembles the state of the blessed in heaven, though it differs from that final state as the undeveloped germ from the perfect fruit. According to Augustine man came from the hand of his Maker, his genuine masterpiece, without the slightest fault. He possessed freedom, to do good; reason, to know God; and the grace of God. But by this grace Augustine (not happy in the choice of his term) means only the general supernatural assistance indispensable to a creature, that he may persevere in good.<sup>1</sup> The relation of man to God was that of joyful and perfect obedience. The relation of the body to the soul was the same. The flesh did not yet lust against the spirit; both were in perfect harmony, and the flesh was wholly subject to the spirit. "Tempted and assailed by no strife of himself against himself, Adam enjoyed in that place the blessedness of peace with himself." To this inward state, the outward corresponded. The paradise was not only spiritual, but also visible and material, without heat or cold, without weariness or excitement, without sickness, pains, or defects of any kind. The Augustinian, like the old Protestant, delineations of the perfection of Adam and the blissfulness of paradise often exceed the sober standard of Holy Scripture, and borrow their colors in part from the heavenly paradise of the future, which can never be lost.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Grace, in this wider sense, as source of all good, Augustine makes independent of sin, and ascribes the possession of it even to the good angels. Comp. *De corrupt. et grat.* § 32 (tom. x. 767, 768): "*Dederat [Deus homini] adjutorium sine quo in ea [bona voluntate] non posset permanere si vellet; ut autem vellet, in ejus libero reliquit arbitrio. Posset ergo permanere si vellet: quia non deerat adjutorium per quod posset et sine quo non posset perseveranter bonum tenere quod vellet. . . . Si autem hoc adjutorium vel angelo vel homini, cum primum facti sunt, defuisset, quoniam non talis natura facta erat, ut sine divino adjutorio posset manere si vellet, non utique sua culpa cecidissent: adjutorium quippe defuisset, sine quo manere non possent.*" We see here plainly the germ of the scholastic and Roman Catholic doctrine of the *justitia originalis*, which was ascribed to the first man as a special endowment of divine grace or a supernatural accident, on the ground of the familiar distinction between the *imago Dei* (which belongs to the *essence* of man and consists in reason and free will) and the *similitudo Dei* (the actual conformity to the divine will).

<sup>2</sup> Comp. several passages in the *Opus Imperf.* i. 71; iii. 147; vi. 9, 17; *Contra Jul.* v. 5; *De civitate Dei*, xiii. 1, 13, 14, 21; xiv. 10, where he depicts the beatitude

Yet Augustine admits that the original state of man was only relatively perfect, perfect in its kind; as a child may be a perfect child, while he is destined to become a man; or as the seed fulfils its idea as seed, though it has yet to become a tree. God alone is immutable and absolutely good: man is subject to development in time, and therefore to change. The primal gifts were bestowed on man simply as powers, to be developed in either one of two ways. Adam could go straight forward, develop himself harmoniously in untroubled unity with God, and thus gradually attain his final perfection; or he could fall away, engender evil *ex nihilo* by abuse of his free will, and develop himself through discords and contradictions. It was graciously made possible that his mind should become incapable of error, his will, of sin, his body, of death; and by a normal growth this possibility would have become actual. But this was mere possibility, involving, in the nature of the case, the opposite possibility of error, sin, and death.

Augustine makes the important distinction between the possibility of not sinning<sup>1</sup> and the impossibility of sinning.<sup>2</sup> The former is conditional or potential freedom from sin, which may turn into its opposite, the bondage of sin. This belonged to man before the fall. The latter is the absolute freedom from sin or the perfected holiness, which belongs to God, to

and delicias of Eden in poetic colors, and extends the perfection even to the animal and vegetable realms. Yet he is not everywhere consistent. His views became more exaggerated from his opposition to Pelagianism. In the treatise, *De libero arbitrio*, iii. c. 24, §§ 71, 72, which he completed A. D. 395, he says, that the first human beings were neither wise nor foolish, but had at first only the capability to become one or the other. "Infans nec stultus nec sapiens dici potest, quamvis jam homo sit; ex quo apparet naturam hominis recipere aliquid medium, quod neque stultitiam neque sapientiam recte vocaris." . . . "Ita factus est homo, ut quamvis sapiens nondum esset, præceptum tamen posset accipere." On the other hand, in his much later *Opus imperf. c. Julianum*, l. v. c. 1 (tom. x. f. 1222) he ascribes to the first man excellentissima sapientia, appealing to Pythagoras, who is said to have declared him the wisest, who first gave names to things.

<sup>1</sup> Posse non peccare, which at the same time implies the possibilitas peccandi. *Comp. Opus imperf. v. 60 (fol. 1278)*: "Prorsus ita factus est, ut peccandi possibilitatem haberet a necessario, peccatum vero a possibili," i. e., the possibility of sinning was necessary, but the sinning itself merely possible. The peccare posse, says Augustine, in the same connection, is natura, the peccare is culpa.

<sup>2</sup> Non posse peccare, or impossibilitas peccandi.

the holy angels who have acceptably passed their probation, and to the redeemed saints in heaven.

In like manner he distinguishes between absolute and relative immortality.<sup>1</sup> The former is the impossibility of dying, founded upon the impossibility of sinning; an attribute of God and of the saints after the resurrection. The latter is the bare pre-conformation for immortality, and implies the opposite possibility of death. This was the immortality of Adam before the fall, and if he had persevered, it would have passed into the impossibility of dying; but it was lost by sin.<sup>2</sup>

FREEDOM, also, Augustine holds to be an original endowment of man; but he distinguishes different kinds of it, and different degrees of its development, which we must observe, or we should charge him with self-contradiction.<sup>3</sup>

By freedom Augustine understands, in the first place, simply *spontaneity* or *self-activity*, as opposed to action under external constraint or from animal instinct. Both sin and holiness are *voluntary*, that is, acts of the will, not motions of natural necessity.<sup>4</sup> This freedom belongs at all times and essentially to the human will, even in the sinful state (in which

<sup>1</sup> Between the non posse mori and the posse non mori, or between the immortalitas major and the immortalitas minor.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. Opus imperf. l. vi. cap. 30 (tom. x. fol. 1360): "Illa vero immortalitas in qua sancti angeli vivunt, et in qua nos quoque victuri sumus, procul dubio major est. Non enim talis, in qua homo habeat quidem in potestate non mori, sicut non peccare, sed etiam possit et mori, quia potest peccare: sed talis est illa immortalitas, in qua omnis qui ibi est, vel erit, mori non poterit, quia nec peccare jam poterit." De corrept. et grat. § 33 (x. f. 768): "Prima libertas voluntatis erat, posse non peccare, novissima erit multo major, non posse peccare: prima immortalitas erat, posse non mori, novissima erit multo major, non posse mori: prima erat perseverantiae potestas, bonum posse non deserere; novissima erit felicitas perseverantiae, bonum non posse deserere."

<sup>3</sup> The distinctions in the Augustinian idea of freedom have been overlooked by Wiggers and most of the old historians, but, on the other hand, brought out with more or less clearness by Neander (in the Kirchengeschichte and in the Dogmengeschichte), by Ritter (Gesch. der christl. Philosophie, ii. p. 341 ff.), Jul. Müller (Die christl. Lehre von der Sünde, ii. 45 ff.), Joh. Huber (Philosophie der Kirchenväter, p. 296 ff.). Baur bases his acute criticism of the Augustinian system in part upon the false assumption that Augustine's view of the liberum arbitrium was precisely the same as that of Pelagius. See below.

<sup>4</sup> Retract. l. c. 9, § 4: "Voluntas est qua et peccatur, et recte vivitur."

the will is, strictly speaking, *self-willed*); it is the necessary condition of guilt and punishment, of merit and reward. In this view no thinking man can deny freedom, without destroying the responsibility and the moral nature of man. An involuntary will is as bald a self-contradiction as an unintelligent intelligence.<sup>1</sup>

A second form of freedom is the *liberum arbitrium*, or freedom of choice. Here Augustine goes half-way with Pelagius; especially in his earlier writings, in opposition to Manichæism, which denied all freedom, and made evil a natural necessity and an original substance. Like Pelagius he ascribes freedom of choice to the first man before the fall. God created man with the double capacity of sinning or not sinning, forbidding the former and commanding the latter. But Augus-

<sup>1</sup> Here belong especially the first chapters of the treatises, *De gratia et libero arbitrio* (tom. x. fol. 717-721), of the *Opus imperf. contra Julianum*, and *Contra duas epistolas Pelagianorum*. In this sense even the strictest adherents of the Augustinian and Calvinistic system have always more or less explicitly conceded human freedom. Thus Cunningham, a Calvinist of the Free Church of Scotland, in his presentation of the Pelagian controversy (*Hist. Theol.* i. p. 325): "Augustine certainly did not deny man's free will altogether, and in every sense of the word; and the most zealous defenders of the doctrines of grace and of Calvinistic principles have admitted that there is a free will or free agency, in some sense, which man has, and which is necessary to his being responsible for his transgressions of God's law. It is laid down in our own [the Westminster] Confession, that 'God hath endued the will of man with that natural liberty, that it is neither forced, nor by any absolute necessity of nature determined to good or evil.'" Dr. Shedd, an American Presbyterian of the Old School, in his *History of Christian Doctrine*, ii. p. 66, where he, in Augustine's view, expresses his own, says: "The guilt of sin consists in its unforced wilfulness; and this guilt is not in the least diminished by the fact that the will cannot overcome its own wilfulness. For this wicked wilfulness was not created in the will, but is the product of the will's act of apostasy. The present impotence to holiness is not an original and primitive impotence. By creation Adam had plenary power, not indeed to *originate* holiness, for no creature has this, but to *preserve* and *perpetuate* it. The present destitution of holiness, and impossibility of originating it, is due therefore to the creature's apostatizing agency, and is a part of his condemnation." Also, p. 80: "There is no author in the whole theological catalogue, who is more careful and earnest than Augustine, to assert that sin is *self-activity*, and that its source is in the voluntary nature of man. Sin, according to him, is not a substance, but an agency; it is not the essence of any faculty in man, but only the action of a faculty." Neither Dr. Cunningham nor Dr. Shedd, however, takes any account of the different forms and degrees of freedom in the Augustinian system.



tine differs from Pelagius in viewing Adam not as poised in entire indifference between good and evil, obedience and disobedience, but as having a positive constitutional tendency to the good, yet involving, at the same time, a possibility of sinning.<sup>1</sup> Besides, Augustine, in the interest of grace and of true freedom, disparages the freedom of choice, and limits it to the beginning, the transient state of probation. This relative indecision cannot be at all predicated of God or the angels, of the saints or of sinners. It is an imperfection of the will, which the actual choosing of the good or the evil more or less surmounts. Adam, with the help of divine grace, without which he might will the good, indeed, but could not persevere in it, should have raised himself to the true freedom, the moral necessity of good; but by choosing the evil, he fell into the bondage of sin.<sup>2</sup> Augustine, however, incidentally concedes, that the *liberum arbitrium* still so far exists even in fallen man, that he can choose, not indeed between sin and holiness, but between individual actions within the sphere of sinfulness and of *justitia civilis*.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> This important distinction is overlooked by Baur, in his *Kirchengeschichte vom 4-6ten Jahrhundert*, p. 143. It takes off the edge from his sharp criticism of the Augustinian system, in which he charges it with inconsistency in starting from the same idea of freedom as Pelagius and yet opposing it.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. respecting this conception of freedom, the treatise, *De libero arbitrio* (in *Opera*, tom. i. f. 569 sqq.), which was begun A. D. 388, and finished A. D. 395, and belongs therefore to his earliest writings; also, *De correptione et gratia* (especially cap. 9-11), and the sixth book of the *Opus imperf. c. Julianum*. Also *Contra duas epistolas Pelag.* l. ii. c. 2 (tom. x. f. 432), where he opposes both the Manichæan denial of the *liberum arbitrium* and the Pelagian assertion of its continuance after the fall. "Manichæi negant, homini bono ex libero arbitrio fuisse initium mali; Pelagiani dicunt, etiam hominem malum sufficienter habere liberum arbitrium ad faciendum præceptum bonum; catholica [fides] utrosque redarguit, et illis dicens: Fecit Deus hominem rectum, et istis dicens: Si vos Filius liberaverit, vere liberi eritis."

<sup>3</sup> *Contra duas epist. Pelag.* ii. c. 5 (or § 9, tom. x. f. 436): "Peccato Adm arbitrium liberum de hominum natura periisse non dicimus, sed ad peccandum valere in hominibus subditis diabolo, ad bene autem pieque vivendum non valere, nisi ipsa voluntas hominis Dei gratia fuerit liberata, et ad omne bonum actionis, sermonis, cogitationis adjuta." Also, *De gratia et libero arbitrio*, c. 15 (x. f. 734): "Semper est autem in nobis voluntas libera, sed non semper est bona. Aut enim a justitia libera est, quando servit peccato, et tunc est mala; aut a peccato libera est, quando servit justitiæ, et tunc est bona. Gratia vero Dei semper est bona." Dr. Baur, i

Finally, Augustine speaks most frequently and most fondly of the highest freedom, the free *self-decision* or *self-determination* of the will towards the *good* and *holy*, the blessed freedom of the children of God; which still includes, it is true, in this earthly life, the possibility of sinning, but becomes in heaven the image of the divine freedom, a *felix necessitas boni*, and *cannot*, because it *will not*, sin.' It is the exact opposite of the *dura necessitas mali* in the state of sin. It is not a faculty possessed in common by all rational minds, but the highest stage of moral development, confined to true Christians. This freedom Augustine finds expressed in that word of our Lord: "If the Son shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed." It does not dispense with grace, but is generated by it; the more grace, the more freedom. The will is free in proportion as it is healthy, and healthy in proportion as it moves in the element of its true life, in God, and obeys Him of its own spontaneous impulse. To serve God is the true freedom.'

is true (Die christl. Kirche vom Anfang des 4ten bis Ende des 6ten Jahrhunderts, p. 140), is not wholly wrong when he, with reference to this passage, charges Augustine with an equivocal play upon words, in retaining the term freedom, but changing its sense into its direct opposite. "Meaningless as it is," says Baur, "to talk in this equivocal sense of freedom, we however see even from this what interest the idea of freedom still had for him, even after he had sacrificed it to the determinism of his system." The Lutheran theologians likewise restricted the liberum arbitrium of fallen man to the *justitia civilis*, in distinction from the *justitia Dei*, or spiritualis. Comp. Melancthon, in the *Confessio Augustana*, art. xviii. The Formula Concordiæ goes even beyond Augustine, and compares the natural man in spiritualibus et divinis rebus with a "statua salis," "truncus," and "lapis," nay, makes him out yet worse off, inasmuch as he is not merely passive, but "*voluntati divine rebellis est et inimicus*" (pp. 661 and 662).

<sup>1</sup> De corrept. et gratia, § 82 (x. 768): "Quid erit liberius libero arbitrio, quando non poterit servire peccato? . . . § 83: Prima libertas voluntatis erat, posse non peccare, novissima erit multo major, non posse peccare."

<sup>2</sup> "Deo servire vera libertas est;" a profound and noble saying. This higher conception of freedom Augustine had substantially expressed long before the Pelagian controversy, e. g., in the Confessions. Comp. also De civit. Dei, l. xiv. c. 11: "Arbitrium igitur voluntatis tunc est vere liberum, quum vitis peccatisque non servit. Tale datum est a Deo: quod amissum proprio vitio, nisi a quo dari potuit, reddi non potest. Unde veritas dicit: *Si vos filius liberaverit, tunc vere liberi eritis*. Id ipsum est autem, ac si diceret: *Si vos Filius salvos fecerit, tunc vere salvi eritis*. Inde quippe liberatur, unde salvatur."

§ 153. *The Augustinian System: The Fall and its Consequences.*

To understand Augustine's doctrine of the fall of man, we must remember, first of all, that he starts with the idea of the organic unity of the human race, and with the profound parallel of Paul between the first and the second Adam;<sup>1</sup> that he views the first man not merely as an individual, but at the same time as the progenitor and representative of the whole race, standing to natural mankind in the same relation as that of Christ to redeemed and regenerate mankind. The history of the fall, recorded in a manner at once profound and childlike in the third chapter of Genesis, has, therefore, universal significance. In Adam human nature fell, and therefore all, who have inherited that nature from him, who were in him as the fruit in the germ, and who have grown up, as it were, one person with him.<sup>2</sup>

But Augustine did not stop with the very just idea of an organic connection of the human race, and of the sin of Adam with original sin; he also supposed a sort of pre-existence of all the posterity of Adam in himself, so that they actually and personally sinned in him, though not, indeed, with individual consciousness. Since we were, at the time of the fall, "in lumbis Adami," the sin of Adam is "jure seminationis et germinationis," our sin and guilt, and physical death is a penalty even upon infant children, as it was a penalty upon Adam. The posterity of Adam therefore suffer punishment not for the sin of another, but for the sin which they themselves committed in Adam. This view, as we shall see farther on, Augustine founds upon a false interpretation of Rom. v. 12.

I. THE FALL. The original state of man included the possibility of sinning, and this was the imperfection of that

<sup>1</sup> Rom. v. 12 ff.; 1 Cor. xv. 22.

<sup>2</sup> De civit. Dei, l. xiii. c. 14: "Omnes enim fulmus in illo uno, quando omnes fulmus ille unus, qui per feminam lapsus est in peccatum, quæ de illo facta est ante peccatum." Compare other passages below.

state. This possibility became reality. Why it should have been realized, is incomprehensible; since evil never has, like good, a sufficient reason. It is irrationality itself. Augustine fixes an immense gulf between the primitive state and the state of sin. But when thought has accomplished this adventurous leap, it finds his system coherent throughout.

Adam did not fall without temptation from another. That angel, who, in his pride, had turned away from God to himself, tempted man, who, standing yet in his integrity, provoked his envy. He first approached the woman, the weaker and the more credulous. The essence of the sin of Adam consisted not in the eating of the fruit; for this was in itself neither wrong nor harmful; but in *disobedience* to the command of God. "Obedience was enjoined by that commandment, as the virtue which, in the rational creature, is, as it were, the mother and guardian of all virtues." The principle, the root of sin, was pride, self-seeking, the craving of the will to forsake its author, and become its own. This pride preceded the outward act. Our first parents were sinful in heart, before they had yet fallen into open disobedience. "For man never yet proceeded to an evil work, unless incited to it by an evil will." This pride even preceded the temptation of the serpent. "If man had not previously begun to take pleasure in himself, the serpent could have had no hold upon him."

The fall of Adam appears the greater, and the more worthy of punishment, if we consider, first, the height he occupied, the divine image in which he was created; then, the simplicity of the commandment, and ease of obeying it, in the abundance of all manner of fruits in paradise; and finally, the sanction of the most terrible punishment from his Creator and greatest Benefactor.

Thus Augustine goes behind the appearance to the substance; below the surface to the deeper truth. He does not stop with the outward act, but looks chiefly at the disposition which lies at its root.

II. The CONSEQUENCES of the primal sin, both for Adam and for his posterity, are, in Augustine's view, comprehensive and

terrible in proportion to the heinousness of the sin itself. And all these consequences are at the same time punishments from the righteous God, who has, by one and the same law, joined reward with obedience and penalty with sin. They are all comprehended under *death*, in its widest sense; as Paul says: "The wages of sin is death;" and in Gen. ii. 17 we are to understand by the threatened death, all evil both to body and to soul.

Augustine particularizes the consequences of sin under seven heads; the first four being negative, the others positive:

1. *Loss of the freedom of choice*,<sup>1</sup> which consisted in a positive inclination and love to the good, with the implied possibility of sin. In place of this freedom has come the hard necessity of sinning, bondage to evil. "The will, which, aided by grace, would have become a source of good, became to Adam, in his apostasy from God, a source of evil."

2. *Obstruction of knowledge*. Man was originally able to learn everything easily, without labor, and to understand everything aright. But now the mind is beclouded, and knowledge can be acquired and imparted only in the sweat of the face.

3. *Loss of the grace of God*, which enabled man to *perform* the good which his freedom willed, and to persevere therein. By not willing, man forfeited his ability, and now, though he would do good, he cannot.

4. *Loss of paradise*. The earth now lies under the curse of God: it brings forth thorns and thistles, and in the sweat of his face man must eat his bread.

5. *Concupiscence*, i. e., not sensuousness in itself, but the preponderance of the sensuous, the lusting of the flesh against the spirit. Thus God punishes sin with sin—a proposition which Julian considered blasphemy. Originally the body was as joyfully obedient to the spirit, as man to God. There was but one will in exercise. By the fall this beautiful harmony has been broken, and that antagonism has arisen which Paul

<sup>1</sup> Of course not in indifferent things of ordinary life, in which the greatest sinner is free to choose, but in reference to the great religious decision for or against God and divine things.

describes in the seventh chapter of the Epistle to the Romana. (Augustine referred this passage to the regenerate state.) The rebellion of the spirit against God involved, as its natural punishment, the rebellion of the flesh against the spirit. *Concupiscentia*, therefore, is substantially the same as what Paul calls in the bad sense "flesh." It is not the sensual constitution in itself, but its predominance over the higher, rational nature of man.<sup>1</sup> It is true, however, that Augustine, in his longing after an unimpeded life in the spirit, was inclined to treat even lawful appetites, such as hunger and thirst, so far as they assume the form of craving desire, as at least remotely connected with the fall.<sup>2</sup> Julian attributed the strength of animal desire to the animal element in the original nature of man. Augustine answered, that the superiority of man to the brute consists in the complete dominion of reason over the sensual nature, and that therefore his approach to the brute in this respect is a punishment from God. Concupiscence then is no more a merely corporeal thing than the biblical *σάρξ*, but has its seat in the soul, without which no lust arises. We must, therefore, suppose a conflict in the soul itself, a lower, earthly, self-seeking instinct, and a higher, god-like impulse.

This is the generic sense of *concupiscentia*: the struggle of the collective sensual and psychical desires against the god-like spirit. But Augustine frequently employs the word, as other corresponding terms are used, in the narrower sense of unlawful sexual desire. This appeared immediately after the fall, in the shame of our first parents, which was not for their nakedness itself, since this was nothing new to them, but for the

<sup>1</sup> Not the "*sentiendi vivacitas*," but the "*libido sentiendi, quæ nos ad sentiendum, sive consentientes mente, sive repugnantes, appetitu carnalis voluptatis impellit.*" C. Julianum, l. iv. c. 14 (§ 65, tom. x. f. 615). He illustrates the difference by a reference to Matt. v. 28. "Non ait Dominus: qui viderit mulierem, sed: qui *viderit ad concupiscendum, jam mœchatus est eam in corde suo.* . . . Illud [videre] Deus condidit, instruendo corpus humanum; illud [videre ad concupiscendum] diabolus seminavit, persuadendo peccatum."

<sup>2</sup> "Quis autem mente sobrius non mallet, si fieri posset, sine ulla mordaci voluptate carnali vel arida sumere alimenta, vel humida, sicut sumimus hæc aëria, quæ de circumfusiis auris respirando et spirando sorbemus et fundimus?" Contra Jul. iv. a. 14, § 68, f. 616.

lusting of the body; for something, therefore, in and of itself good (the body's own enjoyment, as it were), but now unlawfully rising, through the discord between body and soul. But would there then have been propagation without the fall? Unquestionably; but it would have left the dominion of reason over the sensual desire undisturbed. Propagation would have been the act of a pure will and chaste love, and would have had no more shame about it than the scattering of seed upon the maternal bosom of the earth. But now lust rules the spirit; and Augustine in his earlier years had had bitter experience of its tyranny. To this element of sin in the act of procreation he ascribes the pains of child-birth, which in fact appear in Genesis as a consequence of the fall, and as a curse from God. Had man remained pure, "the ripe fruit would have descended from the maternal womb without labor or pain of the woman, as the fruit descends from the tree."<sup>1</sup>

6. *Physical death*, with its retinue of diseases and bodily pains. Adam was indeed created mortal, that is, capable of death, but not subject to death. By a natural development the possibility of dying would have been overcome by the power of immortality; the body would have been gradually spiritualized and clothed with glory, without a violent transition or even the weakness of old age. But now man is fallen under the bitter necessity of death. Because the spirit forsook God willingly, it must now forsake the body unwillingly. With profound discernment Augustine shows that not only the actual severance of soul and body, but the whole life of sinful man is a continual dying. Even with the pains of birth and the first cry of the child does death begin. The threatening of the Lord, therefore: "In the day ye eat thereof, ye shall die," began at once to be fulfilled. For though our first parents lived many years afterwards, they immediately began to grow old and to die. Life is an unceasing march towards death, and "to no one is it granted, even for a little, to stand still, or to go more slowly, but all are constrained to go with equal pace, and no one is impelled differently from others. For he whose life has been shorter, saw therefore no shorter

<sup>1</sup> De civitate Dei, xiv. 26.

day than he whose life was longer. And he who uses more time to reach death, does not therefore go slower, but only makes a longer journey."

7. The most important consequence of the fall of Adam is *original sin* and *hereditary guilt* in his whole posterity; and as this was also one of the chief points of controversy, it must be exhibited at length.

§ 154. *The Augustinian System: Original Sin, and the Origin of the Human Soul.*

Original sin,<sup>1</sup> according to Augustine, is the native bent of the soul towards evil, with which all the posterity of Adam—excepting Christ, who was conceived by the Holy Ghost and born of a pure Virgin—come into the world, and out of which all actual sins of necessity proceed. It appears principally in concupiscence, or the war of the flesh against the spirit. Sin is not merely an individual act, but also a condition, a status and habitus, which continues, by procreation, from generation to generation. Original sin results necessarily, as has been already remarked, from the generic and representative character of Adam, in whom human *nature* itself, and so, potentially, all who should inherit that nature, fell.<sup>2</sup> The corruption of the root communicates itself to the trunk and the branches. But where sin is, there is always guilt and ill-desert in the eyes of a righteous God. The whole race, through the fall of its progenitor, has become a *massa perditionis*. This, of course, still admits different degrees both of sinfulness and of guilt.

Original sin and guilt are propagated by natural genera-

<sup>1</sup> Peccatum originale, vitium hereditarium.

<sup>2</sup> De peccatorum meritis et remissione, l. iii. c. 7 (§ 14, tom. x. f. 78): "In Adam omnes tunc peccaverunt, quando in ejus natura illa insita vi, qua eos gignere poterat, adhuc omnes ille unus fuerunt." De corrept. et gratia, § 28 (x. f. 765): "Quia vero [Adam] per liberum arbitrium Deum deseruit, justum judicium Dei expertus est, ut cum tota sua stirpe, quæ in illo adhuc posita tota cum illo peccata verat, damnaretur." This view easily fell in with Augustine's Platonico-Aristotelian realism, which regarded the general conceptions as the original types of individual things. But the root of it lay deeper in his Christian consciousness and profound conviction of the all-pervading power of sin.



tion. The generic character planted in Adam unfolds itself in a succession of individuals, who organically grow one out of another. As sin, however, is not merely a thing of the body, but primarily and essentially of the spirit, the question arises, on which of the current theories as to the *origin* and *propagation of souls* Augustine based his view.

This metaphysical problem enters theology in connection with the doctrine of original sin; this, therefore, is the place to say what is needful upon it.<sup>1</sup> The Gnostic and pantheistic *emanation-theory* had long since been universally rejected as heretical. But three other views had found advocates in the church:

1. The *Traducian*<sup>2</sup> or *Generation-theory* teaches that the soul originates with the body from the act of procreation, and therefore through human agency. It is countenanced by several passages of Scripture, such as Gen. v. 3; Ps. li. 5; Rom. v. 12; 1 Cor. xv. 22; Eph. ii. 3; it is decidedly suitable to the doctrine of original sin; and hence, since Tertullian, it has been adopted by most Western theologians in support and explanation of that doctrine.<sup>3</sup>

2. The *Creation-theory* ascribes each individual soul to a direct creative act of God, and supposes it to be united with

<sup>1</sup> "La première difficulté est," says Leibnitz in the *Theodicée*, Partie i. 86, "comment l'âme a pu être infectée du péché originel, qui est la racine des péchés actuels, sans qu'il y ait eu de l'injustice en Dieu à l'y exposer."

<sup>2</sup> From *tradux*, propagator. The author of this theory is Tertullian, *De anima*, c. 27 (*Opera*, ed. Fr. Oehler, tom. ii. p. 599 sqq.): "Immo simul ambas [animam et corpus] et concipi et confici et perfici dicimus, sicut et promi, nec ullum intervenire momentum in conceptu quo locus ordinetur. . . . Igitur ex uno homine tota hæc animarum redundantia." Cap. 36 (p. 617): "Anima in utero seminata pariter cum carne pariter cum ipsa sortitur." Comp. c. 19 (anima velut surculus quidam ex matrice Adam in propaginem deducta); *De resurr. carnis*, c. 45; *Adv. Valentin.* c. 25 (tradux animæ). With Tertullian this theory was connected with a materializing view of the soul.

<sup>3</sup> Jerome says of the *maxima pars occidentaliū*, that they teach: "Ut quomodo corpus ex corpore, sic anima nascatur ex anima, et simili cum brutis animalibus conditione subsistat." Ep. 78 ad Marcell. Leo the Great declared it even to be *ortholica fides*, that every man "in corporis et animæ substantiam formari intra materna viscera." Ep. 15 ad Turrib. Similarly among the Oriental fathers, Theodoret, *Fab. hæc.* v. 9: ἡ ἐκκλησία τοῖς θεοῖς πειδομένη λόγοις, — λέγει τὴν ψυχὴν συνδημιουργοῦν δαὶ τῷ σώματι.

the body either at the moment of its generation, or afterwards. This view is held by several Eastern theologians and by Jerome, who appeals to the unceasing creative activity of God (John v. 17). It required the assumption that the soul, which must proceed pure from the hand of the Creator, becomes sinful by its connection with the naturally generated body. Pelagius and his followers were creationists.<sup>1</sup>

3. The theory of *Pre-existence*, which was originated by Plato and more fully developed by Origen, supposes that the soul, even before the origin of the body, existed and sinned in another world, and has been banished in the body as in a prison,<sup>2</sup> to expiate that personal Adamic guilt, and by an ascetic process to be restored to its original state. This is one of the Origenistic heresies, which were condemned under Justinian. Even Gregory of Nyssa, although, like Nemesius and Cyril of Alexandria, he supposed the soul to be created before the body, compares Origen's theory to the heathen myths and fables. Origen himself allowed that the Bible does not directly teach the pre-existence of the soul, but maintained that several passages, such as the strife between Esau and Jacob in the womb, and the leaping of John the Baptist in the womb of Elizabeth at the salutation of Mary, imply it. The only truth in this theory is that every human soul has from eternity existed in the thought and purpose of God.<sup>3</sup>

Augustine emphatically rejects the doctrine of pre-existence,<sup>4</sup> without considering that his own theory of a generic

<sup>1</sup> Jerome says, appealing to John v. 17; Zech. xii. 1; Ps. xxxiii. 15: "Quotidie Deus fabricatur animas, cujus velle fecisse est, et conditor esse non cessat." Pelagius, in his Confession of Faith, declares for the view that souls are made and given by God Himself.

<sup>2</sup> The *σῶμα* interpreted as *σῆμα* (sepulchre). Origen appeals to the groaning of the creation, Rom. viii. 19.

<sup>3</sup> Lately the theory of pre-existence has found in America an advocate in Dr. Edward Beecher, in his book: *The Conflict of Ages*, Boston, 1858. Wordsworth has given it a poetic garb in his Ode on Immortality:

"Our birth is but a sleep and a forgetting:  
The soul that rises with us, our life's star,  
Hath had elsewhere its setting,  
And cometh from afar."

<sup>4</sup> *De civit. Dei*, xi. 23. *Ad Oros. c. Priscill. et Orig. c. 8.* In his earlier work, *De libero arbitrio* (about 395), he spoke more favorably of Pre-existentianism.

pre-existence and apostasy of all men in Adam is really liable to similar objections. For he also hangs the whole fate of the human race on a transcendental act of freedom, lying beyond our temporal consciousness; though, it is true, he places this act in the beginning of earthly history, and ascribes it to the one general ancestor, while Origen transfers it into a previous world, and views it as an act of each individual soul.<sup>1</sup>

But between creationism and traducianism Augustine wavers, because the Scriptures do not expressly decide. He wishes to keep both the continuous creative activity of God and the organic union of body and soul.

Augustine regards this whole question as belonging to science and the schools, not to faith and the church, and makes a confession of ignorance which, in a man of his speculative genius, involves great self-denial. "Where the Scripture," he says, "renders no certain testimony, human inquiry must beware of deciding one way or the other. If it were necessary to salvation to know anything concerning it, Scripture would have said more."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Comp. BAUR, Vorlesungen über die Dogmengeschichte, Bd. i. Th. ii. p. 31: "What essentially distinguishes the Augustinian system from that of Origen, consists only (?) in this, that in place of the pretemporal fall of souls we have the Adamic apostasy, and that what in Origen bears yet a heathen impress, has in Augustine assumed a purely Old Testament [certainly, however, also a Pauline] form."

<sup>2</sup> De peccatorum mer. et remiss. l. ii. c. 36, § 59. He still remained thus undecided in his *Retractations*, lib. i. cap. 1, § 3 (*Opera*, tom. i. f. 4), where he honestly acknowledges: "Quod attinet ad ejus [animi] originem . . . nec tunc sciebam, nec adhuc scio." He frequently treats of this question, e. g., *De anima et ejus origine*; *De Genesi ad litteram*, x. 28; *Epist.* 190 ad Optatum; and *Opus imperf.* iv. 104. Comp. also Gangauf, l. c. p. 248 ff. and John Huber, *Philosophie der Kirchenväter*, p. 291 ff. Huber gives the following terse presentation of the Augustinian doctrine: "In the problem of the origin of the soul Augustine arrived at no definite view. In his earlier writings he is as yet even unsettled as to the doctrine of pre-existence (*De lib. arbitr.* i. 12, 24; iii. 20 and 21), but afterwards he rejects it most decidedly, especially as presented by Origen, and at the same time criticises his whole theory of the origin of the world (*De civit. Dei*, xi. 28). In like manner he declares against the theory of emanation, according to which the soul has flowed out of God (*De Genes. ad lit.* vii. 2, 3), is of one nature (*Epist.* 166 ad Hieron. § 3) and coeternal (*De civ. Dei*, x. 31). Between creationism and generationism, however, he can come to no decision, being kept in suspense not so much by scientific as by theological considerations. As to generationism, he remembers Tertullian, and fears being compelled,

§ 155. DOCTRINE OF ORIGINAL SIN AND HEREDITARY GUILT. 833

The three theories of the origin of the soul, we may remark by way of concluding criticism, admit of a reconciliation. Each of them contains an element of truth, and is wrong only when exclusively held. Every human soul has an ideal pre-existence in the divine mind, the divine will, and we may add, in the divine life; and every human soul as well as every human body is the product of the united agency of God and the parents. Pre-existentism errs in confounding an ideal with a concrete, self-conscious, individual pre-existence; traducianism, in ignoring the creative divine agency without which no being, least of all an immortal mind, can come into existence, and in favoring a materialistic conception of the soul; creatianism, in denying the human agency, and thus placing the soul in a merely accidental relation to the body.

§ 155. *Arguments for the Doctrine of Original Sin and Hereditary Guilt.*

We now pass to the proofs by which Augustine established his doctrine of original sin and guilt, and to the objections urged by his opponents.

1. For Scriptural authority he appealed chiefly and repeatedly to the words in Rom. v. 12, ἐφ' ᾧ πάντες ἥμαρτον, which

like him, to affirm the corporeality of the soul. He perceives, however, that this theory explains the transmission of original sin, and propounds the inquiry, whether perchance one soul may not spring from another, as one light is kindled from another without diminution of its flame (Ep. 190 ad Optatum, 4, 14-15). But for creationism the chief difficulty lies in this very doctrine of original sin. If the soul is created directly by God, it is pure and sinless, and the question arises, how it has deserved to be clothed with corrupt flesh and brought into the succession of original sin. God Himself appears there to be the cause of its sinfulness, inasmuch as he caused it to become guilty by uniting it with the body (De an. et ejus orig. l. 8, 9; ii. 9, 13). All the passages of Scripture relevant to this point agree only in this, that God is the Giver, Author, and Former of souls; but how he forms them—whether he creates them out of nothing or derives them from the parents, they do not declare (Ib. iv. 11, 15).—His doctrine, that God created everything together as to the germ, might naturally have inclined him rather to generationism, yet he does not get over his indecision, and declares even in his Retractions (i. 1, 3), that he neither knew previously nor knows now, whether succeeding souls were descended from the first one or newly created as individuals.

are erroneously translated by the Vulgate: *in quo*<sup>1</sup> *omnes peccaverunt*. As Augustine had but slight knowledge of Greek, he commonly confined himself to the Latin Bible, and here he referred the *in quo* to Adam (the "one man" in the beginning of the verse, which is far too remote); but the Greek ἐφ' ᾧ must be taken as neuter and as a conjunction in the sense: *on the ground that, or because, all have sinned.*<sup>2</sup> The exegesis of Augustine, and his doctrine of a *personal* fall, as it were, of all men in Adam, are therefore doubtless untenable. On the other hand, Paul unquestionably teaches in this passage a causal connection between sin and death, and also a causal connection between the sin of Adam and the sinfulness of his posterity, therefore original sin. The proof of this is found in the whole parallel between Adam and Christ, and their representative relation to mankind (comp. 1 Cor. xv. 45 ff.), and especially in the πάντες ἡμάρτον, but not in the ἐφ' ᾧ as translated by the Vulgate and Augustine. Other passages of Scripture to which Augustine appealed, as teaching original sin, were such as Gen. viii. 21; Ps. li. 7; John iii. 6; 1 Cor. vii. 14; Eph. ii. 3.

2. The practice of infant baptism in the church, with the customary formula, "for remission of sins," and such accompanying ceremonies as exorcism, presupposes the dominion of sin and of demoniacal powers even in infancy. Since the child, before the awakening of self-consciousness, has committed no actual sin, the effect of baptism must relate to the forgive-

<sup>1</sup> Which presupposes ἐν ᾧ. The whole verse reads in the Vulgate: "Propterea, sicut per unum hominem peccatum in hunc mundum intravit, et per peccatum mors, et ita in omnes homines mors pertransiit, *in quo* omnes peccaverunt." Comp. Augustine, De peccat. merit. et remissione, l. 8, 10; Op. imperf. ii. 68; Contra duas ep. Pel. iv. 4; De nupt. et concup. ii. 5. Pelagius explained the passage (ad Rom. v. 12): "In eo, quod omnes peccaverunt, exemplo Adæ peccant," or per imitationem in contrast with per propagationem. Julian translated ἐφ' ᾧ propter quod. Comp. Contra Jul. vi. 75; Op. imperf. ii. 66.

<sup>2</sup> Εφ' ᾧ (= ἐφ' οὗ) is equivalent to ἐνι τοῦτο ὅτι, on the ground that, presupposing that, propterea quod. So Meyer, *in loco*, and others. R. Rothe (in an extremely acute exegetical monograph upon Rom. v. 12-21, Wittenberg, 1886) and Chr. Fr. Schmid (Bibl. Theol. ii. p. 126) explain ἐφ' ᾧ by ἐνι τοῦτο ὅτι, i. e., under the more particular specification that, inasmuch as. Comp. the Commentaries.

ness of original sin and guilt.' This was a very important point from the beginning of the controversy, and one to which Augustine frequently reverted.

Here he had unquestionably a logical advantage over the Pelagians, who retained the traditional usage of infant baptism, but divested it of its proper import, made it signify a mere ennobling of a nature already good, and, to be consistent, should have limited baptism to adults for the forgiveness of actual sins.

The Pelagians, however, were justly offended by the revolting inference of the damnation of unbaptized infants, which is nowhere taught in the Holy Scriptures, and is repugnant to every unperverted religious instinct. Pelagius inclined to assign to unbaptized infants a middle state of half-blessedness, between the kingdom of heaven appointed to the baptized and the hell of the ungodly; though on this point he is not positive.\* He evidently makes salvation depend, not so much upon the Christian redemption, as upon the natural moral character of individuals. Hence also baptism had no such importance in his view as in that of his antagonist.

Augustine, on the authority of Matt. xxv. 34, 46, and other Scriptures, justly denies a neutral middle state, and meets the difficulty by supposing different degrees of blessedness and damnation (which, in fact, must be admitted), corresponding to the different degrees of holiness and wickedness. But, con-

\* Comp. De nuptiis et concup. l. c. 26 (tom. x. f. 291 sq.); De peccat. mer. et remis. l. c. 26 (§ 39, tom. x. fol. 22); De gratia Christi, c. 32, 33 (x. 245 sq.), and other passages. The relation of the doctrine of original sin to the practice of infant baptism came very distinctly into view from the beginning of the controversy. Some have even concluded from a passage of Augustine (De pecc. mer. iii. 6), that the controversy began with infant baptism and not with original sin. Comp. Wiggers, i. p. 59.

† "Quo non eant scio, quo eant nescio," says he of unbaptized children. He ascribed to them, it is true, *salus* or *vita æterna*, but not the *regnum cælorum*. Aug. De pecc. mer. et remissione, i. 18; iii. 8. In the latter place Augustine says, that it is absurd to affirm a "*vita æterna extra regnum Dei*." In his book, De hæresibus, cap. 88, Augustine says of the Pelagians that they assign to unbaptized children "*æternam et beatam quandam vitam extra regnum Dei*," and teach that children being born without original sin, are baptized for the purpose of being admitted "*ad regnum Dei*," and transferred "*de bono in melius*."

strained by the idea of original sin, and by the supposed necessity of baptism to salvation, he does not shrink from consigning unbaptized children to damnation itself,<sup>1</sup> though he softens to the utmost this frightful dogma, and reduces the damnation to the minimum of punishment or the privation of blessedness.<sup>2</sup> He might have avoided the difficulty, without prejudice to his premises, by his doctrine of the election of grace, or by assuming an extraordinary application of the merits of Christ in death or in Hades. But the Catholic doctrine of the necessity of outward baptism to regeneration and entrance into the kingdom of God, forbade him a more liberal view respecting the endless destiny of that half of the human race which die in childhood.

We may recall, however, the noteworthy fact, that the third canon of the North-African council at Carthage in 418, which condemns the opinion that unbaptized children are saved, is in many manuscripts wanting, and is therefore of doubtful authenticity. The sternness of the Augustinian system here gave way before the greater power of Christian love. Even Augustine, *De civitate Dei*, speaking of the example of Melchisedec, ventures the conjecture, that God may have also among the heathen an elect people, true Israelites according to the spirit, whom He draws to Himself through the secret power of His spirit. Why, we may ask, is not this thought applicable above all to children, to whom we know the Saviour

<sup>1</sup> De pecc. orig. c. 31 (§ 36, tom. x. f. 269): "Unde ergo recte *infans illa perditione punitur*, nisi quia pertinet ad massam perditionis?" De nupt. et concup. c. 23 (x. 292): "Remanet originale peccatum, per quod [parvuli] sub diaboli potestate captivi sunt, nisi inde lavacro regenerationis et Christi sanguine redimantur et transeant in regnum redemptoris sui." De peccat. merit. et remissione, iii. cap. 4 (x. 74): "Manifestum est, eos [parvulos] ad damnationem, nisi hoc [incorporation with Christ through baptism] eis collatum fuerit, pertinere. Non autem damnari possent, si peccatum utique non haberent."

<sup>2</sup> Contra Julianum, l. v. c. 11 (§ 44, tom. x. f. 651): "Si enim quod de Sodomis ait [Matt. x. 16; xi. 24] et utique non solis intelligi voluit, alius alio tolerabilius in die iudicii punietur: quis dubitaverit *parvulos non baptizatos*, qui solum habent originale peccatum, nec ullis propriis aggravantur, in *damnatione omnium levissima* futuros?" Comp. De pecc. meritis et remissione, l. i. c. 16 (or § 21, tom. x. 12): "Potest proinde recte dici, parvulos sine baptismo de corpore exeuntes in *damnatione omnium mitissima* futuros."

Himself, in a very special sense (and without reference to baptism) ascribes a right to the kingdom of heaven?

3. The testimony of Scripture and of the church is confirmed by experience. The inclination to evil awakes with the awaking of consciousness and voluntary activity. Even the suckling gives signs of self-will, spite, and disobedience. As moral development advances, the man feels this disposition to be really bad, and worthy of punishment, not a mere limitation or defect. Thus we find even the child subject to suffering, to sickness, and to death. It is contrary to the pure idea of God, that this condition should have been the original one. God must have created man faultless and inclined towards good. The conviction that human nature is not as it should be, in fact pervades all mankind. Augustine, in one place, cites a passage of the third book of Cicero's Republic: "Nature has dealt with man not as a real mother, but as a step-mother, sending him into the world with a naked, frail, and feeble body, and with a soul anxious to avoid burdens, bowed down under all manner of apprehensions, averse to effort, and inclined to sensuality. Yet can we not mistake a certain divine fire of the spirit, which glimmers on in the heart as it were under ashes." Cicero laid the blame of this on creative nature. "He thus saw clearly the fact, but not the cause, for he had no conception of original sin, because he had no knowledge of the Holy Scriptures."

### § 156. *Answers to Pelagian Objections.*

To these positive arguments must be added the direct answers to the objections brought against the Augustinian theory, sometimes with great acuteness, by the Pelagians, and especially by Julian of Eclanum, in the dialectic course of the controversy.

Julian sums up his argument against Augustine in five points, intended to disprove original sin from premises conceded by Augustine himself: If man is the creature of God, he must come from the hands of God good; if marriage is in itself good, it cannot generate evil; if baptism remits all sins



and regenerates, the children of the baptized cannot inherit sin; if God is righteous, he cannot condemn children for the sins of others; if human nature is capable of perfect righteousness, it cannot be inherently defective.<sup>1</sup>

We notice particularly the first four of these points; the fifth is substantially included in the first.

1. If original sin propagates itself in generation, if there is a *tradux peccati* and a *malum naturale*, then sin is substantial, and we are found in the Manichæan error, except that we make God, who is the Father of children, the author of sin, while Manichæism refers sin to the devil, as the father of human nature.<sup>2</sup>

This imputation was urged repeatedly and emphatically by the sharp and clear-sighted Julian. But according to Augustine all nature is, and ever remains, in itself good, so far as it is nature (in the sense of creature); evil is only corruption of nature, vice cleaving to it. Manichæus makes evil a substance, Augustine, only an accident; the former views it as a positive and eternal principle, the latter derives it from the creature, and attributes to it a merely negative or privative existence; the one affirms it to be a necessity of nature, the other, a free act; the former locates it in matter, in the body, the latter, in the will.<sup>3</sup> Augustine retorted on the Pelagians the charge of Manichæism, for their locating the carnal lust of man in his original nature itself, and so precluding its cure. But in their view the *concupiscentia carnis* was not what it was to Augustine, but an innocent natural impulse, which becomes sin only when indulged to excess.

<sup>1</sup> Contra Julianum Pelagianum, l. ii. c. 9 (§ 31, tom. x. f. 545 sq.).

<sup>2</sup> Comp. as against this the 2d book De nuptiis et concup.; Contra Jul. l. i. and II., and the Opus imperf., in the Introduction, and lib. iv. cap. 38.

<sup>3</sup> "Non est ulla substantia vel natura, sed vitium." De nupt. et concup. l. ii. c. 34 (§ 57, x. f. 332). "Non ortum est malum nisi in bono; nec tamen summo et immutabili, quod est natura Dei, sed facto de nihilo per sapientiam Dei." Ibid. lib. ii. c. 29 (or § 50, tom. x. f. 327). Comp. particularly also Contra duas epist. Pelag. li. c. 2, where he sharply discriminates his doctrine alike from Manichæism and Pelagianism. These passages were overlooked by BAUR and MILMAN, who think that there is good foundation for the charge of Manichæism against Augustine's doctrine of sin. GIBSON (oh. xxxiii.) derived the orthodoxy of Augustine from the Manichæan school!

2. If evil is nothing substantial, we should expect that the baptized and regenerate, in whom its power is broken, would beget sinless children. If sin is propagated, righteousness should be propagated also.

But baptism, according to Augustine, removes only the guilt (*reatus*) of original sin, not the sin itself (*concupiscentia*). In procreation it is not the regenerate spirit that is the agent, but the nature which is still under the dominion of the *concupiscentia*. "Regenerate parents produce not as sons of God, but as children of the world." All that are born need therefore regeneration through the same baptism, which washes away the curse of original sin. Augustine appeals to analogies; especially to the fact that from the seed of the good olive a wild olive grows, although the good and the wild greatly differ.<sup>1</sup>

3. But if the production of children is not possible without fleshly lust, must not marriage be condemned?<sup>2</sup>

No; marriage, and the consequent production of children, are, like nature, in themselves good. They belong to the mutual polarity of the sexes. The blessing: "Be fruitful and multiply," and the declaration: "Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife, and they shall be one flesh," come down from paradise itself, and generation would have taken place even without sin, yet "*sine ulla libidine*," as a "*tranquilla motio et conjunctio vel commixtio membrorum*." Carnal concupiscence is subsequent and adventitious, existing now as an accident in the act of generation, and concealed by nature herself with shame; but it does not annul the blessing of marriage. It is only through sin that the sexual parts have become *pudenda*; in themselves they are honorable. Undoubtedly the regenerate are called to

<sup>1</sup> De peccat. mer. et remis. ii. cap. 9 and c. 25; De nuptiis et concup. i. c. 18; Contra Julian. vi. c. 5.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. against this especially the first book De nuptiis et concupiscentia (tom. x. f. 279 sqq.), written 418 or 419, in order to refute this objection. Julian answered this in a work of four books, which gave Augustine occasion to compose the second book De nuptiis et concup., and the six books Contra Julianum, A. D. 421. Julian published an answer to this again, which Augustine in turn refuted in his Opus imperf., A. D. 429, during the writing of which he died, A. D. 430.

reduce concupiscence to the mere service of generation, that they may produce children, who shall be children of God, and therefore born again in Christ. Such desire Augustine, with reference to 1 Cor. vii. 3 ff., calls "a pardonable guilt." But since, in the present state, the *concupiscentia carnis* is inseparable from marriage, it would have been really more consistent to give up the "*bonum nuptiarum*," and to regard marriage as a necessary evil; as the monastic asceticism, favored by the spirit of the age, was strongly inclined to do. And in this respect there was no material difference between Augustine and Pelagius. The latter went fully as far, and even farther, in his praise of virginity as the highest form of Christian virtue; his letter to the nun Demetrias is a picture of a perfect virgin who in her moral purity proves the excellency of human nature.

4. It contradicts the righteousness of God, to suppose one man punished for the sin of another. We are accountable only for sins which are the acts of our own will. Julian appealed to the oft-quoted passage, Ezek. xviii. 2-4, where God forbids the use of the proverb in Israel: "The fathers have eaten sour grapes, and the children's teeth are set on edge," and where the principle is laid down: "The soul that sinneth, it shall die."<sup>1</sup>

On the individualizing principle of Pelagius this objection is very natural, and is irrefragable; but in the system of Augustine, where mankind appears as an organic whole, and Adam as the representative of human nature and as including all his posterity, it partially loses its force. Augustine thus makes all men sharers in the fall, so that they are, in fact, punished for what they themselves did in Adam. But this by no means fully solves the difficulty. He should have applied his organic view differently, and should have carried it farther. For if Adam must not be isolated from his descendants, neither must original sin be taken apart from actual sin. God does not punish the one without the other. He always looks upon the life of man as a whole; upon original sin as

<sup>1</sup> Aug. *Opus imperf.* iii. 18, 19 (tom. x. 1067, 1069). Augustine's answer is unsatisfactory.

the fruitful mother of actual sins; and he condemns a man not for the guilt of another, but for making the deed of Adam his own, and repeating the fall by his own voluntary transgression. This every one does who lives beyond unconscious infancy. But Augustine, as we have already seen, makes even infancy subject to punishment for original sin alone, and thus unquestionably trenches not only upon the righteousness of God, but also upon his love, which is the beginning and end of his ways, and the key to all his works.

To sum up the Augustinian doctrine of sin: This fearful power is universal; it rules the species, as well as individuals; it has its seat in the moral character of the will, reaches thence to the particular actions, and from them reacts again upon the will; and it subjects every man, without exception, to the punitive justice of God. Yet the corruption is not so great as to alter the substance of man, and make him incapable of redemption. The denial of man's *capacity* for redemption is the Manichæan error, and the opposite extreme to the Pelagian denial of the *need* of redemption. "That is still good," says Augustine, "which bewails lost good; for had not something good remained in our nature, there would be no grief over lost good for punishment."<sup>1</sup> Even in the hearts of the heathen the law of God is not wholly obliterated,<sup>2</sup> and even in the life of the most abandoned men there are some good works. But these avail nothing to salvation. They are not truly good, because they proceed from the turbid source of selfishness. Faith is the root, and love the motive, of all truly good actions, and this love is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost. "Whatsoever is not of faith, is sin." Before the time of Christ, therefore, all virtues were either, like the virtues of the Old Testament saints, who hoped in the same Christ in whom we believe, consciously or unconsciously Christian; or else they prove, on closer inspection, to be comparative vices or seeming virtues, destitute of the pure motive and the right aim. Lust of renown and lust of dominion were the funda-

<sup>1</sup> De Genesi ad litteram, viii. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. ii. 14.

mental traits of the old Romans, which first gave birth to those virtues of self-devotion to freedom and country, so glorious in the eyes of men; but which afterwards, when with the destruction of Carthage all manner of moral corruption poured in, begot the Roman vices.<sup>1</sup>

This view of heathen or natural morality as a specious form of vice, though true to a large extent, is nevertheless an unjust extreme, which Augustine himself cannot consistently sustain. Even he was forced to admit important moral differences among the heathen: between, for example, a Fabricius, of incorruptible integrity, and the traitor Catiline; and though he merely defines this difference negatively, as a greater and less degree of sin and guilt, yet this itself involves the positive

<sup>1</sup> The sentence often ascribed to Augustine, that "all pagan virtues are but splendid vices," is not Augustinian in form, but in substance. Comp. the quotation and remarks above, § 151. Dr. BAUR states his view correctly and clearly when he says (Vorlesungen über die Dogmengeschichte, Bd. I. Part 2, p. 342): "If, as Augustine taught, faith in Christ is the highest principle of willing and acting, nothing can be truly good, which has not its root in faith, which principle Augustine thus expressed, using the words of the apostle Paul, Rom. xiv. 23: 'Omne, quod non ex fide, peccatum.' Augustine judged therefore all good in the will and act of man after the absolute standard of Christian good, and accordingly could only regard the virtues of the heathen as seeming virtues, and ascribe to anything pre-Christian an inner value only so far as it had an inner reference to faith in Christ." Comp. also BAUR's Geschichte der christl. Kirche vom 4-6ten Jahrhundert, p. 153 ff. NEANDER represents Augustine's doctrine on heathen virtue thus (Church History, vol. iv. 1161, 2d Germ. ed., or vol. ii. p. 620, in Torrey's translation): "Augustine very justly distinguishes the patriotism of the ancients from that which is to be called 'virtue,' in the genuinely Christian sense, and which depends on the disposition towards God (*virtus* from *virtus vera*); but then he goes so far as to overlook altogether what bears some relationship to the divine life in such occasional coruscations of the moral element of human nature, and to see in them nothing but a service done for evil spirits and for man's glory. He contributed greatly, on this particular side, to promote in the Western church the partial and contracted way of judging the ancient pagan times, as opposed to the more liberal Alexandrian views of which we still find traces in many of the Orientals in this period, and to which Augustine himself, in the earlier part of his life, as a Platonist, had been inclined. Still the vestiges of his earlier and loftier mode of thinking are to be discerned in his later writings, where he searches after and recognizes the scattered fragments of truth and goodness in the pagan literature, which he uniformly traces to the revelation of the Spirit, who is the original source of all that is true and good, to created minds; though this is inconsistent with his own theory respecting the total corruption of human nature, and with the *particularism* of his doctrine of predestination."

§ 157. AUGUSTINE'S DOCTRINE OF REDEEMING GRACE. 843

concession, that Fabricius stands nearer the position of Christian morality, and that there exists at least *relative* goodness among the heathen. Moreover, he cannot deny, that there were before Christ, not only among the Israelites, but also among the Gentiles, God-fearing souls, such as Melchisedec and Job, true Israelites, not according to the flesh, but according to the spirit, whom God by the secret workings of His Spirit drew to Himself even without baptism and the external means of grace.<sup>1</sup> So the Alexandrian fathers saw scattered rays of the Logos in the dark night of heathenism; only they were far from discriminating so sharply between what was Christian and what was not Christian.

All human boasting is therefore excluded, man is sick, sick unto death out of Christ, but he is capable of health; and the worse the sickness, the greater is the physician, the more powerful is the remedy—redeeming grace.

§ 157. *Augustine's Doctrine of Redeeming Grace.*

Augustine reaches his peculiar doctrine of redeeming grace in two ways. First he reasons upwards from below, by the law of contrast; that is, from his view of the utter incompetency of the unregenerated man to do good. The greater the corruption, the mightier must be the remedial principle. The doctrine of grace is thus only the positive counterpart of the doctrine of sin. In the second place he reasons downwards from above; that is, from his conception of the all-working, all-penetrating presence of God in natural life, and much more in the spiritual. While Pelagius deistically severs God and the world after the creation, and places man on an independent footing, Augustine, even before this controversy,

<sup>1</sup> Comp. De peccat. orig. c. 24 (§ 28, tom. x. f. 265), where he asserts that the grace and faith of Christ operated even unconsciously "sive in eis justis quos sancta Scriptura commemorat, sive in eis justis quos quidem illa non commemorat, sed tamen fuisse credendi sunt, vel ante diluvium, vel inde usque ad legem datam, vel ipsius legis tempore, non solum in filiis Israel, sicut fuerunt prophetae, sed etiam extra eundem populum, sicut fuit Job. Et ipsorum enim corda eadem mundabantur mediatoris fide, et diffundebatur in eis caritas per Spiritum Sanctum, qui ubi vult spirat, non merita sequens, sed etiam ipsa merita faciens."

was, through his speculative genius and the earnest experience of his life, deeply penetrated with a sense of the absolute dependence of the creature on the Creator, in whom we live, and move, and have our being. But Augustine's impression of the immanence of God in the world has nothing pantheistic; it does not tempt him to deny the transcendence of God and his absolute independence of the world. Guided by the Holy Scriptures, he maintains the true mean between deism and pantheism. In the very beginning of his *Confessions*<sup>1</sup> he says very beautifully: "How shall I call on my God, on my God and Lord? Into myself must I call Him, if I call on Him; and what place is there in me, where my God may enter into me, the God, who created heaven and earth? O Lord my God, is there anything in me, that contains Thee? Do heaven and earth contain Thee, which Thou hast created, in which Thou didst create me? Or does all that is, contain Thee, because without Thee there had existed nothing that is? Because then I also am, do I supplicate Thee, that Thou wouldst come into me, I, who had not in any wise been, if Thou wert not in me? I yet live, I do not yet sink into the lower world, and yet Thou art there. If I made my bed in hell, behold, Thou art there. I were not, then, O my God, I utterly were not, if Thou wert not in me. Yea, still more, I were not, O my God, if I were not in Thee, from whom all, in whom all, through whom all is. Even so, Lord, even so." In short, man is nothing without God, and everything in and through God. The undercurrent of this sentiment could not but carry this father onward to all the views he developed in opposition to the Pelagian heresy.

While Pelagius widened the idea of grace to indefiniteness, and reduced it to a medley of natural gifts, law, gospel, forgiveness of sins, enlightenment, and example, Augustine restricted grace to the specifically Christian sphere (and, therefore, called it *gratia Christi*), though admitting its operation previous to Christ among the saints of the Jewish dispensation; but within this sphere he gave it incomparably greater depth. With him grace is, first of all, a creative power of God in

<sup>1</sup> Liber i. c. 2.

Christ transforming men *from within*. It produces first the negative effect of forgiveness of sins, removing the hindrance to communion with God; then the positive communication of a new principle of life. The two are combined in the idea of justification, which, as we have already remarked, Augustine holds, not in the Protestant sense of *declaring* righteous once for all, but in the Catholic sense of gradually *making* righteous; thus substantially identifying it with sanctification.<sup>1</sup> Yet, as he refers this whole process to divine grace, to the exclusion of all human merit, he stands on essentially Evangelical ground.<sup>2</sup> As we inherit from the first Adam our sinful and mortal life, so the second Adam implants in us, from God, and in God, the germ of a sinless and immortal life. Positive grace operates, therefore, not merely from without upon our intelligence by instruction and admonition, as Pelagius taught, but also in the centre of our personality, imparting to the will the power to do the good which the instruction teaches, and to imitate the example of Christ.<sup>3</sup> Hence he frequently calls it the inspiration of a good will, or of love, which is the fulfilling of the law.<sup>4</sup> "Him that wills not, grace comes to meet, that he may will; him that wills, she follows up, that he may not will in vain."<sup>5</sup> Faith itself is an effect of grace; indeed, its first and fundamental effect, which provides for all others, and manifests itself in love. He had formerly held faith to be a work of man (as, in fact, though not exclusively, the *capacity*

<sup>1</sup> De spiritu et littera, c. 26 (tom. x. f. 109): "Quid est enim aliud, justificati, quam *justi facti*, ab illo scilicet qui justificat impium, ut ex impio fiat justus?" Retract. ii. 32: "Justificamur gratia Dei, hoc est, *justi efficiamur*."

<sup>2</sup> Comp. De gratia et libero arbitrio, c. 8 (§ 19), and many other places, where he ascribes fides, caritas, omnia bona opera, and vita æterna to the free, unmerited grace of God.

<sup>3</sup> "Non lege atque doctrina insonante forinsecus, sed interna et occulta, mirabili ac ineffabili potestate operatur Deus in cordibus hominum non solum veras revelationes, sed bonas etiam voluntates." De grat. Christi, cap. 24 (x. f. 24).

<sup>4</sup> De corrept. et grat. cap. 2 (x. 751): "Inspiratio bonæ voluntatis atque operis." Without this grace men can "nullum prorsus sive cogitando, sive volendo et amando, sive agendo facere bonum." Elsewhere he calls it also "inspiratio dilectionis" and "caritatis." Cf. duas epist. Pel. iv., and De gratia Christi, 39.

<sup>5</sup> "Nolentem prævenit, ut velit; volentem subsequitur, ne frustra velit." Enchir. c. 32.



of faith, or *receptivity* for the divine, may be said to be); but he was afterwards led, particularly by the words of Paul in 1 Cor. iv. 7: "What hast thou, that thou hast not received?" to change his view.<sup>1</sup> In a word, grace is the breath and blood of the new man; from it proceeds all that is truly good and divine, and without it we can do nothing acceptable to God.

From this fundamental conception of grace arise the several properties which Augustine ascribes to it in opposition to Pelagius:

First, it is *absolutely necessary* to Christian virtue; not merely auxiliary, but indispensable, to its existence. It is necessary "for every good act, for every good thought, for every good word of man at every moment." Without it the Christian life can neither begin, proceed, nor be consummated. It was necessary even under the old dispensation, which contained the gospel in the form of promise. The saints before Christ lived of His grace by anticipation. "They stood," says Augustine, "not under the terrifying, convicting, punishing law, but under that grace which fills the heart with joy in what is good, which heals it, and makes it free."<sup>2</sup>

It is, moreover, *unmerited*. *Gratia* would be no *gratia* if it were not *gratuita*, *gratis data*.<sup>3</sup> As man without grace can do nothing good, he is, of course, incapable of *deserving* grace; for, to deserve grace, he must do something good. "What merits could we have, while as yet we did not love God? That the love with which we should love might be created, we have been loved, while as yet we had not that love. Never should we have found strength to love God, except as we received such a love from Him who had loved us before, and because He had loved us before. And, without such a love,

Comp. *Retract.* i. c. 23; *De dono perseverantiae*, c. 20, and *De prædest.* c. 2.

<sup>2</sup> "Erant tamen et legis tempore homines Dei, non sub lege terrentis, convinctis, punientis, sed sub gratia delectantis, sanantis, liberantis." *De grat. Christi et de peccato origin.* l. ii. c. 25 (§ 29).

<sup>3</sup> Comp. *De gestis Pelagii*, § 33 (x. 210); *De pecc. orig.* § 28 (x. 265): "Non Dei gratia erit ullo modo, nisi gratuita fuerit omni modo." In many other passages he says: *gratia gratis datur*; *gratia præcedit bona opera*; *gratia præcedit merita*; *gratia indignis datur*.

what good could we do? Or, how could we not do good, with such a love?" "The Holy Spirit breathes where He will, and does not follow merits, but Himself produces the merits!" Grace, therefore, is not bestowed on man *because* he already believes, but *that* he *may* believe; not *because* he has deserved it by good works, but *that* he *may* deserve good works." Pelagius reverses the natural relation by making the cause the effect, and the effect the cause. The ground of our salvation can only be found in God Himself, if He is to remain immutable. Augustine appeals to examples of pardoned sinners, "where not only no good deserts, but even evil deserts, had preceded." Thus the apostle Paul, "averse to the faith, which he wasted, and vehemently inflamed against it, was suddenly converted to that faith by the prevailing power of grace, and that in such wise that he was changed not only from an enemy to a friend, but from a persecutor to a sufferer of persecution for the sake of the faith he had once destroyed. For to him it was given by Christ, not only to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake." He also points to children, who without will, and therefore without voluntary merit preceding, are through holy baptism incorporated in the kingdom of grace.\* His own experience, finally, afforded him an argument, to him irrefutable, for the free, undeserved compassion of God. And if in other passages he speaks of merits, he means good works which the Holy Ghost effects in man, and which God graciously rewards, so that eternal life is grace for grace. "If all thy merits are gifts of God, God crowns thy merits not as thy merits, but as the gifts of his grace."†

\* De pecc. orig. § 28 (x. 265): "Et ipsorum [prophetarum] corda eadem mundabantur mediatoris fide, et diffundebatur in eis caritas per Spiritum Sanctum, qui ubi vult spirat, non merita sequens, sed etiam ipsa merita faciens."

† De gratia et libero arbitrio, cap. 22 (§ 44, tom. x. f. 742). Parvuli, he says, have no will to receive grace, nay, often struggle with tears against being baptized, "quod eis ad magnum impletatis peccatum imputaretur, si jam libero uterentur arbitrio: et tamen hæret etiam in reluctantibus gratia, apertissime nullo bono merito præcedente, alioquin gratia jam non esset gratia." He then calls attention to the fact that grace is sometimes bestowed on children of unbelievers, and is withheld from many children of believers.

\* De grat. et lib. arbitrio, c. 6 (f. 726), where Augustine, from passages like

Grace is *irresistible* in its effect; not, indeed, in the way of physical constraint imposed on the will, but as a moral power, which makes man willing, and which infallibly attains its end, the conversion and final perfection of its subject.<sup>1</sup> This point is closely connected with Augustine's whole doctrine of predestination, and consistently leads to it or follows from it. Hence the Pelagians repeatedly raised the charge that Augustine, under the name of grace, introduced a certain fatalism. But the irresistibility must manifestly not be extended to *all* the influences of grace; for the Bible often speaks of grieving, quenching, lying to, and blaspheming the Holy Ghost, and so implies that grace may be resisted; and it presents many living examples of such resistance. It cannot be denied, that Saul, Solomon, Ananias, and Sapphira, and even the traitor Judas, were under the influence of divine grace, and repelled it. Augustine, therefore, must make irresistible grace identical with the specific grace of regeneration in the *elect*, which at the same time imparts the *donum perseverantiæ*.<sup>2</sup>

James i. 17; John iii. 27; Eph. ii. 8, draws the conclusion: "Si ergo Dei dona sunt bona merita tua, non Deus coronat merita tua tamquam merita tua, sed tamquam dona sua."

<sup>1</sup> "Subventum est infirmitati voluntatis humanæ, ut divina gratia *indeclinabiliter et insuperabiliter* [not *inseparabiliter*, as the Jesuit edition of Louvain, 1577, reads] ageretur; et ideo, quamvis infirma, non tamen deficeret, neque adversitate aliqua vinceretur." De corrept. et grat. § 38 (tom. x. p. 771).

<sup>2</sup> It is in this sense that the Calvinistic theologians have always understood the Augustinian system, especially the Presbyterians. So, e. g., Dr. CUNNINGHAM (l. c. vol. ii. p. 352): "Augustine, in asserting the invincibility or irresistibility of grace, did not mean—and those who in subsequent times have embraced this general system of doctrine as scriptural, did not intend to convey the idea—that man was compelled to do that which was good, or that he was forced to repent and believe against his will, whether he would or not, as the doctrine is commonly misrepresented, but merely that he was certainly and effectually made willing, by the renovation of his will through the power of God, *whenever that power was put forth in a measure sufficient and adequate to produce the result*. Augustine, and those who have adopted his system, did not mean to deny that men may, in some sense and to some extent, resist the Spirit, the possibility of which is clearly indicated in Scripture; inasmuch as they have most commonly held that, to use the language of our [the Westminster] Confession, 'persons who are not elected, and who finally perish, may have some common operations of the Spirit,' which, of course, they resist and throw off." Similarly Dr. SHEDD (Hist. of Doct. vol. ii. 78), who, however, extends

Grace, finally, works *progressively* or *by degrees*. It removes all the consequences of the fall; but it removes them in an order agreeable to the finite, gradually unfolding nature of the believer. Grace is a foster-mother, who for the greatest good of her charge, wisely and lovingly accommodates herself to his necessities as they change from time to time. Augustine gives different names to grace in these different steps of its development. In overcoming the resisting will, and imparting a living knowledge of sin and longing for redemption, grace is *gratia præveniens* or *præparans*. In creating faith and the free will to do good, and uniting the soul to Christ, it is *gratia operans*. Joining with the emancipated will to combat the remains of evil, and bringing forth good works as fruits of faith, it is *gratia coöperans*. Finally, in enabling the believer to persevere in faith to the end, and leading him at length, though not in this life, to the perfect state, in which he can no longer sin nor die, it is *gratia perficiens*.<sup>1</sup> This includes the *donum perseverantiæ*, which is the only certain token of

irresistible grace to all the *regenerate*. "Not all grace," he says, "but the grace which actually regenerates, Augustine denominates *irresistible*. By this he meant, not that the human will is converted unwillingly or by compulsion, but that divine grace is able to overcome the utmost obstinacy of the human spirit. . . . Divine grace is irresistible, not in the sense that no form of grace is resisted by the sinner; but when grace reaches that special degree which constitutes it *regenerating*, it then overcomes the sinner's opposition, and makes him willing in the day of God's power." This is Calvinistic, but not Augustinian, although given as Augustine's view. For according to Augustine all the baptized are regenerate, and yet many are eternally lost. (Comp. Ep. 98, 2; De pecc. mer. et rem. i. 39, and the passages in Hagenbach's Doctrine History, vol. i. p. 358 ff. in the Anglo-American edition.) The *gratia irresistibilis* must therefore be restricted to the narrower circle of the *electi*. Augustine's doctrine of baptism is far more Lutheran and Catholic than Calvinistic. According to Calvin, the regenerating effect of baptism is dependent on the *decretum divinum*, and the truly regenerate is also elect, and therefore can never finally fall from grace. Augustine, for the honor of the sacrament, assumes the possibility of a fruitless regeneration; Calvin, in the interest of election and regeneration, assumes the possibility of an ineffectual baptism.

<sup>1</sup> Summing all the stages together, Augustine says: "Et quis istam etiam parvam dare coöperat caritatem, nisi ille qui *præparat* voluntatem, et *coöperando perficit*, quod *operando incipit*? Quoniam ipse ut velimus operatur incipiens, qui volentibus coöperatur perficiens. Propter quod ait Apostolus: Certus sum, quoniam qui operatur in vobis opus bonum, perficiet usque in diem Christi Jesu" (Phil. i. 6). De grat. et lib. arbit. c. 27, § 33 (tom. x. 785).

election.<sup>1</sup> "We call ourselves elect, or children of God, because we so call all those whom we see regenerate, visibly leading a holy life. But he alone is in truth what he is called, who perseveres in that from which he receives the name." Therefore so long as a man yet lives, we can form no certain judgment of him in this respect. Perseverance till death, i. e., to the point where the danger of apostasy ceases, is emphatically a grace, "since it is much harder to possess this gift of grace than any other; though for him to whom nothing is hard, it is as easy to bestow the one as the other."

And as to *the relation of grace to freedom*: Neither excludes the other, though they might appear to conflict. In Augustine's system freedom, or self-determination to good, is the correlative in man of grace on the part of God. The more grace, the more freedom to do good, and the more joy in the good. The two are one in the idea of love, which is objective and subjective, passive and active, an apprehending and a being apprehended.<sup>2</sup>

We may sum up the Augustinian anthropology under these three heads:

1. THE PRIMITIVE STATE: Immediate, undeveloped unity of man with God; child-like innocence; germ and condition of everything subsequent; possibility of a sinless and a sinful development.

2. THE STATE OF SIN: Alienation from God; bondage; dominion of death; with longing after redemption.

3. THE STATE OF REDEMPTION OR OF GRACE: Higher, mediated unity with God; virtue approved through conflict; the blessed freedom of the children of God; here, indeed, yet clogged with the remains of sin and death, but hereafter absolutely perfect, without the possibility of apostasy.

<sup>1</sup> Augustine treats of this in the *Liber de dono perseverantiae*, one of his latest writings, composed in 428 or 429 (tom. x. f. 821 sqq.).

<sup>2</sup> Comp. upon this especially the book *De gratia et libero arbitrio*, which Augustine wrote A. D. 426, addressed to Valentinus and other monks of Adrumetum, to refute the false reasoning of those, "*qui sic gratiam Dei defendunt, ut negent hominis liberum arbitrium*" (c. 1, tom. x. f. 717).

§ 158. *The Doctrine of Predestination.*

- I. AUGUSTINUS: De prædestinatione sanctorum ad Prosperum et Hilarium (written A. D. 428 or 429 against the Semi-Pelagians); De dono perseverantiae (written in the same year and against the same opponents); De gratia et libero arbitrio (written A. D. 426 or 427 ad Valentinum et Monachos Adrumetinos); De correptione et gratia (written to the same persons and in the same year).
- II. CORN. JANSENIUS: Augustinus. Lovan. 1640, tom. iii. JAC. SIRMOND (Jesuit): Historia prædestinatio. Par. 1648 (and in his Opera, tom. iv. p. 271). CARL BROK: Die Augustinische, Calvinistische und Lutherische Lehre von der Prädestination aus den Quellen dargestellt und mit besonderer Rücksicht auf Schleiermacher's Erwählungslehre comparativ beurtheilt. "Studien und Kritiken," 1847. J. B. MOZLEY: Augustinian Doctrine of Predestination. Lond. 1855.

Augustine did not stop with this doctrine of sin and grace. He pursued his anthropology and soteriology to their source in theology. His personal experience of the wonderful and undeserved grace of God, various passages of the Scriptures, especially the Epistle to the Romans, and the logical connection of thought, led him to the doctrine of the unconditional and eternal purpose of the omniscient and omnipotent God. In this he found the programme of the history of the fall and redemption of the human race. He ventured boldly, but reverentially, upon the brink of that abyss of speculation, where all human knowledge is lost in mystery and in adoration.

Predestination, in general, is a necessary attribute of the divine will, as foreknowledge is an attribute of the divine intelligence; though, strictly speaking, we cannot predicate of God either a *before* or an *after*, and with him all is eternal present. It is absolutely inconceivable that God created the world or man blindly, without a fixed plan, or that this plan can be disturbed or hindered in any way by his creatures. Besides, there prevails everywhere, even in the natural life of man, in the distribution of mental gifts and earthly blessings, and yet much more in the realm of grace, a higher guidance, which is wholly independent of our will or act. Who is not obliged, in his birth in this or that place, at this or that time,

under these or those circumstances, in all the epochs of his existence, in all his opportunities of education, and above all in his regeneration and sanctification, to recognize and adore the providence and the free grace of God? The further we are advanced in the Christian life, the less are we inclined to attribute any merit to ourselves, and the more to thank God for all. The believer not only looks forward into eternal life, but also backward into the ante-mundane eternity, and finds in the eternal purpose of divine love the beginning and the firm anchorage of his salvation.<sup>1</sup>

So far we may say every reflecting Christian must believe in some sort of election by free grace; and, in fact, the Holy Scriptures are full of it. But up to the time of Augustine the doctrine had never been an object of any very profound inquiry, and had therefore never been accurately defined, but only very superficially and casually touched. The Greek fathers, and Tertullian, Ambrose, Jerome, and Pelagius, had only taught a conditional predestination, which they made dependent on the foreknowledge of the free acts of men. In this, as in his views of sin and grace, Augustine went far beyond the earlier divines, taught an unconditional election of grace, and restricted the purpose of redemption to a definite circle of the elect, who constitute the minority of the race.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Rom. viii. 29; Eph. i. 4.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. the opinions of the pre-Augustinian fathers respecting grace, predestination, and the extent of redemption, as given in detail in Wiggers, i. p. 440 ff. He says, p. 448: "In reference to predestination, the fathers before Augustine were entirely at variance with him, and in agreement with Pelagius. They, like Pelagius, founded predestination upon prescience, upon the fore-knowledge of God, as to who would make themselves worthy or unworthy of salvation. They assume, therefore, not the unconditional predestination of Augustine, but the conditional predestination of the Pelagians. The Massilians had, therefore, a full right to affirm (Aug. Ep. 225), that Augustine's doctrine of predestination was opposed to the opinions of the fathers and the sense of the church (*ecclesiastico sensui*), and that no ecclesiastical author had ever yet explained the Epistle to the Romans as Augustine did, or in such a way as to derive from it a grace that had no respect to the merits of the elect. And it was only by a doubtful inference (*De dono pera. 19*) that Augustine endeavored to prove that Cyprian, Ambrose, and Gregory Nazianzen had known and received his view of predestination, by appealing to the agreement between this doctrine and their theory of grace." Pelagius says of predestination in his Commentary on Rom. viii. 29 and ix. 30: "*Quos praevidit conformes esse*

In Augustine's system the doctrine of predestination is not, as in Calvin's, the starting-point, but the consummation. It is a deduction from his views of sin and grace. It is therefore more practical than speculative. It is held in check by his sacramental views. If we may anticipate a much later terminology, it moves within the limits of infralapsarianism, but philosophically is less consistent than supralapsarianism. While the infralapsarian theory, starting with the consciousness of sin, excludes the fall—the most momentous event, except redemption, in the history of the world—from the divine purpose, and places it under the category of divine permission, making it dependent on the free will of the first man; the supralapsarian theory, starting with the conception of the absolute sovereignty of God, includes the fall of Adam in the eternal and unchangeable plan of God, though, of course, not as an end, or for its own sake (which would be blasphemy), but as a temporary means to an opposite end, or as the *negative* condition of a revelation of the divine justice in the reprobate, and of the divine grace in the elect. Augustine, therefore, strictly speaking, knows nothing of a *double* decree of election and reprobation, but recognizes simply a decree of election to salvation; though logical instinct does sometimes carry him to the verge of supralapsarianism. In both systems, however, the decree is eternal, unconditioned, and immutable; the difference is in the subject, which, according to one system, is man *fallen*, according to the other, man *as such*. It was a noble inconsistency which kept Augustine from the more stringent and speculative system of supralapsarianism; his deep moral convictions revolted against making any allowance for sin by tracing its origin to the divine will; and by his peculiar view of the inseparable connection between Adam and the race, he could make every man as it were individually responsible for the fall of Adam. But the Pelagians, who denied this connection, charged him with teaching a kind of fatalism.

The first sin, according to Augustine's theory, was an act of freedom, which could and should have been avoided. But

*In vita, voluit ut fierent conformes in gloria. . . . Quos præcivit credituros, hos vocavit, vocatio autem volentes colligit, non invitos."*



once committed, it subjected the whole race, which was germinally in the loins of Adam, to the punitive justice of God. All men are only a mass of perdition,<sup>1</sup> and deserve, both for their innate and their actual sin, temporal and eternal death. God is but just, if He leave a great portion, nay (if all heathen and unbaptized children are lost), the greatest portion, of mankind to their deserved fate. But He has resolved from eternity to reveal in some His grace, by rescuing them from the mass of perdition, and without their merit saving them.

This is the election of grace, or predestination. It is related to grace itself, as cause to effect, as preparation to execution.<sup>2</sup> It is the ultimate, unfathomable ground of salvation. It is distinguished from foreknowledge, as will from intelligence; it always implies intelligence, but is not always implied in it.<sup>3</sup> God determines and knows beforehand what He will do; the fall of man, and the individual sins of men, He knows perfectly even from eternity, but He does not determine or will them, He only permits them. There is thus a point, where prescience is independent of predestination, and where human freedom, as it were, is interposed. (Here lies the philosophical weakness, but, on the other hand, the ethical strength of the infralapsarian system, as compared with the supralapsarian). The predetermination has reference only to good, not to evil. It is equivalent to election, while predestination, in the supralapsarian scheme, includes the *decretum electionis* and the *decretum reprobationis*. Augustine, it is true, speaks

<sup>1</sup> *Massa perditionis*, a favorite expression of Augustine.

<sup>2</sup> De prædest. sanct. c. 10 (or § 19, tom. x. f. 803): "Inter gratiam et prædestinationem hoc tantum interest, quod prædestinatio est gratiæ preparatio, gratia vero ipsa donatio. Quod itaque ait apostolus: *Non ex operibus ne forte quis extolatur, ipsius enim sumus figmentum, creati in Christo Jesu in operibus bonis* (Ep. i. 9), gratia est; quod autem sequitur: *Quæ præparavit Deus, ut in illis ambulemus* prædestinatio est, quæ sine præscientia non potest esse." Further on in the same chapter: "Gratia est ipsius prædestinationis effectus."

<sup>3</sup> De præd. sanctorum, cap. 10: "Prædestinatio . . . sine præscientia non potest esse; potest autem esse sine prædestinatione præscientia. Prædestinatione quippe Deus ea præscivit, quæ fuerat ipse factururus . . . præscire autem potens est etiam quæ ipse non facit, sicut quæcumque peccata." Comp. De dono perseverantiæ, c. 18 (f. 847 sq.).

also in some places of a predestination to perdition (in consequence of sin), but never of a predestination to sin.<sup>1</sup> The election of grace is conditioned by no foreseen merit, but is absolutely free. God does not predestinate His children on account of their faith, for their faith is itself a gift of grace; but He predestinates them to faith and to holiness.<sup>2</sup>

Thus also the imputation of teaching that a man may be elect, and yet live a godless life, is precluded.<sup>3</sup> Sanctification is the infallible effect of election. Those who are thus predestinated as vessels of mercy, may fall for a while, like David and Peter, but cannot finally fall from grace. They must at last be saved by the successive steps of vocation, justification, and glorification, as certainly as God is almighty and His promises Yea and Amen;<sup>4</sup> while the vessels of wrath are lost through their own fault. To election necessarily belongs the gift of perseverance, the *donum perseverantiæ*, which is attested by a happy death. Those who fall away, even though they have been baptized and regenerated, show thereby, that they

<sup>1</sup> De anima et ejus origine (written A. D. 419), l. iv. c. 11 (or § 16, tom. x. f. 395): "Ex uno homine omnes homines ire in condemnationem qui nascuntur ex Adam, nisi ita renascantur in Christo . . . quos prædestinavit ad æternam vitam misericordissimus gratiæ largitor: qui est et illis quos prædestinavit ad æternam mortem, justissimus supplicii retributor." Comp. Tract. in Joann. xlviii. 4: "ad sem piternum interitum prædestinatos," and similar passages.

<sup>2</sup> De præd. sanct. c. 18 (§ 37, x. f. 816): "Elegit ergo nos Deus in Christo ante mundi constitutionem, prædestinans nos in adoptionem filiorum: non quia per nos sancti et immaculati futuri eramus, sed *elegit prædestinavitque ut essemus*." Augustine then goes on to attack the Pelagian and Semi-Pelagian theory of a predestination conditioned upon the foreseen holiness of the creature. Cap. 19 (§ 38): "Nec quia credidimus, sed ut credamus, vocamur."

<sup>3</sup> This imputation of some monks of Adrumetum in Tunis is met by Augustine particularly in his treatise De correptione et gratia (A. D. 427), in which he shows that as gratia and the liberum arbitrium, so also correptio and gratia, admonition and grace, are by no means mutually exclusive, but rather mutually condition each other.

<sup>4</sup> De corrept. et grat. c. 7 (§ 14): "Nemo eorum [electorum] perit, quia non fallitur Deus. Horum si quisquam perit, vitio humano vincitur Deus; sed nemo eorum perit, quia nulla re vincitur Deus." Ibid. c. 9 (§ 23, f. 768): "Quicumque ergo in Dei providentissima dispositione præsciti, prædestinati, vocati, justificati, glorificati sunt, non dico etiam nondum renati, sed etiam nondum nati, jam filii Dei sunt, et omnino perire non possunt." For this he appeals to Rom. viii. 31 ff.; John vi 37, 39, etc.

never belonged to the number of the elect.<sup>1</sup> Hence we cannot certainly know in this life who are of the elect, and we must call *all* to repentance and offer to *all* salvation, though the vocation of grace only proves effectual to some.

Augustine, as already remarked, deduced this doctrine from his view of sin. If all men are by nature utterly incompetent to good, if it is grace that works in us to will and to do good, if faith itself is an undeserved gift of grace: the ultimate ground of salvation can then be found only in the inscrutable counsel of God. He appealed to the wonderful leadings in the lives of individuals and of nations, some being called to the gospel and to baptism, while others die in darkness. Why precisely this or that one attains to faith and others do not, is, indeed, a mystery. We cannot, says he, in this life explain the leadings of Providence; if we only believe that God is righteous, we shall hereafter attain to perfect knowledge.

He could cite many Scripture texts, especially the ninth chapter of the Epistle to the Romans, for his doctrine. But other texts, which teach the universal vocation to salvation, and make man responsible for his reception or rejection of the gospel, he could only explain by forced interpretations. Thus, for instance, he understands in 1 Tim. ii. 4 by the *all* men, whom God will have to be saved, *all manner* of men, rich and poor, learned and unlearned, or he wrests the sense into: All who are saved, are saved only by the will of God.<sup>2</sup> When he finds no other way of meeting objections, he appeals to the inscrutable wisdom of God.

Augustine's doctrine of predestination was the immediate occasion of a theological controversy which lasted almost a hundred years, developed almost every argument for and against the doctrine, and called forth a system holding middle ground, to which we now turn.

<sup>1</sup> De corrept. et gratia, c. 9 (§ 23, x. f. 763): "Ab illo [Deo] datur etiam perseverantia in bono usque in finem; neque enim datur nisi eis qui non peribunt: quoniam qui non perseverant peribunt." Ibid. c. 11 (§ 36, f. 770): "Qui autem cadunt et pereunt, in prædestinatorum numero non fuerunt."

<sup>2</sup> Opus imperf. iv. 124; De corrept. et gratia, l. 28; De præd. sanct. 8; Enclir. c. 118; Epist. 217, c. 6. Comp. Wiggers, l. c. pp. 365 and 463 ff.

§ 159. *Semi-Pelagianism.*

Comp. the Works at § 146.

## SOURCES.

- I. JOH. CASSIANUS** († 432): *Collationes Patrum* xxiv, especially the xlii. In the *Opera omnia, cum commentariis D. Alardi Gazzi* (Gazet), Atrebatii (Atrecht or Arras in France), 1628 and 1738; reprinted, with additions, in *Migne's Patrologia*, tom. xlix. and l. (tom. l. pp. 478-1828), and also published several times separately. **VINCENTIUS LIMOUSINENSIS** († 450), **FAUSTUS RHEGIENSIS** († 490-500), and other Semi-Pelagian writers, see Gallandi, *Biblioth.* tom. x., and Migne, *Patrol.* tom. l. and liii.
- II. AUGUSTINUS**: *De gratia et libero arbitrio*; *De correptione et gratia*; *De prædestinatione sanctorum*; *De dono perseverantiæ* (all in the 10th vol. of the *Benedict.* ed.). **PROSPER AQUITANUS** (a disciple and admirer of Augustine, † 460): *Epistola ad Augustinum de reliquiis Pelagianæ hæreseos in Gallia* (Aug. Ep. 225, and in *Opera Aug.* tom. x. 780), and *De gratia et libero arbitrio (contra Collatorem)*. **HILARIUS**: *Ad Augustinum de eodem argumento* (Ep. 226 among the *Epp. Aug.*, and in tom. x. 783). Also the Augustinian writings of **AVITUS** of Vienne, **CÆSARIUS** of Arles, **FULGENTIUS** of Ruspe, and others. (Comp. Gallandi, *Bibl.* tom. xi.; Migne, *Patrol.* vol. li.)

The Acts of the Synod of ORANES, A. D. 529, in Mansi, tom. viii. 711 sqq.

## LITERATURE.

- JAC. SIMOND**: *Historia prædestinatiana*. Par. 1648. **JOHANN GEFFKEN**: *Historia Semipelagianismi antiquissima* (more properly *antiquissimi*). Gott. 1826 (only goes to the year 434). **G. FR. WIGGERS**: *Versuch einer pragmatischen Darstellung des Semipelagianismus in seinem Kampfe gegen den Augustinismus bis zur zweiten Synode zu Orange*. Hamburg, 1888 (the second part of his already cited work upon Augustinianism and Pelagianism). A very thorough work, but unfortunately without index. Comp. also WALOH, *SCHRÖCKER*, and the appropriate portions of the later works upon the history of the church and of doctrines.

Semi-Pelagianism is a somewhat vague and indefinite attempt at reconciliation, hovering midway between the sharply marked systems of Pelagius and Augustine, taking off the edge of each, and inclining now to the one, now to the

other. The name was introduced during the scholastic age, but the system of doctrine, in all essential points, was formed in Southern France in the fifth century, during the latter years of Augustine's life and soon after his death. It proceeded from the combined influence of the pre-Augustinian synergism and monastic legalism. Its leading idea is, that divine grace and the human will jointly accomplish the work of conversion and sanctification, and that ordinarily man must take the first step. It rejects the Pelagian doctrine of the moral soundness of man, but rejects also the Augustinian doctrine of the entire corruption and bondage of the natural man, and substitutes the idea of a diseased or crippled state of the voluntary power. It disowns the Pelagian conception of grace as a mere external auxiliary; but also, quite as decidedly, the Augustinian doctrines of the sovereignty, irresistibility, and limitation of grace; and affirms the necessity and the internal operation of grace with and through human agency, a general atonement through Christ, and a predestination to salvation conditioned by the foreknowledge of faith. The union of the Pelagian and Augustinian elements thus attempted is not, however, an inward organic coalescence, but rather a mechanical and arbitrary combination, which really satisfies neither the one interest nor the other, but commonly leans to the Pelagian side.<sup>1</sup>

For this reason it admirably suited the legalistic and ascetic piety of the middle age, and indeed always remained within

<sup>1</sup> Wiggers (ii. pp. 359-364) gives a comparative view of the three systems in parallel columns. Comp. also the criticism of Baur, *Die christliche Kirche vom vierten bis zum sechsten Jahrhundert*, p. 181 ff. The latter, with his wonted sharpness of criticism, judges very unfavorably of Semi-Pelagianism as a whole. "This halving and neutralizing," he says, p. 199 ff., "this attempt at equal distribution of the two complementary elements, not only setting them apart, but also balancing them with one another, so that sometimes the one, sometimes the other, is predominant, and thus within this whole sphere everything is casual and arbitrary, varying and indefinite according to the diversity of circumstances and individuals, this is characteristic of Semi-Pelagianism throughout. If the two opposing theories cannot be inwardly reconciled, at least they must be combined in such a way as that a specific element must be taken from each; the Pelagian freedom and the Augustinian grace must be advanced to equal rank. But this method only gains an external juxtaposition of the two."

the pale of the Catholic church, and never produced a separate sect.

We glance now at the main features of the origin and progress of this school.

The Pelagian system had been vanquished by Augustine, and rejected and condemned as heresy by the church. This result, however, did not in itself necessarily imply the complete approval of the Augustinian system. Many, even opponents of Pelagius, recoiled from a position so wide of the older fathers as Augustine's doctrines of the bondage of man and the absolute election of grace, and preferred a middle ground.

First the monks of the convent of Adrumetum in North Africa differed among themselves over the doctrine of predestination; some perverting it to carnal security, others plunging from it into anguish and desperation, and yet others feeling compelled to lay more stress than Augustine upon human freedom and responsibility. Augustine endeavored to allay the scruples of these monks by his two treatises, *De gratia et libero arbitrio*, and *De correptione et gratia*. The abbot Valentinus answered these in the name of the monks in a reverent and submissive tone.<sup>1</sup>

But simultaneously a more dangerous opposition to the doctrine of predestination arose in Southern Gaul, in the form of a regular theological school within the Catholic church. The members of this school were first called "remnants of the Pelagians,"<sup>2</sup> but commonly MASSILIANS, from Massilia (Marseilles), their chief centre, and afterwards SEMI-PELAGIANS. Augustine received an account of this from two learned and pious lay friends, Prosper, and Hilarius,<sup>3</sup> who begged that he himself would take the pen against it. This was the occasion of his two works, *De prædestinatione sanctorum*, and *De dono*

<sup>1</sup> His answer is found in the Epistles of Augustine, Ep. 216, and in Opera, tom. x. f. 746 (ed. Bened.).

<sup>2</sup> "Reliquiæ Pelagianorum." So Prosper calls them in his letter to Augustine. He saw in them disguised, and therefore only so much the more dangerous, Pelagians.

<sup>3</sup> Not to be confounded with Hilarius, bishop of Arles, in distinction from whom he is called Hilarius Prosperi. Hilary calls himself a layman (Aug. Ep. 226, § 9) Comp. the Benedictines in tom. x. f. 785; Wiggers, ii. 137).

*perseverentia*, with which he worthily closed his labors as an author. He deals with these disputants more gently than with the Pelagians, and addresses them as brethren. After his death (430) the discussion was continued principally in Gaul; for then North Africa was disquieted by the victorious invasion of the Vandals, which for several decades shut it out from the circle of theological and ecclesiastical activity.

At the head of the Semi-Pelagian party stood JOHN CASSIAN, the founder and abbot of the monastery at Massilia, a man of thorough cultivation, rich experience, and unquestioned orthodoxy.<sup>1</sup> He was a grateful disciple of Chrysostom, who ordained him deacon, and apparently also presbyter. His Greek training and his predilection for monasticism were a favorable soil for his Semi-Pelagian theory. He labored awhile in Rome with Pelagius, and afterwards in Southern France, in the cause of monastic piety, which he efficiently promoted by exhortation and example. Monasticism sought in cloistered retreats a protection against the allurements of sin, the desolating incursions of the barbarians, and the wretchedness of an age of tumult and confusion. But the enthusiasm for the monastic life tended strongly to over-value external acts and ascetic discipline, and resisted the free evangelical bent of the Augustinian theology. Cassian wrote twelve books *De cœnobiorum institutis*, in which he first describes the outward life of the monks, and then their inward conflicts and victories over the eight capital vices: intemperance, unchastity, avarice, anger, sadness, dulness, ambition, and pride. More important are his fourteen *Collationes Patrum*, conversations which Cassian and his friend Germanus had had with the most expe-

<sup>1</sup> Wiggers treats thoroughly and at length of him, in the above cited monograph, vol. ii. pp. 7-136. He has been mistakenly supposed a Scythian. His name and his fluent Latinity indicate an occidental origin. Yet he was in part educated at Bethlehem and in Constantinople, and spent seven years among the anchorites in Egypt. He mentioned John Chrysostom even in the evening of his life with grateful veneration. (De incarn. vii. 30 sq.) "What I have written," he says, "John has taught me, and therefore account it not so much mine as his. For a brook rises from a spring, and what is ascribed to the pupil, must be reckoned wholly to the honor of the teacher." On the life and writings of Cassian compare also SCHÖNEMANN, Bibliotheca, vol. ii. (reprinted in Migne's ed. vol. i.).

rienced ascetics in Egypt, during a seven years' sojourn there.

In this work, especially in the thirteenth Colloquy,<sup>1</sup> he rejects decidedly the errors of Pelagius,<sup>2</sup> and affirms the universal sinfulness of men, the introduction of it by the fall of Adam, and the necessity of divine grace to every individual act. But, with evident reference to Augustine, though without naming him, he combats the doctrines of election and of the irresistible and particular operation of grace, which were in conflict with the church tradition, especially with the Oriental theology, and with his own earnest ascetic legalism.

In opposition to both systems he taught that the divine image and human freedom were not annihilated, but only weakened, by the fall; in other words, that man is sick, but not dead, that he cannot indeed help himself, but that he can desire the help of a physician, and either accept or refuse it when offered, and that he must co-operate with the grace of God in his salvation. The question, which of the two factors has the initiative, he answers, altogether empirically, to this effect: that sometimes, and indeed usually, the human will, as in the cases of the Prodigal Son, Zacchæus, the Penitent Thief, and Cornelius, determines itself to conversion; sometimes grace anticipates it, and, as with Matthew and Paul, draws the resisting will—yet, even in this case, without constraint—to God.<sup>3</sup> Here, therefore, the *gratia præveniens* is manifestly overlooked.

These are essentially Semi-Pelagian principles, though capable of various modifications and applications. The

<sup>1</sup> De protectione Dei. In Migne's edition of Cass. Opera, vol. i. pp. 397-954.

<sup>2</sup> He calls the Pelagian doctrine of the native ability of man "*profanam opinionem*" (Coll. xiii. 16, in Migne's ed. tom. i. p. 942), and even says: "*Pelagium pæne omnes impietate* [probably here equivalent to "contempt of grace," as Wiggers, ii. 20, explains it] *et amentia viciasse*" (De incarn. Dom. v. 2, tom. ii. 101).

<sup>3</sup> "Nonnumquam," says he, De institut. cœnob. xii. 18 (Opera, vol. ii. p. 456, ed. Migne), "*etiam inviti trahimur ad salutem.*" This is, however, according to Cassian, a rare exception. The general distinction between Semi-Pelagianism and the Melancthonian synergism may be thus defined, that the former ascribes the initiative in the work of conversion to the human will, the latter to divine grace, which involves also a different estimate of the importance of the *gratia præveniens* or *præparans*.



church, even the Roman church, has rightly emphasized the necessity of prevenient grace, but has not impeached Cassian, who is properly the father of the Semi-Pelagian theory. Leo the Great even commissioned him to write a work against Nestorianism,<sup>1</sup> in which he found an excellent opportunity to establish his orthodoxy, and to clear himself of all connection with the kindred heresies of Pelagianism and Nestorianism, which were condemned together at Ephesus in 431. He died after 432, at an advanced age, and though not formally canonized, is honored as a saint by some dioceses. His works are very extensively read for practical edification.

Against the thirteenth Colloquy of Cassian, PROSPER AQUITANUS, an Augustinian divine and poet, who, probably on account of the desolations of the Vandals, had left his native Aquitania for the South of Gaul, and found comfort and repose in the doctrines of election amid the wars of his age, wrote a book upon grace and freedom,<sup>2</sup> about 432, in which he criticises twelve propositions of Cassian, and declares them all heretical, except the first. He also composed a long poem in defence of Augustine and his system,<sup>3</sup> and refuted the "Gallic slanders and Vincentian imputations," which placed the doctrine of predestination in the most odious light.<sup>4</sup>

But the Semi-Pelagian doctrine was the more popular, and made great progress in France. Its principal advocates after

<sup>1</sup> De incarnatione Christi, libri vii. in Migne's ed. tom. ii. 9-272.

<sup>2</sup> Found in the works of Prosper, Paris, 1711 (tom. ii. in Migne's Patrol.), and also in the Appendix to the Opera Augustini (tom. x. 171-198, ed. Bened.), under the title Pro Augustino, liber contra Collatorem. Comp. Wiggers, ii. p. 188 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Carmen de ingratis. He charges the Semi-Pelagians with ingratitude to Augustine and his great merits to the cause of religion.

<sup>4</sup> These Responsiones Prosperi Aquitani ad capita calumniantium Gallorum and Ad capita objectionum Vincentianorum (of Vincentius Lirinensis) are also found in the Appendix to the 10th vol. of the Benedictine edition of the Opera Augustini, f. 198 sqq. and f. 207 sqq. Among the objections of Vincentius are a. g., the following:

3. Quia Deus majorem partem generis humani ad hoc creet, ut illam perdat in eternum.

4. Quia major pars generis humani ad hoc creetur a Deo, ut non Dei, sed diaboli faciat voluntatem.

10. Quia adulteria et corruptelas virginum sacrarum ideo contingant, quia illas Deus ad hoc prædestinavi; ut caderent.

Cassian are the following: the presbyter-monk VINCENTIUS of Lerinum, author of the *Commonitorium*, in which he developed the true catholic test of doctrine, the threefold consensus, in covert antagonism to the novel doctrines of Augustinianism (about 434);<sup>1</sup> FAUSTUS, bishop of Rhegium (Riez), who at the council of Arles (475) refuted the hyper-Augustinian presbyter Lucidus, and was commissioned by the council to write a work upon the grace of God and human freedom;<sup>2</sup> GENNADIUS, presbyter at Marseilles (died after 495), who continued the biographical work of Jerome, *De viris illustribus*, down to 495, and attributed Augustine's doctrine of predestination to his itch for writing;<sup>3</sup> ARNOBIUS the younger;<sup>4</sup> and the much discussed anonymous tract *Prædestinatus* (about 460), which, by gross exaggeration, and by an unwarranted imputation of logical results which Augustine had expressly forestalled, placed the doctrine of predestination in an odious light, and then refuted it.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Comp. above, § 118; also Wiggers, ii. p. 208 ff., and Baur, l. c. p. 185 ff., who likewise impute to the *Commonitorium* a Semi-Pelagian tendency. This is beyond doubt, if Vincentius was the author of the above-mentioned *Objectiones Vincentianæ*. Perhaps the second part of the *Commonitorium*, which, except the last chapters, has been lost, was specially directed against the Augustinian doctrine of predestination, and was on this account destroyed, while the first part acquired almost canonical authority in the Catholic church.

<sup>2</sup> *De gratia Dei et humanæ mentis libero arbitrio* (in the *Biblioth. maxima Patrum*, tom. viii.). This work is regarded as the ablest defence of Semi-Pelagianism written in that age. Comp. upon it Wiggers, ii. p. 224 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *De viris illustr.* c. 38, where he speaks in other respects eulogistically of Augustine. He refers to the passage in *Prov.* x. 19: "In multiloquio non fugies peccatum." Comp. respecting him Wiggers, ii. 350 ff. and Neander, *Dogmengeschichte*, i. p. 406. His works are found in Migne's *Patrol.* vol. 58.

<sup>4</sup> In his *Commentarius in Psalmos*, written about 460, especially upon *Psal.* cxxvii.: "Nisi Dominus edificaverit domum." Some, following Sirmond, consider him as the author of the next-mentioned treatise *Prædestinatus*, but without good ground. Comp. Wiggers, ii. p. 348 f.

<sup>5</sup> "*Prædestinatus, seu Prædestinatorum hæresis, et libri S. Augustino temere adscripti refutatio.*" The hæresis *Prædestinatorum* is the last of ninety heresies, and consists in the assertion: "*Dei prædestinatione peccata committi.*" This work was first discovered by J. Sirmond and published at Paris in 1648 (also in Gallandi, *Biblioth.* tom. x. p. 359 sqq., and in Migne's *Patrol.* tom. liii. p. 587 sqq., together with Sirmond's *Historia Prædestinatiana*). It occasioned in the seventeenth century a lively controversy between the Jesuits and the Jansenists, as to whether there had existed a distinct sect of *Prædestinarians*. The author, however, merely

The author of the *Prædestinatus* says, that a treatise had fallen into his hands, which fraudulently bore upon its face the name of the orthodox teacher Augustine, in order to smuggle in, under a Catholic name, a blasphemous dogma, pernicious to the faith. On this account he had undertaken to transcribe and to refute this work. The treatise itself consists of three books; the first, following Augustine's book, *De hæresibus*, gives a description of ninety heresies from Simon Magus down to the time of the author, and brings up, as the last of them, the doctrine of a double predestination, as a doctrine which makes God the author of evil, and renders all the moral endeavors of men fruitless;<sup>1</sup> the second book is the pseudo-Augustinian treatise upon this ninetieth heresy, but is apparently merely a Semi-Pelagian caricature by the same author;<sup>2</sup> the third book contains the refutation of the thus travestied pseudo-Augustinian doctrine of predestination, employing the usual Semi-Pelagian arguments.

A counterpart to this treatise is found in the also anonymous work, *De vocatione omnium gentium*, which endeavors to commend Augustinianism by mitigation, in the same degree that the *Prædestinatus* endeavors to stultify it by exaggeration.<sup>3</sup> It has been ascribed to pope Leo I. († 461), of whom it would not be unworthy; but it cannot be supposed that the work of so distinguished a man could have remained anonymous. The

feigned such a sect to exist, in order to avoid the appearance of attacking Augustine's authority. See details in Wiggers, ii. p. 329 ff.; Neander, *Dogmengeschichte*, i. 399 ff.; and Baur, p. 190 ff. The latter says: "The treatise [more accurately the second book of it; the whole consists of three books] is ascribed to Augustine, but as the ascription is immediately after declared false, both assertions are evidently made with the purpose of condemning Augustine's doctrine with its consequences (only not directly in his name), as one morally most worthy of reprobation." Neander ascribes only the first and the third book, Baur also the second book, to a Semi-Pelagian.

<sup>1</sup> The first book has also been reprinted in the *Corpus hæreseolog.* ed. F. Oehler, tom. i. Berol. 1856, pp. 233-268.

<sup>2</sup> Just as the *Capitula Gallorum* and the *Objectiones Vincentianæ* exaggerate Augustinianism, in order the more easily to refute it.

<sup>3</sup> It is found among the works of Leo I. and also of Prosper Aquitanus, but deviates from the views of the latter. Comp. Quesnel's learned *Dissertationes de ætatore libri de vocatione gentium*, in the second part of his edition of Leo's works, and also Wiggers, ii. p. 218 ff.

author avoids even the term *prædestinatio*, and teaches expressly, that Christ died for *all* men and would have all to be saved, thus rejecting the Augustinian particularism. But, on the other hand, he also rejects the Semi-Pelagian principles, and asserts the utter inability of the natural man to do good. He unhesitatingly sets grace above the human will, and represents the whole life of faith, from beginning to end, as a work of unmerited grace. He develops the three thoughts, that God desires the salvation of all men; that no one is saved by his own merits, but by grace; and that the human understanding cannot fathom the depths of divine wisdom. We must trust in the righteousness of God. Every one of the damned suffers only the righteous punishment of his sins; while no saint can boast himself in his merits, since it is only of pure grace that he is saved. But how is it with the great multitude of infants that die every year without baptism, and without opportunity of coming to the knowledge of salvation? The author feels this difficulty, without, however, being able to solve it. He calls to his help the representative character of parents, and dilutes the Augustinian doctrine of original sin to the negative conception of a mere defect of good, which, of course, also reduces the idea of hereditary guilt and the damnation of unbaptized children. He distinguishes between a *general* grace which comes to man through the external revelation in nature, law, and gospel, and a *special* grace, which effects conversion and regeneration by an inward impartation of saving power, and which is only bestowed on those that are saved.

Semi-Pelagianism prevailed in Gaul for several decades. Under the lead of Faustus of Rhegium it gained the victory in two synods, at Arles in 472 and at Lyons in 475, where Augustine's doctrine of predestination was condemned, though without mention of his name.

§ 160. *Victory of Semi-Augustinianism. Council of Orange,*  
A. D. 529.

But these synods were only provincial, and were the cause of a schism. In North Africa and in Rome the Augustinian

system of doctrine, though in a somewhat softened form, attained the ascendancy. In the decree issued by pope Gelasius in 496 *de libris recipiendis et non recipiendis* (the beginning of an Index librorum prohibitorum), the writings of Augustine and Prosper Aquitanus are placed among books ecclesiastically sanctioned, those of Cassian and Faustus of Rhegium among the apocryphal or forbidden. Even in Gaul it found in the beginning of the sixth century very capable and distinguished advocates, especially in AVITUS, archbishop of Vienne (490-523), and CÆSARIUS, archbishop of Arles (502-542). Associated with these was FULGENTIUS of Ruspe († 533), in the name of the sixty African bishops banished by the Vandals and then living in Sardinia.<sup>1</sup>

The controversy was stirred up anew by the Scythian monks, who in their zeal for the Monophysite theopaschitism, abhorred everything connected with Nestorianism, and urged first pope Hormisdas, and then with better success the exiled African bishops, to procure the condemnation of Semi-Pelagianism.

These transactions terminated at length in the triumph of a moderate Augustinianism, or of what might be called Semi-Augustinianism, in distinction from Semi-Pelagianism. At the synod of Orange (Arausio) in the year 529, at which Cæsarius of Arles was leader, the Semi-Pelagian system, yet *without mention of its adherents*, was condemned in twenty-five chapters or canons, and the Augustinian doctrine of sin and grace was approved, without the doctrine of absolute or particularistic predestination.<sup>2</sup> A similar result was reached

<sup>1</sup> He wrote *De veritate prædestinationis et gratiæ Dei*, three libb. against Faustus. He uses in these the expression *prædestinatio duplex*, but understands by the second *prædestinatio* the prædestination to damnation, not to sin, and censures those who affirmed a prædestination to sin. Yet he expressly consigned to damnation all unbaptized children, even such as die in their mother's womb. Comp. Wiggers, ii. p. 378.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. the transactions of the *Concilium Arausicanum*, the twenty-five *Capitula*, and the *Symbolum* in the *Opera Aug.* ed. Bened. Appendix to tom. x. 157 sqq.; in Mansi, tom. viii. p. 712 sqq.; and in Hefele, ii. p. 704 ff. The Benedictine editors trace back the several *Capitula* to their sources in the works of Augustine, Prosper, and others.

at a synod of Valence (Valencia), held the same year, but otherwise unknown.<sup>1</sup>

The synod of Orange, for its Augustinian decisions in anthropology and soteriology, is of great importance. But as the chapters contain many repetitions (mostly from the Bible and the works of Augustine and his followers), it will suffice to give extracts containing in a positive form the most important propositions.

Chap. 1. The sin of Adam has not injured the body only, but also the soul of man.

2. The sin of Adam has brought sin and death upon all mankind.

3. Grace is not merely bestowed when we pray for it, but grace itself causes us to pray for it.

5. Even the beginning of faith, the disposition to believe, is effected by grace.

9. All good thoughts and works are God's gift.

10. Even the regenerate and the saints need continually the divine help.

12. What God loves in us, is not our merit, but his own gift.

13. The free will weakened<sup>2</sup> in Adam, can only be restored through the grace of baptism.

16. All good that we possess is God's gift, and therefore no one should boast.

18. Unmerited grace precedes meritorious works.<sup>3</sup>

19. Even had man not fallen, he would have needed divine grace for salvation.

23. When man sins, he does his own will; when he does good, he executes the will of God, yet voluntarily.

<sup>1</sup> The Acts of the synod of Valence, in the metropolitan province of Vienna, held in the same year or in 580, have been lost. Pagi, and the common view, place this synod *after* the synod of Orange, Hefele, on the contrary (ii. 718), *before* it. But we have no decisive data.

<sup>2</sup> "*Arbitrium voluntatis in primo homine infirmatum*" (not "*amissum*").

<sup>3</sup> There are then meritorious works. "*Debetur merces bonis operibus, si fiant, sed gratia quæ non debetur præcedit, ut fiant.*" Chap. 18 taken from Augustine's *Opus imperf.* c. Jul. i. c. 133 and from the Sentences of Prosper Aquitanus, n. 297. But, on the other hand, Augustine also says: "*Merita nostra sunt Dei munera.*"

## 25. The love of God is itself a gift of God.

To these chapters the synod added a Creed of anthropology and soteriology, which, in opposition to Semi-Pelagianism, contains the following five propositions:¹

¹ In the Latin original, the Epilogus reads as follows (Aug. Opera, tom. x. Appendix, f. 159 sq.):

"Ac sic secundum suprascriptas sanctarum scripturarum sententias vel antiquorum patrum definitiones hoc, Deo propitiante, et prædicare debemus et credere, quod per peccatum primi hominis ita inclinatum et attenuatum fuerit liberum arbitrium, ut nullus postea aut diligere Deum sicut oportuit, aut credere in Deum, aut operari propter Deum quod bonum est, possit, nisi gratia eum et misericordia divina prævenierit. Unde Abel justo et Noe, et Abraham, et Isaac, et Jacob, et omni antiquorum sanctorum multitudini illam præclaram fidem, quam in ipsorum laude prædicat apostolus Paulus, non per bonum naturæ, quod prius in Adam datum fuerat, sed per gratiam Dei credimus fuisse collatam. Quam gratiam etiam post adventum Domini omnibus qui baptizari desiderant, non in libero arbitrio haberi, sed Christi novimus simul et credimus largitate conferri, secundum illud quod jam supra dictum est, et quod prædicat Paulus apostolus: *Vobis donatum est pro Christo non solum ut in eum credatis, sed etiam ut pro illo patiamini* (Phil. i. 29); et illud: *Deus qui cepit in vobis bonum opus, perficiet usque in diem Domini nostri Jesu Christi* (Phil. i. 6); et illud: *Gratia salvi facti estis per fidem, et hoc non ex vobis, Dei enim donum est* (Ephes. ii. 8); et quod de se ipso ait apostolus: *Misericordiam consecutus sum ut fidelis essem* (1 Cor. vii. 29); non dixit quia eram, sed ut essem; et illud: *Quid habes quod non accepisti?* (1 Cor. iv. 7); et illud: *Omne datum bonum et omne donum perfectum de sursum est, descendens a Patre luminum* (Jac. i. 17); et illud: *Nemo habet quidquam boni, nisi illi datum fuerit de super* (Joann. iii. 28). Innumerabilia sunt sanctorum scripturarum testimonia quæ possunt ad probandam gratiam proferri, sed brevitas studio prætermissa sunt, quia et reversa cui pauca non sufficiunt plura non proderunt.

"Hoc etiam secundum fidem catholicam credimus, quod accepta per baptismum gratia, omnes baptizati, Christo auxiliante et coöperante, quæ ad salutem animæ pertinent, possint et debeant, si fideliter laborare voluerint, adimplere.

"Aliquos vero ad malum divina potestate prædestinatos esse non solum non credimus, sed etiam si sunt, qui tantum malum credere velint, cum omni detestatione illis anathema dicimus.

"Hoc etiam salubriter profiteri et credimus, quod in omni opere bono non nos incipimus et postea per Dei misericordiam adjuvamus, sed ipse nobis, nullis præcedentibus bonis meritis, et fidem et amorem sui prius inspirat, ut et baptismi sacramenta fideliter requiramus, et post baptismum cum ipsius adjutorio ea quæ sibi sunt placita implere possimus. Unde manifestissime credendum est, quod et illius latronis, quem Dominus ad paradisi patriam revocavit, et Cornelli centurionis, ad quem angelus Domini missus est, et Zachari, qui ipsum Dominum suscipere meruit, illa tam admirabilis fides non fuit de natura, sed divinæ largitatis donum.

"Et quia definitionem antiquorum patrum nostramque, quæ suprascripta est, non solum religiosis, sed etiam laicis medicamentum esse, et desideramus: et cupimus

1. Through the fall free will has been so weakened, that without prevenient grace no one can love God, believe on Him, or do good for God's sake, as he ought (*sicut oportuit*, implying that he may in a certain measure).

2. Through the grace of God all may, by the co-operation of God, perform what is necessary for their soul's salvation.

3. It is by no means our faith, that any have been predestinated by God to sin (*ad malum*), but rather: if there are people who believe so vile a thing, we condemn them with utter abhorrence (*cum omni detestatione*).<sup>1</sup>

4. In every good work the beginning proceeds not from us, but God inspires in us faith and love to Him without merit precedent on our part, so that we desire baptism, and after baptism can, with His help, fulfil His will.

5. Because this doctrine of the fathers and the synod is also salutary for the laity, the distinguished men of the laity also, who have been present at this solemn assembly, shall subscribe these acts.

In pursuance of this requisition, besides the bishops, the Præfectus prætorio Liberius, and seven other viri illustres, signed the Acts. This recognition of the lay element, in view of the hierarchical bent of the age, is significant, and indicates an inward connection of evangelical doctrine with the idea of the universal priesthood. And they were two laymen, we must remember, Prosper and Hilarius, who first came forward in Gaul in energetic opposition to Semi-Pelagianism and in advocacy of the sovereignty of divine grace.

The decisions of the council were sent by Cæsarius to Rome, and were confirmed by pope Boniface II. in 530. Boniface, in giving his approval, emphasized the declaration, that even the beginning of a good will and of faith is a gift of

placuit ut eam etiam illustres ac magnifici viri, qui nobiscum ad præfatam festivitatem convenerunt, propria manu subscriberent."

Then follow the names of fourteen bishops (headed by Cæsarius) and eight laymen (headed by Petrus Marcellinus Felix Liberius, vir clarissimus et illustris Præfectus Prætorii Galliarum atque Patricius).

<sup>1</sup> This undoubtedly takes for granted, that Augustine did not teach this; and in fact he taught only a predestination of the wicked to perdition, not a predestination to sin.



prevenient grace, while Semi-Pelagianism left open a way to Christ without grace from God. And beyond question, the church was fully warranted in affirming the pre-eminence of grace over freedom, and the necessity and importance of the *gratia præveniens*.

Notwithstanding this rejection of the Semi-Pelagian teachings (not teachers), they made their way into the church again, and while Augustine was universally honored as a canonized saint and standard teacher, Cassian and Faustus of Rhegium remained in grateful remembrance as saints in France.<sup>1</sup>

At the close of this period Gregory the Great represents the moderated Augustinian system, with the *gratia præveniens*, but without the *gratia irresistibilis* and without a particularistic *decretum absolutum*. Through him this milder Augustinianism exerted great influence upon the mediæval theology. Yet the strict Augustinianism always had its adherents, in such men as Bede, Alcuin, and Isidore of Seville, who taught a *gemina prædestinatio*, sive electorum ad salutem, sive reprobatorum ad mortem; it became prominent again in the Gottschalk controversy in the ninth century, was repressed by scholasticism and the prevailing legalism; was advocated by the precursors of the Reformation, especially by Wiclif and Huss; and in the Reformation of the sixteenth century, it gained a massive acknowledgment and an independent development in Calvinism, which, in fact, partially recast it, and gave it its most consistent form.

<sup>1</sup> Comp. respecting the further history of anthropology WIGGERS: Schicksale der augustinischen Anthropologie von der Verdammung des Semipelagianismus auf den Synoden zu Orange und Valence, 529, bis zur Reaction des Mönchs Gottschalk für den Augustinismus, in Niedner's "Zeitschrift für hist. Theologie," 1854, p. 1 ff.

## CHAPTER X.

### CHURCH FATHERS, AND THEOLOGICAL LITERATURE

Comp. the general literature on the Fathers in vol. i. § 116, and the special literature in the several sections following.

#### I.—THE GREEK FATHERS.

##### § 161. *Eusebius of Cæsarea.*

- I. **EUSEBIUS PAMPHILI**: Opera omnia Gr. et Lat., curis variorum nempe *II. Valesii, Fr. Vigeri, B. Montfaucon, Card. Angelo Maii* edita; collegit et denuo recognovit *J. P. Migne*. Par. (Petit-Montrouge) 1857. 6 vols. (tom. xix.-xxiv. of Migne's *Patrologia Græca*). Of his several works his *Church History* has been oftenest edited, sometimes by itself, sometimes in connection with his *Vita Constantini*, and with the church histories of his successors; best by *Henr. Valesius* (Du Valois), Par. 1659-'73, 8 vols., and Cantabr. 1720, 8 vols., and again 1746 (with additions by *G. Reading*, best ed.); also (without the later historians) by *E. Zimmermann*, Francof. 1822; *F. A. Heinichen*, Lips. 1827-'8, 3 vols.; *E. Burton*, Oxon. 1838, 2 vols. (1845 and 1856 in 1 vol.); *Schwaegler*, Tüb. 1852; also in various translations: In German by *Stroth*, Quedlinburg, 1776 ff., 2 vols.; by *Gloss*, Stuttg. 1839; and several times in French and English; in English by *Hunmer* (1584), *T. Shorting*, and better by *Chr. Fr. Cruse* (an Amer. Episcopalian of German descent, died in New York, 1865): The Ecclesiastical History of Euseb. Pamph., etc., New York, 1856 (10th ed.), and Lond. 1858 (in Bohn's Eccles. Library). Comp. also the literary notices in *Brunet*, sub Euseb., and *James Darling*, Cyclop. Bibliograph. p. 1072 ff.
- II **Biographies by HIERONYMUS** (De viris illustr. c. 81, a brief sketch, with a list of his works), **VALESIUS** (De vita scriptisque Eusebii Cæsar.), **W. CAYE** (Lives of the most eminent Fathers of the Church, vol. ii. pp. 95-144, ed. H. Cary. Oxf. 1840), **HEINICHEN**, **STROTH**, **CRUSE**, and others, in their editions of the Eccles. Hist. of Eusebius. **F. C. BAUR**

Comparatur Eusebius hist. eccl. parens cum parente hist. Herodoto Tub. 1884. HENELL: De Euseb. Cæs. religionis christ. defensora. Gott. 1848. SAM. LEE: Introductory treatise in his Engl. edition of the Theophany of Eusebius, Cambr. 1848. SEMISCH: Art. Eusebius v. Cæs. in Herzog's Encycl. vol. iv. (1855), pp. 229-238. LYMAN COLEMAN: Eusebius as an historian, in the Bibliotheca Sacra, Andover, 1858, pp. 78-96. (The biography by Acacius, his successor in the see of Cæsarea, Socr. ii. 4, is lost.)

THIS third period is uncommonly rich in great teachers of the church, who happily united theological ability and practical piety, and who, by their development of the most important dogmas in conflict with mighty errors, earned the gratitude of posterity. They monopolized all the learning and eloquence of the declining Roman empire, and made it subservient to the cause of Christianity for the benefit of future generations. They are justly called *fathers* of the church; they belong to Christendom without distinction of denominations; and they still, especially Athanasius and Chrysostom among the Greek fathers, and Augustine and Jerome among the Latin, by their writings and their example, hold powerful sway, though with different degrees of authority according to the views entertained by the various churches concerning the supremacy of the Bible and the value of ecclesiastical tradition.

We begin the series of the most important Nicene and post-Nicene divines with EUSEBIUS of Cæsarea, the "father of church history," the Christian Herodotus.

He was born about the year 260 or 270, probably in Palestine, and was educated at Antioch, and afterwards at Cæsarea in Palestine, under the influence of the works of Origen. He formed an intimate friendship with the learned presbyter Pamphilus,<sup>1</sup> who had collected a considerable biblical and patristic library, and conducted a flourishing theolog-

<sup>1</sup> Hence the surname *Εὐσέβιος* (ὁ φίλος) τοῦ Παμφίλου, *Pamphili*, by which anciently he was most frequently distinguished from many other less noted men of the same name, e. g.: Eusebius of Nicomedia († 341), Eusebius of Vercelli († 371), Eusebius Emesenus, of Emesa or Emisa in Phœnicia († 360), and others. On this last comp. *Opuscula quæ supersunt Græca*, ed. Augusti, Elberfeld, 1829, somewhat hastily; corrected by Thilo, *Ueber die Schriften des Euseb. von Alex und des Euseb. von Emisa*, Halle, 1832.

ical school which he had founded at Cæsarea, till in 309 he died a martyr in the persecution under Diocletian.<sup>1</sup> Eusebius taught for a long time in this school; and after the death of his preceptor and friend, he travelled to Tyre and to Egypt, and was an eye-witness of the cruel scenes of the last great persecution of the Christians. He was imprisoned as a confessor, but soon released.

Twenty years later, when Eusebius, presiding at the council at Tyre (335 or 336), took sides against Athanasius, the bishop Potamon of Heraclea, according to the account of Epiphanius, exclaimed in his face: "How dost thou, Eusebius, sit as judge of the innocent Athanasius? Who can bear it? Why! didst thou not sit with me in prison in the time of the tyrants? They plucked out my eye for my confession of the truth; thou camest forth unhurt; thou hast suffered nothing for thy confession; unscathed thou art here present. How didst thou escape from prison? On some other ground than because thou didst promise to do an unlawful thing [to sacrifice to idols]? or, perchance, didst thou actually do this?" But this insinuation of cowardice and infidelity to Christ arose probably from envy and party passion in a moment of excitement. With such a stain upon him, Eusebius would hardly have been intrusted by the ancient church with the episcopal staff.<sup>2</sup>

About the year 315, or earlier, Eusebius was chosen bishop of Cæsarea,<sup>3</sup> where he labored till his death in 340. The patriarchate of Antioch, which was conferred upon him after the deposition of Eustathius in 331, he in honorable self-denial, and from preference for a more quiet literary life, declined.

He was drawn into the Arian controversies against his will, and played an eminent part at the council of Nicæa, where he held the post of honor at the right hand of the presiding emperor. In the perplexities of this movement he took

<sup>1</sup> Jerome remarks of Pamphilus (*De viris illustribus*, c. 75): "Tanto bibliothecæ divinis amore flagavit, ut maximam partem Origenis voluminum sua manu descripserit, quæ usque hodie [a. 392] in Cæsariensi bibliotheca habentur."

<sup>2</sup> So Valesius also views the matter, while Baronius puts faith in the rebuke.

<sup>3</sup> Hence he is also called Eusebius Cæsariensis or Palestinianus.

middle ground, and endeavored to unite the opposite parties. This brought him, on the one hand, the peculiar favor of the emperor Constantine, but, on the other, from the leaders of the Nicene orthodoxy, the suspicion of a secret leaning to the Arian heresy.<sup>1</sup> It is certain that, before the council of Nicæa, he sympathized with Arius; that in the council he proposed an orthodox but indefinite compromise-creed; that after the council he was not friendly with Athanasius and other defenders of orthodoxy; and that, in the synod of Tyre, which deposed Athanasius in 335, he took a leading part, and, according to Epiphanius, presided. In keeping with these facts is his silence respecting the Arian controversy (which broke out in 318) in an Ecclesiastical History which comes down to 324, and was probably not completed till 326, when the council of Nicæa would have formed its most fitting close. He would rather close his history with the victory of Constantine over Licinius than with the Creed over which theological parties contended, and with which he himself was implicated. But, on the other hand, it is also a fact that he subscribed the Nicene Creed, though reluctantly, and reserving his own inter-

<sup>1</sup> So thought, among the ancients, Hilary, Jerome (who otherwise speaks favorably of Eusebius), Theodoret, and the second council of Nicæa (A. D. 787), which unjustly condemned him even expressly, as an Arian heretic; and so have thought, among moderns, Baronius, Petavius, Clericus, Tillemont, Gieseler; while the church historian Socrates, the Roman bishops Gelasius and Pelagius II., Valesius, G. Bull, Cave (who enters into a full vindication, l. c. p. 135 sqq.), and Sam. Lee (and most Anglicans), have defended the orthodoxy of Eusebius, or at least mention him with very high respect. The Gallican church has even placed him in the catalogue of saints. Athanasius never expressly charges him with apostasy from the Nicene faith to Arianism or to Semi-Arianism, but frequently says that before 325 he held with Arius, and changed his opinion at Nicæa. This is the view of Möhler also (*Athanasius der Grosse*, p. 383 ff.), whom Dorner (*History of Christology*, i. 792) inaccurately reckons among the opponents of the orthodoxy of Eusebius. The testimonies of the ancients for and against Eusebius are collected in Migne's edition of his works, tom. i. pp. 68-98. Among recent writers Dr. Samuel Lee has most fully investigated the orthodoxy of Eusebius in the Preliminary Dissertation to his translation of the *Theophania* from the Syriac, pp. xxiv.-xcix. He arrives at the conclusion (p. xcvi.), "that Eusebius was no Arian; and that the same reasoning must prove that he was no Semi-Arian; that he did in no degree partake of the error of Origen, ascribed to him so positively and so groundlessly by Photius." But this is merely a negative result.

pretation of the *homoousion*; that he publicly recommended it to the people of his diocese; and that he never formally rejected it.

The only satisfactory solution of this apparent inconsistency is to be found in his own indecision and leaning to a doctrinal latitudinarianism, not unfrequent in historians who become familiar with a vast variety of opinions in different ages and countries. On the important point of the *homoousion* he never came to a firm and final conviction. He wavered between the older Origenistic subordinationism and the Nicene orthodoxy. He asserted clearly and strongly with Origen the eternity of the Son, and so far was decidedly opposed to Arianism, which made Christ a creature in time; but he recoiled from the *homoousion*, because it seemed to him to go beyond the Scriptures, and hence he made no use of the term, either in his book against Marcellus, or in his discourses against Sabellius. Religious sentiment compelled him to acknowledge the full deity of Christ; fear of Sabellianism restrained him. He avoided the strictly orthodox formulas, and moved rather in the less definite terms of former times. Theological acumen he constitutionally lacked. He was, in fact, not a man of controversy, but of moderation and peace. He stood upon the border between the ante-Nicene theology and the Nicene. His doctrine shows the color of each by turns, and reflects the unsettled problem of the church in the first stage of the Arian controversy.<sup>1</sup>

With his theological indecision is connected his weakness of character. He was an amiable and pliant court-theologian, and suffered himself to be blinded and carried away by the splendor of the first Christian emperor, his patron and friend. Constantine took him often into his counsels, invited him to his table, related to him his vision of the cross, showed him the famous labarum, listened standing to his occasional sermons, wrote him several letters, and intrusted to him the

<sup>1</sup> The same view is taken substantially by Baur (*Geschichte der Lehre von der Dreieinigkeit und Menschwerdung*, i. 475 ff.), Dorner (*Entwicklungsgeschichte der Lehre von der Person Christi*, i. 792 ff.), Semisch (*Art. Eusebius in Herzog's Encyclopädie*, vol. iv. 288), and other modern German theologians.

supervision of the copies of the Bible for the use of the churches in Constantinople.

At the celebration of the thirtieth anniversary of this emperor's reign (336), Eusebius delivered a panegyric decked with the most pompous hyperbole, and after his death, in literal obedience to the maxim: "De mortuis nihil nisi bonum," he glorified his virtues at the expense of veracity and with intentional omission of his faults. With all this, however, he had noble qualities of mind and heart, which in more quiet times would have been an ornament to any episcopal see. And it must be said, to his honor, that he never claimed the favor of the emperor for private ends.

The theological and literary value of Eusebius lies in the province of learning. He was an unwearied reader and collector, and probably surpassed all the other church fathers, hardly excepting even Origen and Jerome, in compass of knowledge and of acquaintance with Grecian literature both heathen and Christian; while in originality, vigor, sharpness, and copiousness of thought, he stands far below Origen, Athanasius, Basil, and the two Gregories. His scholarship goes much further in breadth than in depth, and is not controlled and systematized by a philosophical mind or a critical judgment.

Of his works, the historical are by far the most celebrated and the most valuable; to wit, his *Ecclesiastical History*, his *Chronicle*, his *Life of Constantine*, and a tract on the *Martyrs of Palestine* in the Diocletian persecution. The position of Eusebius, at the close of the period of persecution, and in the opening of the period of the imperial establishment of Christianity, and his employment of many ancient documents, some of which have since been lost, give these works a peculiar value. He is temperate, upon the whole, impartial, and truth-loving—rare virtues in an age of intense excitement and polemical zeal like that in which he lived. The fact that he was the first to work this important field of theological study, and for many centuries remained a model in it, justly entitles him to his honorable distinction of Father of Church History. Yet he is neither a critical student nor an elegant writer of

history, but only a diligent and learned collector. His Ecclesiastical History, from the birth of Christ to the victory of Constantine over Licinius in 324, gives a colorless, defective, incoherent, fragmentary, yet interesting picture of the heroic youth of the church, and owes its incalculable value, not to the historic art of the author, but almost entirely to his copious and mostly literal extracts from foreign, and in some cases now extinct, sources. As concerns the first three centuries, too, it stands alone; for the successors of Eusebius begin their history where he leaves off.

His Chronicle consists of an outline-sketch of universal history down to 325, arranged by ages and nations (borrowed largely from the Chronography of Julius Africanus), and an abstract of this universal chronicle in tabular form. The Greek original is lost, with the exception of unconnected fragments by Syncellus; but the second part, containing the chronological tables, was translated and continued by Jerome to 378, and remained for centuries the source of the synchronistic knowledge of history and the basis of historical works in Christendom.<sup>1</sup> Jerome also translated, with several corrections and additions, a useful antiquarian work of Eusebius, the so-called Onomasticon, a description of the places mentioned in the Bible.<sup>2</sup>

In his Life, and still more in his Eulogy, of Constantine, Eusebius has almost entirely forgotten the dignity of the historian in the zeal of the panegyrist. Nevertheless, this work is the chief source of the history of the reign of his imperial friend.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The Greek title was: *Χρονικὴν κανόνων παντοδατῆ ιστορίας* (Hieron. *De viris illustr.* c. 81); the Latin is: *Chronica Eusebii s. Canones historiarum universarum*, Hieronymo interprete. See Vallarsi's ed. of Jerome's works, tom. viii. 1-820. Jerome also calls it *Temporum librum*. It is now known also (since 1818) in an Armenian translation. Most complete edition by Angelo Mai, in *Script. vet. nova coll.* tom. viii. Rom. 1838, republished in Migne's edition of the complete works of Eusebius, tom. i. p. 100 sqq.

<sup>2</sup> *Περὶ τῶν τοικῶν ὀνομάτων τῶν ἐν τῇ δεξιᾷ γραφῇ*, *De situ et nominibus locorum Hebraicorum*, in Jerome's works, tom. iii. 121-290. A new edition, Greek and Latin, by Larsow and Parthey, Berol. 1862.

<sup>3</sup> Socrates already observes (in the first book of his Church History) that Eusebius wrote the Life of Constantine more as a panegyrical oration than as an accurate



Next in importance to his historical works are his apologetic; namely, his *Præparatio evangelica*,<sup>1</sup> and his *Demonstratio evangelica*.<sup>2</sup> These were both written before 324, and are an arsenal of the apologetic material of the ancient church. The former proposes, in fifteen books, to give a documentary refutation of the heathen religions from Greek writings. The latter gives, in twenty books, of which only the first ten are preserved, the positive argument for the absolute truth of Christianity, from its nature, and from the fulfilment of the prophecies in the Old Testament. The *Theophany*, in five books, is a popular compend from these two works, and was probably written later, as Epiphanius wrote his *Anacephalæsis* after the Panarion, for more general use.<sup>3</sup> It is known in the Greek original from fragments only, published by Cardinal Mai,<sup>4</sup> and now complete in a Syriac version which was discovered in 1839 by Tattam, in a Nitrian monastery, and was

account of events. Baronius (Annal. ad an. 324, n. 5) compares the Vita Constantini, not unfitly, with the Cyropædia of Xenophon, who, as Cicero says, "vitam Cyri non tam ad historię fidem conscripsit, quam ad effigiem justi principis exhibendam." This is the most charitable construction we can put upon this book, the tone of which is intolerably offensive to a manly and independent spirit acquainted with the crimes of Constantine. But we should remember that stronger men, such as Athanasius, Hilary, and Epiphanius, have overrated Constantine, and called him "most pious" and "of blessed memory." BURCKHARDT, in his work on Constantine, p. 346 and passim, speaks too contemptuously of Eusebius, without any reference to his good qualities and great merits.

<sup>1</sup> Best edited by THOMAS GAISFORD, Oxon. 1848, 4 vols. 8vo. In Migne's edition it forms tom. iii.

<sup>2</sup> Likewise edited by GAISFORD, Oxf. 1852, 2 vols. 8vo. In Migne's edition tom. iv.

<sup>3</sup> Dr. Sam. Lee, however, is of the opposite opinion, see p. xxii. of the Preface to his translation. "It appears probable to me," he says, "that this more popular and more useful work [the Theophania] was first composed and published, and that the other two [the Præparatio, and the Demonstratio Evangelica]—illustrating, as they generally do, some particular points only—argued in order in our work—were reserved for the reading and occasional writing of our author during a considerable number of years, as well for the satisfaction of his own mind, as for the general reading of the learned. It appears probable to me, therefore, that this was one of the first productions of Eusebius, if not the first after the persecutions ceased."

<sup>4</sup> In the fourth volume of the *Novæ Patrum Bibliotheca*, Rcm. 1847, pp. 108-156, reprinted in Migne's edition of the works of Eusebius, tom. v. 609 sqq.

edited by Samuel Lee at London in 1842.<sup>1</sup> To this class also belongs his apologetic tract *Against Hierocles*.<sup>2</sup>

Of much less importance are the two dogmatic works of Eusebius: *Against Marcellus*, and *Upon the Church Theology* (likewise against Marcellus), in favor of the hypostatical existence of the Son.<sup>3</sup>

His Commentaries on several books of the Bible (Isaiah, Psalms, Luke) pursue, without independence, and without knowledge of the Hebrew, the allegorical method of Origen.<sup>4</sup>

To these are to be added, finally, some works in Biblical Introduction and Archæology, the Onomasticon, already alluded to, a sort of sacred geography, and fragments of an enthusiastic Apology for Origen, a juvenile work which he and Pamphilus jointly produced before 309, and which, in the Origenistic controversy, was the target of the bitterest shots of Epiphanius and Jerome.<sup>5</sup>

### § 162. *The Church Historians after Eusebius.*

- I. The Church Histories of SOCRATES, SOZOMEN, THEODORET, EYAGRIUS, PHILOSTORGIUS, and THEODORUS LECTOR have been edited, with the Eccles. Hist. of Eusebius, by *Valesius*, Par. 1659-'78, in 8 vols. (defective reprint, Frankf. a. M. 1672-'79); best ed., Cambridge, 1720, and again 1746, in 3 vols., with improvements and additions by *Guil. Reading*. Best English translation by *Meredith, Hammer, and Wye*

<sup>1</sup> Also in English, under the title: *On the Theophania, or Divine Manifestation of our Saviour Jesus Christ*, by Eusebius, translated into English, with Notes, from an ancient Syriac Version of the Greek original, now lost; to which is prefixed a Vindication of the orthodoxy, and prophetic views, of that distinguished writer, by Sam. Lee, D. D., Cambr. 1848. The MS. of this work is deposited in the British Museum; it was written at Edessa in the Estranghelo, or old church-handwriting of the Syrians, on very fine and well-prepared skin. Dr. Lee assigns it to the year 411 (l. c. p. xii.).

<sup>2</sup> In Migne's edition, tom. iv. 795-868.

<sup>3</sup> In Migne's edition, tom. vi. p. 707 sqq.

<sup>4</sup> Angelo Mai has published new fragments of Commentaries of Eusebius on the Psalms and on the Gospel of Luke in *Novæ Patrum Bibliotheca*, tom. iv. p. 77 sqq. and p. 160 sqq., and republished in Migne's ed. vol. vi.

<sup>5</sup> The sixth book was added by Eusebius alone after the death of his friend. The first book is still extant in the Latin version of Rufinus, and some extracts in Photius.

*Saltonstall*, Cambr. 1688, 1692, and London, 1709. New ed. in Bohn's Ecclesiastical Library, Lond. 1851, in 4 vols. small 8vo.

- II. F. A. HOLZHAUSEN: *De fontibus, quibus Socrates, Sozomenus, ac Theodoretus in scribenda historia sacra usi sunt.* Gött. 1825. G. DANGERS: *De fontibus, indole et dignitate librorum Theod. Lectoris et Evagrii.* Gött. 1841. J. G. DOWLING: *An Introduction to the Critical Study of Eccl. History.* Lond. 1838, p. 84 ff. F. CHR. BAUR: *Die Epochen der kirchlichen Geschichtschreibung.* Tüb. 1852, pp. 7-82. Comp. P. SCHAFF: *History of the Apostolic Church*, Gen. Introd. p. 52 f.

EUSEBIUS, without intending it, founded a school of church historians, who continued the thread of his story from Constantine the Great to the close of the sixth century, and, like him, limited themselves to a simple, credulous narration of external facts, and a collection of valuable documents, without an inkling of the critical sifting, philosophical mastery, and artistic reproduction of material, which we find in Thucydides and Tacitus among the classics, and in many a modern historian. None of them touched the history of the first three centuries; Eusebius was supposed to have done here all that could be desired. The histories of Socrates, Sozomen, and Theodoret run nearly parallel, but without mutual acquaintance or dependence, and their contents are very similar.<sup>1</sup> Evagrius carried the narrative down to the close of the sixth century. All of them combine ecclesiastical and political history, which after Constantine were inseparably interwoven in the East; and (with the exception of Philostorgius) all occupy essentially the same orthodox stand-point. They ignore the Western church, except where it comes in contact with the East.

These successors of Eusebius are:

SOCRATES, an attorney or scholasticus in Constantinople, born in 380. His work, in seven books, covers the period from 306 to 439, and is valuable for its numerous extracts

<sup>1</sup> The frequent supposition (of Valois with others) that Sozomen wrote to complete Socrates, and Theodoret to complete both, cannot be proved. The authors seem independent of one another. Theodoret says in the Proœmium: "Since Eusebius of Palestine, commencing his history with the holy apostles, has described the events of the church to the reign of the God-beloved Constantine, I have begun my history where he ended his." He makes no mention of any other writers on the same subject. Nor does Sozomen, l. i. c. 1, where he alludes to his predecessors. Valesius charges Sozomen with plagiarism.

from sources, and its calm, impartial representation. It has been charged with a leaning towards Novatianism. He had upon the whole a higher view of the duty of the historian than his contemporaries and successors; he judged more liberally of heretics and schismatics, and is less extravagant in the praise of emperors and bishops.<sup>1</sup>

HERMIAS SOZOMEN, a native of Palestine, a junior contemporary of Socrates, and likewise a scholasticus in Constantinople, wrote the history of the church, in nine books, from 323 to the death of Honorius in 423,<sup>2</sup> and hence in its subjects keeps pace for the most part with Socrates, though, as it would appear, without the knowledge of his work, and with many additions on the history of the hermits and monks, for whom he had a great predilection.<sup>3</sup>

THEODORET, bishop of Cyrus, was born at Antioch about 390, of an honorable and pious mother; educated in the cloister of St. Euprepus (perhaps with Nestorius); formed upon the writings of Diodorus of Tarsus and Theodore of Mopsnestia; made bishop of Cyros, or Cyrrhos, in Syria, after 420; and died in 457. He is known to us from the Christological controversies as the most scholarly advocate of the Antiochian dyophysitism or moderate Nestorianism; condemned at Ephesus in 431, deposed by the council of Robbers in 449, acquitted in 451 by the fourth ecumenical council on condition of his condemning Nestorius and all deniers of the *theotokos*, but again partially condemned at the fifth long after his death. He was, therefore, like Eusebius, an actor as well as an author of church history. As bishop, he led an exemplary life, his enemies themselves being judges, and was especially benevolent to the poor. He owned nothing valuable but books, and applied the revenues of his bishopric to the public good. He shared the superstitions and weaknesses of his age.

His Ecclesiastical History, in five books, composed about 450, reaches from 325 to 429. It is the most valuable con-

<sup>1</sup> Separate edition by HUSSER: *Socratis scholastici Historia Eccl.* Oxon. 1858, 3 vols. 8vo.

<sup>2</sup> According to the usual, but incorrect statement, to the year 439.

<sup>3</sup> He informs us (Book v. c. 15) that his grandfather, with his whole family, was converted to Christianity by a miracle of the monk Hilarion.

tinuation of Eusebius, and, though shorter, it furnishes an essential supplement to the works of Socrates and Sozomen.

His "*Historia religiosa*" consists of biographies of hermits and monks, written with great enthusiasm for ascetic holiness, and with many fabulous accessories, according to the taste of the day. His "*Heretical Fables*,"<sup>1</sup> though superficial and marred by many errors, is of some importance for the history of Christian doctrine. It contains a severe condemnation of Nestorius, which we should hardly expect from Theodoret.<sup>2</sup>

Theodoret was a very fruitful author. Besides these histories, he wrote valuable commentaries on most of the books of the Old Testament and on all the Epistles of Paul; dogmatic and polemic works against Cyril and the Alexandrian Christology, and against the heretics; an apology of Christianity against the Greek philosophy; and sermons and letters.<sup>3</sup>

EVAGRUS (born about 536 in Syria, died after 594) was a lawyer in Antioch, and rendered the patriarch Gregory great service, particularly in an action for incest in 588. He was twice married, and the Antiochians celebrated his second wedding (592) with public plays. He is the last continuator of Eusebius and Theodoret, properly so called. He begins his Ecclesiastical History of six books with the council of Ephesus, 431, and closes it with the twelfth year of the reign of the emperor Maurice, 594. He is of special importance on the Nestorian and Eutychian controversies; gives accounts of

<sup>1</sup> *Αἰρετικῆς κακομυθίας ἱστορίαι*, in five books; in Schulze's edition of the Opera, tom. iv. p. 280 sqq. The fifth book presents a summary of the chief articles of the orthodox faith, a sort of dogmatical compend.

<sup>2</sup> Book iv. ch. 12. Garnier, Cave, and Oudin regard this anti-Nestorian chapter as a later interpolation, though without good reason; Schulze (note in loco, tom. iv. p. 368) defends it as genuine. It should be remembered that Theodoret at the council of Chalcedon could only save himself from expulsion by anathematizing Nestorius.

<sup>3</sup> THEODORETI Opera omnia cura et studio Jac. Sirmondi, Par. 1642, 4 vols. fol., with an additional vol. v. by Garnier, 1684. Another edition by J. L. Schulze, Halle, 1768-'74, 5 tom. in 10 vols., which has been republished by J. P. Migne, Par. 1860, in 5 vols. (Patrologia Græca, tom. lxxx.-lxxxi.). The last volume in Schulze's and Migne's editions contains Garnier's Auctarium ad opera Theod. and his Dissertations on the life and on the faith of Theodoret, and on the fifth ecumenical Synod. Comp. also Schröckh, Church History, vol. xviii.

bishops and monks, churches and public buildings, earthquakes and other calamities; and interweaves political history, such as the wars of Chosroes and the assaults of the barbarians.' He was strictly orthodox, and a superstitious venerator of monks, saints, and relics.'

THEODORUS LECTOR, reader in the church of Constantinople about 525, compiled an abstract from Socrates, Sozomen, and Theodoret, under the title of *Historia tripartita*, which is still extant in the manuscript; and composed a continuation of Socrates from 431 to 518, of which fragments only are preserved in John Damascenus, Nilus, and Nicephorus Callisti.'

Of PHILOSTORGIUS, an Arian church historian (born in 368), nothing has come down to us but fragments in Photius; and these breathe so strong a partisan spirit, that the loss of the rest is not to be regretted. He described the period from the commencement of the Arian controversy to the reign of Valentinian III. A. D. 423.

The series of the Greek church historians closes with NICEPHORUS CALLISTUS or CALLISTI (i. e., son of Callistus),<sup>1</sup> who lived at Constantinople in the fifteenth century. He was surprised that the voice of history had been silent since the sixth century, and resumed the long-neglected task where his predecessors had left it, but on a more extended plan of a general history of the catholic church from the beginning to the year 911. We have, however, only eighteen books to the death of emperor Phocas in 610, and a list of contents of five other books. He made large use of Eusebius and his successors, and added unreliable traditions of the later days of the Apostles,

<sup>1</sup> Valesius blames him "quod non tantam diligentiam adhibuit in conquirendis antiquitatis ecclesiasticæ monumentis, quam in legendis profanis auctoribus."

<sup>2</sup> The first edition was from a Parisian manuscript by Rob. Stephanus, Par. 1544. Valesius, in his complete edition, employed two more manuscripts. A new edition, according to the text of Valesius, appeared at Oxford in 1844.

<sup>3</sup> Valesius intended to edit it, and contented himself with giving the variations, since the book furnished nothing new.

<sup>4</sup> Collected in the edition of Valesius.

<sup>5</sup> Not to be confounded with Nicephorus, patriarch of Constantinople, who was deposed during the image controversy and died 828. His works, among which is also a brief Chronographia ab Adamo ad Michaelis et Theophili tempora (828), form tom. c. in Migne's Patrologia Græca.

the history of Monophysitism, of monks and saints, of the barbarian irruptions, &c. He, too, ignores the Pelagian controversy, and takes little notice of the Latin church after the fifth century.<sup>1</sup>

In the *Latin* church—to anticipate thus much—Eusebius found only one imitator and continuator, the presbyter and monk RUFINUS, of Aquileia (330-410). He was at first a friend of Jerome, afterwards a bitter enemy. He translated, with abridgments and insertions at his pleasure, the Ecclesiastical History of Eusebius, and continued it to Theodosius the Great (392). Yet his continuation has little value. He wrote also biographies of hermits; an exposition of the Apostles' Creed; and translations of several works of Origen, with emendations of offensive portions.<sup>2</sup>

CASSIODORUS, consul and monk (died about 562), composed a useful abstract of the works of Socrates, Sozomen, and Theodoret, in twelve books, under the title of *Historia tripartita*, for the Latin church of the middle age.

The only properly original contributions to church history from among the Latin divines were those of JEROME († 419) in his biographical and literary Catalogue of Illustrious Men (written in 392), which GENNADIUS, a Semi-Pelagian presbyter of South Gaul, continued to the year 495. SULPICIUS SEVERUS († 420) wrote in good style a Sacred History, or History of the Old and New Testament, from the creation down to the year 400; and PAULUS OROSIVS (about 415) an apologetic Universal History, which hardly, however, deserves the name of a history.

### § 163. *Athanasius the Great.*

- I. S. ATHANASIUS: Opera omnia quæ extant vel quæ ejus nomine circumferuntur, etc., Gr. et lat., opera et studio monachorum ordinis S. Bene-

<sup>1</sup> First edition in Latin by John Lange, Basil. 1553; in Greek and Latin by Front. Ducanus, Par. 1630, in 2 vols. There exists but one Greek manuscript copy of Nicephorus, as far as we know, which is in the possession of the imperial library of Vienna.

<sup>2</sup> His works are edited by Vallarsi, Veron. 1745, vol. i. fol. (unfinished). The Ecclesiastical History has several times appeared separately, and was long a needed substitute for Eusebius in the West.

dicti e congregatione S. Mauri (*Jac. Lopin et B. de Montfaucon*). Paris, 1698. 3 tom. fol. (or rather 2 tomi, the first in two parts). This is the most elegant and correct edition, but must be completed by two volumes of the *Collectio nova Patrum*, ed. *B. de Montfaucon*. Par. 1706. 2 tom. fol. More complete, but not so handsome, is the edition of 1777, Patav., in 4 vols. fol. (Brunet says of the latter "Édition moins belle et moins chère que celle de Paris, mais augmentée d'un 4<sup>e</sup> vol., lequel renferme les opuscules de S. Athan., tirés de la *Collectio nova* du P. Montfaucon et des *Anecdota* de Wolf, et de plus l'*interpretatio Psalmorum*.") But now both these older editions need again to be completed by the Syrian Festal Letters of Athanasius, discovered by Dr. Tattam in a Nitrian monastery in 1843; edited by *W. Cureton* in Syriac and English at London in 1846 and 1848 (and in English by *H. Burgess* and *H. Williams*, Oxf. 1854, in the *Libr. of the Fathers*); in German, with notes by *F. Larsou*, at Leipzig in 1852; and in Syriac and Latin by Card. *Angelo Mai* in the *Nova Patr. Bibliotheca*, Rom. 1853, tom. vi. pp. 1-168. A new and more salable, though less accurate, edition of the *Opera omnia Athan.* (a reprint of the *Benedictine*) appeared at Petit-Montrouge (Par.) in *J. P. Migne's Patrologia Gr.* (tom. xxv.-xxviii.), 1857, in 4 vols.

The more important dogmatic works of Athanasius have been edited separately by *J. C. Thilo*, in the first volume of the *Bibliotheca Patrum Græc. dogmatica*, Lips. 1853; and in an English translation, with explanations and indexes, by *J. H. Newman*, Oxf. 1842-'44 (*Library of the Fathers*, vols. 8, 13, 19).

- II. GREGORIUS NAZ.: *Oratio panegyrica in Magnum Athanasium* (*Orat. xxi.*). Several *VITÆ ATHAN.* in the 1st vol. of the *Bened.* ed. of his *Opera*. *ACTA SANCTORUM* for May 2d. G. HERMANT: *La Vie d'Athanase*, etc. Par. 1679. 2 vols. TILLEMONT: *Mémoires*, vol. viii. pp. 2-258 (2d ed. Par. 1718). W. CAVE: *Lives of the most eminent Fathers of the first Four Centuries*, vol. ii. pp. 145-364 (Oxf. ed. of 1840). SCHRÖCKH: *Th.* xii. pp. 101-270. J. A. MÖHLER: *Athanasius der Grosse und die Kirche seiner Zeit, besonders im Kampfe mit dem Arianismus*. Mainz, 1827. 2d (title) ed. 1844. HEINRICH VOIGT: *Die Lehre des heiligen Athanasius von Alexandria oder die kirchliche Dogmatik des 4ten Jahrhunderts auf Grund der biblischen Lehre vom Logos*. Bremen, 1861. A. P. STANLEY: *Lectures on the History of the Eastern Church*. New York, 1862, lecture vii. (pp. 322-358).

ATHANASIUS is the theological and ecclesiastical centre, as his senior contemporary Constantine is the political and secular, about which the Nicene age revolves. Both bear the title of the Great; the former with the better right, that his greatness was intellectual and moral, and proved itself in suffering,



and through years of warfare against mighty errors and against the imperial court. *Athanasius contra mundum, et mundus contra Athanasium*, is a well-known sentiment which strikingly expresses his fearless independence and immovable fidelity to his convictions. He seems to stand an unanswerable contradiction to the catholic maxim of authority: *Quod semper, quod ubique, quod ab omnibus creditum est*, and proves that truth is by no means always on the side of the majority, but may often be very unpopular. The solitary Athanasius, even in exile, and under the ban of council and emperor, was the bearer of the truth, and, as he was afterwards named, the "father of orthodoxy."<sup>1</sup>

On a martyrs' day in 313 the bishop Alexander of Alexandria saw a troop of boys imitating the church services in innocent sport, Athanasius playing the part of bishop, and performing baptism by immersion.<sup>2</sup> He caught in this a glimpse of future greatness; took the youth into his care; and appointed him his secretary, and afterwards his archdeacon. Athanasius studied the classics, the Holy Scriptures, and the church fathers, and meantime lived as an ascetic. He already sometimes visited St. Anthony in his solitude.

In the year 325 he accompanied his bishop to the council of Nicæa, and at once distinguished himself there by his zeal and ability in refuting Arianism and vindicating the eternal deity of Christ, and incurred the hatred of this heretical party, which raised so many storms about his life.

In the year 328<sup>3</sup> he was nominated to the episcopal succe-

<sup>1</sup> Ὁ πατήρ τῆς ὀρθοδοξίας. So Epiphanius already calls him, Hær. 69, c. 2.

<sup>2</sup> So Rufinus relates, H. E. l. i. c. 14. Most Roman historians, Hermant, Tillemont, Butler, and the author of the Vita Athan. in the Bened. ed. (tom. i. p. iii.), reject this legend, partly on account of chronological difficulty, partly because it seemed incompatible with the dignity of such a saint. Möhler passes it in silence.

<sup>3</sup> This is the true date, according to the summaries of the newly-discovered Festal Letters of Athanasius, and not "a few weeks [or months rather] after the close of the council," as the editor of the English translation of the historical tracts of Athanasius (Oxford Library of the Fathers, 1843, Preface, p. xxi.), and even Stanley (l. c. p. 325), still say. The older hypothesis rests on a misapprehension of the *πέντε μῆνες* in a passage of Athanasius, Apol. pro fuga sua, tom. i. P. 1, p. 140, which Theodoret erroneously dates from the close of the council of Nicæa, instead of the readmission of the Meletians into the fellowship of the church (H. E. i. 26)

mon of Alexandria, on the recommendation of the dying Alexander, and by the voice of the people, though not yet of canonical age, and at first disposed to avoid the election by flight; and thus he was raised to the highest ecclesiastical dignity of the East. For the bishop of Alexandria was at the same time metropolitan of Egypt, Libya, and Pentapolis.

But now immediately began the long series of contests with the Arian party, which had obtained influence at the court of Constantine, and had induced the emperor to recall Arius and his adherents from exile. Henceforth the personal fortunes of Athanasius are so inseparably interwoven with the history of the Arian controversy that *Nicene* and *Athanasian* are equivalent terms, and the different depositions and restorations of Athanasius denote so many depressions and victories of the Nicene orthodoxy. Five times did the craft and power of his opponents, upon the pretext of all sorts of personal and political offences, but in reality on account of his inexorable opposition to the Arian and Semi-Arian heresy, succeed in deposing and banishing him. The first exile he spent in Treves, the second chiefly in Rome, the third with the monks in the Egyptian desert; and he employed them in the written defence of his righteous cause. Then the Arian party was distracted, first by internal division, and further by the death of the emperor Constantius (361), who was their chief support. The pagan Julian recalled the banished bishops of both parties, in the hope that they might destroy one another. Thus, Athanasius among them, who was the most downright opposite of the Christian-hating emperor, again received his bishopric. But when, by his energetic and wise administration, he rather restored harmony in his diocese, and sorely injured paganism, which he feared far less than Arianism, and thus frustrated the cunning plan of Julian, the emperor resorted to violence, and banished him as a dangerous disturber of the peace. For the fourth time Athanasius left Alexandria, but calmed his weeping friends with the prophetic words: "Be of good cheer; it is only a cloud, which will soon

Alexander died in 328, not in 326. See particulars in Larsow, l. c. p. 26, and § 121 above.

pass over." By presence of mind he escaped from an imperial ship on the Nile, which had two hired assassins on board. After Julian's death in 362 he was again recalled by Jovian. But the next emperor Valens, an Arian, issued in 367 an edict which again banished all the bishops who had been deposed under Constantius and restored by Julian. The aged Athanasius was obliged for the fifth time to leave his beloved flock, and kept himself concealed more than four months in the tomb of his father. Then Valens, boding ill from the enthusiastic adherence of the Alexandrians to their orthodox bishop, repealed the edict.

From this time Athanasius had peace, and still wrote, at a great age, with the vigor of youth, against Apollinarianism. In the year 373<sup>1</sup> he died, after an administration of nearly forty-six years, but before the conclusion of the Arian war. He had secured by his testimony the final victory of orthodoxy, but, like Moses, was called away from the earthly scene before the goal was reached.

Athanasius, like many great men (from David and Paul to Napoleon and Schleiermacher), was very small of stature,<sup>2</sup> somewhat stooping and emaciated by fasting and many troubles, but fair of countenance, with a piercing eye and a personal appearance of great power even over his enemies.<sup>3</sup> His omnipresent activity, his rapid and his mysterious movements, his fearlessness, and his prophetic insight into the future, were attributed by his friends to divine assistance, by his enemies to a league with evil powers. Hence the belief in his magic art.<sup>4</sup> His congregation in Alexandria and the people

<sup>1</sup> Opinions concerning the year of his death waver between 371 and 373. As he was bishop forty-six years, and came to the see in 328 (not 326, as formerly supposed), he cannot have died before 372 or 373.

<sup>2</sup> Julian called him contemptuously (Ep. 51) *μηδὲ ἄνθρωπος, ἀλλὰ ἄνθρωπισκεὶ εὐτελής*.

<sup>3</sup> Comp. Gregory Naz. in his Eulogy.

<sup>4</sup> This belief embodied itself in the Arian form of the legend of St. George of Cappadocia, the Arian bishop elected in opposition to Athanasius, and killed by the populace in Alexandria, in his contest with the wizard Athanasius. In this way Arians revenged themselves on the memory of their great adversary. Afterwards the wizard became a dragon, whom George on his horse overcomes. According to others, George was a martyr under Diocletian.

and monks of Egypt were attached to him through all the vicissitudes of his tempestuous life with equal fidelity and veneration. Gregory Nazianzen begins his enthusiastic panegyric with the words: "When I praise Athanasius, I praise virtue itself, because he combines all virtues in himself." Constantine the Younger called him "the man of God;" Theodoret, "the great enlightener;" and John of Damascus, "the corner-stone of the church of God."

All this is, indeed, very hyperbolical, after the fashion of degenerate Grecian rhetoric. Athanasius was not free from the faults of his age. But he is, on the whole, one of the purest, most imposing, and most venerable personages in the history of the church; and this judgment will now be almost universally accepted.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The rationalistic historian HENKE (*Geschichte der christl. Kirche*, 5th ed. 1818, I. p. 212) called him, indeed, a "haughty hard-head," and the "author of many broils and of the unhappiness of many thousand men." But the age of the rationalistic debasement of history, thank God, is past. Quite different is the judgment of GIBSON, who despised the faith of Athanasius, yet could not withhold from him personally the tribute of his admiration. "We have seldom," says he in ch. xxi. of his celebrated work, "an opportunity of observing, either in active or speculative life, what effect may be produced, or what obstacles may be surmounted by the force of a single mind, when it is inflexibly applied to the pursuit of a single object. The immortal name of Athanasius will never be separated from the Catholic doctrine of the Trinity, to whose defence he consecrated every moment and every faculty of his being. . . . Amidst the storms of persecution the archbishop of Alexandria was patient of labor, jealous of fame, careless of safety; and although his mind was tainted by the contagion of fanaticism, Athanasius displayed a superiority of character and abilities which would have qualified him far better than the degenerate sons of Constantine for the government of a great monarchy." Dr. BAUR thus characterizes Athanasius (*Vorlesungen über die Dogmengeschichte*, vol. i. ii. p. 41): "His talent for speculative dogmatic investigations, in which he knew how to lay hold, sharply and clearly, of the salient point of the dogma, was as great as the power with which he stood at the head of a party and managed a theological controversy. . . . The devotion, with which he defended the cause of orthodoxy, and the importance of the dogma, which was the subject of dispute, have made his name one of the most venerable in the church. In modern times he has been frequently charged with a passionate love for theological controversy. But the most recent ecclesiastical and doctrinal historians are more and more unanimous in according to him a pure zeal for Christian truth, and a profound sense for the apprehension of the same. It is a strong testimony for the purity of his character that his congregation at Antioch adhered to him with tender affection to the last." A. DE BROGLIE (*L'Église et l'empire romain au IV<sup>e</sup> siècle*, vol. ii. p. 26) finds the principal quality

He was (and there are few such) a theological and churchly character in magnificent, antique style. He was a man of one mould and one idea, and in this respect one-sided; yet in the best sense, as the same is true of most great men who are borne along with a mighty and comprehensive thought, and subordinate all others to it. So Paul lived and labored for Christ crucified, Gregory VII. for the Roman hierarchy, Luther for the doctrine of justification by faith, Calvin for the idea of the sovereign grace of God. It was the passion and the life-work of Athanasius to vindicate the deity of Christ, which he rightly regarded as the corner-stone of the edifice of the Christian faith, and without which he could conceive no redemption. For this truth he spent all his time and strength; for this he suffered deposition and twenty years of exile; for this he would have been at any moment glad to pour out his blood. For his vindication of this truth he was much hated, much loved, always respected or feared. In the unwavering conviction that he had the right and the protection of God on his side, he constantly disdained to call in the secular power for his ecclesiastical ends, and to degrade himself to an imperial courtier, as his antagonists often did.

Against the Arians he was inflexible, because he believed they hazarded the essence of Christianity itself, and he allowed himself the most invidious and the most contemptuous terms. He calls them polytheists, atheists, Jews, Pharisees, Sadducees, Herodians, spies, worse persecutors than the heathen, liars, dogs, wolves, antichrists, and devils. But he confined himself to spiritual weapons, and never, like his successor Cyril a century later, used nor counselled measures of force. He suffered persecution, but did not practise it; he followed the maxim: Orthodoxy should persuade faith, not force it.

of the mind of Athanasius in "un rare mélange de droiture de sens et de subtilité de raisonnement. Dans la discussion la plus compliquée rien ne lui échappait, mais rien ne l'ébranlait. Il démêlait toutes les nuances de la pensée de son adversaire, en pénétrait tous les détours; mais il ne perdait jamais de vue le point principal et le but du débat. . . . Unissant les qualités des deux écoles, il discutait comme un Grec et concluait nettement comme un Latin. Cette combinaison originale, relevée par une indomptable fermeté de caractère, fait encore aujourd'hui le seul mérite qu' à distance nous puissions pleinement apprécier dans ses écrits."

Towards the unessential errors of good men, like those of Marcellus of Ancyra, he was indulgent. Of Origen he spoke with esteem, and with gratitude for his services, while Epiphanius, and even Jerome, delighted to blacken his memory and burn his bones. To the suspicions of the orthodoxy of Basil, whom, by the way, he never personally knew, he gave no ear, but pronounced his liberality a justifiable condescension to the weak. When he found himself compelled to write against Apollinarius, whom he esteemed and loved, he confined himself to the refutation of his error, without the mention of his name. He was more concerned for theological ideas than for words and formulas; even upon the shibboleth *homoousios* he would not obstinately insist, provided only the great truth of the essential and eternal Godhead of Christ were not sacrificed. At his last appearance in public, as president of the council of Alexandria in 362, he acted as mediator and reconciler of the contending parties, who, notwithstanding all their discord in the use of the terms *ousia* and *hypostasis*, were one in the ground-work of their faith.

No one of all the Oriental fathers enjoyed so high consideration in the Western church as Athanasius. His personal sojourn in Rome and Treves, and his knowledge of the Latin tongue, contributed to this effect. He transplanted monasticism to the West. But it was his advocacy of the fundamental doctrine of Christianity that, more than all, gave him his Western reputation. Under his name the Symbolum Quicunque, of much later, and probably of French, origin, has found universal acceptance in the Latin church, and has maintained itself to this day in living use. His name is inseparable from the conflicts and the triumph of the doctrine of the holy Trinity.

As an author, Athanasius is distinguished for theological depth and discrimination, for dialectical skill, and sometimes for fulminating eloquence. He everywhere evinces a triumphant intellectual superiority over his antagonists, and shows himself a veritable *malleus hæreticorum*. He pursues them into all their hiding-places, and refutes all their arguments and their sophisms, but never loses sight of the main point of the

controversy, to which he ever returns with renewed force. His views are governed by a strict logical connection; but his stormy fortunes prevented him from composing a large systematic work. Almost all his writings are occasional, wrung from him by circumstances; not a few of them were hastily written in exile.

They may be divided as follows:

1. **APOLOGETIC** works in defence of Christianity. Among these are the two able and enthusiastic kindred productions of his youth (composed before 325): "A Discourse against the Greeks," and "On the Incarnation of the Divine Word,"<sup>1</sup> which he already looked upon as the central idea of the Christian religion.

2. **DOGMATIC** and **CONTROVERSIAL** works in defence of the Nicene faith; which are at the same time very important to the *history* of the Arian controversies. Of these the following are directed against Arianism: An Encyclical Letter to all Bishops (written in 341); On the Decrees of the Council of Nicæa (352); On the Opinion of Dionysius of Alexandria (352); An Epistle to the Bishops of Egypt and Libya (356); four Orations against the Arians (358); A Letter to Serapion on the Death of Arius (358 or 359); A History of the Arians to the Monks (between 358 and 360). To these are to be added four Epistles to Serapion on the Deity of the Holy Spirit (358), and two books Against Apollinaris, in defence of the full humanity of Christ (379).

3. Works in his own **PERSONAL DEFENCE**: An Apology against the Arians (350); an Apology to Constantius (356); an Apology concerning his Flight (De fuga, 357 or 358); and several letters.

4. **EXEGETICAL** works; especially a Commentary on the Psalms, in which he everywhere finds types and prophecies of Christ and the church, according to the extravagant allegoriz-

<sup>1</sup> Ἀδύτοι κατὰ Ἑλλήνων (or Contra Gentes), and Περὶ τῆς ἐνανθρωπήσεως τοῦ λόγου, in the first volume, Part 1, of the Bened. ed. pp. 1-97. The latter tract (De incarnatione Verbi Dei) against unbelievers is not to be confounded with the tract written much later (A. D. 364), and by some considered spurious: De incarnatione Dei Verbi et contra Arianos, tom. I. Pars II. pp. 871-890.

ing method of the Alexandrian school; and a synopsis or compendium of the Bible. But the genuineness of these unimportant works is by many doubted.<sup>1</sup>

5. ASCETIC and PRACTICAL works. Chief among these are his "Life of St. Anthony," composed about 365, or at all events after the death of Anthony,<sup>2</sup> and his "Festal Letters," which have but recently become known.<sup>3</sup> The Festal Letters give us a glimpse of his pastoral fidelity as bishop, and throw new light also on many of his doctrines, and on the condition of the church in his time. In these letters Athanasius, according to Alexandrian custom, announced annually, at Epiphany, to the clergy and congregations of Egypt, the time of the next Easter, and added edifying observations on passages of Scripture, and timely exhortations. These were read in the churches, during the Easter season, especially on Palm-Sunday. As Athanasius was bishop forty-five years, he would have written that number of Festal Letters, if he had not been several times prevented by flight or sickness. The letters were written in Greek, but soon translated into Syriac, and lay buried for centuries in the dust of a Nitrian cloister, till the research of Protestant scholarship brought them again to the light.

#### § 164. *Basil the Great.*

I. S. BASILIUS Cæs. Cappad. archiepisc.: Opera omnia quæ exstant vel quæ ejus nomine circumferuntur, Gr. et Lat. ed. *Jul. Garnier*, presbyter and monk of the Bened. order. Paris, 1721-'80. 8 vols. fol. Eadem ed. Parisina altera, emendata et aucta a *Lud. de Sinner*, Par. (Gaume Fratres) 1839, 3 tomi in 6 Parties (an elegant and convenient ed.). Reprinted also by *Migne*, Par. 1857, in 4 vols. (Patrol. Gr. tom. xxix.-xxxii.). The first edition of St. Basil was superintended by *Erasmus* with Froben in Basle, 1532. Comp. also Opera Bas. dogmatica selecta in *Thilo's* Bibl. Patr. Gr. dogm. vol. ii. Lips. 1854 (under care of J. D.

<sup>1</sup> Comp. the arguments on both sides in the Opera, tom. ii. p. 1004 sqq. and tom. iii. p. 124 sqq.

<sup>2</sup> Opera, tom. ii. (properly tom. i. Pars ii.), pp. 785-866. Comp. above, § 85.

<sup>3</sup> Comp. the cited editions of the Festal Letters by Cureton, Larow, and Angel Mai.



H. Goldhorn, and containing the Libri iii. adversus Eunomium, and Liber i. de Spiritu Sancto).

- II. Ancient accounts and descriptions of Basil in the funeral discourses and eulogies of GREGORY NAZ. (*Oratio xliii.*), GREGORY NYSSA, AMPHILOCHUS, EPHRAËM SYRUS. GARNIER: *Vita S. Basilii*, in his edition of the Opera, tom. iii. pp. xxxviii.-ccliv. (in the new Paris ed. of 1839; or tom. i. in Migne's reprint). Comp. also the *Vitæ* in the ACTA SANCTORUM, sub Jan. 14, by HERMANT, TILLEMONT (tom. ix.), FABRICIUS (Bibl. tom. ix.), CAVE, PFEIFFER, SCHROECKH (Part xiii. pp. 8-220), BÖHRINGER, W. KLOSE (*Basilius der Grosse*, Stralsund, 1835), and FIALON (*Étude historique et littéraire sur S. Basile*, Par. 1866).

The Asiatic province of Cappadocia produced in the fourth century the three distinguished church teachers, Basil and the two Gregories, who stand in strong contrast with the general character of their countrymen; for the Cappadocians are described as a cowardly, servile, and deceitful race.<sup>1</sup>

BASIL was born about the year 329,<sup>2</sup> at Cæsarea, the capital of Cappadocia, in the bosom of a wealthy and pious family, whose ancestors had distinguished themselves as martyrs. The seed of piety had been planted in him by his grandmother, St. Macrina, and his mother, St. Emmelia. He had four brothers and five sisters, who all led a religious life; two of his brothers, Gregory, bishop of Nyssa, and Peter, bishop of Sebaste, and his sister, Macrina the Younger, are, like himself, among the saints of the Eastern church. He received his literary education at first from his father, who was a rhetorician; afterwards at school in Constantinople (347), where he enjoyed the instruction and personal esteem of the celebrated Libanius; and in Athens, where he spent several years, between 351 and 355,<sup>3</sup> studying rhetoric, mathematics, and philosophy, in company with his intimate friend Gregory Nazianzen, and at the same time with prince Julian the Apostate.

<sup>1</sup> Particularly in the Letters of Ildore of Pelusium, who flourished in the beginning of the fifth century. Gregory Nazianzen gives a more favorable picture of the Cappadocians, and boasts of their orthodoxy, which, however, might easily be united with the faults above mentioned, especially in the East.

<sup>2</sup> According to Garnier; comp. his *Vita Bas.* c. 1, § 2. Fabricius puts the birth erroneously into the year 316.

<sup>3</sup> On the time of his residence in Athens, see Tillemont and Garnier.

Athens, partly through its ancient renown and its historical traditions, partly by excellent teachers of philosophy and eloquence, Sophists, as they were called in an honorable sense, among whom Himerius and Proæresius were at that time specially conspicuous, was still drawing a multitude of students from all quarters of Greece, and even from the remote provinces of Asia. Every Sophist had his own school and party, which was attached to him with incredible zeal, and endeavored to gain every newly arriving student to its master. In these efforts, as well as in the frequent literary contests and debates of the various schools among themselves, there was not seldom much rude and wild behavior. To youth who were not yet firmly grounded in Christianity, residence in Athens, and occupation with the ancient classics, were full of temptation, and might easily kindle an enthusiasm for heathenism, which, however, had already lost its vitality, and was upheld solely by the artificial means of magic, theurgy, and an obscure mysticism.<sup>1</sup>

Basil and Gregory remained steadfast, and no poetical or rhetorical glitter could fade the impressions of a pious training. Gregory says of their studies in Athens, in his forty-third Oration: "We knew only two streets of the city, the first and the more excellent one to the churches, and to the ministers of the altar; the other, which, however, we did not so highly esteem, to the public schools and to the teachers of the sciences. The streets to the theatres, games, and places of unholy amusements, we left to others. Our holiness was our great concern; our sole aim was to be called and to be Christians. In this we placed our whole glory."<sup>2</sup> In a later oration on classic studies Basil encourages them, but admonishes that they should be pursued with caution, and with constant regard to the great Christian purpose of eternal life, to which all earthly objects and attainments are as shadows and dreams

<sup>1</sup> On this Athenian student-life of that day see especially the 48d, ch. 14 sqq. (in older editions the 20th) Oration of Gregory Nazianzen, and Libanius, *De vita sua*, p. 13, ed. Reiske.

<sup>2</sup> The *Oratio funebris in laudem Basilii M. c. 21* (Opera, ed. Migne, ii. p. 523).

<sup>3</sup> Ἡμῖν δὲ τὸ μέγα πρῶγμα καὶ ὄνομα, Χριστιανοὺς καὶ εἶναι καὶ δορυμνίζεσθαι.

to reality. In plucking the rose one should beware of the thorns, and, like the bee, should not only delight himself with the color and the fragrance, but also gain useful honey from the flower.<sup>1</sup>

The intimate friendship of Basil and Gregory, lasting from fresh, enthusiastic youth till death, resting on an identity of spiritual and moral aims, and sanctified by Christian piety, is a lovely and engaging chapter in the history of the fathers, and justifies a brief episode in a field not yet entered by any church historian.

With all the ascetic narrowness of the time, which fettered even these enlightened fathers, they still had minds susceptible to science and art and the *beauties of nature*. In the works of Basil and of the two Gregories occur pictures of nature such as we seek in vain in the heathen classics. The descriptions of natural scenery among the poets and philosophers of ancient Greece and Rome can be easily compressed within a few pages. Socrates, as we learn from Plato, was of the opinion that we can learn nothing from trees and fields, and hence he never took a walk; he was so bent upon self-knowledge, as the true aim of all learning, that he regarded the whole study of nature as useless, because it did not tend to make man either more intelligent or more virtuous. The deeper sense of the beauty of nature is awakened by the religion of revelation alone, which teaches us to see everywhere in creation the traces of the power, the wisdom, and the goodness of God. The book of Ruth, the book of Job, many Psalms, particularly the 104th, and the parables, are without parallel in Grecian or Roman literature. The renowned naturalist, Alexander von Humboldt, collected some of the most beautiful descriptions of nature from the fathers for his purposes.<sup>2</sup> They are an inter-

<sup>1</sup> *Oratio ad adolescentes, quomodo possint ex gentiliis libris fructum capere?* or more simply, *De legendis libris gentiliis* (in Garnier's ed. tom. ii. P. i. pp. 243-259). This famous oration, which helped to preserve at least some regard for classical studies in the middle age, has been several times edited separately; as by Hugo Grotius (with a new Latin translation and Prolegomena), 1623; Joh. Potter, 1694; J. H. Majus, 1714; &c.

<sup>2</sup> In the second volume of his *Kosmos*, Stuttgart and Tübingen, 1847, p. 27 ff. Humboldt justly observes, p. 26: "The tendency of Christian sentiment was, to

esting proof of the transfiguring power of the spirit of Christianity even upon our views of nature.

A breath of sweet sadness runs through them, which is entirely foreign to classical antiquity. This is especially manifest in Gregory of Nyssa, the brother of Basil. "When I see," says he, for example, "every rocky ridge, every valley, every plain, covered with new-grown grass; and then the variegated beauty of the trees, and at my feet the lilies doubly enriched by nature with sweet odors and gorgeous colors; when I view in the distance the sea, to which the changing cloud leads out—my soul is seized with sadness which is not without delight. And when in autumn fruits disappear, leaves fall, boughs stiffen, stripped of their beauteous dress—we sink with the perpetual and regular vicissitude into the harmony of wonder-working nature. He who looks through this with the thoughtful eye of the soul, feels the littleness of man in the greatness of the universe."<sup>1</sup> Yet we find sunny pictures also, like the beautiful description of spring in an oration of Gregory Nazianzen on the martyr Mamas.<sup>2</sup>

A second characteristic of these representations of nature, and for the church historian the most important, is the reference of earthly beauty to an eternal and heavenly principle, and that glorification of God in the works of creation, which transplanted itself from the Psalms and the book of Job into the Christian church. In his homilies on the history of the Creation, Basil describes the mildness of the serene nights in Asia Minor, where the stars, "the eternal flowers of heaven, raised the spirit of man from the visible to the invisible." In the oration just mentioned, after describing the spring in the

prove from the universal order and from the beauty of nature the greatness and goodness of the Creator. Such a tendency, to glorify the Deity from His works, occasioned a prepension to descriptions of nature." The earliest and largest picture of this kind he finds in the apologetic writer, Minucius Felix. Then he draws several examples from Basil (for whom he confesses he had "long entertained a special predilection"), *Epist. xiv.* and *Epist. cccxiii.* (tom. iii. ed. Garnier), from Gregory of Nyssa, and from Chrysostom.

<sup>1</sup> From several fragments of Gregory of Nyssa combined and translated (into German) by Humboldt, l. c. p. 29 f.

<sup>2</sup> See Ullmann's *Gregor von Nazianz*, p. 210 ff.

most lovely and life-like colors, Gregory Nazianzen proceeds: "Everything praises God and glorifies Him with unutterable tones; for everything shall thanks be offered also to God by me, and thus shall the song of those creatures, whose song of praise I here utter, be also ours. . . . Indeed it is now [alluding to the Easter festival] the spring-time of the world, the spring-time of the spirit, spring-time for souls, spring-time for bodies, a visible spring, an invisible spring, in which we also shall there have part, if we here be rightly transformed, and enter as new men upon a new life." Thus the earth becomes a vestibule of heaven, the beauty of the body is consecrated an image of the beauty of the spirit.

The Greek fathers placed the beauty of nature above the works of art, having a certain prejudice against art on account of the heathen abuses of it. "If thou seest a splendid building, and the view of its colonnades would transport thee, look quickly at the vault of the heavens and the open fields, on which the flocks are feeding on the shore of the sea. Who does not despise every creation of art, when in the silence of the heart he early wonders at the rising sun, as it pours its golden (crocus-yellow) light over the horizon? when, resting at a spring in the deep grass or under the dark shade of thick trees, he feeds his eye upon the dim vanishing distance?" So Chrysostom exclaims from his monastic solitude near Antioch, and Humboldt<sup>1</sup> adds the ingenious remark: "It was as if eloquence had found its element, its freedom, again at the fountain of nature in the then wooded mountain regions of Syria and Asia Minor."

In the rough times of the first introduction of Christianity among the Celtic and Germanic tribes, who had worshipped the dismal powers of nature in rude symbols, an opposition to intercourse with nature appeared, like that which we find in Tertullian to pagan art; and church assemblies of the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, at Tours (1163) and at Paris (1209), forbid the monks the sinful reading of books on nature, till the renowned scholastics Albert the Great († 1280), and the gifted

<sup>1</sup> L. c. p. 80.

Roger Bacon († 1294), penetrated the mysteries of nature and raised the study of it again to consideration and honor.

We now return to the life of Basil. After finishing his studies in Athens he appeared in his native city of Cæsarea as a rhetorician. But he soon after (A. D. 360) took a journey to Syria, Palestine, and Egypt, to become acquainted with the monastic life; and he became more and more enthusiastic for it. He distributed his property to the poor, and withdrew to a lonely romantic district in Pontus, near the cloister in which his mother Emmelia, with his sister Macrina, and other pious and cultivated virgins, were living. "God has shown me," he wrote to his friend Gregory, "a region which exactly suits my mode of life; it is, in truth, what in our happy jestings we often wished. What imagination showed us in the distance, that I now see before me. A high mountain, covered with thick forest, is watered towards the north by fresh perennial streams. At the foot of the mountain a wide plain spreads out, made fruitful by the vapors which moisten it. The surrounding forest, in which many varieties of trees crowd together, shuts me off like a strong castle. The wilderness is bounded by two deep ravines. On one side the stream, where it rushes foaming down from the mountain, forms a barrier hard to cross; on the other a broad ridge obstructs approach. My hut is so placed upon the summit, that I overlook the broad plain, as well as the whole course of the Iris, which is more beautiful and copious than the Strymon near Amphipolis. The river of my wilderness, more rapid than any other that I know, breaks upon the wall of projecting rock, and rolls foaming into the abyss: to the mountain traveller, a charming, wonderful sight; to the natives, profitable for its abundant fisheries. Shall I describe to you the fertilizing vapors which rise from the (moistened) earth, the cool air which rises from the (moving) mirror of the water? Shall I tell of the lovely singing of the birds and the richness of blooming plants? What delights me above all is the silent repose of the place. It is only now and then visited by huntsmen; for my wilderness nourishes deer and herds of wild goats, not your bears and your wolves. How would I exchange a place with him! Alo-

mæon, after he had found the Echinades, wished to wander no further."<sup>1</sup>

This romantic picture shows that the monastic life had its ideal and poetic side for cultivated minds. In this region Basil, free from all cares, distractions, and interruptions of worldly life, thought that he could best serve God. "What is more blessed than to imitate on earth the choir of angels, at break of day to rise to prayer, and praise the Creator with anthems and songs; then go to labor in the clear radiance of the sun, accompanied everywhere by prayer, seasoning work with praise, as if with salt? Silent solitude is the beginning of purification of the soul. For the mind, if it be not disturbed from without, and do not lose itself through the senses in the world, withdraws into itself, and rises to thoughts of God." In the Scriptures he found, "as in a store of all medicines, the true remedy for his sickness."

Nevertheless, he had also to find that flight from the city was not flight from his own self. "I have well forsaken," says he in his second Epistle,<sup>2</sup> "my residence in the city as a source of a thousand evils, *but I have not been able to forsake myself*. I am like a man who, unaccustomed to the sea, becomes seasick, and gets out of the large ship, because it rocks more, into a small skiff, but still even there keeps the dizziness and nausea. So is it with me; for while I carry about with me the passions which dwell in me, I am everywhere tormented with the same restlessness, so that I really get not much help from this solitude." In the sequel of the letter, and elsewhere, he endeavors, however, to show that seclusion from worldly business, celibacy, solitude, perpetual occupation with the Holy Scriptures, and with the life of godly men, prayer and contemplation, and a corresponding ascetic severity of outward life, are necessary for taming the wild passions, and for attaining the true quietness of the soul.

<sup>1</sup> Ep. xiv. Γρηγορίου ἑταίρου (tom. iii. p. 132, ed. nova Paris. Garn.), elegantly reproduced in German by Humboldt, l. c. p. 28, with the observation: "In this simple description of landscape and of forest-life, sentiments are expressed which more intimately blend with those of modern times, than anything that has come down to us from Greek or Roman antiquity."

<sup>2</sup> Addressed to his friend Gregory, Ep. ii. c. 1 (tom. iii. p. 100).

He succeeded in drawing his friend Gregory to himself. Together they prosecuted their prayer, studies, and manual labor; made extracts from the works of Origen, which we possess, under the name of *Philocalia*, as the joint work of the two friends; and wrote monastic rules which contributed largely to extend and regulate the cœnobite life.

In the year 364 Basil was made presbyter against his will, and in 370, with the co-operation of Gregory and his father, was elected bishop of Cæsarea and metropolitan of all Cappadocia. In this capacity he had fifty country bishops under him, and devoted himself thenceforth to the direction of the church and the fighting of Arianism, which had again come into power through the emperor Valens in the East. He endeavored to secure to the catholic faith the victory, first by close connection with the orthodox West, and then by a certain liberality in accepting as sufficient, in regard to the not yet symbolically settled doctrine of the Holy Ghost, that the Spirit should not be considered a creature. But the strict orthodox party, especially the monks, demanded the express acknowledgment of the divinity of the Holy Ghost, and violently opposed Basil. The Arians pressed him still more. The emperor wished to reduce Cappadocia to the heresy, and threatened the bishop by his prefects with confiscation, banishment, and death. Basil replied: "Nothing more? Not one of these things touches me. His property cannot be forfeited, who has none; banishment I know not, for I am restricted to no place, and am the guest of God, to whom the whole earth belongs; for martyrdom I am unfit, but death is a benefactor to me, for it sends me more quickly to God, to whom I live and move; I am also in great part already dead, and have been for a long time hastening to the grave."

The emperor was about to banish him, when his son, six years of age, was suddenly taken sick, and the physicians gave up all hope. Then he sent for Basil, and his son recovered, though he died soon after. The imperial prefect also recovered from a sickness, and ascribed his recovery to the prayer of the bishop, towards whom he had previously behaved



haughtily. Thus this danger was averted by special divine assistance.

But other difficulties, perplexities, and divisions, continually met him, to obstruct the attainment of his desire, the restoration of the peace of the church. These storms, and all sorts of hostilities, early wasted his body. He died in 379, two years before the final victory of the Nicene orthodoxy, with the words: "Into Thy hands, O Lord I commit my spirit; Thou hast redeemed me, O Lord, God of truth." He was borne to the grave by a deeply sorrowing multitude.

Basil was poor, and almost always sickly; he had only a single worn-out garment, and ate almost nothing but bread, salt, and herbs. The care of the poor and sick he took largely upon himself. He founded in the vicinity of Cæsarea that magnificent hospital, *Basiliæ*, which we have already mentioned, chiefly for lepers, who were often entirely abandoned in those regions, and left to the saddest fate; he himself took in the sufferers, treated them as brethren, and, in spite of their revolting condition, was not afraid to kiss them.\*

Basil is distinguished as a pulpit orator and as a theologian, and still more as a shepherd of souls and a church ruler; and in the history of monasticism he holds a conspicuous place.<sup>†</sup> In classical culture he yields to none of his contemporaries, and is justly placed with the two Gregories among the very first writers among the Greek fathers. His style is pure, elegant, and vigorous. Photius thought that one who wished to become a panegyrist, need take neither Demosthenes nor Cicero for his model, but Basil only.

Of his works, his Five Books against Eunomius, written in 361, in defence of the deity of Christ, and his work on the Holy Ghost, written in 375, at the request of his friend Amphilochius, are important to the history of doctrine.<sup>‡</sup> He at

\* With this prayer of David, Ps. xxxi. 5, LUTHER also took leave of the world.

† Greg. Naz. Orat. xliii. 68, p. 817 sq.

‡ K. Hase (§ 102) thus briefly and concisely characterizes him: "An admirer of Libanius and St. Anthony, as zealous for science as for monkery, greatest in church government."

§ The former in tom. I., the latter in tom. iii., ed. Garnier. Both are incorporated in Thilo's *Bibliotheca Patr. Græc. dogm.* tom. II.

first, from fear of Sabellianism, recoiled from the strong doctrine of the *homoousia*; but the persecution of the Arians drove him to a decided confession. Of importance in the East is the Liturgy ascribed to him, which, with that of St. Chrysostom, is still in use, but has undoubtedly reached its present form by degrees. We have also from St. Basil nine Homilies on the history of the Creation, which are full of allegorical fancies, but enjoyed the highest esteem in the ancient church, and were extensively used by Ambrose and somewhat by Augustine, in similar works; <sup>1</sup> Homilies on the Psalms; Homilies on various subjects; several ascetic and moral treatises; <sup>2</sup> and three hundred and sixty-five Epistles, <sup>3</sup> which furnish much information concerning his life and times.

### § 165. *Gregory of Nyssa.*

I. S. GREGORIUS NYSSÆNUS: Opera omnia, quæ reperiri potuerunt, Gr. et Lat., nunc primum e mss. codd. edita, stud. *Front. Ducai* (Fronto le Duc, a learned Jesuit). Paris, 1615, 2 vols. fol. To be added to this. Appendix Gregorii ex ed. *Jac. Gretseri*, Par. 1618, fol.; and the Antirrhethorics adv. Apollinar., first edited by *L. Al. Zacagni*, Collectanea monum. vet. ecol. Græc. et Lat. Rom. 1698, and in *Gallandi*, Bibliotheca, tom. vi. Later editions of the Opera by *Æg. Moril*, Par. 1688, 8 vols. fol. ("moins belle que celle de 1615, mais plus ample e plus commode . . . peu correcte," according to Brunet); by *Migne*, Petit-Montrouge (Par.), 1858, 8 vols.; and by *Franz. Oehler*, Halis Saxonum, 1865 sqq. (Tom. i. continens libros dogmaticos, but only in the Greek original.) Oehler has also commenced an edition of select treatises of Gregory of Nyssa in the original with a German version. The Benedictines of St. Maur had prepared the critical apparatus for an edition of Gregory, but it was scattered during the French Revolution. *Angelo Mai*, in the Nov. Patrum Biblioth. tom. iv. Pars i. pp. 1-53 (Rom. 1847), has edited a few writings of Gregory unknown before, viz., a sermon *Adversus Arium et Sabellium*, a sermon *De*

<sup>1</sup> Ἑξαήμερον, or Homilies ix. in Hexaëmeron. Opera, i. pp. 1-125, ed. Garnier (new ed.). An extended analysis of these sermons is given by Schröckh, xiii. pp. 168-181.

<sup>2</sup> Moralia, or short ethical rules, Constitutiones monasticæ, &c., in tom. ii.

<sup>3</sup> Including some spurious, some doubtful, and some from other persons. Tom. iii. pp. 97-681. The numbering of Garnier differs from those of former editors.

Spiritu Sancto adv. Macedonianos, and a fragment De processione Spiritus S. a Filio (doubtful).

- II. Lives in the *ACTA SANCTORUM*, and in BUTLER, sub Mart. 9. TILLEMONT: *Mém.* tom. ix. p. 561 sqq. SCHROCKH: Part xiv. pp. 1-147. JUL. RUPP: *Gregors des Bischofs von Nyssa Leben und Meinungen.* Leipz. 1834 (unsatisfactory). W. MÖLLER: *Gregorii Nyssa doctrina de hominis natura*, etc. Halis, 1854, and article in *Herzog's Encykl.* vol. v. p. 354 sqq.

GREGORY OF NYSSA was a younger brother of Basil, and the third son of his parents. Of his honorable descent he made no account. Blood, wealth, and splendor, says he, we should leave to the friends of the world; the Christian's lineage is his affinity with the divine, his fatherland is virtue, his freedom is the sonship of God. He was weakly and timid, and born not so much for practical life, as for study and speculation. He formed his mind chiefly upon the writings of Origen, and under the direction of his brother, whom he calls his father and preceptor. Further than this his early life is unknown.

After spending a short time as a rhetorician he broke away from the world, retired into solitude in Pontus, and became enamored of the ascetic life.

Quite in the spirit of the then widely-spread tendency towards the monastic life, he, though himself married, commends virginity in a special work, as a higher grade of perfection, and depicts the happiness of one who is raised above the incumbrances and snares of marriage, and thus, as he thinks, restored to the original state of man in Paradise.<sup>1</sup> "From all the evils of marriage," he says, "virginity is free; it has no lost children, no lost husband to bemoan; it is always with its Bridegroom, and delights in its devout exercises, and, when death comes, it is not separated from him, but united with him forever." The essence of spiritual virginity, however, in

<sup>1</sup> That he was married appears from his own concession, *De virginitate*, c. 3, where by Theosebia he means his wife (not, as some earlier Roman scholars, and Rupp, l. c. p. 28, suppose, his sister), and from Gregory Nazianzen's letter of condolence, Ep. 95. He laments that his eulogy of *παρθενία* can no longer bring him the desired fruit. Theosebia seems to have lived till 384. Gregory Nazianzen, in his short eulogy of her, says that she rivalled her brothers-in-law (Basil and Peter) who were in the priesthood.

his opinion, by no means consists merely in the small matter of sensual abstinence, but in the purity of the *whole* life. Virginity is to him the true philosophy, the perfect freedom. The purpose of asceticism in general he considered to be not the affliction of the body—which is only a means—but the easiest possible motion of the spiritual functions.

His brother Basil, in 372, called him against his will from his learned ease into his own vicinity as bishop of Nyssa, an inconsiderable town of Cappadocia. He thought it better that the place should receive its honor from his brother, than that his brother should receive his honor from his place. And so it turned out. As Gregory labored zealously for the Nicene faith, he drew the hatred of the Arians, who succeeded in deposing him at a synod in 376, and driving him into exile. But two years later, when the emperor Valens died and Gratian revoked the sentences of banishment, Gregory recovered his bishopric.

Now other trials came upon him. His brothers and sisters died in rapid succession. He delivered a eulogy upon Basil, whom he greatly venerated, and he described the life and death of his beautiful and noble sister Macrina, who, after the death of her betrothed, that she might remain true to him, chose single life, and afterwards retired with her mother into seclusion, and exerted great influence over her brothers.

Into her mouth he put his theological instructions on the soul, death, resurrection, and final restoration.<sup>1</sup> She died in the arms of Gregory, with this prayer: "Thou, O God, hast taken from me the fear of death. Thou hast granted me, that the end of this life should be the beginning of true life. Thou givest our bodies in their time to the sleep of death, and awakest them again from sleep with the last trumpet. . . . Thou hast delivered us from the curse and from sin by Thy-

<sup>1</sup> In his dialogue, *De anima et resurrectione* (Περὶ ψυχῆς καὶ ἀναστάσεως μετὰ τῆς ἑλίας ἀδελφῆς Μακρίνης διάλογος), Opp. iii. 181 sqq. (ed. Morell. 1638), also separately edited by J. G. Krabinger, Lips. 1837, and more recently, together with his biography of his sister, by Franc. Oehler, with a German translation, Leipz. 1858. The last-mentioned edition is at the same time the first volume of a projected Select Library of the Fathers, presenting the original text with a new German translation. The dialogue was written after the death of his brother Basil, and occasioned by it

self becoming both for us; Thou hast bruised the head of the serpent, hast broken open the gates of hell, hast overcome him who had the power of death, and hast opened to us the way to resurrection. For the ruin of the enemy and the security of our life, Thou hast put upon those who feared Thee a sign, the sign of Thy holy cross, O eternal God, to whom I am betrothed from the womb, whom my soul has loved with all its might, to whom I have dedicated, from my youth up till now, my flesh and my soul. Oh! send to me an angel of light, to lead me to the place of refreshment, where is the water of peace, in the bosom of the holy fathers. Thou who hast broken the flaming sword, and bringest back to Paradise the man who is crucified with Thee and flees to Thy mercy. Remember me also in Thy kingdom! . . . Forgive me what in word, deed, or thought, I have done amiss! Blameless and without spot may my soul be received into Thy hands, as a burnt-offering before Thee!"<sup>1</sup>

Gregory attended the ecumenical council of Constantinople, and undoubtedly, since he was one of the most eminent theologians of the time, exerted a powerful influence there, and according to a later, but erroneous, tradition, he composed the additions to the Nicene Creed which were there sanctioned.<sup>2</sup> The council intrusted to him, as "one of the pillars of catholic orthodoxy," a tour of visitation to Arabia and Jerusalem, where disturbances had broken out which threatened a schism. He found Palestine in a sad condition, and therefore dissuaded a Cappadocian abbot, who asked his advice about a pilgrimage of his monks to Jerusalem. "Change of place," says he, "brings us no nearer God, but where thou art, God can come to thee, if only the inn of thy soul is ready. . . . It is better to go out of the body and to raise one's self to the Lord, than to leave Cappadocia to journey to Palestine." He did not succeed in making peace, and he returned to Cappadocia lamenting that there were in Jerusalem men "who showed a hatred towards their brethren, such as they ought to

<sup>1</sup> Gr. *Nysa*. Περὶ τοῦ βίου τῆς μακαρίας Μαρτύρας.

<sup>2</sup> In *Niceph. Call. H. E.* xiii. 18. These additions were in use several years before 381, and are found in *Epiphanius, Anchorate*, n. 120 (tom. ii. p. 122).

have only towards the devil, towards sin, and towards the avowed enemies of the Saviour."

Of his later life we know very little. He was in Constantinople thrice afterwards, in 383, 385, and 394, and he died about the year 395.

The wealth of his intellectual life he deposited in his numerous writings, above all in his controversial doctrinal works: Against Eunomius; Against Apollinaris; On the Deity of the Son and the Holy Ghost; On the difference between *ousia* and *hypostasis* in God; and in his catechetical compend of the Christian faith.<sup>1</sup> The beautiful dialogue with his sister Macrina on the soul and the resurrection has been already mentioned. Besides these he wrote many Homilies, especially on the creation of the world, and of man,<sup>2</sup> on the life of Moses, on the Psalms, on Ecclesiastes, on the Song of Solomon, on the Lord's Prayer, on the Beatitudes; Eulogies on eminent martyrs and saints (St. Stephen, the Forty Martyrs, Gregory Thaumaturgus, Ephrem, Meletius, his brother Basil); various valuable ascetic tracts; and a biography of his sister Macrina, addressed to the monk Olympios.

Gregory was more a man of thought than of action. He had a fine metaphysical head, and did lasting service in the vindication of the mystery of the Trinity and the incarnation, and in the accurate distinction between essence and hypostasis. Of all the church teachers of the Nicene age he is the nearest to Origen. He not only follows his sometimes utterly extravagant allegorical method of interpretation, but even to a great extent falls in with his dogmatic views.<sup>3</sup> With him, as with Origen, human freedom plays a great part. Both are idealis-

<sup>1</sup> The *Δίλογος καθ' ἑξήκοντα ὁ μέγας* stands worthily by the side of the similar work of Origen, *De principiis*. Separate edition, Gr. and Lat. with notes, by J. G. Krabinger, Munich, 1888.

<sup>2</sup> The *Hexaëmeron* of Gregory is a supplement to his brother Basil's *Hexaëmeron*, and discusses the more obscure metaphysical questions connected with this subject. His book on the Workmanship of Man, though written first, may be regarded as a continuation of the *Hexaëmeron*, and beautifully sets forth the spiritual and royal dignity and destination of man, for whom the world was prepared and adorned as his palace.

<sup>3</sup> On his relation to Origen, comp. the appendix of Rupp, l. c. pp. 242-262.

tic, and sometimes, without intending it or knowing it, fall into contradiction with the church doctrine, especially in eschatology. Gregory adopts, for example, the doctrine of the final restoration of all things. The plan of redemption is in his view absolutely universal, and embraces all spiritual beings. Good is the only positive reality; evil is the negative, the non-existent, and must finally abolish itself, because it is not of God. Unbelievers must indeed pass through a second death, in order to be purged from the filthiness of the flesh. But God does not give them up, for they are his property, spiritual natures allied to him. His love, which draws pure souls easily and without pain to itself, becomes a purifying fire to all who cleave to the earthly, till the impure element is driven off. As all comes forth from God, so must all return into him at last.

### § 166. *Gregory Nazianzen.*

- I. S. GREGORIUS THEOLOGUS, vulgo NAZIANZENUS: Opera omnia, Gr. et Lat. opera et studio monachorum S. Benedicti e congreg. S. Mauri (*Clemence*). Paris, 1778, tom. i. (containing his orations). This magnificent edition (one of the finest of the Maurian editions of the fathers) was interrupted by the French Revolution, but afterwards resumed, and with a second volume (after papers left by the Maurians) completed by A. B. Caillau, Par. 1837-'40, 2 vols. fol. Reprinted in *Migne's Patrolog. Græc.* (tom. 35-38), Petit-Montrouge, 1857, in 4 vols. (On the separate editions of his Orations and Carmina, see *Brunet*, *Man. du libraire*, tom. ii. 1728 sq.)
- II. Biographical notices in Gregory's Epistles and Poems, in SOCRATES, SOZOMEN, THEODORET, RUFINUS, and SUIDAS (s. v. Γρηγόριος). GREGORIUS PRESBYTER (of uncertain origin, perhaps of Cappadocia in the tenth century): Βίος τοῦ Γρηγορίου (Greek and Latin in *Migne's ed. of the Opera*, tom. i. 248-304). G. HERMANT: La vie de S. Basile le Grand et celle de S. Gregoire de Nazianz. Par. 1679, 2 vols. ACTA SANCTORUM, tom. ii. Maji, p. 378 sqq. BENED. EDITORES: Vita Greg. ex iis potissimum scriptis adornata (in *Migne's ed. tom. i. pp. 147-242*). TILLEMONT: Mémoires, tom. ix. pp. 305-560, 692-781. LE CLERO: Bibliothèque Universelle, tom. xviii. pp. 1-128. W. CAVE: Lives of the Fathers, vol. iii. pp. 1-90 (ed. Oxf. 1840). SCHÖCKH: Part xiii. pp. 275-486. CARL ULLMANN: Gregorius von Nazianz, der Theologe. Ein Beitrag zur Kirchen- und Dogmengeschichte des 4ten Jahrhun-

derta. Da. instadt, 1825. (One of the best historical monographs by a theologian of kindred spirit.) Comp. also the articles of HEFLE in Wetzler und Welte's Kirchenlexikon, vol. iv. 736 ff., and GASS in Herzog's Encykl. vol. v. 349.

GREGORY NAZIANZEN, or Gregory the Theologian, is the third in the Cappadocian triad; inferior to his bosom friend Basil as a church ruler, and to his namesake of Nyssa as a speculative thinker, but superior to both as an orator. With them he exhibits the flower of Greek theology in close union with the Nicene faith, and was one of the champions of orthodoxy, though with a mind open to free speculation. His life, with its alternations of high station, monastic seclusion, love of severe studies, enthusiasm for poetry, nature, and friendship, possesses a romantic charm. He was "by inclination and fortune tossed between the silence of a contemplative life and the tumult of church administration, unsatisfied with either, neither a thinker nor a poet, but, according to his youthful desire, an orator, who, though often bombastic and dry, labored as powerfully for the victory of orthodoxy as for true practical Christianity."<sup>1</sup>

Gregory Nazianzen was born about 330, a year before the emperor Julian, either at Nazianzum, a market-town in the south-western part of Cappadocia, where his father was bishop, or in the neighboring village of Arianzus.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> So K. HASE admirably characterizes him, in his *Lehrbuch*, p. 138 (7th ed.). The judgment of GIBSON (*Decline and Fall*, ch. xxii.) is characteristic: "The title of Saint has been added to his name: but the tenderness of his heart, and the elegance of his genius, reflect a more pleasing lustre on the memory of Gregory Nazianzen." The praise of "the tenderness of his heart" suggests to the skeptical historian another fling at the ancient church, by adding the note: "I can only be understood to mean, that such was his natural temper when it was not hardened, or inflamed, by religious zeal. From his retirement, he exhorts Nectarius to prosecute the heretics of Constantinople."

<sup>2</sup> Respecting the time and place of his birth, views are divided. According to SUIDAS, Gregory was over ninety years old, and therefore, since he died in 389 or 390, must have been born about the year 300. This statement was accepted by FAGI and other Roman divines, to remove the scandal of his canonized father's having begotten children after he became bishop; but it is irreconcilable with the fact that Gregory, according to his own testimony (*Carmen de vita sua*, v. 112 and 238, and *Orat.* v. c. 23), studied in Athens at the same time with Julian the Apostate, therefore in 355, and left Athens at the age of thirty years. Comp



In the formation of his religious character his mother Nonna, one of the noblest Christian women of antiquity, exerted a deep and wholesome influence. By her prayers and her holy life she brought about the conversion of her husband from the sect of the Hypsistarians, who, without positive faith, worshipped simply a supreme being; and she consecrated her son, as Hannah consecrated Samuel, even before his birth, to the service of God. "She was," as Gregory describes her, "a wife according to the mind of Solomon; in all things subject to her husband according to the laws of marriage, not ashamed to be his teacher and his leader in true religion. She solved the difficult problem of uniting a higher culture, especially in knowledge of divine things and strict exercise of devotion, with the practical care of her household. If she was active in her house, she seemed to know nothing of the exercises of religion; if she occupied herself with God and his worship, she seemed to be a stranger to every earthly occupation: she was whole in everything. Experiences had instilled into her unbounded confidence in the effects of believing prayer; therefore she was most diligent in supplications, and by prayer overcame even the deepest feelings of grief over her own and others' sufferings. She had by this means attained such control over her spirit, that in every sorrow she encountered, she never uttered a plaintive tone before she had thanked God." He especially celebrates also her extraordinary liberality and self-denying love for the poor and the sick. But it seems to be not in perfect harmony with this, that he relates of her: "Towards heathen women she was so intolerant, that she never offered her mouth or hand to them in salutation.<sup>1</sup> She ate no salt with those who came from the unhallowed altars of idols. Pagan temples she did not look at, much less would she have stepped upon their ground; and she was as far from visiting

Tillemont, tom. ix. pp. 693-697; Schröckh, Part xiii. p. 276, and the admirable monograph of Ullmann, p. 548 sqq. (of which I have made special use in this section).

<sup>1</sup> Against the express injunction of love for enemies, Matt. v. 44 ff. The command of John in his 2d Epistle, v. 10, 11, which might be quoted in justification of Nonna, refers not to pagans, but to anti-Christian heretics.

the theatre." Of course her piety moved entirely in the spirit of that time, bore the stamp of ascetic legalism rather than of evangelical freedom, and adhered rigidly to certain outward forms. Significant also is her great reverence for sacred things. "She did not venture to turn her back upon the holy table, or to spit upon the floor of the church." Her death was worthy of a holy life. At a great age, in the church which her husband had built almost entirely with his own means, she died, holding fast with one hand to the altar and raising the other imploringly to heaven, with the words: "Be gracious to me, O Christ, my King!" Amidst universal sorrow, especially among the widows and orphans whose comfort and help she had been, she was laid to rest by the side of her husband near the graves of the martyrs. Her affectionate son says in one of the poems in which he extols her piety and her blessed end: "Bewail, O mortals, the mortal race; but when one dies, like Nonna, *praying*, then weep I not."

Gregory was early instructed in the Holy Scriptures and in the rudiments of science. He soon conceived a special predilection for the study of oratory, and through the influence of his mother, strengthened by a dream,<sup>1</sup> he determined on the celibate life, that he might devote himself without distraction to the kingdom of God. Like the other church teachers of this period, he also gave this condition the preference, and extolled it in orations and poems, though without denying the usefulness and divine appointment of marriage. His father, and his friend Gregory of Nyssa were among the few bishops who lived in wedlock.

From his native town he went for his further education to Cæsarea in Cappadocia, where he probably already made a preliminary acquaintance with Basil; then to Cæsarea in Palestine, where there were at that time celebrated schools of eloquence; thence to Alexandria, where his revered Athanasius wore the supreme dignity of the church; and finally to

<sup>1</sup> There appeared to him two veiled virgins, of unearthly beauty, who called themselves *Purity* and *Chastity*, companions of Jesus Christ, and friends of those who renounced all earthly connections for the sake of leading a perfectly divine life. After exhorting the youth to join himself to them in spirit, they rose again to heaven. Carmen iv. v. 205-285.

Athens, which still maintained its ancient renown as the seat of Grecian science and art. Upon the voyage thither he survived a fearful storm, which threw him into the greatest mental anguish, especially because, though educated a Christian, he, according to a not unusual custom of that time, had not yet received holy baptism, which was to him the condition of salvation. His deliverance he ascribed partly to the intercession of his parents, who had intimation of his peril by presentiments and dreams, and he took it as a second consecration to the spiritual office.

In Athens he formed or strengthened the bond of that beautiful Christian friendship with Basil, of which we have already spoken in the life of Basil. They were, as Gregory says, as it were only one soul animating two bodies. He became acquainted also with the prince Julian, who was at that time studying there, but felt wholly repelled by him, and said of him with prophetic foresight: "What evil is the Roman empire here educating for itself!" He was afterwards a bitter antagonist of Julian, and wrote two invective discourses against him after his death, which are inspired, however, more by the fire of passion than by pure enthusiasm for Christianity, and which were intended to expose him to universal ignominy as a horrible monument of enmity to Christianity and of the retributive judgment of God.\*

Friends wished him to settle in Athens as a teacher of eloquence, but he left there in his thirtieth year, and returned through Constantinople, where he took with him his brother Cæsarius, a distinguished physician,<sup>1</sup> to his native city and his

<sup>1</sup> Οἷον κακὸν ἡ Ῥωμαίων τρέφει.

<sup>2</sup> These *Invectivæ*, or *Λόγοι στηλιτευτικοί*, are, according to the old order, the 3d and 4th, according to the new the 4th and 5th, of Gregory's *Orations*, tom. i. pp. 78-176, of the Benedictine edition.

<sup>3</sup> To this Cæsarius, who was afterwards physician in ordinary to the emperor in Constantinople, many, following Photius, ascribe the still extant collection of theological and philosophical questions, *Dialogi iv sive Quæstiones theol. et philos.* 146; but without sufficient ground. Comp. Fabricius, *Bibl. Gr.* viii. p. 435. He was a true Christian, but was not baptized till shortly before his death in 368. His mother Nonna followed the funeral procession in the white raiment of festive joy. He was afterwards, like his brother Gregory, his sister Gorgonia, and his mother, received into the number of the saints of the Catholic church.

parents' house. At this time his baptism took place. With his whole soul he now threw himself into a strict ascetic life. He renounced innocent enjoyments, even to music, because they flatter the senses. "His food was bread and salt, his drink water, his bed the bare ground, his garment of coarse, rough cloth. Labor filled the day; praying, singing, and holy contemplation, a great part of the night. His earlier life, which was anything but loose, only not so very strict, seemed to him reprehensible; his former laughing now cost him many tears. Silence and quiet meditation were law and pleasure to him." Nothing but love to his parents restrained him from entire seclusion, and induced him, contrary to talent and inclination, to assist his father in the management of his household and his property.

But he soon followed his powerful bent toward the contemplative life of solitude, and spent a short time with Basil in a quiet district of Pontus in prayer, spiritual contemplations, and manual labors. "Who will transport me," he afterwards wrote to his friend concerning this visit, "back to those former days, in which I revelled with thee in privations? For voluntary poverty is after all far more honorable than enforced enjoyment. Who will give me back those songs and vigils? who, those risings to God in prayer, that unearthly, incorporeal life, that fellowship and that spiritual harmony of brothers raised by thee to a God-like life? who, the ardent searching of the Holy Scriptures, and the light which, under the guidance of the Spirit, we found therein?" Then he mentions the lesser enjoyments of the beauties of surrounding nature.

On a visit to his parents' house, Gregory against his will, and even without his previous knowledge, was ordained presbyter by his father before the assembled congregation on a feast day of the year 361. Such forced elections and ordinations, though very offensive to our taste, were at that time frequent, especially upon the urgent wish of the people, whose voice in many instances proved to be indeed the voice of God.

Ullmann, - c. p. 50.

Epist. ix. p. 774, of the old order, or Ep. vi. of the new (ed. Bened. II. p. 6).

Basil also, and Augustine, were ordained presbyters, Athanasius and Ambrose bishops, against their will. Gregory fled soon after, it is true, to his friend in Pontus, but out of regard to his aged parents and the pressing call of the church, he returned to Nazianzum towards Easter in 362, and delivered his first pulpit discourse, in which he justified himself in his conduct, and said: "It has its advantage to hold back a little from the call of God, as Moses, and after him Jeremiah, did on account of their age; but it has also its advantage to come forward readily, when God calls, like Aaron and Isaiah; provided both be done with a devout spirit, the one on account of inherent weakness, the other in reliance upon the strength of him who calls." His enemies accused him of haughty contempt of the priestly office; but he gave as the most important reason of his flight, that he did not consider himself worthy to preside over a flock, and to undertake the care of immortal souls, especially in such stormy times.

Basil, who, as metropolitan, to strengthen the catholic interest against Arianism, set about the establishment of new bishoprics in the small towns of Cappadocia, intrusted to his young friend one such charge in Sasima, a poor market town at the junction of three highways, destitute of water, verdure, and society, frequented only by rude wagoners, and at the time an apple of discord between him and his opponent, the bishop Anthimus of Tyana. A very strange way of showing friendship, unjustifiable even by the supposition that Basil wished to exercise the humility and self-denial of Gregory.<sup>1</sup> No wonder that, though a bishopric in itself was of no account to Gregory, this act deeply wounded his sense of honor, and produced a temporary alienation between him and Basil.<sup>2</sup> At the

<sup>1</sup> Gibbon (ch. xxvii.) very unjustly attributes this action of Basil to hierarchical pride and to an intention to insult Gregory. Basil treated his own brother not much better; for Nyssa was likewise an insignificant place.

<sup>2</sup> Gregory gave to the pangs of injured friendship a touching expression in the following lines from the poem on his own Life (*De vita sua*, vss. 476 sqq. tom. II. p. 699, of the Bened. ed., or tom. III. 1062, in Migne's ed.):

Τοιαῦτ' Ἀθῆναι, καὶ πόνοι κοινὸν λόγον,  
Ὁμόστεγός τε καὶ συνέστιος βίος,  
Νοῦς εἰς ἐν ἔμφοιν, οὐ δύω, δαῦμ' Ἑλλάδος,  
Καὶ δεξιᾷ, κόσμον μὲν ὡς πῆρ' ὦ βαλεῖν,

combined request of his friend and his aged father, he suffered himself indeed to be consecrated to the new office; but it is very doubtful whether he ever went to Sasina.<sup>1</sup> At all events we soon afterwards find him in his solitude, and then again, in 372, assistant of his father in Nazianzum. In a remarkable discourse delivered in the presence of his father in 372, he represented to the congregation his peculiar fluctuation between an innate love of the contemplative life of seclusion and the call of the Spirit to public labor.

"Come to my help," said he to his hearers,<sup>2</sup> "for I am almost torn asunder by my inward longing and by the Spirit. The longing urges me to flight, to solitude in the mountains, to quietude of soul and body, to withdrawal of spirit from all sensuous things, and to retirement into myself, that I may commune undisturbed with God, and be wholly penetrated by the rays of His Spirit. . . . But the other, the Spirit, would lead me into the midst of life, to serve the common weal, and by furthering others to further myself, to spread light, and to present to God a people for His possession, a holy

Ἀποδοὺ δὲ κοινὸν τῷ Θεῷ ζῆσαι βίον,  
 Λόγου τε δοῦναι τῷ μόνῳ σοφῇ διδῶν.  
 Διεσκέδασται πάντα, ἔρρηπται χαμᾶι,  
 Ἄδραι φέρουσι τὰς παλαιὰς ἐλπίδας.

"Talia Athens, et communia studia,  
 Ejusdem texti et mensæ consors vita,  
 Mens una, non duse in ambobus, res mira Græciorum,  
 Dædæque dexteræ, mundum ut procul rejiceremus,  
 Deoque simul viveremus,  
 Et literas soli sapienti Verbo dedicaremus.  
 Dissipata hæc sunt omnia, et humi projecta,  
 Venti auferunt spes nostras antiquas."

Gibbon (ch. xvii.) quotes this passage with admiration, though with characteristic omission of vs. 479-481, which refer to their harmony in *religion*; and he aptly alludes to a parallel from Shakespeare, who had never read the poems of Gregory Nazianzen, but who gave to similar feelings a similar expression, in the *Midsummer Night's Dream*, where Helena utters the same pathetic complaint to her friend Hermia:

"Is all the counsel that we two have shared,  
 The sister's vows," &c.

<sup>1</sup> Gibbon says: "He solemnly protests, that he never consummated his spiritual marriage with this disgusting bride."

<sup>2</sup> Orat. xii. 4; tom. i. 249 sq. (in Migne's ed. tom. i. p. 847).

people, a royal priesthood (Tit. ii. 14; 1 Pet. ii. 9), and His image again purified in many. For as a whole garden is more than a plant, and the whole heaven with all its beauties is more glorious than a star, and the whole body more excellent than one member, so also before God the whole well-instructed church is better than one well-ordered person, and a man must in general look not only on his own things, but also on the things of others. So Christ did, who, though He might have remained in His own dignity and divine glory, not only humbled Himself to the form of a servant, but also, despising all shame, endured the death of the cross, that by His suffering He might blot out sin, and by His death destroy death."

Thus he stood a faithful helper by the side of his venerable and universally beloved father, who reached the age of almost an hundred years, and had exercised the priestly office for forty-five; and on the death of his father, in 374, he delivered a masterly funeral oration, which Basil attended.<sup>1</sup> "There is," said he in this discourse, turning to his still living mother, "only one life, to behold the (divine) life; there is only one death—sin; for this is the corruption of the soul. But all else, for the sake of which many exert themselves, is a dream which decoys us from the true; it is a treacherous phantom of the soul. When we think so, O my mother, then we shall not boast of life, nor dread death. For whatsoever evil we yet endure, if we press out of it to true life, if we, delivered from every change, from every vortex, from all satiety, from all vassalage to evil, shall there be with eternal, no longer changeable things, as small lights circling around the great."

A short time after he had been invested with the vacant bishopric, he retired again, in 375, to his beloved solitude, and this time he went to Seleucia in Isauria, to the vicinity of a church dedicated to St. Thecla.

There the painful intelligence reached him of the death of his beloved Basil, A. D. 379. On this occasion he wrote to Basil's brother, Gregory of Nyssa: "Thus also was it reserved for me still in this unhappy life to hear of the death of Basil

<sup>1</sup> Orat. xviii. *Ἐκτίσις εἰς τὸν πατέρα, παρόντος Βασιλείου* (ed. Bened. tom. i pp. 380-382; in Migne's ed. i. 981 sqq.).

and the departure of this holy soul, which is gone *out* from na, only to go *in* to the Lord, after having already prepared itself for this through its whole life." He was at that time bodily and mentally very much depressed. In a letter to the rhetorician Eudoxius he wrote: "You ask, how it fares with me Very badly. I no longer have Basil; I no longer have Cæsarius; my spiritual brother, and my bodily brother. I can say with David, my father and my mother have forsaken me. My body is sickly, age is coming over my head, cares become more and more complicated, duties overwhelm me, friends are unfaithful, the church is without capable pastors, good declines, evil stalks naked. The ship is going in the night, a light nowhere, Christ asleep. What is to be done? O, there is to me but one escape from this evil case: death. But the hereafter would be terrible to me, if I had to judge of it by the present state."

But Providence had appointed him yet a great work and an exalted position in the Eastern capital of the empire. In the year 379 he was called to the pastoral charge by the orthodox church in Constantinople, which, under the oppressive reign of Arianism, was reduced to a feeble handful; and he was exhorted by several worthy bishops to accept the call. He made his appearance unexpectedly. With his insignificant form bowed by disease, his miserable dress, and his simple, secluded mode of life, he at first entirely disappointed the splendor-loving people of the capital, and was much mocked and persecuted.<sup>1</sup> But in spite of all he succeeded, by his powerful eloquence and faithful labor, in building up the little church in faith and in Christian life, and helped the Nicene doctrine again to victory. In memory of this success his little domestic chapel was afterwards changed into a magnificent church, and named *Anastasia*, the Church of the Resurrection.

<sup>1</sup> Once the Arian populace even stormed his church by night, desecrated the altar, mixed the holy wine with blood, and Gregory but barely escaped the fury of common women and monks, who were armed with clubs and stones. The next day he was summoned before the court for the tumult, but so happily defended himself, that the occurrence heightened the triumph of his just cause. Probably from this circumstance he afterwards received the honorary title of *confessor*. See Ullmann, p. 176.



People of all classes crowded to his discourses, which were mainly devoted to the vindication of the Godhead of Christ and to the Trinity, and at the same time earnestly inculcated a holy walk befitting the true faith. Even the famous Jerome, at that time already fifty years old, came from Syria to Constantinople to hear these discourses, and took private instruction of Gregory in the interpretation of Scripture. He gratefully calls him his preceptor and catechist.

The victory of the Nicene faith, which Gregory had thus inwardly promoted in the imperial city, was outwardly completed by the celebrated edict of the new emperor Theodosius, in February, 380. When the emperor, on the 24th of December of that year, entered Constantinople, he deposed the Arian bishop, Demophilus, with all his clergy, and transferred the cathedral church<sup>1</sup> to Gregory with the words: "This temple God by our hand intrusts to thee as a reward for thy pains." The people tumultuously demanded him for bishop, but he decidedly refused. And in fact he was not yet released from his bishopric of Nazianzum or Sasima (though upon the latter he had never formally entered); he could be released only by a synod.

When Theodosius, for the formal settlement of the theological controversies, called the renowned ecumenical council in May, 381, Gregory was elected by this council itself bishop of Constantinople, and, amidst great festivities, was inducted into the office. In virtue of this dignity he held for a time the presidency of the council.

When the Egyptian and Macedonian bishops arrived, they disputed the validity of his election, because, according to the fifteenth canon of the council of Nice, he could not be transferred from his bishopric of Sasima to another; though their real reason was, that the election had been made without

<sup>1</sup> Not the church of St. Sophia, as Tillemont assumes, but the church of the Apostles, as Ullmann, p. 223, supposes; for Gregory never names the former, but mentions the latter repeatedly, and that as the church in which he himself preached. Constantine built both, but made the church of the Apostles the more magnificent, and chose it for his own burial place (Euseb. *Vita Const.* iv. 58-60); St. Sophia afterwards became under Justinian the most glorious monument of the later Greek architecture, and the cathedral of Constantinople.

them, and that Gregory would probably be distasteful to them as a bold preacher of righteousness. This deeply wounded him. He was soon disgusted, too, with the operations of party passions in the council, and resigned with the following remarkable declaration :

“Whatever this assembly may hereafter determine concerning me, I would fain raise your mind beforehand to something far higher : I pray you now, be one, and join yourselves in love ! Must we always be only derided as infallible, and be animated only by one thing, the spirit of strife ? Give each other the hand fraternally. But I will be a second Jonah. I will give myself for the salvation of our ship (the church), though I am innocent of the storm. Let the lot fall upon me, and cast me into the sea. A hospitable fish of the deep will receive me. This shall be the beginning of your harmony. I reluctantly ascended the episcopal chair, and gladly I now come down. Even my weak body advises me this. One debt only have I to pay : death ; this I owe to God. But, O my Trinity ! for Thy sake only am I sad. Shalt Thou have an able man, bold and zealous to vindicate Thee ? Farewell, and remember my labors and my pains.”

In the celebrated valedictory which he delivered before the assembled bishops, he gives account of his administration ; depicts the former humiliation and the present triumph of the Nicene faith in Constantinople, and his own part in this great change, for which he begs repose as his only reward ; exhorts his hearers to harmony and love ; and then takes leave of Constantinople and in particular of his beloved church, with this address :

“And now, farewell, my Anastasia, who bearest a so holy name ; thou hast exalted again our faith, which once was despised ; thou, our common field of victory, thou new Shiloh, where we first established again the ark of the covenant, after it had been carried about for forty years on our wandering in the wilderness.”

Though this voluntary resignation of so high a post proceeded in part from sensitiveness and irritation, it is still an honorable testimony to the character of Gregory in contrast

with the many clergy of his time who shrank from no intrigues and by-ways to get possession of such dignities. He left Constantinople in June, 381, and spent the remaining years of his life mostly in solitude on his paternal estate of Arianzus in the vicinity of Nazianzum, in religious exercises and literary pursuits. Yet he continued to operate through numerous epistles upon the affairs of the church, and took active interest in the welfare and sufferings of the men around him. The nearer death approached, the more he endeavored to prepare himself for it by contemplation and rigid ascetic practice, that he "might be, and might more and more become, in truth a pure mirror of God and of divine things; might already in hope enjoy the treasures of the future world; might walk with the angels; might already forsake the earth, while yet walking upon it; and might be transported into higher regions by the Spirit." In his poems he describes himself, living solitary in the clefts of the rocks among the beasts, going about without shoes, content with one rough garment, and sleeping upon the ground covered with a sack. He died in 390 or 391; the particular circumstances of his death being now unknown. His bones were afterwards brought to Constantinople; and they are now shown at Rome and Venice.

Among the works of Gregory stand pre-eminent his five Theological Orations in defence of the Nicene doctrine against the Eunomians and Macedonians, which he delivered in Constantinople, and which won for him the honorary title of the *Theologian* (in the narrower sense, i. e., vindicator of the deity of the Logos).<sup>1</sup> His other orations (forty-five in all) are devoted to the memory of distinguished martyrs, friends, and kindred, to the ecclesiastical festivals, and to public events or his own fortunes. Two of them are bitter attacks on Julian after his death.<sup>2</sup> They are not founded on particular texts, and have no strictly logical order and connection.

<sup>1</sup> Hence called also λόγοι θεολογικοί, *Orationes theologicæ*. They are *Orat. xxvii.-xxxi.* in the *Bened. ed. tom. i. pp. 487-577* (in *Migne, tom. ii. 9 sqq.*), and in the *Bibliotheca Patrum Græc. dogmatica* of Thilo, vol. ii. pp. 366-537.

<sup>2</sup> *Invectiveæ*, *Orat. iv. et v.* in the *Bened. ed. tom. i. 73-176* (in *Migne's ed. tom. i. pp. 531-722*). His horror of Julian misled him even to eulogize the Arian emperor Constantius, to whom his brother was physician.

He is the greatest orator of the Greek church, with the exception perhaps of Chrysostom; but his oratory often degenerates into arts of persuasion, and is full of labored ornamentation and rhetorical extravagances, which are in the spirit of his age, but in violation of healthful, natural taste.

As a poet he holds a subordinate, though respectable place. He wrote poetry only in his later life, and wrote it not from native impulse, as the bird sings among the branches, but in the strain of moral reflection, upon his own life, or upon doctrinal and moral themes. Many of his orations are poetical, many of his poems are prosaic. Not one of his odes or hymns passed into use in the church. Yet some of his smaller pieces, apothegms, epigrams, and epitaphs, are very beautiful, and betray noble affections, deep feeling, and a high order of talent and cultivation.<sup>1</sup>

We have, finally, two hundred and forty-two (or 244) Epistles from Gregory, which are important to the history of the time, and in some cases very graceful and interesting.

### § 167. *Didymus of Alexandria.*

- I. DIDYMI ALEXANDRINI Opera omnia: accedunt S. Amphilochii et Neotarii scripta quæ supersunt Græcæ, accurante et denuo recognoscente J. P. Migne. Petit-Montrouge (Paris), 1858. (Tom. xxxix. of the Patrologia Græca.)
- II. HIERONYMUS: De viris illustr. c. 109, and Proœm. in Hoseam. Scattered accounts in RUFINUS, PALLADIUS, SOCRATES, SOZOMEN, and THEODORET. TILLEMONT: Mémoires, x. 164. FABRICIUS: Bibl. Gr. tom. ix. 269 sqq. ed. Harless (also in Migne's ed. of the Opera, pp. 181-140)

<sup>1</sup> His poems fill together with the Epistles the whole second tome of the magnificent Benedictine edition, so delightful to handle, which was published at Paris, 1842 (edente et curante D. A. B. Caillan), and vols. iii. and iv. of Migne's reprint. They are divided by the Bened. editor into: I. Ποσmata theologica (dogmatica, moralia); II. historica (a. autobiographical, quæ spectant ipsum Gregorium, *περὶ ἑαυτοῦ*, De seipso; and b. *περὶ τῶν ἑτέρων*, quæ spectant alios); III. epitaphia; IV. epigrammata; and V. a long tragedy, *Christus patiens*, with Christ, the Holy Virgin, Joseph, Theologus, Mary Magdalene, Nicodemus, Nuntius, and Pilate as actors. This is the first attempt at a Christian drama. The order of the poems, as well as the Orations and Epistles, differs in the Benedictine from that of the older editions. See the comparative table in tom. ii. p. xv. sqq. One of the finest passages in his poems is his lamentation over the temporary suspension of his friendship with Basil, quoted above, p. 914.

SCHROBOKH: Church History, vii 74-87. GUERIQUE: De schola Alexandria. Hal. 1824.

DIDYMUS, the last great teacher of the Alexandrian catechetical school, and a faithful follower of Origen, was born probably at Alexandria about the year 309. Though he became in his fourth year entirely blind, and for this reason has been surnamed *Cæcus*, yet by extraordinary industry he gained comprehensive and thorough knowledge in philosophy, rhetoric, and mathematics. He learned to write by means of wooden tablets in which the characters were engraved; and he became so familiar with the Holy Scriptures by listening to the church lessons, that he knew them almost all by heart.

Athanasius nominated him teacher in the theological school, where he zealously labored for nearly sixty years. Even men like Jerome, Rufinus, Palladius, and Isidore, sat at his feet with admiration. He was moreover an enthusiastic advocate of ascetic life, and stood in high esteem with the Egyptian anchorites; with St. Anthony in particular, who congratulated him, that, though blind to the perishable world of sense, he was endowed with the eye of an angel to behold the mysteries of God. He died at a great age, in universal favor, in 395.

Didymus was thoroughly orthodox in the doctrine of the Trinity, and a discerning opponent of the Arians, but at the same time a great venerator of Origen, and a participant of his peculiar views concerning the pre-existence of souls, and probably concerning final restoration. For this reason he was long after his death condemned with intolerant zeal by several general councils.<sup>1</sup>

We have from him a book On the Holy Ghost, translated by Jerome into Latin, in which he advocates, with much discrimination, and in simple, biblical style, the consubstantiality of the Spirit with the Father, against the Semi-Arians and Pneumatomachi of his time;<sup>2</sup> and three books on the Trinity,

<sup>1</sup> First at the fifth ecumenical council in 553. The sixth council in 680 stigmatized him as a defender of the abominable doctrine of Origen, who revived the heathen fables of the transmigration of souls; and the seventh repeated this in 787.

<sup>2</sup> Didymus wrote only one book De Spiritu Sancto (see Jerome, De viris illustr

in the Greek original.<sup>1</sup> He wrote also a brief treatise against the Manichæans. Of his numerous exegetical works we have a commentary on the Catholic Epistles,<sup>2</sup> and large fragments, in part uncertain, of commentaries on the Psalms, Job, Proverbs, and some Pauline Epistles.<sup>3</sup>

### § 168. *Cyril of Jerusalem.*

- I. S. CYRILLUS, archiepisc. Hierosolymitanus: Opera quæ exstant omnia, &c., cura et studio *Ant. Aug. Touttæi* (*Touttée*), presb. et monachi Bened. e congreg. S. Mauri. Paris, 1720. 1 vol. fol. (edited after Touttée's death by the Benedictine *D. Prud. Maranus*. Comp. therewith *Sal. Deyling*: *Cyrillus Hieros. a corruptelis Touttæi aliorumque purgatus*. Lips. 1728). Reprint, Venice, 1768. A new ed. by *Migne*, Petit-Montrouge, 1857 (Patrol. Gr. tom. xxxiii., which contains also the writings of Apollinaris of Laodicea, Diodor of Tarsus, and others). The Catecheses of Cyril have also been several times edited separately, and translated into modern languages. Engl. transl. in the Oxford Library of the Fathers, vol. ii. Oxf. 1839.
- II. EPIPHANIUS: Hæc. lx. 20; lxxiii. 23, 27, 27. HIERONYMUS: De viris illustr. c. 112. SOCRATES: H. E. ii. 40, 42, 45; iii. 20. SOZOMEN: iv. 5, 17, 20, 22, 25. THEODORET: H. E. ii. 26, 27; iii. 14; v. 8. The Dissertations Cyrillianæ de vita et scriptis S. Cyr. &c. in the Benedictine edition of the Opera, and in Migne's reprint, pp. 81-822. The ACTA SANCTORUM, and BUTLER, sub mense Martii 18. TILLEMONT: tom. viii. pp. 428-439, 779-787. Also the accounts in the well-known

c. 135: librum unum de Sp. S. Didymi quem in Latinum transtuli). The division into three books is of later date.

<sup>1</sup> Discovered and edited by Joh. Aloys. Mingarelli, at Bologna, 1769, with a Latin translation and learned treatises on the life, doctrine, and writings of Didymus. (Dr. Herzog, Encykl. iii. p. 384, confounds this edition with a preliminary advertisement by the brother Ferdinand Mingarelli: *Veterum testimonia de Didymo Alex. cæco, ex quibus tres libri de Trinitate nuper detecti eidem asseruntur*, Rom. 1764. The title of the work itself is: *Didymus, De Trinitate libri tres, nunc primum ex Passioneiano codice Gr. editi, Latine conversi, ac notis illustrati a D. Joh. Aloys. Mingarellio, Bononiæ, 1769, fol.*)

<sup>2</sup> The Latin version is found in the libraries of the church fathers. The original Greek has been edited by Dr. FR. LÜCKE from Muscovite manuscripts in four academic dissertations: *Questiones ac vindiciæ Didymianæ, sive Didymi Alex. enarratio in Epistolas Catholicas Latine, Græco exemplari magnam partem e Græcis scholiis restituta*, Gotting. 1829-'32. Reprinted in Migne's edition of *Opera Didymi*, pp. 1731-1818.

<sup>3</sup> In Migne's ed. p. 1109 sqq.

patristic works of DUPIN, OELLIER, CAVE, FABRICIUS. SCHROBOM  
Part xii. pp. 369-476.

. CYRILLUS, presbyter and, after 350, bishop of Jerusalem, was extensively involved during his public life in the Arian controversies. His metropolitan, Acacius of Cæsarea, an Arian, who had elevated him to the episcopal chair, fell out with him over the Nicene faith and on a question of jurisdiction, and deposed him at a council in 357. His deposition was confirmed by an Arian council at Constantinople in 360.

After the death of the emperor Constantius he was restored to his bishopric in 361, and in 363 his embittered adversary, Acacius, converted to the orthodox faith. When Julian encouraged the Jews to rebuild the temple, Cyril is said to have predicted the miscarriage of the undertaking from the prophecies of Daniel and of Christ, and he was justified by the result. Under the Arian emperor Valens he was again deposed and banished, with all the other orthodox bishops, till he finally, under Theodosius, was permitted to return to Jerusalem in 379, to devote himself undisturbed to the supervision and restoration of his sadly distracted church until his death.

He attended the ecumenical council in Constantinople in 381, which confirmed him in his office, and gave him the great praise of having suffered much from the Arians for the faith. He died in 386, with his title to office and his orthodoxy universally acknowledged, clear of all the suspicions which many had gathered from his friendship with Semi-Arian bishops during his first exile.<sup>1</sup>

From Cyril we have an important theological work, complete, in the Greek original: his twenty-three Catecheses.<sup>2</sup> The work consists of connected religious lectures or homilies, which he delivered while presbyter about the year 347, in preparing a class of catechumens for baptism. It follows that form of the Apostles' Creed or the Rule of Faith which was then in use in the churches of Palestine, and which agrees in

<sup>1</sup> His sentiments on the holy Trinity are discussed at length in the third preliminary dissertation of the Bened. editor (in Migne's ed. p. 167 sqq.).

<sup>2</sup> Κατηχήσεις φωτισομένων (or βαπτισομένων), Catecheses illuminandorum. They are preceded by a procatechesis.

all essential points with the Roman; it supports the various articles with passages of Scripture, and defends them against the heretical perversions of his time. The last five, called the *Mystagogic Catecheses*,<sup>1</sup> are addressed to newly baptized persons, and are of importance in the doctrine of the sacraments and the history of liturgy. In these he explains the ceremonies then customary at baptism: Exorcism, the putting off of garments, anointing, the short confession, triple immersion, confirmation by the anointing oil; also the nature and ritual of the holy Supper, in which he sees a mystical vital union of believers with Christ, and concerning which he uses terms verging at least upon the doctrine of transubstantiation. In connection with this he gives us a full account of the earliest eucharistic liturgy, which coincides in all essential points with such other liturgical remains of the Eastern church, as the Apostolic Constitutions and the Liturgy of St. James.

The Catecheses of Cyril are the first example of a popular compend of religion; for the catechetical work of Gregory of Nyssa (*λόγος κατηχητικὸς ὁ μέγας*) is designed not so much for catechumens, as for catechists and those intending to become teachers.

Besides several homilies and tracts of very doubtful genuineness, a homily on the healing of the cripple at Bethesda,<sup>2</sup> and a remarkable letter to the emperor Constantius of the year 351, are also ascribed to Cyril.<sup>3</sup> In the letter he relates to the emperor the miraculous appearance of a luminous cross extending from Golgotha to a point over the mount of Olives (mentioned also by Socrates, Sozomen, and others), and calls upon him to praise the "consubstantial Trinity."<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Κατηχήσεις μυσταγωγικαί*. The name is connected with the mysterious practices of the *disciplina arcani* of the early church. Comp. the conclusion of the first *Mystagogic Catechesis*, c. 11 (Migne, p. 1075). The mystagogic lectures are also separately numbered. The first is a general exhortation to the baptized on 1 Pet. v. 8; the second treats De baptismo; the third, De chrismate; the fourth, De corpore et sanguine Christi; the fifth, De sacra liturgia et communione.

<sup>2</sup> Homilia in paralyticum, John v. 2-16 (in Migne's ed. pp. 1181-1188).

<sup>3</sup> Ep. ad Constantium imper. De viso Hierosolymis lucidae crucis signo, pp. 1184-1178.

<sup>4</sup> *Τὴν ἁγίαν καὶ θεοσόφιστον Τριάδα, τὸν ἀληθινὸν Θεὸν ἡμῶν, ᾧ πρέπει πᾶσα δόξα εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων.*



§ 169. *Epiphanius.*

- I. S. EPIPHANIUS: Opera omnia, Gr. et Lat., *Dionysius Petavius* ex veteribus libris recensuit, Latine vertit et animadversionibus illustravit. Paris, 1622, 2 vols. fol. The same edition reprinted with additions at Cologne (or rather at Leipsic), 1682, and by *J. P. Migne*, Petit-Mont-rouge, 1858, in 8 vols. (tom. xli.-xliii. of *Migne's Patrologia Græca*). The Πανάριον or Panaria of Epiphanius, together with his Anacephalæosis, with the Latin version of both by Petavius, has also been separately edited by *Fr. Oehler*, as tom. ii. and iii. of his *Corpus hæresologicum*, Berol. 1859-'61. (Part second of tom. iii. contains the Animadversiones of *Petavius*, and *A. Jahn's* Symbolæ ad emendanda et illustranda S. Epiphanii Panaria.)
- II. HIERONYMUS: De viris illustr. c. 114, and in several of his Epistles relating to the Origenistic controversies, Epp. 66 sqq. ed. Vallarsi. SOCRATES: Hist. Eccl. l. vi. c. 10-14. SOZOMEN: H. E. viii. 11-15. Old biographies, full of fables, see in *Migne's* edition, tom. i., and in *Petav. ii.* 818 sqq. The Vita Epiph. in the ACTA SANCTORUM for May, tom. iii. die 12, pp. 36-49 (also reprinted in *Migne's* ed. tom. i.). TILLEMONT: Mémoires, tom. x. pp. 484-521, and the notes, pp. 802-809. FR. ARM. GÉRAVAISE: L'histoire et la vie de saint Epiphane. Par. 1788. FABRICIUS: Biblioth. Græca, ed. Harless, tom. viii. p. 255 sqq. (also reprinted in *Migne's* ed. of Epiph. i. 1 sqq.). W. CAVE: Lives of the Fathers, iii. 207-236 (new Oxf. ed.). SCHROCKH: Th. x. 3 ff. R. ADOLF. LIPSIIUS: Zur Quellenkritik des Epiphanius. Wien, 1865. (A critical analysis of the older history of heresies, in Epiph. hæc. 18-57, with special reference to the Gnostic systems.)

EPIPHANIUS,<sup>1</sup> who achieved his great fame mainly by his learned and intolerant zeal for orthodoxy, was born near Eleutheropolis in Palestine, between 310 and 320, and died at sea, at a very advanced age, on his way back from Constantinople to Cyprus, in 403. According to an uncertain, though not improbable tradition, he was the son of poor Jewish parents, and was educated by a rich Jewish lawyer, until in his sixteenth year he embraced the Christian religion,<sup>2</sup>—the first example,

<sup>1</sup> There are several prominent ecclesiastical writers of that name. Compare a list of them in Fabricius, l. c.

<sup>2</sup> See the biography of his pupil John, ch. 2, in *Migne's* ed. i. 25 sqq. Cave accepts this story, and it receives some support from the Palestinian origin of Epiphanius, and from his knowledge of the Hebrew language, which was then so rare that Jerome was the only father besides Epiphanius who possessed it.

after St. Paul, of a learned Jewish convert and the only example among the ancient fathers; for all the other fathers were either born of Christian parents, or converted from heathenism.

He spent several years in severe ascetic exercises among the hermits of Egypt, and then became abbot of a convent near Eleutheropolis. In connection with his teacher and friend Hilarion he labored zealously for the spread of monasticism in Palestine.<sup>1</sup>

In the year 367 he was unanimously elected by the people and the monks bishop of Salamis (Constantia), the capital of the island of Cyprus. Here he wrote his works against the heretics, and took active part in the doctrinal controversies of his age. He made it his principal business to destroy the influence of the arch-heretic Origen, for whom he had contracted a thorough hatred from the anchorites of Egypt. On this mission he travelled in his old age to Palestine and Constantinople, and died in the same year in which Chrysostom was deposed and banished, an innocent sacrifice on the opposite side in the violent Origenistic controversies.<sup>2</sup>

Epiphanius was revered even by his cotemporaries as a saint and as a patriarch of orthodoxy. Once as he passed through the streets of Jerusalem in company with bishop John, mothers brought their children to him that he might bless them, and the people crowded around him to kiss his feet and to touch the hem of his garment. After his death his name was surrounded by a halo of miraculous legends. He was a man of earnest, monastic piety, and of sincere but illiberal zeal for orthodoxy. His good nature easily allowed him to be used as an instrument for the passions of others, and his zeal was not according to knowledge. He is the patriarch of heresy-hunters. He identified Christianity with monastic piety and ecclesiastical orthodoxy, and considered it the great mission of his life to pursue the thousand-headed hydra of heresy into all its hiding places. Occasionally, however, his fiery zeal consumed what was subsequently considered an

<sup>1</sup> He composed a eulogy on Hilarion, which, with some others of his works, is lost.

<sup>2</sup> Comp above, §§ 183 and 184.

essential part of piety and orthodoxy. Sharing the primitive Christian abhorrence of images, he destroyed a picture of Christ or some saint in a village church in Palestine; and at times he violated ecclesiastical order.

The learning of Epiphanius was extensive, but ill digested. He understood five languages: Hebrew, Syriac, Egyptian, Greek, and a little Latin. Jerome, who himself knew but three languages, though he knew these far better than Epiphanius, called him the Five-tongued,<sup>1</sup> and Rufinus reproachfully says of him that he considered it his sacred duty as a wandering preacher to slander the great Origen in all languages and nations.<sup>2</sup> He was lacking in knowledge of the world and of men, in sound judgment, and in critical discernment. He was possessed of a boundless credulity, now almost proverbial, causing innumerable errors and contradictions in his writings. His style is entirely destitute of beauty or elegance.

Still his works are of considerable value as a storehouse of the history of ancient heresies and of patristic polemics. They are the following:

1. The *ANCHOR*,<sup>3</sup> a defence of Christian doctrine, especially of the doctrines of the Trinity, the incarnation, and the resurrection; in one hundred and twenty-one chapters. He composed this treatise A. D. 373, at the entreaty of clergymen and monks, as a stay for those who are tossed about upon the sea by heretics and devils. In it he gives two creeds, a shorter and a longer, which show that the addition made by the sec-

<sup>1</sup> Πεντάγλωττος.

<sup>2</sup> Hieron. Apol. adv. Rufinum, l. iii. c. 6 (Opera, tom. ii. 537, ed. Vall.) and l. ii. 21 and 22 (tom. ii. 515). Jerome says that "papa" Epiphanius had read the six thousand (?) books of Origen, and in his apology against Rufinus and in his letters he speaks of him with great respect as a confederate in the war upon Origen. He acknowledges, however, that his statements need an accurate and careful verification. In his *Liber de viris illustribus*, cap. 114, he disposes of him very summarily with two sentences: "Epiphanius, Cypri Salaminæ episcopus, scripsit adversus omnes hæreses libros, et multa alia, quæ ab eruditis propter res, a simplicioribus propter verba lectitantur. Superest usque hodie, et in extrema jam senectute varia cudit opera."

<sup>3</sup> Ἀγκυραῖος, *Ancoratus*, or *Ancora fidei catholica*, in tom. ii. of Petavius; tom. iii. 11-286 of Migne.

ond ecumenical council to the Nicene symbol, in respect to the doctrine of the Holy Ghost and of the church, had already been several years in use in the church.<sup>1</sup> For the shorter symbol, which, according to Epiphanius, had to be said at baptism by every orthodox catechumen in the East, from the council of Nicæa to the tenth year of Valentinian and Valens (A. D. 373), is precisely the same as the Constantinopolitan; and the longer is even more specific against Apollinarianism and Macedonianism, in the article concerning the Holy Ghost. Both contain the anathemas of the Nicene Creed; the longer giving them in an extended form.

2. The *PANARIUM*, or Medicine-chest,<sup>2</sup> which contains antidotes for the poison of all heresies. This is his chief work, composed between the years 374 and 377, in answer to solicitations from many quarters. And it is the chief hereseological work of the ancient church. It is more extensive than any of the similar works of Justin Martyr, Irenæus, and Hippolytus before it, and of Philastrius (or Philastrus), Augustine, Theodoret, pseudo-Tertullian, pseudo-Jerome, and the author of *Prædestinatus*, after it.<sup>3</sup> Epiphanius brought together, with the diligence of an unwearied compiler, but without logical or chronological arrangement, everything he could learn from written or oral sources concerning heretics from the beginning of the world down to his time. But his main concern is the antidote to heresy, the doctrinal refutations, in which he believed himself to be doing God and the church great service,

<sup>1</sup> Anc. n. 119 and 120 (tom. iii. 23 sqq. ed. Migne).

<sup>2</sup> *Παρὰριον*, *Panarium* (*Panaria*), sive *Arcula*, or *Adversus lxxx. hæreses* (Petavius, tom. i. f. 1-1108; Migne, tom. i. 173-1200, and tom. ii. 10-882). Epiphanius himself names it *παράριον*, εἰς' ὅν κιβώτιον λατρικὸν καὶ θηριοθηκτικόν, *Panarium*, sive *Arculam Medicam ad eorum qui a serpentibus icti sunt remedium* (Epist. ad Acacium et Paulum, in Oehler's ed. i. p. 7).

<sup>3</sup> Compare the convenient collection of the Latin writers *De hæresibus*, viz.: Philastrius, Augustine, the author of *Prædestinatus* (the first book), pseudo-Tertullian, pseudo-Jerome, Isidorus Hispalensis, and Gennadius (*De ecclesiasticis dogmatibus*), in the first volume of FRANZ OEHLER'S *Corpus hæreseologicum*, Berolini, 1856. This collection is intended to embrace eight volumes. Tom. ii. and iii. contain the anti-heretical works of Epiphanius; the remaining volumes are intended for Theodoret, pseudo-Origen, John of Damascus, Leontius, Timotheus, Irenæus, and Nicetas. Choniates *Thesaurus orthodoxæ fidei*.

and which, with all their narrowness and passion, contain many good thoughts and solid arguments. He improperly extends the conception of heresy over the field of all religion; whereas heresy is simply a perversion or caricature of *Christian* truth, and lives only upon the *Christian* religion. He describes and refutes no less than eighty heresies,<sup>1</sup> twenty of them preceding the time of Christ.<sup>2</sup> The pre-Christian heresies are: Barbarism, from Adam to the flood; Scythism; Hellenism (idolatry proper, with various schools of philosophy); Samaritanism (including four different sects); and Judaism (subdivided into seven parties: Pharisees, Sadducees, Scribes, Hemerobaptists, Osseans, Nazarenes, and Herodians).<sup>3</sup> Among the Christian heresies, of which Simon Magus, according to ancient tradition, figures as patriarch, the different schools of Gnosticism (which may be easily reduced to about a dozen) occupy the principal space. With the sixty-fourth heresy

<sup>1</sup> Perhaps with a mystic reference to the eighty concubines in the Song of Songs, vi. 8: "Sexaginta sunt reginæ et octoginta concubinae, et adolescentularum non est numerus. Una est columba mea, perfecta mea." (Vulgate.)

<sup>2</sup> Pseudo-Tertullian (in *Libellus adversus omnes hæreses*), Philastrus, and pseudo-Hieronymus (*Indiculus de hæresibus*) likewise include the *Jewish* sects among the heresies; while Irenæus, Augustine, Theodoret, and the unknown author of the Semi-Pelagian work *Prædestinatus* more correctly begin with the Christian sects. For further particulars, see the comparative tables of Lipsius, l. c. p. 4 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Epiphanius in his shorter work, the *Anacephalæosis*, deviates somewhat from the order in the *Panarion*. His twenty heresies before Christ are as follows:

Order in the *PANARION*:

- |                      |                      |
|----------------------|----------------------|
|                      | 1. Barbarismus,      |
|                      | 2. Scythismus,       |
|                      | 3. Hellenismus,      |
|                      | 4. Judaismus,        |
| <i>Hellenismi</i> {  | 5. Stoici,           |
|                      | 6. Platonici,        |
|                      | 7. Pythagorei,       |
|                      | 8. Epicurei,         |
|                      | 9. Samaritæ,         |
| <i>Samaritismi</i> { | 10. Esseni,          |
|                      | 11. Sebusti,         |
|                      | 12. Gortheni,        |
|                      | 13. Dosithei,        |
|                      | 14. Saducæi,         |
|                      | 15. Scribæ,          |
|                      | 16. Pharisei,        |
| <i>Judaismi</i> {    | 17. Hemerobaptistæ,  |
|                      | 18. Nazaræi,         |
|                      | 19. Osseni or Ossæi, |
|                      | 20. Herodiani,       |

Order in the *ANACEPHALÆOSIS*:

- |                      |                     |
|----------------------|---------------------|
|                      | 1. Barbarismus,     |
|                      | 2. Scythismus,      |
|                      | 3. Hellenismus,     |
|                      | 4. Judaismus,       |
|                      | 5. Samaritismus,    |
| <i>Hellenismi</i> {  | 6. Pythagorei,      |
|                      | 7. Platonici,       |
|                      | 8. Stoici,          |
|                      | 9. Epicurei,        |
| <i>Samaritismi</i> { | 10. Gortheni,       |
|                      | 11. Sebusti,        |
|                      | 12. Esseni,         |
|                      | 13. Dosithei,       |
|                      | 14. Scribæ,         |
|                      | 15. Pharisei,       |
|                      | 16. Sadducæi,       |
| <i>Judaismi</i> {    | 17. Hemerobaptistæ, |
|                      | 18. Ossæi,          |
|                      | 19. Nazaræi,        |
|                      | 20. Herodiani,      |

Epiphanius begins the war upon the Origenists, Arians, Photinians, Marcellians, Semi-Arians, Pneumatomachians, Antidikomarianites, and other heretics of his age. In the earlier heresies he made large use, without proper acknowledgment, of the well-known works of Justin Martyr, Irenæus, and Hippolytus, and other written sources and oral traditions. In the latter sections he could draw more on his own observation and experience.

3. The *ANACEPHALÆOSIS* is simply an abridgment of the *Panarion*, with a somewhat different order.<sup>1</sup>

This is the proper place to add a few words upon similar works of the post-Nicene age.

About the same time, or shortly after Epiphanius (380), PHILASTRIUS or PHILASTRUS, bishop of Brixia (Brescia), wrote his *Liber de hæresibus* (in 156 chapters).<sup>2</sup> He was still more liberal with the name of heresy, extending it to one hundred and fifty-six systems, twenty-eight before Christ, and a hundred and twenty-eight after. He includes peculiar opinions on all sorts of subjects: *Hæresis de stellis cælo affixis*, *hæresis de peccato Cain*, *hæresis de Psalterii inequalitate*, *hæresis de animalibus quatuor in prophetis*, *hæresis de Septuaginta interpretibus*, *hæresis de Melchisedech sacerdote*, *hæresis de uxoribus et concubinis Salomonis*!

He was followed by ST. AUGUSTINE, who in the last years of his life wrote a brief compend on eighty-eight heresies, commencing with the Simonians and ending with the Pelagians.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Ἀνακεφαλαιώσεις*, or *Epitome Panarii* (tom. ii. 126, ed. Patav.; tom. ii. 834-886, ed. Migne).

<sup>2</sup> Edited by J. A. Fabricius, Hamburg, 1728; by Gallandi, *Bibliotheca*, tom. vii. pp. 475-521; and by Oehler in tom. i. of his *Corpus hæreseolog.* pp. 5-185. The close affinity of Philastrus with Epiphanius is usually accounted for on the ground of the dependence of the former on the latter. This seems to have been the opinion of Augustine, *Epistola* 222 ad *Quodvultdeum*. But Lipsius (l. c. p. 29 ff.) derives both from a common older source, viz., the work of Hippolytus against thirty-two heresies, and explains the silence of Epiphanius (who mentions Hippolytus only once) by the unscrupulousness of the authorship of the age, which had no hesitation in decking itself with borrowed plumes.

<sup>3</sup> *Liber de hæresibus*, addressed to Quodvultdeus, a deacon who had requested him to write such a work. Augustine, in his letter of reply to Quodvultdeus (*Ep.* 222 in the Bened. edition) alludes to the work of Philastrus, whom he had seen

The unknown author of the book called *Prædestinatus* added two more heretical parties, the Nestorians and the Predestinarians, to Augustine's list; but the Predestinarians are probably a mere invention of the writer for the purpose of caricaturing and exposing the heresy of an absolute predestination to good and to evil.<sup>1</sup>

4. In addition to those anti-heretical works, we have from Epiphanius a biblical archæological treatise on the Measures and Weights of the Scriptures,<sup>2</sup> and another on the Twelve Gems on the breastplate of Aaron, with an allegorical interpretation of their names.<sup>3</sup>

with Ambrose in Milan, and to that of Epiphanius, and calls the latter "longe Philastrio doctiorem." The work of Augustine is also embodied in Oehler's *Corpus hæreseol.* tom. i. pp. 189-225. The following is a complete list of the heresies of Augustine as given by him at the close of the preface: 1. Simoniani; 2. Menandriani; 3. Saturniniani; 4. Basilidiani; 5. Nicolaitæ; 6. Gnostici; 7. Carpocratiani; 8. Cerinthiani, vel Merinthiani; 9. Nazaræi; 10. Hebionæi; 11. Valentiniani; 12. Secundiani; 13. Ptolemæi; 14. Marcitæ; 15. Colorbasii; 16. Heracleonitæ; 17. Ophitæ; 18. Caiani; 19. Sethiani; 20. Archontici; 21. Cerdoniani; 22. Marcionitæ; 23. Apellitæ; 24. Severiani; 25. Tatiani, vel Encratitæ; 26. Cataphryges; 27. Pepuziani, alias Quintilliani; 28. Artotyritæ; 29. Tessarescædecattæ; 30. Alogi; 31. Adamiani; 32. Elcesæi et Sampasæi; 33. Theodotiani; 34. Melchisedechiani; 35. Bardesanistæ; 36. Noëtiani; 37. Valesii; 38. Cathari, sive Novatiani; 39. Angelici; 40. Apostolici; 41. Sabelliani; 42. Origeniani; 43. Alii Origeniani; 44. Pauliani; 45. Photiniani; 46. Manichæi; 47. Hieracitæ; 48. Melctiani; 49. Ariani; 50. Vadiani, sive Anthropomorphitæ; 51. Semiariani; 52. Macedoniani; 53. Aërian; 54. Aëtiani, qui et Eunomiani; 55. Apollinaristæ; 56. Antidicomarianitæ; 57. Massaliani, sive Euchitæ; 58. Metangismonitæ; 59. Seleuciani, vel Hermiani; 60. Proclianitæ; 61. Patriciani; 62. Ascitæ; 63. Passalorynchitæ; 64. Aquarii; 65. Coluthiani; 66. Floriniani; 67. De mundi statu dissentientes; 68. Nudis pedibus ambulantes; 69. Donatistæ, sive Donatiani; 70. Priscillianistæ; 71. Cum hominibus non manducantes; 72. Rhetoriani; 73. Christi divinitatem passibilem dicentes; 74. Triformem deum putantes; 75. Aquam Deo cœternam dicentes; 76. Imaginem Dei non esse animam dicentes; 77. Innumerabiles mundos opinantes; 78. Animas converti in dæmones et in quæcunque animalia existimantes; 79. Liberationem omnium apud inferos factam Christi descensione credentes; 80. Christi de Patre nativitate initium temporis dantes; 81. Luciferiani; 82. Iovinianistæ; 83. Arabici; 84. Helvidiani; 85. Paterniani, sive Venustiani; 86. Tertullianistæ; 87. Abeloitæ; 88. Pelagiani, qui et Cælestiani.

<sup>1</sup> *Corpus hæreseol.* i. 229-268. Comp. above, § 159.

<sup>2</sup> *Περὶ μέτρων καὶ σταδμῶν*, De ponderibus et mensuris, written in 392. (Tom. ii. 158, ed. Petav.; tom. iii. 237, ed. Migne.)

<sup>3</sup> *Περὶ τῶν δώδεκα λίθων*, De xii. gemmis in veste Aaronia. (Tom. ii. 233, ed. Pet.; iii. 293, ed. Migne.)

A Commentary of Epiphanius on the Song of Songs was published in a Latin translation by Foggini in 1750 at Rome. Other works ascribed to him are lost, or of doubtful origin.

§ 170. *John Chrysostom.*

- I. S. JOANNIS CHRYSOSTOMI, archiepiscopi Constantinopolitani, Opera omnia quæ exstant vel quæ ejus nomine circumferuntur, ad MSS. codices Gallic. etc. castigata, etc. (Gr. et Lat.). Opera et studio D. Bernardi de Montfaucon, monachi ordinis S. Benedicti e congregatione S. Mauri, opem ferentibus aliis ex eodem sodalitate monachis. Paris, 1718-'88, in 13 vols. fol. The same edition reprinted at Venice, 1734-'41, in 13 vols. fol. (after which I quote in this section); also at Paris by Sinner (Gaume), 1834-'39, in 13 vols. (an elegant edition, with some additions), and by J. P. Migne, Petit-Montrouge, 1859-'60, in 13 vols. Besides we have a number of separate editions of the *Homilies*, and of the work on the *Priesthood*, both in Greek, and in translations. A selection of his writings in Greek and Latin was edited by F. G. Lomler, Rudolphopoli, 1840, 1 volume. German translations of the *Homilies* (in part) by J. A. Cramer (Leipzig, 1748-'51), Feder (Augsburg, 1786), Ph. Mayer (Nürnberg, 1830), W. Arnoldi (Trier, 1831), Jos. Lutz (Tübingen, 1858); English translations of the *Homilies* on the New Testament in the Oxford Library of the Fathers, 1842-'53.
- II. PALLADIUS (a friend of Chrysostom and bishop of Helenopolis in Bithynia, author of the *Historia Lausiaca*; according to others a different person): *Dialogus historicus de vita et conversatione beati Joannis Chrysostomi cum Theodoro ecclesiæ Romanæ diacono* (in the Bened. ed. of the Opera, tom. xiii. pp. 1-89). HIERONYMUS: *De viris illustribus*, c. 129 (a very brief notice, mentioning only the work *De sacerdotio*). SOCRATES: H. E. vi. 3-21. SOZOMEN: H. E. viii. 2-23. THEODORET: H. E. v. 27-36. B. DE MONTFAUCON: *Vita Joannis Chrysa.* in his edition of the Opera, tom. xiii. 91-178. TESTIMONIA VETERUM de S. Joann. Chrysa. scriptis, *ibid.* tom. xiii. 256-292. TILLEMONT: *Mémoires*, vol. xi. pp. 1-405. F. STILTING: *Acta Sanctorum*, Sept. 14 (the day of his death), tom. iv. pp. 401-709. A. BUTLER: *Lives of Saints*, sub Jan. 27. W. CAVE: *Lives of the Fathers*, vol. iii. p. 237 ff. J. A. FABRICIUS: *Biblioth. Gr.* tom. viii. 454 sqq. SCHROCKH: Vol. x. p. 309 ff. A. NEANDER: *Der heilige Chrysostomus* (first 1821), 8d edition, Berlin, 1848, 2 vols. Abbé ROCHET: *Histoire de S. Jean Chrysostome*. Par. 1866, 2 vols. Comp. also A. F. VILLEMAIN's *Tableau de l'éloquence chrétienne au IV<sup>e</sup> siècle*. Paris, 1854.

JOHN, to whom an admiring posterity since the seventh century has given the name CHRYSOSTOMUS, the GOLDEN-MOUTHED, is the greatest expositor and preacher of the Greek church,



and still enjoys the highest honor in the whole Christian world. No one of the Oriental fathers has left a more spotless reputation; no one is so much read and so often quoted by modern commentators.

He was born at Antioch, A. D. 347.<sup>1</sup> His father was a distinguished military officer. His mother ANTHUSA, who from her twentieth year was a widow, shines with NONNA and MONICA among the Christian women of antiquity. She was admired even by the heathen, and the famous rhetorician Libanius, on hearing of her consistency and devotion, felt constrained to exclaim: "Ah! what wonderful women there are among the Christians."<sup>2</sup> She gave her son an admirable education, and early planted in his soul the germs of piety, which afterwards bore the richest fruits for himself and for the church. By her admonitions and the teachings of the Bible he was secured against the seductions of heathenism.

He received his literary training from Libanius, who accounted him his best scholar, and who, when asked shortly before his death (395) whom he wished for his successor, replied: "John, if only the Christians had not carried him away."

After the completion of his studies he became a rhetorician. He soon resolved, however, to devote himself to divine things, and after being instructed for three years by bishop Meletius in Antioch, he received baptism.

His first inclination after his conversion was to adopt the monastic life, agreeably to the ascetic tendencies of the times; and it was only by the entreaties of his mother, who adjured him with tears not to forsake her, that he was for a while restrained. Meletius made him reader, and so introduced him to a clerical career. He avoided an election to the bishopric (370) by putting forward his friend Basil, whom he accounted

<sup>1</sup> BAUR (Vorlesungen über die Dogmengeschichte, Bd. i. Abthlg. ii. p. 50) and others erroneously state the year 354 as that of his birth. Comp. Tillemont and Montfaucon (tom. xiii. 91).

<sup>2</sup> Βασίλ, οἷαι παρὰ χριστιανῶν γυναικες εἰσι. Chrysostom himself relates this of his heathen teacher (by whom undoubtedly we are to understand Libanius), though it is true, with immediate reference only to the twenty years' widowhood of his mother; Ad viduam juniorem, Opera, tom. i. p. 340. Comp. the remarks of Montfaucon in the Vita, tom. xiii. 92.

worthier, but who bitterly complained of the evasion. This was the occasion of his celebrated treatise *On the Priesthood*, in which, in the form of a dialogue with Basil, he vindicates his not strictly truthful conduct, and delineates the responsible duties of the spiritual office.<sup>1</sup>

After the death of his mother he fled from the seductions and tumults of city life to the monastic solitude of the mountains near Antioch, and there spent six happy years in theological study and sacred meditation and prayer, under the guidance of the learned abbot Diodorus (afterwards bishop of Tarsus, † 394), and in communion with such like-minded young men as Theodore of Mopsuestia, the celebrated father of Antiochian (Nestorian) theology († 429). Monasticism was to him a most profitable school of experience and self-government; because he embraced this mode of life from the purest motives, and brought into it intellect and cultivation enough to make the seclusion available for moral and spiritual growth.

In this period he composed his earliest writings in praise of monasticism and celibacy, and his two long letters to the fallen Theodore (subsequently bishop of Mopsuestia), who had regretted his monastic vow and resolved to marry.<sup>2</sup> Chrysostom regarded this small affair from the ascetic stand-point of his age as almost equal to an apostasy from Christianity, and plied all his oratorical arts of sad sympathy, tender entreaty, bitter reproach, and terrible warning, to reclaim his friend to what he thought the surest and safest way to heaven. To sin, he says, is human, but to persist in sin is devilish; to fall is not ruinous to the soul, but to remain on the ground is. The appeal had its desired effect, and cannot fail to make a salutary impression upon every reader, provided we substitute some really great offence for the change of a mode of life which can only be regarded as a temporary and abnormal form of Christian practice.

<sup>1</sup> *Περί ιερωσύνης*. De sacerdotio libri vi. Separate editions are: That of Frobenius at Basel, 1525, Greek, with a preface by Erasmus; that of Hughes at Cambridge, 1710, Greek and Latin, with the Life of Chrysostom by Cave; that of J. A. Bengel, Stuttgart, 1725, Greek and Latin, reprinted at Leipzig in 1825 and 1834; besides several translations into modern languages. Comp. above, § 51, p. 253.

<sup>2</sup> Compare Tillemont, Montfalcon, and Neander (l. c. i. p. 34 ff.).

By excessive self-mortifications John undermined his health, and returned about 380 to Antioch. There he was immediately ordained deacon by Meletius in 386, and by Flavian was made presbyter. By his eloquence and his pure and earnest character he soon acquired great reputation and the love of the whole church.

During the sixteen or seventeen years of his labors in Antioch he wrote the greater part of his Homilies and Commentaries, his work on the Priesthood, a consolatory Epistle to the despondent Stagirus, and an admonition to a young widow on the glory of widowhood and the duty of continuing in it. He disapproved second marriage, not as sinful or illegal, but as inconsistent with an ideal conception of marriage and a high order of piety.

After the death of Nectarius (successor of Gregory Nazianzen), towards the end of the year 397, Chrysostom was chosen, entirely without his own agency, patriarch of Constantinople. At this post he labored several years with happy effect. But his unsparing sermons aroused the anger of the empress Eudoxia, and his fame excited the envy of the ambitious patriarch Theophilus of Alexandria. An act of Christian love towards the persecuted Origenistic monks of Egypt involved him in the Origenistic controversy, and at last the united influence of Theophilus and Eudoxia overthrew him. Even the sympathy of the people and of Innocent I., the bishop of Rome, was unavailing in his behalf. He died in banishment on the fourteenth of September, A. D. 407, thanking God for all.<sup>1</sup> The Greeks celebrate his memorial day on the thirteenth of November, the Latins on the twenty-seventh of January, the day on which his remains in 438 were solemnly deposited in the Church of the Apostles in Constantinople with those of the emperors and patriarchs.

Persecution and undeserved sufferings tested the character of Chrysostom, and have heightened his fame. The Greek church honors him as the greatest teacher of the church, approached only by Athanasius and the three Cappadocians. His labors fall within the comparatively quiet period between

<sup>1</sup> Compare particulars above, § 134.

the Trinitarian and the Christological controversies. He was not therefore involved in any doctrinal controversy except the Origenistic; and in that he had a very innocent part, as his unspeculative turn of mind kept him from all share in the Origenistic errors. Had he lived a few decades later, he would perhaps have fallen under suspicion of Nestorianism; for he belonged to the same Antiochian school with his teacher Diodorus of Tarsus, his fellow-student Theodore of Mopsuestia, and his successor Nestorius. From this school, whose doctrinal development was not then complete, he derived a taste for the simple, sober, grammatico-historical interpretation, in opposition to the arbitrary allegorizing of the Alexandrians, while he remained entirely free from the rationalizing tendency which that school soon afterwards discovered. He is thus the soundest and worthiest representative of the Antiochian theology. In anthropology he is a decided synergist; and his pupil Cassian, the founder of Semi-Pelagianism, gives him for an authority.<sup>1</sup> But his synergism is that of the whole Greek church; it had no direct conflict with Augustinianism, for Chrysostom died several years before the opening of the Pelagian controversy. He opposed the Arians and Novatians, and faithfully and constantly adhered to the church doctrine, so far as it was developed; but he avoided narrow dogmatism and angry controversy, and laid greater stress on practical piety than on unfruitful orthodoxy.<sup>2</sup>

Valuable as the contributions of Chrysostom to didactic theology may be, his chief importance and merit lie not in this department, but in homiletical exegesis, pulpit eloquence, and pastoral care. Here he is unsurpassed among the ancient

<sup>1</sup> Julian of Eclanum had already appealed several times to Chrysostom against Augustine, as Augustine notes *Contra Jul.*, and in the *Opus imperfectum*.

<sup>2</sup> NIEBUHR (*Geschichte der christl. Kirche*, 1846, p. 323, and in his posthumous *Lehrbuch*, 1866, p. 303) briefly characterizes him thus: "In him we find a most complete mutual interpenetration of theoretical and practical theology, as well as of the dogmatical and ethical elements, exhibited mainly in the fusion of the exegetical and homiletical. Hence his exegesis was guarded against barren philology and dogma; and his pulpit discourse was free from doctrinal abstraction and empty rhetoric. The introduction of the knowledge of Christianity from the sources into the practical life of the people left him little time for the development of special dogmas."

fathers, whether Greek or Latin. By talent and culture he was peculiarly fitted to labor in a great metropolis. At that time a bishop, as he himself says, enjoyed greater honor at court, in the society of ladies, in the houses of the nobles, than the first dignitaries of the empire.<sup>1</sup> Hence the great danger of hierarchical pride and worldly conformity, to which so many of the prelates succumbed. This danger Chrysostom happily avoided. He continued his plain monastic mode of life in the midst of the splendor of the imperial residence, and applied all his superfluous income to the support of the sick and the stranger. Poor for himself, he was rich for the poor. He preached an earnest Christianity fruitful in good works, he insisted on strict discipline, and boldly attacked the vices of the age and the hollow, worldly, hypocritical religion of the court. He, no doubt, transcended at times the bounds of moderation and prudence, as when he denounced the empress Eudoxia as a new Herodias thirsting after the blood of John; but he erred "on virtue's side," and his example of fearless devotion to duty has at all times exerted a most salutary influence upon clergymen in high and influential stations. Neander not inaptly compares his work in the Greek church with that of Spener, the practical reformer in the Lutheran church of the seventeenth century, and calls him a martyr of Christian charity, who fell a victim in the conflict with the worldly spirit of his age.<sup>2</sup>

In the pulpit Chrysostom was a monarch of unlimited power over his hearers. His sermons were frequently interrupted by noisy theatrical demonstrations of applause, which he indignantly rebuked as unworthy of the house of God.<sup>3</sup> He had trained his natural gift of eloquence, which was of the first order, in the school of Demosthenes and Libanius, and ennobled and sanctified it in the higher school of the Holy

<sup>1</sup> The *τόμαρχοι* and *βραρχοι*, the *præfecti prætorio*. Homil. iii. in *Acta Apost.*

<sup>2</sup> In his monograph on Chrysostom, vol. i. p. 5.

<sup>3</sup> This Greek custom of applauding the preacher by clapping the hands and stamping the feet (called *κρότος*, from *κρούω*) was a sign of the secularization of the church after its union with the state. It is characteristic of his age that a powerful sermon of Chrysostom against this abuse was most enthusiastically applauded by his hearers!

Spirit.\* He was in the habit of making careful preparation for his sermons by the study of the Scriptures, prayer, and meditation; but he knew how to turn to good account unexpected occurrences, and some of his noblest efforts were extemporaneous effusions under the inspiration of the occasion. His ideas are taken from Christian experience and especially from the inexhaustible stores of the Bible, which he made his daily bread, and which he earnestly recommended even to the laity. He took up whole books and explained them in order, instead of confining himself to particular texts, as was the custom after the introduction of the pericopes. His language is noble, solemn, vigorous, fiery, and often overpowering. Yet he was by no means wholly free from the untruthful exaggerations and artificial antitheses, which were regarded at that time as the greatest ornament and highest triumph of eloquence, but which appear to a healthy and cultivated taste as defects and degeneracies. The most eminent French preachers, Bossuet, Massillon, and Bourdaloue, have taken Chrysostom for their model.

By far the most numerous and most valuable writings of this father are the Homilies, over six hundred in number, which he delivered while presbyter at Antioch and while bishop at Constantinople.<sup>1</sup> They embody his exegesis; and of this they are a rich storehouse, from which the later Greek commentators, Theodoret, Theophylact, and Ecumenius, have drawn, sometimes content to epitomize his expositions. Commentaries, properly so called, he wrote only on the first eight chapters of Isaiah and on the Epistle to the Galatians. But nearly all his sermons on Scripture texts are more or less expository. He has left us homilies on Genesis, the Psalms, the Gospel of Matthew, the Gospel of John, the Acts, and all the Epistles

<sup>1</sup> KARL HASE (*Kirchengeschichte*, § 104, seventh edition) truly says of Chrysostom that "he complemented the sober clearness of the Antiochian exegesis and the rhetorical arts of Libanius with the depth of his warm Christian heart, and that he carried out in his own life, as far as mortal man can do it, the ideal of the priesthood which, in youthful enthusiasm, he once described."

<sup>2</sup> They are contained in vols. ii.-xii. of the Benedictine edition.

of Paul, including the Epistle to the Hebrews. His homilies on the Pauline Epistles are especially esteemed.<sup>1</sup>

Besides these expository sermons on whole books of the Scriptures, Chrysostom delivered homilies on separate sections or verses of Scripture, festal discourses, orations in commemoration of apostles and martyrs, and discourses on special occasions. Among the last are eight homilies Against the Jews (against Judaizing tendencies in the church at Antioch), twelve homilies Against the Anomœans (Arians), and especially the celebrated twenty and one homilies On the Statues, which called forth his highest oratorical powers.<sup>2</sup> He delivered the homilies on the Statues at Antioch in 387 during a season of extraordinary public excitement, when the people, oppressed by excessive taxation, rose in rebellion, tore down the statues of the emperor Theodosius I., the deceased empress Flacilla, and the princes Arcadius and Honorius, dragged them through the streets, and so provoked the wrath of the emperor that he threatened to destroy the city—a calamity which was avoided by the intercession of bishop Flavian.

The other works of Chrysostom are his youthful treatise on the Priesthood already alluded to; a number of doctrinal and moral essays in defence of the Christian faith, and in commendation of celibacy and the nobler forms of monastic life;<sup>3</sup> and two hundred and forty-two letters, nearly all written during his exile between 403 and 407. The most important of the letters are two addressed to the Roman bishop Innocent I.,

<sup>1</sup> A beautiful edition of the Homilies on the Pauline Epistles in Greek (but without the Latin version) has been recently published in connection with the Oxford Library of the Fathers under the title: *S. Joannis Chrysostomi interpretatio omnium Epistolarum Paulinarum per homilias facta*, Oxon. 1849-'52, 4 vols. The English translation has already been noticed.

<sup>2</sup> The *Homiliæ xii contra Anomœans de incomprehensibili Dei natura*, and the *Orationes viii adversus Judæos* are in the first, the *Homiliæ xxi ad populum Antiochenum, de statu*, and the six *Orationes de fato et providentia*, in the second volume of the Bened. edition. The Homilies on the Statues are translated into English in the Oxford Library of the Fathers, 1842, 1 volume.

<sup>3</sup> *Ad Theodorum lapsu*; *Adversus oppugnatores vitæ monasticæ*; *Comparatio regis et monachi*; *De compunctione cordis*; *De virginitate*; *Ad viduam juniorem*, etc.,—all in the first volume of the Bened. edition together with the *vi Libri de Sacerdotio*; also in Lomler's selection of Chrys. *Opera præstantissima*.

with his reply, and seventeen long letters to his friend Olympias, a pious widow and deaconess. They all breathe a noble Christian spirit, not desiring to be recalled from exile, convinced that there is but one misfortune,—departure from the path of piety and virtue, and filled with cordial friendship, faithful care for all the interests of the church, and a calm and cheerful looking forward to the glories of heaven.<sup>1</sup>

The so-called Liturgy of Chrysostom, which is still in use in the Greek and Russian churches, has been already noticed in the proper place.<sup>2</sup>

Among the pupils and admirers of Chrysostom we mention as deserving of special notice two abbots of the first half of the fifth century: the elder NILUS OF SINAI, who retired with his son from one of the highest civil stations of the empire to the contemplative solitude of Mount Sinai, while his wife and daughter entered a convent of Egypt;<sup>3</sup> and ISIDORE OF PELUSIUM, or PELUSIOTA, a native of Alexandria, who presided over a convent not far from the mouth of the Nile, and sympathized with Cyril against Nestorius, but warned him against his violent passions.<sup>4</sup> They are among the worthiest representatives of ancient monasticism, and, in a large number of letters and exegetical and ascetic treatises, they discuss, with learning, piety, judgment, and moderation, nearly all the theological and practical questions of their age.

<sup>1</sup> The Epistles are in tom. iii. The *Epistolæ ad Olympiadem*, and *ad Innocentium* are also included in Lomler's selection (pp. 165–252). On Olympias, compare above, § 52, and especially Tillemont, tom. xi. pp. 416–440.

<sup>2</sup> See above, § 99.

<sup>3</sup> Comp. S. P. N. NILI abbatis opera omnia, variorum curis, nempe Leonis Allatii, Petri Possini, etc., edita, nunc primum in unum collecta et ordinata, accurate J. P. Migne, Par. 1860, 1 volume. (Patrol. Gr. tom. 79.)

<sup>4</sup> Comp. S. ISIDORI PELUSIOTÆ *Epistolarum libri v*, ed. *Possinus* (Jesuit), republished by Migne, Par. 1860. (Patrol. Gr. tom. 78, including the dissertation of H. AG. NIEMEYER: *De Isid. Pel. vita, scriptis et doctrina*, Hal. 1825.) It is not certain that Isidore was a pupil of Chrysostom, but he frequently mentions him with respect, and was evidently well acquainted with his writings. See the dissertation of Niemeyer, in Migne's ed. p. 15 sq.



§ 171. *Cyril of Alexandria.*

- I. S. CYRILLUS, Alex. archiepis.: Opera omnia, Gr. et Lat., cura et studio *Joan. Auberti*. Lutetia, 1638, 6 vols. in 7 fol. The same edition with considerable additions by *J. P. Migne*, Petit-Montrouge, 1859, in 10 vols. (Patrol. Gr. tom. lxxviii.-lxxvii.). Comp. *Angelo Mai's* Nova Bibliotheca Patrum, tom. ii. pp. 1-498 (Rom. 1844), and tom. iii. (Rom. 1845), where several writings of Cyril are printed for the first time, viz.: De incarnatione Domini; Explanatio in Lucam; Homiliae; Excerpta; Fragments of Commentaries on the Psalms, and the Pauline and Catholic Epistles. (These additional works are incorporated in Migne's edition.) CYRILLI Commentarii in Lucæ Evangelium quæ supersunt, Syriace, e manuscriptis apud museum Britannicum editit *Rob. Payns Smith*, Oxonii, 1858. The same also in an English version with valuable notes by *R. P. Smith*, Oxford, 1859, in 2 vols.
- II. Scattered notices of Cyril in SOCRATES, MARIUS MERCATOR, and the Acts of the ecumenical councils of EPHESUS and CHALCEDON. TILLEMONT: Tom. xiv. 267-676, and notes, pp. 747-795. CELLIER: Tom. xiii. 241 sqq. ACTA SANCTORUM: Jan. 28, tom. ii. A. BUTLER: Jan. 28. FABRICIUS: Biblioth. Gr. ed. Harless, vol. ix. p. 446 sqq. (The Vita of the Bollandists and the Noticia literaria of Fabricius are also reprinted in Migne's edition of Cyril, tom. i. pp. 1-90.) SCHROÖKER Theil xviii. 813-854. Comp. also the Prefaces of ANGELO MAI to tom. ii. of the Nova Bibl. Patrum, and of R. P. SMITH to his translation of Cyril's Commentary on Luke.

While the lives and labors of most of the fathers of the church continually inspire our admiration and devotion, CYRIL OF ALEXANDRIA makes an extremely unpleasant, or at least an extremely equivocal, impression. He exhibits to us a man making theology and orthodoxy the instruments of his passions.

Cyrillus became patriarch of Alexandria about the year 412. He trod in the footsteps of his predecessor and uncle, the notorious Theophilus, who had deposed the noble Chrysostom and procured his banishment; in fact, he exceeded Theophilus in arrogance and violence. He had hardly entered upon his office, when he closed all the churches of the Novatians in Alexandria, and seized their ecclesiastical property. In the year 415 he fell upon the synagogues of the very numerous Jews with armed force, because, under provocation of his

bitter injustice, they had been guilty of a trifling tumult; he put some to death, and drove out the rest, and exposed their property to the excited multitude.

These invasions of the province of the secular power brought him into quarrel and continual contest with Orestes, the imperial governor of Alexandria. He summoned five hundred monks from the Nitrian mountains for his guard, who publicly insulted the governor. One of them, by the name of Ammon, wounded him with a stone, and was thereupon killed by Orestes. But Cyril caused the monk to be buried in state in a church as a holy martyr to religion, and surnamed him Thaumasio, the Admirable; yet he found himself compelled by the universal disgust of cultivated people to let this act be gradually forgotten.

Cyril is also frequently charged with the instigation of the murder of the renowned Hypatia, a friend of Orestes. But in this cruel tragedy he probably had only the indirect part of exciting the passions of the Christian populace which led to it, and of giving them the sanction of his high office.<sup>1</sup>

From his uncle he had learned a strong aversion to Chrysostom, and at the notorious Synodus ad Quercum near Chalcedon, A. D. 403, he voted for his deposition. He therefore obstinately resisted the patriarchs of Constantinople and Antioch, when, shortly after the death of Chrysostom, they felt constrained to repeal his unjust condemnation; and he was not

<sup>1</sup> Comp. above, § 6, p. 67, and Tillemont, tom. xiv. 274-276. The learned, but superstitious and credulous Roman Catholic hagiographer, Alban Butler (*Lives of the Saints*, sub Jan. 28), considers Cyril innocent, and appeals to the silence of Orestes and Socrates. But Socrates, H. E. I. vii. c. 15, expressly says of this revolting murder: *Τοῦτο οὐ μικρὸν μῶμον Κυρίῳ, καὶ τῇ τῶν Ἀλεξανδρέων ἐκκλησίᾳ εἰργάσατο*, and adds that nothing can be so contrary to the spirit of Christianity as the permission of murders and similar acts of violence. Walch, Schröckh, Gibbon, and Milman incline to hold Cyril responsible for the murder of Hypatia, which was perpetrated under the direction of a reader of his church, by the name of Peter. But the evidence is not sufficient. J. C. Robertson (*History of the Christian Church*, i. p. 401) more cautiously says: "That Cyril had any share in this atrocity appears to be an unsupported calumny; but the perpetrators were mostly officers of his church, and had unquestionably drawn encouragement from his earlier proceedings; and his character deservedly suffered in consequence." Similarly W. Bright (*A History of the Church from 318 to 451*, p. 275): "Had there been no onslaught on the synagogues, there would doubtless have been no murder of Hypatia."

even ashamed to compare that holy man to the traitor Judas. Yet he afterwards yielded, at least in appearance, to the urgent remonstrances of Isidore of Pelusium and others, and admitted the name of Chrysostom into the diptychs<sup>1</sup> of his church (419), and so brought the Roman see again into communication with Alexandria.

From the year 428 to his death in 444 his life was interwoven with the Christological controversies. He was the most zealous and the most influential champion of the anti-Nestorian orthodoxy at the third ecumenical council, and scrupled at no measures to annihilate his antagonist. Besides the weapons of theological learning and acumen, he allowed himself also the use of wilful misrepresentation, artifice, violence, instigation of people and monks at Constantinople, and repeated bribery of imperial officers, even of the emperor's sister Pulcheria. By his bribes he loaded the church property at Alexandria with debt, though he left considerable wealth even to his kindred, and adjured his successor, the worthless Dioscurus, with the most solemn religious ceremonies, not to disturb his heirs.<sup>2</sup>

His subsequent exertions for the restoration of peace cannot wipe these stains from his character; for he was forced to those exertions by the power of the opposition. His successor Dioscurus, however (after 444), made him somewhat respectable by inheriting all his passions without his theological ability, and by setting them in motion for the destruction of the peace.

Cyril furnishes a striking proof that orthodoxy and piety are two quite different things, and that zeal for pure doctrine may coëxist with an unchristian spirit. In personal character

<sup>1</sup> That is, the *δίπτυχα νεκρῶν*, or two-leaved tablets, with the list of names of distinguished martyrs and bishops, and other persons of merit, of whom mention was to be made in the prayers of the church. The Greek church has retained the use of diptychs to this day.

<sup>2</sup> Dioscurus, however, did not keep his word, but extorted from the heirs of Cyril immense sums of money, and reduced them to extreme want. So one of Cyril's relatives complained to the council at Chalcedon against Dioscurus (*Acta Conc. Chalced. Act. iii. in Hardouin, tom. ii. 406*). A verification of the proverb: Ill gotten, ill gone.

he unquestionably stands far below his unfortunate antagonist. The judgment of the Catholic historians is bound by the authority of their church, which, in strange blindness, has canonized him.<sup>1</sup> Yet Tillemont feels himself compelled to admit that Cyril did much that is unworthy of a saint.<sup>2</sup> The estimate of Protestant historians has been the more severe. The moderate and honest Chr. W. Franz Walch can hardly give him credit for anything good;<sup>3</sup> and the English historian, H. H. Milman, says he would rather appear before the judgment-seat of Christ, loaded with all the heresies of Nestorius, than with the barbarities of Cyril.<sup>4</sup>

But the faults of his personal character should not blind us to the merits of Cyril as a theologian. He was a man of vigorous and acute mind and extensive learning, and is clearly to be reckoned among the most important dogmatic and polemic divines of the Greek church.<sup>5</sup> Of his contemporaries Theodoret alone was his superior. He was the last considera-

<sup>1</sup> Even the monophysite Copts and Abyssinians celebrate his memory under the abbreviated name of *Kerlos*, and the title of Doctor of the World.

<sup>2</sup> *Mémoires*, xiv. 541: "S. Cyrille est Saint: mais on ne peut pas dire que toutes ses actions soient saintes."

<sup>3</sup> Comp. the description at the close of the fifth volume of his tedious but thorough *Ketzerhistorie*, where, after recounting the faults of Cyril, he exclaims, p. 932: "Can a man read such a character without a shudder? And yet nothing is fabricated here, nothing overdrawn; nothing is done but to collect what is scattered in history. And what is worst: I find nothing at all that can be said in his praise." SCHROCKH (l. c. p. 352), in his prolix and loquacious way, gives an equally unfavorable opinion, and the more extols his antagonist Theodoret (p. 355 sqq.), who was a much more learned and pious man, but in his life-time was persecuted, and after his death condemned as a heretic, while Cyril was pronounced a saint.

<sup>4</sup> *History of Latin Christianity*, vol. i. p. 210: "Cyril of Alexandria, to those who esteem the stern and uncompromising assertion of certain Christian tenets the one paramount Christian virtue, may be the hero, even the saint: but while ambition, intrigue, arrogance, rapacity, and violence, are proscribed as unchristian means—barbarity, persecution, bloodshed, as unholy and unevangelic wickednesses—posterity will condemn the orthodox Cyril as one of the worst heretics against the spirit of the Gospel. Who would not meet the judgment of the divine Redeemer loaded with the errors of Nestorius rather than the barbarities of Cyril?"

<sup>5</sup> BAUR (*Vorlesungen über Dogmengeschichte*, i. ii. p. 47) says of Cyril: "The current estimate of him is not altogether just. As a theologian he must be placed higher than he usually is. He remained true to the spirit of the Alexandrian theology, particularly in his predilection for the allegorical and the mystical, and he had a doctrine consistent with itself."

ble representative of the Alexandrian theology and the Alexandrian church, which, however, was already beginning to degenerate and stiffen; and thus he offsets Theodoret, who is the most learned representative of the Antiochian school. He aimed to be the same to the doctrine of the incarnation and the person of Christ, that his purer and greater predecessor in the see of Alexandria had been to the doctrine of the Trinity a century before. But he overstrained the supranaturalism and mysticism of the Alexandrian theology, and in his zeal for the reality of the incarnation and the unity of the person of Christ, he went to the brink of the monophysite error; even sustaining himself by the words of Athanasius, though not by his spirit, because the Nicene age had not yet fixed beyond all interchange the theological distinction between *οὐσία* and *ὑπόστασις*.<sup>1</sup>

And connected with this is his enthusiastic zeal for the honor of Mary as the virgin-mother of God. In a pathetic and turgid eulogy on Mary, which he delivered at Ephesus during the third ecumenical council, he piles upon her predicates which exceed all biblical limits, and border upon idolatry.\* "Blessed be thou," says he, "O mother of God! Thou rich treasure of the world, inextinguishable lamp, crown of virginity, sceptre of true doctrine, imperishable temple, habitation of Him whom no space can contain, mother and virgin, through whom He is, who comes in the name of the Lord. Blessed be thou, O Mary, who didst hold in thy womb the Infinite One; thou through whom the blessed Trinity is glorified and worshipped, through whom the precious cross is adored throughout the world, through whom heaven rejoices and angels and archangels are glad, through whom the devil is disarmed and banished, through whom the fallen creature is restored to heaven, through whom every

<sup>1</sup> This is not considered by R. P. SMITH, when, in the Preface to his English translation of Cyril's Commentary on the Gospel of Luke from the Syriac (p. v.), he says, that Cyril never transcended Athanasius' doctrine of *μία φύσις τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγος σαρκοποιήσας*, and that both are irreconcilable with the dogma of Chalcedon, which rests upon the Antiochian theology. Comp. §§ 137-140, above.

\* Encomium in sanctam Mariam Deiparam, in tom. v. Pars II. p. 380 (in Migne's ed. tom. x. 1029 sqq.).

believing soul is saved.”<sup>1</sup> These and other extravagant praises are interspersed with polemic thrusts against Nestorius.

Yet Cyril did not, like Augustine, exempt the Virgin from sin or infirmity, but, like Basil, he ascribed to her a serious doubt at the crucifixion concerning the true divinity of Christ, and a shrinking from the cross, similar to that of Peter, when he was scandalized at the bare mention of it, and exclaimed: “Be it far from thee, Lord!” (Matt. xvi. 22.) In commenting on John xix. 25, Cyril says: “The female sex somehow is ever fond of tears,<sup>2</sup> and given to much lamentation. . . . It was the purpose of the holy evangelist to teach, that probably even the mother of the Lord Himself took offence<sup>3</sup> at the unexpected passion; and the death upon the cross, being so very bitter, was near unsettling her from her fitting mind. . . . Doubt not that she admitted<sup>4</sup> some such thoughts as these: I bore Him who is laughed at on the wood; but when He said He was the true Son of the Omnipotent God, perhaps somehow He was mistaken.<sup>5</sup> He said, ‘I am the Life;’ how then has He been crucified? how has He been strangled by the cords of His murderers? how did He not prevail over the plot of His persecutors? why does He not descend from the cross, since He bade Lazarus to return to life, and filled all Judæa with amazement at His miracles? And it is very natural that woman,<sup>6</sup> not knowing the mystery, should slide into some such trains of thought. For we should understand, that the gravity of the circumstances of the Passion was enough to overturn even a self-possessed mind; it is no wonder then if woman<sup>7</sup> slipped into this reasoning.” Cyril thus understands the prophecy of Simeon (Luke ii. 35) concerning the sword, which, he says, “meant the most acute pain, cutting

<sup>1</sup> Δι' ἧς πᾶσα πνοὴ πιστεύουσα σώζεται.

<sup>2</sup> Φιλόδακρυ.

<sup>3</sup> Ἐσκανδάλισε τὸν δόξαν.

<sup>4</sup> Εἰσαδέξατο.

<sup>5</sup> Ἀλλ' οὐδὲν ἑαυτὴν ἀληθεῖν εἶναι λέγων τοῦ πάντων κρατοῦντος Θεοῦ, τάχα τοῦ καὶ διεσφάλλετο.

<sup>6</sup> Or woman's nature, τὸ γύναιον, which is sometimes used in a contemptuous sense, like the German *Weibsbild*.

<sup>7</sup> Τὸ γύναιον.

down the woman's mind into extravagant thoughts. For temptations test the hearts of those who suffer them, and make bare the thoughts which are in them."<sup>1</sup>

Aside from his partisan excesses, he powerfully and successfully represented the important truth of the unity of the person of Christ against the abstract dyophysitism of Nestorius.

For this reason his Christological writings against Nestorius and Theodoret are of the greatest importance to the history of doctrine.<sup>2</sup> Besides these he has left us a valuable apologetic work, composed in the year 433, and dedicated to the emperor Theodosius II., in refutation of the attack of Julian the Apostate upon Christianity;<sup>3</sup> and a doctrinal work on the Trinity and

<sup>1</sup> Cyril, in Joann. lib. xii. (in Migne's ed. of Cyril, vol. vii. col. 661 sq.). Dr. J. H. NEWMAN (in his Letter to Dr. Pusey on his Eirenicon, Lond. 1866, p. 136) escapes the force of the argument of this and similar passages of Basil and Chrysostom against the Roman Mariolatry by the sophistical distinction, that they are not directed against the Virgin's person, so much as against her nature (τὸ γένος), of which the fathers had the low estimation then prevalent, looking upon womankind as the "varium et mutabile semper," and knowing little of that true nobility which is exemplified in the females of the Germanic races, and in those of the old Jewish stock, Miriam, Deborah, Judith, Susanna. But it was to the human nature of Mary, and not to human nature in the abstract, that Cyril, whether right or wrong, attributed a doubt concerning the true divinity of her Son. I think there is no warrant for such a supposition in the accounts of the crucifixion, and the sword in the prophecy of Simeon means anguish rather than doubt. But this makes the antagonism of these Greek fathers with the present Roman Mariology only the more striking. NEWMAN (l. c. p. 144) gratuitously assumes that the tradition of the sinlessness of the holy Virgin was obliterated and confused at Antioch and New Cæsarea by the Arian troubles. But this would apply at best only to Chrysostom and Basil, and not to Cyril of Alexandria, who lived half a century after the defeat of Arianism at the second ecumenical council, and who was the leading champion of the *theotokos* in the Nestorian controversy. Besides there is no clear trace of the doctrine of the sinlessness of Mary before St. Augustine, either among the Greek or Latin fathers; for the tradition of Mary as the second Eve does not necessarily imply that doctrine, and was associated in Irenæus and Tertullian with views similar to those expressed by Basil, Chrysostom, and Cyril. Comp. §§ 81 and 82, above.

<sup>2</sup> *Adversus Nestorii blasphemias contradictionum libri v* (Κατὰ τῶν Νεστορίου δυσφημιῶν πεντάβιβλος ἀντίρρητος); *Explanatio xii capitum a. anathematismorum* (Ἐπίλυσις τῶν δώδεκα κεφαλαίων); *Apologeticus pro xii capitibus adversus Orientales episcopos*; *Contra Theodoretum pro xii capitibus*—all in the last volume of the edition of Aubert (in Migne, in tom. ix.).

<sup>3</sup> *Contra Julianum Apostatam libri x*, tom. vi. in Aubert (tom. ix. in Migne); also in Spanheim's *Opera Juliani*. Comp. §§ 4 and 9, above.

the incarnation.<sup>1</sup> As an expositor he has the virtues and the faults of the arbitrary allegorizing and dogmatizing method of the Alexandrians, and with all his copiousness of thought he affords far less solid profit than Chrysostom or Theodoret. He has left extended commentaries, chiefly in the form of sermons, on the Pentateuch (or rather on the most important sections and the typical significance of the ceremonial law), on Isaiah, on the twelve Minor Prophets, and on the Gospel of John.<sup>2</sup> To these must now be added fragments of expositions of the Psalms, and of some of the Epistles of Paul, first edited by Angelo Mai; and a homiletical commentary on the Gospel of Luke, which likewise has but recently become known, first by fragments in the Greek original, and since complete in a Syriac translation from the manuscripts of a Nitrian monastery.<sup>3</sup> And, finally, the works of Cyril include thirty Easter Homilies (*Homiliæ paschales*), in which, according to Alexandrian custom, he announced the time of Easter; several homilies delivered in Ephesus and elsewhere; and eighty-eight Letters, relating for the most part to the Nestorian controversies.<sup>4</sup>

### § 172. *Ephræm the Syrian.*

- I S. EPHRAËM SYRUS: Opera omnia quæ exstant Græce, Syriace, Latine, in sex tomos distributa, ad MSS. codices Vaticanos aliosque castigata, etc.: nunc primum, sub auspiciis S. P. Clementis XII. Pontificis Max. e Bibl. Vaticana prodeunt. Edited by the celebrated Oriental scholar J. S. Assemani (assisted by his nephew Stephen Evodius Assemani, and the Maronite Jesuit Peter Benedict). Romæ, 1782-'43, 6 vols. fol. (vols. i.-iii. contain the Greek and Latin translations; vols. iv.-vi., which are also separately numbered i.-iii., the Syriac writings with a Latin version). Supplementary works edited by the Mechitarista, Venet. 1836, 4 vols. 8vo. The hymns of Ephræm have also been edited by AUG. HAHN and FR. L. SIEFFERT: *Chrestomathia Syriaca sive S.*

<sup>1</sup> De S. Trinitate, et de incarnatione Unigeniti, etc., tom. v. Pars I. Not to be confounded with the spurious work *De trinitate*, in tom. vi. 1-35, which combats the monothelite heresy, and is therefore of much later origin.

<sup>2</sup> Tom. i.-iv.

<sup>3</sup> By Angelo Mai and R. P. Smith. See the Literature above.

<sup>4</sup> The Homilies and Letters in tom. v. Pars II. ed. Aubert (in Migne, with additions, in tom. x.).



Ephræmi carmina selecta, notis criticis, philologicis, Historicis, et glossario locupletissimo illustr., Lips. 1825; and by DANIEL: *Thes. hymn.* tom. iii. (Lips. 1855) pp. 189-268. German translation by ZINGERLE: *Die heil. Muse der Syrer.* Innsbruck, 1880. English translation by HENRY BURGESS: *Select metrical Hymns and Homilies of Ephr. Syrus,* transl. Lond. 1858, 2 vols. 12mo. Comp. § 114, above.

- II. GREGORIUS NYSS.: *Vita et encomium S. Ephr. Syr.* (in *Opera Greg.* ed. Paris. 1615, tom. ii. pp. 1027-1048; or in Migne's ed. of *Greg.* tom. iii. 819-850, and in *Ephr. Op.* tom. i.). The *Vita per Metaphrastem*; several anonymous biographies; the *Testimonia veterum* and *Judicia recentiorum*; the *Dissertation de rebus gestis, scriptis, editionibusque Ephr. Syr., etc.*, all in the first volume, and the *Acta Ephræmi Syriacæ auctore anonymo*, in the sixth volume, of Assemani's edition of the *Opera Ephr.* JEROME: *Cat. vir. ill.* c. 115. SOZOMEN: *H. E.* iii. c. 16; vi. 34. THEODORET: *H. E.* iv. 29. *ACTA SANCTORUM* for Febr. i. (Antw. 1658), pp. 67-78. BUTLER: *The Lives of the Saints*, sub July 9. W. CAVE: *Lives of the Fathers, &c.* Vol. iii. 404-412 (Oxford ed. of 1840). FABRICIUS: *Bibl. Gr.* (reprinted in Assemani's ed. of the *Opera* i. lxiii. sqq.). LINGERKE: *De Ephræmo Syro S. Scripturæ interprete*, Hal. 1828; *De Ephr. arte hermeneutica*, Regiom. 1831. ALSLEBEN: *Das Leben des h. Ephräm.* Berlin, 1853. E. RÖDIGER: *Art. Ephräm in Herzog's Encykl.* vol. iv. (1855), p. 85 ff.

Before we leave the Oriental fathers, we must give a sketch of EPHRÆM or EPHRAÏM,<sup>1</sup> the most distinguished divine, orator, and poet, of the ancient Syrian church. He is called "the pillar of the church," "the teacher," "the prophet, of the Syrians," and as a hymn-writer "the guitar of the Holy Ghost." His life was at an early date interwoven with miraculous legends, and it is impossible to sift the truth from pious fiction.

He was born of heathen parents in Mesopotamia (either at Edessa or at Nisibis) in the beginning of the fourth century, and was expelled from home by his father, a priest of the god Abnîl, for his leaning to Christianity.<sup>2</sup> He went to the venerated bishop and confessor Jacob of Nisibis, who instructed and probably also baptized him, took him to the council of Nicæa in 325, and employed him as teacher. He soon

<sup>1</sup> The Greeks spell his name Ἐφραίμ, the Latins Ephræm.

<sup>2</sup> This is the account of the Syriac *Acta Ephræmi*, in the sixth volume of the *Opera*, p. xxiii sqq. But according to another account, which is followed by Butler and Cave, his parents were Christians, and dedicated him to God from the cradle

acquired great celebrity by his sacred learning, his zealous orthodoxy, and his ascetic piety. In 363, after the cession of Nisibis to the Persians, he withdrew to Roman territory, and settled in Edessa, which about that time became the chief seat of Christian learning in Syria.<sup>1</sup> He lived a hermit in a cavern near the city, and spent his time in ascetic exercises, in reading, writing, and preaching to the monks and the people with great effect. He acquired complete mastery over his naturally violent temper, he denied himself all pleasures, and slept on the bare ground. He opposed the remnants of idolatry in the surrounding country, and defended the Nicene orthodoxy against all classes of heretics. He made a journey to Egypt, where he spent several years among the hermits. He also visited, by divine admonition, Basil the Great at Cæsarea, who ordained him deacon. Basil held him in the highest esteem, and afterwards sent two of his pupils to Edessa to ordain him bishop; but Ephræm, in order to escape the responsible office, behaved like a fool, and the messengers returned with the report that he was out of his mind. Basil told them that the folly was on their side, and Ephræm was a man full of divine wisdom.

Shortly before his death, when the city of Edessa was visited by a severe famine, Ephræm quitted his solitary cell and preached a powerful sermon against the rich for permitting the poor to die around them, and told them that their wealth would ruin their soul, unless they made good use of it. The rich men felt the rebuke, and intrusted him with the distribution of their goods. Ephræm fitted up about three hundred beds, and himself attended to the sufferers, whether they were foreigners or natives, till the calamity was at an end. Then he returned to his cell, and a few days after, about the year 379, he expired, soon following his friend Basil.

Ephræm, says Sozomen, attained no higher clerical degree than that of deacon, but his attainments in virtue rendered

<sup>1</sup> On the early history of Christianity in Edessa, compare W. CUNNINGHAM: *Ancient Syrian Documents relative to the earliest Establishment of Christianity in Edessa and the neighboring Countries, from the Year after our Lord's Ascension to the Beginning of the Fourth Century.* Lond. 1866.

him equal in reputation to those who rose to the highest sacerdotal dignity, while his holy life and erudition made him an object of universal admiration. He left many disciples who were zealously attached to his doctrines. The most celebrated of them were Abbas, Zenobius, Abraham, Maras, and Simeon, whom the Syrians regard as the glory of their country.<sup>1</sup>

Ephræm was an uncommonly prolific author. His fertility was prophetically revealed to him in his early years by the vision of a vine which grew from the root of his tongue, spreading in every direction to the ends of the earth, and was loaded with new and heavier clusters the more it was plucked. His writings consist of commentaries on the Scriptures, homilies, ascetic tracts, and sacred poetry. The commentaries and hymns, or metrical prose, are preserved in the Syriac original, and have an independent philological value for Oriental scholars. The other writings exist only in Greek, Latin, and Armenian translations. Excellent Greek translations were known and extensively read so early as the time of Chrysostom and Jerome. His works furnish no clear evidence of his knowledge of the Greek language; some writers assert his acquaintance with Greek, others deny it.<sup>2</sup>

His commentaries extended over the whole Bible, "from the book of creation to the last book of grace," as Gregory of Nyssa says. We have his commentaries on the historical and prophetic books of the Old Testament and the Book of Job in Syriac, and his commentaries on the Epistles of Paul in an Armenian translation.<sup>3</sup> They have been but little used thus far by commentators. He does not interpret the text from the

<sup>1</sup> Sozomen, H. E. iii. 16. CAVY (L. c. iii. 409) says of him: "He had all the virtues that can render a man great and excellent, and this that crowned all the rest, that he would not know it, nor cared to hear of it; being desirous, as Nysseus tells us, οὐ δοκεῖν, ἀλλ' εἶναι χρηστός, not to seem, but to be really good."

<sup>2</sup> Sozomen and Theodoret expressly say that Ephræm was not acquainted with the Greek language, but used the Syriac "as a medium for reflecting the rays of divine grace." According to the legend he was miraculously endowed with the knowledge of the Greek on his visit to Basil, who was in like manner inspired to greet him in Syriac.

<sup>3</sup> Opera, tom. iv. and v., or vol. i. and ii. of the Opera Syr., and the supplements of the Mechitarists.

original Hebrew, but from the old Syriac translation, the Peshito.<sup>1</sup>

His sermons and homilies, of which, according to Photius, he composed more than a thousand, are partly expository, partly polemical, against Jews, heathen, and heretics.<sup>2</sup> They evince a considerable degree of popular eloquence; they are full of pathos, exclamations, apostrophes, antitheses, illustrations, severe rebuke, and sweet comfort, according to the subject; but also full of exaggerations, bombast, prolixity, and the superstitions of his age, such as the over-estimate of ascetic virtue, and excessive veneration of the Virgin Mary, the saints, and relics.<sup>3</sup> Some of his sermons were publicly read after the Bible lesson in many Oriental and even Occidental churches.<sup>4</sup>

His hymns were intended to counteract the influence of the heretical views of Bardesanes and his son Harmonius, which spread widely by means of popular Syrian songs. "When Ephræm perceived," says Sozomen, "that the Syrians were charmed with the elegant diction and melodious versification of Harmonius, he became apprehensive, lest they should imbibe the same opinions; and therefore, although he was ignorant of Greek learning, he applied himself to the study of the metres of Harmonius, and composed similar poems in accordance with the doctrines of the church, and sacred hymns in praise of holy men. From that period the Syrians sang the odes of Ephræm, according to the method indicated by Harmonius." Theodoret gives a similar account, and says, that the hymns of Ephræm combined harmony and melody with piety, and subserved all the purposes of valuable and efficacious

<sup>1</sup> He refers, however, occasionally to the original, as, for instance, ad Gen. i. 1: "Interjecta particula *quæ*, quæ in Hebraico textu hac loco legitur, idem valet, quod Syriacus articulus *◌*." (Opera, vi. 116.) But such references prove no more than a superficial knowledge of Hebrew.

<sup>2</sup> Opera, tom. i. ii. iii. and iv. Compare Photius, Bibl. cod. 196.

<sup>3</sup> There is even a prayer to the holy Virgin (in Latin only) in his Works, tom. iii. p. 577; if it be genuine; for there are no other clear traces of such prayers before the fifth century. Mary is there addressed as "immaculata . . . atque ab omni corde ac labe peccati alienissima, virgo Dei sponsa, ac Domina nostra," etc.

<sup>4</sup> Hieron. De script. eccl. c. 115.

medicine against the heretical hymns of Harmonius. It is reported that he wrote no less than three hundred thousand verses.<sup>1</sup> But, with the exception of his commentaries, all his Syriac works are written in verse, i. e., in lines of an equal number of syllables, and with occasional rhyme and assonance, though without regular metre.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Sozomen, iii. 16: *τριακοσίας μυριάδας ἔκαστον*,—*ἔκστη* and *στίχοι* is equivalent to verses or lines. Origen says of the Book of Job that it contains nearly 10,000 *ἔκστη*.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. RÖDIGER, in Herzog's Encycl. vol. iv. p. 89, and the *Observationes prosodicae* of HAHN and SLEFFERT in their *Chrestomathia Syriaca*.

## II.—THE LATIN FATHERS.

### § 173. *Lactantius.*

- I. **LACTANTIUS**, Lucius Cæcilius Firmianus: Opera. First edition in venerabili monasterio Sublacensi, 1485. (Brunet: "Livre précieux, qui est en même temps la première édition de Lactance, et le premier ouvrage impr. en Italie avec date.") Later editions by *J. L. Brünemann*, Lips. 1789; *Le Brun* and *N. Lenglet Du Fresnoy*, Par. 1748, 2 vols. 4to; *F. E. a S. Xaverio*, Rom. 1754-'9, and *Migne*, Par. 1844, in 2 vols. A convenient manual edition by *O. Fridol. Fritzsche*, in Gersdorf's *Bibliotheca Patrum ecclesiast. selecta*, Lips. 1842, vol. x. and xi.
- II. The introductory essays to the editions. **JEROME**: Cat. vir. illustr. c. 80. Notices in **DUPIN**, **CEILLIER**, **CAVE** (vol. iii. pp. 878-884), **SCHÖNEMANN** (*Biblioth. Patr. Lat.* i. 177 sqq.), &c. **MÖHLER**: *Patrologie*, i. pp. 917-938. On the Christology of Lactantius, comp. **DORNER**: *Entwicklungsgeschichte der Lehre von der Person Christi*. Th. i. p. 761 ff.

**FIRMIANUS LACTANTIUS** stands among the Latin fathers, like **Eusebius** among the Greek, on the border between the second period and the third, and unites in his reminiscences the personal experience of both the persecution and the victory of the church in the Roman empire; yet in his theological views he belongs rather to the ante-Nicene age.

According to his own confession he sprang from heathen parents. He was probably, as some have inferred from his name, a native of Firmum (Fermo) in Italy; he studied in the school of the rhetorician and apologist **Arnobius** of Sicca, and on this account has been taken by some for an African; he made himself known by a poetical work called *Symposion*, a collection of a hundred riddles in hexameters for table amusement; and he was called to Nicomedia by **Dioclesian** to teach Latin eloquence. But as this city was occupied mostly by Greeks, he had few hearers, and devoted himself to author

ship.<sup>1</sup> In his manhood, probably shortly before or during the persecution under Dioclesian, he embraced Christianity; he was witness of the cruel scenes of that persecution, though not himself a sufferer in it; and he wrote in defence of the hated and reviled religion.

Constantine subsequently (after 312) brought him to his court in Gaul, and committed to him the education of his son Crispus, whom the emperor caused to be executed in 326. At court he lived very simply, and withstood the temptations of luxury and avarice. He is said to have died in the imperial residence at Treves at a great age, about the year 330.

Jerome calls Lactantius the most learned man of his time.<sup>2</sup> His writings certainly give evidence of varied and thorough knowledge, of fine rhetorical culture, and particularly of eminent power of statement in clear, pure, and elegant style. In this last respect he surpasses almost all the Latin fathers, except Jerome, and has not unjustly been called the Christian Cicero.<sup>3</sup> His is the famous derivation of the word *religion* from *religare*, defining it as the reunion of man with God, reconciliation; answering to the nature of Christianity, and including the three ideas of an original unity, a separation by sin, and a restoration of the unity again.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> He says of his heathen life, *Inst. div. i. 1*, that he trained youth by his rhetoric "non ad virtutem, sed plane ad argutam malitiam."

<sup>2</sup> *Catal. c. 80*: "Lact. vir omnium suo tempore eruditissimus." In *Ep. 58 ad Paulinum* (ed. Vall.), c. 10, he gives the following just view of him: "Lact. quasi quidam fluvius eloquentiæ Tullianæ, utinam tam nostra affirmare potuisset, quam facile aliena destruxit." O. FRIEDOL. FRITZSCHE, in the *Præfatio* of his edition of his *Opera*, thus estimates him: "Firm. Lactantius, qui Ciceronis felicissimus exstitit imitator, non solum sermonis castitate et elegantia orationisque flumine, sed, quæ erat summa eruditione, rerum etiam copia et varietate inter reliquos ecclesiæ latine scriptores maxime eminebat, eoque factum est, ut, quamvis doctrinam ejus non satis esse sanam viros pios haud lateret, nunquam tamen prorsus negligenteretur."

<sup>3</sup> Or, as Jerome, *l. c.*, calls him: "Fluvius eloquentiæ Tullianæ."

<sup>4</sup> *Instit. div. l. iv. cap. 28* (vol. i. p. 223, ed. Fritzsche): "Hoc vinculo pietatis obstricti Deo et religati sumus; unde ipsa religio nomen accepit, non ut Cicero interpretatus est, a relegendò." Cicero says, *De natura deorum*, *li. 28*: "Qui omnia quæ ad cultum deorum pertinerent, diligenter retractarent et tamquam relegerent, *religiosi* dicti sunt ex *relegendò*, ut elegantes ex eligendo, itemque ex diligendo diligentes." This derivation is not impossible, since we have *legio* from *legere*, and several nouns ending in *io* from verbs of the third conjugation, as *regio*, *contagio*,

But he is far more the rhetorician than the philosopher or theologian, and, as Jerome observes, has greater skill in the refutation of error than in the establishment of truth. The doctrinal matter of his writings, as in the case of his preceptor Arnobius, is very vague and unsatisfactory, and he does not belong to the narrower circle of the fathers, the authoritative teachers of the church. Pope Gelasius counted his works among the apocrypha, i. e., writings not ecclesiastically received.

Notwithstanding this, his *Institutes*, on account of their elegant style, have been favorite reading, and are said to have appeared in more than a hundred editions. His mistakes and errors in the exposition of points of Christian doctrine do not amount to heresies, but are mostly due to the crude and unsettled state of the church doctrine at the time. In the doctrine of sin he borders upon Manichæism. In anthropology and soteriology he follows the synergism which, until Augustine, was almost universal. In the doctrine of the Trinity he was, like most of the ante-Nicene fathers, subordinationist. He taught a *duplex nativitas* of Christ, one at the creation, and one at the incarnation. Christ went forth from God at the creation, as a word from the mouth, yet hypostatically.<sup>1</sup>

His most important work is his *Divine Institutes*, a comprehensive refutation of heathenism and defence of Christianity, designed to make Christianity better known among the cultivated classes, and to commend it by scholarship and attractive style.<sup>2</sup> He seems to have begun the work during the Dio-

*oblivio*. But the derivation of Lactantius gives a more correct and profound idea of religion, and etymologically it is equally admissible; for although *religare* would rather yield the noun *religatio*, yet we have *optio* from *optare*, *rebellio* from *rebellare*, *internecio* from *internecare*, &c. Augustine (*Retract.* i. 13), Jerome (*Ad Amos*, c. 9), and the majority of Christian divines have adopted the definition of Lactantius.

<sup>1</sup> According to a statement of Jerome (*Ep.* 41 ad Pammach. et Ocean.) he denied the personality of the Holy Ghost.

<sup>2</sup> *Institutionum divinarum libri vii.* The title was chosen with reference to the *Institutiones juris civilis* (l. 1). The several books then bear the following superscriptions: 1. *De falsa religione*; 2. *De origine erroris*; 3. *De falsa sapientia*; 4. *De vera sapientia*; 5. *De justitia*; 6. *De vero cultu*; 7. *De vita beata*. Lactantius himself made an abstract of it under the title: *Epitome ad Pentadium fratrem*, in *Fritzsche*, *Par.* ii. pp. 114–171.



clesianic persecution, but afterwards to have enlarged and improved it about the year 321; for he dedicated it to the emperor, whom he celebrates as the first Christian prince.<sup>1</sup>

To the same apologetic purpose was his work *De morte, et mortibus, persecutorum*, which is of some importance to the external history of the church.<sup>2</sup> It describes with minute knowledge, but in vehement tone, the cruel persecutions of the Christians from Nero to Dioclesian, Galerius, and Maximinus (314), and the divine judgments on the persecutors, who were compelled to become involuntary witnesses to the indestructible power of Christianity.

In his book *De officio Dei*<sup>3</sup> he gives observations on the organization of the human nature, and on the divine wisdom displayed in it.

In the treatise *De ira Dei*<sup>4</sup> he shows that the punitive justice of God necessarily follows from his abhorrence of evil, and is perfectly compatible with his goodness; and he closes with an exhortation to live such a life that God may ever be gracious to us, and that we may never have to fear his wrath.

We have also from Lactantius various *Fragmenta* and *Carmina de Phœnice, de Passione Domini, de resurrectione Domini*, and one hundred *Ænigmata*, each of three hexameters.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> L. l. c. 1: "Quod opus nunc nominis tui auspicio inchoamus, Constantine Imperator maxime, qui primus Romanorum principum, repudiatis erroribus, majestatem Dei singularis ac veri cognovisti et honorasti," &c. This passage, by the way, does not appear in all the codices. Comp. the note in the ed. of Fritzsche, Pars i. p. 3.

<sup>2</sup> In the ed. of Fritzsche, P. ii. pp. 248-286. This work is wanting in the earlier editions, and also in several manuscripts, and is therefore sometimes denied to Lactantius, e. g., by Dom de Nourry, in a learned dissertation on this question, reprinted in the Appendix to the second volume of Migne's edition of Lactantius, p. 839 sqq. But its style, upon the whole, agrees with his; the work entirely suits his time and circumstances; and it is probably the same that Jerome cites under the name *De persecutione*. Jac. Burckhardt, in his monograph on Constantine the Great, 1853, treats this book throughout as an untrustworthy romance, but without proof, and with an obvious aversion to all the fathers, similar to that of Gibbon.

<sup>3</sup> In the ed. of Fritzsche, Pars ii. pp. 172-208.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid. ii. 208-247.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid. ii. p. 286 sqq. Other works of Lactantius, cited by Jerome, are lost.

§ 174. *Hilary of Poitiers.*

- I. S. HILARIUS Pictaviensis: Opera, studio et labore monach. S. Benedicti e congreg. S. Mauri. Paris, 1698, 1 vol. fol. The same ed. enlarged and improved by Scip. Maffei, Verona, 1780, 2 vols. fol. (reprinted in Venice, 1749). An ed. by Fr. Oerthar, Wirosburgi, 1785-'88, 4 vols.; and one by Migne, Petit-Montrouge, 1844-'45, in 2 vols. (Patrol. Lat. tom. ix. and x.).
- II. The Præfatio et Vitæ in the first vol. of the ed. of Maffei, and Migne (tom. i. 125 sqq.). HIERONYMUS: De viris illustr. c. 100. TILLEMONT (tom. vii.); OEUILLER (tom. v.); and BUTLER, sub Jan. 14. KLING, in Herzog's Encykl. vi. 84 ff. On the Christology of Hilary, comp. especially DÖNNER, *Entwicklungsgeschichte*, i. 1087 ff.

HILARY of Poitiers, or Pictaviensis, so named from his birth-place and subsequent bishopric in Southwestern France, and so distinguished from other men of the same name,<sup>1</sup> was especially eminent in the Arian controversies for his steadfast confession and powerful defence of the orthodox faith, and has therefore been styled the "Athanasius of the West."

He was born towards the end of the third century, and embraced Christianity in mature age, with his wife and his daughter Apra.<sup>2</sup> He found in the Holy Scriptures the solution of the riddle of life, which he had sought in vain in the writings of the philosophers. In the year 350 he became bishop of his native city, and immediately took a very decided stand against Arianism, which was at that time devastating the Gallic church. For this he was banished by Constantius to Phrygia in Asia Minor, where Arianism ruled. Here, between 356 and 361, he wrote his twelve books on the Trinity, the main work of his life.<sup>3</sup> He was recalled to Gaul, then banished again, and spent the last years of his life in rural retirement till his death in 368.

We have from him, besides the theological work already mentioned, several smaller polemic works against Arianism,

<sup>1</sup> As Hilarius Arelatensis († 449), celebrated for his contest with pope Leo I.

<sup>2</sup> We have from him an *Epistola ad Apram* (or Abram in other manuscripts), *filiam suam*, written in 358, in tom. II. 549 (ed. Migne). He sent to her his famous morning hymn: "*Lucis largitor splendide*."

<sup>3</sup> *De trinitate libri xii.* (tom. I. 26-472, ed. Migne).

viz., On Synods, or the Faith of the Orientals (358); fragments of a history of the Synod of Ariminum and Seleucia; a tract against the Arian emperor Constantius, and one against the Arian bishop Auxentius of Milan. He wrote also Commentaries on the Psalms (incomplete), and the Gospel of Matthew, which are partly a free translation of Origen,<sup>1</sup> and some original hymns, which place him next to Ambrose among the lyric poets of the ancient church.

Hilary was a man of thorough biblical knowledge, theological depth and acuteness, and earnest, efficient piety. He had schooled himself in the works of Origen and Athanasius, but was at the same time an independent thinker and investigator. His language is often obscure and heavy, but earnest and strong, recalling Tertullian. He had to reproduce the profound thoughts of Athanasius and other Greek fathers in the Latin language, which is far less adapted to speculation than the copious, versatile, finely-shaded Greek. The incarnation of God was to him, as it was to Athanasius, the centre of theology and of the Christian life. He had an effective hand in the development of the dogma of the consubstantiality of the Son with the Father, and the dogma of the person of Christ. In this he was specially eminent for his fine use of the Gospel of John. But he could not get clear of subordinationism, nor call the Holy Ghost downright God. His Pneumatology, as well as his anthropology and soteriology, was, like that of all the fathers before Augustine, comparatively crude. In Christology he saw farther and deeper than many of his contemporaries. He made the distinction clear between the divine and the human in Christ, and yet held firmly to the unity of His person. He supposes a threefold birth of the Son of God: the eternal generation in the bosom of the Father, to whom the Son is equal in essence and glory; the incarnation, the humiliation of Himself to the form of a servant from the free impulse of love; and the birth of the Son of God out of

<sup>1</sup> Jerome (*De viris illustr.* c. 100) says of his Commentary on the Psalms: "In quo opere imitatus Origenem, nonnulla etiam de suo addidit," and of the Commentary on Matthew and the tract on John: "Quos de Græco Origenis ad sensum transtulit."

the Son of Man in the resurrection, the transfiguration of the form of a servant into the form of God, at once showing forth again the full glory of God, and realizing the idea of humanity.<sup>1</sup>

§ 175. *Ambrose.*

- I. S. AMBROSIVS Mediolanensis episcopus: Opera ad manuscriptos codices Vaticanos, Gallicanos, Belgicos, &c., emendata, studio et labore monachorum ord. S. Benedicti e congreg. S. Mauri (*Jac. du Friche et Nic. de Nourry*). Paris. 1686-'90, 2 vols. fol. This edition was reprinted at Venice, 1748-'51, in 4 vols. fol., and in 1781 in 8 vols. 4to, and by Abbé Migne in his *Patrol.*, Petit-Montrouge, 1848, 2 tom. in 4 Parts with some additions. The *Libri tres de officiis*, and the *Hexaëmeron* of Ambrose have also been frequently published separately. A convenient edition of both is included in *Gerardorf's* *Bibliotheca Patrum Latinorum selecta*, vols. viii. and ix. Lips. 1839. His hymns are found also in *Daniel's* *Thesaurus hymnolog.* tom. i. p. 12 sqq.
- II. PAULINUS (deacon of Milan and secretary of Ambrose): *Vita S. Ambrosii* (written by request of St. Augustine, derived from personal knowledge, from Marcella, sister of Ambrose, and several friends). The *Vita* of an anonymous writer, in Greek and Latin, in the Bened. ed. of the Opera. Both in the Appendix to tom. ii. ed. Benedictinæ. BENEDICTINI EDITORES: *Vita Ambrosii ex ejus potissimum scriptis collecta et secundum chronologiæ ordinem digesta*, in the Bened. ed., in the Appendix to tom. ii., and in Migne's reprint, tom. i. (very thorough and instructive). Comp. also the *Selecta veterum testimonia de S. Ambr.* in the same edition. The biographies of HERMANT (1678), TILLEMONT (tom. x. pp. 78-306), VAGLIANO (*Sommario degli archiviscovi di Milano*), BUTLER (sub Dec. 7), SCHÖCKH, BÖHRINGER, J. P. SILBERT (*Das Leben des heiligen Ambrosius*, Wien, 1841).

AMBROSE, son of the governor (*præfectus*) of Gaul, which was one of the three great dioceses of the Western empire, was born at Treves (Treviri) about 340, educated at Rome for the highest civil offices, and after greatly distinguishing himself as a rhetorician, was elected imperial president (*prætor*) of

<sup>1</sup> KLING says, l. c. p. 94: "Hilary holds a most important place in the development of Christology, and his massive analysis contains fruitful germs which in the succeeding centuries have been only in part developed; profound and comprehensive thoughts, the stimulating and fertilizing power of which reaches down even into our own time; nor need our time be ashamed to learn from this ancient master, as well as from other teachers of that age."

Upper Italy: whereupon Probus, prefect of Italy, gave him the remarkable advice, afterwards interpreted as an involuntary prophecy: "Go, and act not the judge, but the bishop." He administered this office with justice and mildness, enjoying universal esteem.

The episcopal chair of Milan, the second capital of Italy, and frequently the residence of the emperors, was at that time occupied by the Cappadocian, Auxentius, the head of the Arian party in the West. Soon after the arrival of Ambrose, Auxentius died. A division then arose among the people in the choice of a successor, and a dangerous riot threatened. The governor considered it his duty to allay the storm. But while he was yet speaking to the people, the voice of a child suddenly rang out: "Let Ambrose be bishop!" It seemed a voice of God, and Arians and Catholics cried, Amen.

Ambrose was at that time a catechumen, and therefore not even baptized. He was terrified, and seized all possible, and even most eccentric, means to escape the responsible office. He was obliged to submit, was baptized, and eight days afterwards, in 374, was consecrated bishop of Milan. His friend, Basil the Great of Cæsarea, was delighted that God had chosen such a man to so important a post, who counted noble birth, wealth, and eloquence loss, that he might win Christ.

From this time forward Ambrose lived wholly for the church, and became one of the greatest bishops of ancient Christendom, full of Roman dignity, energy, and administrative wisdom, and of the unction of the Holy Ghost. He began his work with the sale of his great estates and of his gold and silver for the benefit of the poor; reserving an allowance for his pious sister Marcella or Marcellina, who in early youth had taken the vow of virginity. With voluntary poverty he associated the strictest regimen of the ascetic spirit of his time; accepted no invitations to banquets; took dinner only on Sunday, Saturday, and the festivals of celebrated martyrs; devoted the greater part of the night to prayer, to the hitherto necessarily neglected study of the Scriptures and the Greek fathers, and to theological writing; preached every Sunday, and often in the week; was accessible to all, most accessible to the poor

and needy; and administered his spiritual oversight, particularly his instruction of catechumens, with the greatest fidelity.

The Arians he vigorously opposed by word and act, and contributed to the victory of the Nicene faith in the West. In this work he behaved himself towards the Arian empress Justina with rare boldness, dignity, and consistency, in the heroic spirit of an Athanasius. The court demanded the cession of a catholic church for the use of the Arians, and claimed for them equal rights with the orthodox. But Ambrose asserted the entire independence of the church towards the state, and by perseverance came off victorious in the end. It was his maxim, that the emperor is *in* the church, but not *over* the church, and therefore has no right to the church buildings.

He did not meddle in secular matters, nor ask favor of the magistracy, except when he could put in a word of intercession for the unfortunate and for persons condemned to death in those despotic times. This enabled him to act the more independently in his spiritual office, as a real prince of the church, fearless even of the emperor himself. Thus he declared to the usurper Maximus, who desired church fellowship, that he would never admit him, unless he should do sincere penance for the murder of the emperor Gratian.

When the Roman prefect, Symmachus, the noblest and most eloquent advocate of the decaying heathenism of his time, implored the emperor Valentinian, in an apology for the altar of Victory which stood in the hall of the Roman senate, to tolerate the worship and the sanctuaries of the ancient gods, Ambrose met him with an admirable reply, and prevented the granting of his request.

The most imposing appearance of our bishop against the temporal power was in his dealing with Theodosius, when this truly great, but passionate and despotic, emperor, enraged at Thessalonica for a riot, had caused many thousand innocent persons to be put to death with the guilty, and Ambrose, interesting himself for the unfortunate, like a Nathan with David, demanded repentance of the emperor, and refused him the holy communion. "How wilt thou," said he to him in

the vestibule of the church, "how wilt thou lift up in prayer the hands still dripping with the blood of the murdered? How wilt thou receive with such hands the most holy body of the Lord? How wilt thou bring to thy mouth his precious blood? Get thee away, and dare not to heap crime upon crime." When Theodosius appealed to David's murder and adultery, the bishop answered: "Well, if thou hast imitated David in sin, imitate him also in repentance."<sup>1</sup> The emperor actually submitted to ecclesiastical discipline, made public confession of his sin, and did not receive absolution until he had issued a law that the sentence of death should never be executed till thirty days after it was pronounced.<sup>2</sup>

From this time the relation between Ambrose and Theodosius continued undisturbed, and the emperor is reported to have said afterwards with reference to the bishop, that he had recently found the first man who told him the truth, and that he knew only one man who was worthy to be bishop. He died in the arms of Ambrose at Milan in 395. The bishop delivered his funeral oration in which he tells, to his honor, that on his dying bed he was more concerned for the condition of the church than for himself, and says to the soldiers: "The faith of Theodosius was your victory; let your truth and faith be the strength of his sons. Where unbelief is, there is blindness, but where fidelity is, there is the host of angels."

Two years after this, Ambrose himself was fatally sick. All Milan was in terror. When he was urged to pray God for a lengthening of his life, he answered: "I have so lived among you that I cannot be ashamed to live longer; but neither do I fear to die; for we have a good Lord." During his sickness he had miraculous intimations and heard heavenly voices, and he himself related that Christ appeared to him smiling. His

<sup>1</sup> "Qui sequutus es errantem, sequere corrigentem." Paulinus, Vita Ambr. c. 24.

<sup>2</sup> Paulinus, l. c. c. 24: "Quod ubi audivit clementissimus imperator, ita suscepit, ut publicam pœnitentiam non abhorreret," &c. Ambrose himself says in his funeral oration on Theodosius: "Stravit omne, quo utebatur insigne regium, deflevit in ecclesia publice peccatum suum, neque ullus postea dies fuit, quo non illum dole-ret errorem." The main fact is beyond doubt; but the details are not all reliable, and may have been exaggerated for hierarchical ends.

notary and biographer, the deacon Paulinus, who adorns his life throughout with miraculous incidents, tells us:<sup>1</sup> "Not long before his death, while he was dictating to me his exposition of the Forty-third Psalm, I saw upon his head a flame in the form of a small shield; hereupon his face became white as snow, and not till some time after did it return to its natural color." In the night of Good Friday, on Saturday, the 4th of April, 397, he died, at the age of fifty-seven years, having first spent several hours, with his hands crossed, in uninterrupted prayer. Even Jews and pagans lamented his death. On the night of Easter following many were baptized in the church where his body was exposed. Not a few of the newly baptized children saw him seated in the episcopal chair with a shining star upon his head. Even after his death he wrought miracles in many places, in proof of which Paulinus gives his own experience, credible persons, and documents.

Ambrose, like Cyprian before him, and Leo I. after him, was greatest in administration. As bishop he towered above the contemporary popes. As a theologian and author he is only a star of the second magnitude among the church fathers, yielding by far to Jerome and Augustine. We have from this distinguished prelate several exegetical, doctrinal, and ascetic works, besides homilies, orations, and letters. In exegesis he adopts the allegorical method entire, and yields little substantial information. The most important among his exegetical works are his homilies on the history of creation (*Hexaëmeron*, written 389), an Exposition of twenty-one Psalms (390-397), and a Commentary on the Gospel of Luke (386).<sup>2</sup> The Commentary on the Pauline Epistles (*Ambrosiaster* so called or *Pseudo-Ambrosius*) which found its way among his works, is of uncertain authorship, perhaps the work of the Roman deacon Hilary under pope Damasus, and resembles in

<sup>1</sup> *Vita Ambr.* c. 42.

<sup>2</sup> The exegetical works are in tom. i. of the *Bened. ed.*, excepting *Ambrosiaster*, which is in the Appendix to tom. ii. Jerome had a contemptuous opinion of his exegetical writings. In the preface to his translation of the thirty-nine Homilies of Origen on Luke, he compares the superficial and meagre Commentary of Ambrose on Luke to the croaking of a raven which makes sport of the colors of all other birds, and yet is itself dark all over (*totus ipse tenebrosus*). Against this attack



many respects the commentaries of Pelagius. Among his doctrinal writings his five books *On Faith*, three *On the Holy Ghost*, and six *On the Sacraments* (catechetical sermons on baptism, confirmation, and the eucharist) are worthy of mention. Among his ethical writings the work *On Duties* is the most important. It resembles in form the well-known work of Cicero on the same subject, and reproduces it in a Christian spirit. It is a collection of rules of living for the clergy, and is the first attempt at a Christian doctrine of morals, though without systematic method.<sup>1</sup> Besides this he composed several ascetic essays: Three books on *Virgins*; *On Virginity*; *On the Institution of the Virgin*; *On Exhortation to Virginity*; *On the Fall of a Consecrated Virgin*, &c., which contributed much to the spread of celibacy and monastic piety. Of his ninety-one *Epistles* several are of considerable historical interest.

In his exegesis and in his theology, especially in the doctrine of the incarnation and the Trinity, Ambrose is entirely dependent on the Greek fathers; most on Basil, whose *Hexaëmeron* he almost slavishly copied. In anthropology he forms the transition from the Oriental doctrine to the system of Augustine, whose teacher and forerunner he was. He is most peculiar in his ethics, which he has set forth in his three books *De Officiis*. As a pulpit orator he possessed great dignity, force, and unction, and made a deep impression on Augustine,

Rufinus felt it his duty to defend Ambrose, "qui non solum Mediolanensis ecclesiæ, verum etiam omnium ecclesiarum columna quædam et turris inexpugnabilis fuit" (*Invect. ii. adv. Hieron.*). In his *Catalogus vir. illustr.* c. 124, Jerome disposes of Ambrose with the following frosty and equivocal notice: "Ambrosius Mediolanensis episcopus, usque in presentem diem scribit, de quo, quia superest, meum iudicium subtraham, ne in alterutram partem aut adulatio in me reprehendatur, aut veritas." In his *Epistles*, however, he occasionally makes favorable allusion to his ascetic writings which fall in with his own taste. Augustine, from a sense of gratitude to his spiritual father, always mentions his name with respect. The passages of Augustine on Ambrose are collected in the *Selecta veterum testimonia* at the beginning of the first tome of the *Bened. edition*. But the unfavorable notice of Jerome quoted above is omitted there.

<sup>1</sup> *De officiis ministrorum*, in three books (in the *Bened. ed. tom. ii. f. 1-142*). Comp. F. HASSLER: *Ueber das Verhältniss der heidnischen und christlichen Ethik auf Grund einer Vergleichung des ciceronianischen Buches De officiis mit dem gleichnamigen des heiligen Ambrosius*, München, 1866.

to whose conversion he contributed a considerable share. Many mothers forbade their daughters to hear him lest he should induce them to lead a life of celibacy.

Ambrose has also a very important place in the history of worship, and did immortal service for the music and poetry of the church, as in a former section we have seen.<sup>1</sup> Here again, as in theology and exegesis, he brought over the treasures of the Greek church into the Latin. The church of Milan uses to this day a peculiar liturgy which is called after him the *ritus Ambrosianus*.

### § 176. *Jerome as a Divine and Scholar.*

Comp. the Literature at § 41; and especially the excellent monograph (which has since reached us) of Prof. OTTO ZÖCKLER: *Hieronymus. Sein Leben und Wirken aus seinen Schriften dargestellt.* Gotha, 1865.

Having already sketched the life and character of Jerome (born about 340, died in 419) in connection with the history of monasticism, we limit ourselves here to his theological and literary labors, in which he did his chief service to the church, and has gained the greatest credit to himself.

JEROME is the most learned, the most eloquent, and the most interesting author among the Latin fathers. He had by nature a burning thirst for knowledge,<sup>2</sup> and continued unweariedly teaching, and learning, and writing, to the end of a very long life.<sup>3</sup> His was one of those intellectual natures, to which reading and study are as indispensable as daily bread. He

<sup>1</sup> PAULINUS, in *Vita Ambr.* c. 13, relates: "Hoc in tempore primum antiphonæ hymni ac vigiliæ in ecclesia Mediolanensi celebrari coeperunt. Cuius celebritatis devotio usque in hodiernum diem non solum in eadem ecclesia, verum per omnes pene occidentis provincias manet."

<sup>2</sup> As he himself says, *Ep.* 84, c. 3 (*Opera*, ed. Vallarsi, tom. i. 523): "Dum essem juvenis, miro discendi ferebar ardore, nec juxta quorundam præsumptionem ipse me docui."

<sup>3</sup> SULPICIUS SEVERUS, who describes from his own observation the learned seclusion of the aged Jerome at Bethlehem, where, however, he was much interrupted and stimulated by the visits of Christians from all parts of the world, says of him, in *Dial.* i. 4: "Totus semper in lectione, totus in libris est; non die, non nocte requiescit; aut legit aliquid semper, aut scribit," &c.

could not live without books. He accordingly collected, by great sacrifices, a library for that time very considerable and costly, which accompanied him on his journeys.<sup>1</sup> He further availed himself of the oral instruction of great church teachers, like Apollinaris the Elder in Laodicea, Gregory Nazianzen in Constantinople, and Didymus of Alexandria, and was not ashamed to become an inquiring pupil in his mature age. His principle in studying was, in his own words: "To read the ancients, to test everything, to hold fast the good, and never to depart from the catholic faith."<sup>2</sup>

Besides the passion for knowledge, which is the mother of learning, he possessed a remarkable memory, a keen understanding, quick and sound judgment, an ardent temperament, a lively imagination, sparkling wit, and brilliant power of expression. He was a master in all the arts and artifices of rhetoric and dialectics. He, far more than Lactantius, deserves the name of the Christian Cicero, though he is inferior to Lactantius in classic purity, and was not free from the faulty taste of his time. Tertullian had, indeed, long before applied the Roman language as the organ of Christian theology; Cyprian, Lactantius, Hilary, and Ambrose, had gone further on the same path; and Augustine has enriched the Christian literature with a greater number of pregnant sentences than all the other fathers together. Nevertheless Jerome is the chief former of the Latin church language, for which his Vulgate did a decisive and standard service similar to that of Luther's translation of the Bible for German literature, and that of the authorized English Protestant version for English.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> He confesses that the purchase of the numerous works of Origen had exhausted his purse, Ep. 84, c. 8 (tom. i. 525): "*Legi, inquam, legi Origenem, et, si in legendo crimen est, fateor; et nostrum marsupium Alexandrinæ chartæ evacuarunt.*" When he saw, and was permitted to use, the library of Pamphilus in Cæsarea, with all the works of Origen, he thought he possessed more than the riches of Croesus (*De viris illustr.* c. 75).

<sup>2</sup> "*Meum propositum est, antiquos legere, probare singula, retinere quas bona sunt, et a fide catholica numquam recedere.*"

<sup>3</sup> OZANAM (*Histoire de la civilisation chrét. au 5. siècle*, ii. 100) calls Jerome: "*Le maître de la prose chrétienne pour tous les siècles suivants.*" ZÖCKLER says (*l. c.* p. 323): "*As Cicero raised the language of his time to the classic grade, and cast it for all times in a model form, so, of the Western church fathers, Jerome was*

His scholarship embraced the Latin, Greek, and Hebrew languages and literature; while even Augustine had but imperfect knowledge of the Greek, and none at all of the Hebrew. Jerome was familiar with the Latin classics, especially with Cicero, Virgil, and Horace;<sup>1</sup> and even after his famous anti-Ciceronian vision (which transformed him from a more or less secular scholar into a Christian ascetic and hermit) he could not entirely cease to read over the favorite authors of his youth, or at least to quote them from his faithful memory; thus subjecting himself to the charge of inconsistency, and even of perjury, from Rufinus.<sup>2</sup> Equally accurate was his knowledge of the literature of the church. Of the Latin fathers he particularly admired Tertullian for his powerful genius and vigorous style, though he could not forgive him his Montanism; after him Cyprian, Lactantius, Hilary, and Ambrose. In the Greek classics he was less at home; yet he shows acquaintance with Hesiod, Sophocles, Herodotus, Demosthenes, Aristotle, Theophrastus, and Galen. But in the Greek fathers he was well read, especially in Origen, Eusebius, Didymus, and Gregory Nazianzen; less in Irenæus, Athanasius, Basil, and other doctrinal writers.

the one to *make the Latin language Christian, and Christian theology Latin.*" Erasmus placed him as an author in several respects even above Cicero.

<sup>1</sup> Virgil is quoted in the Letters of Jerome some fifty times, in his other works much more frequently; Horace, in the Letters, some twenty times; of the prose writers Cicero more than all, next to him Varro, Sallust, Quintilian, Seneca, Suetonius, and Pliny. Virgil, however, is viewed by Jerome, and by Augustine, who likewise admired him greatly, simply as a great poet, and not, as he afterwards came to be considered in the Latin church, especially through the influence of Dante's *Divina Commedia*, as a divine and prophet of heathenism.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. § 41 above, and ZÖCKLER, l. c. p. 45 ff., 156, and 325. It is certain that Jerome, after that dream of about 374, almost entirely suspended and even abhorred the study of the classics for fifteen years (comp. the Preface to his Commentary on the Galatians, written a. 388, Opera, tom. vii. 486, ed. Vallarsi), but that afterwards at Bethlehem he instructed the monks in *grammaticis et humanioribus* (Rufinus, Apol. ii. 8), and inserted quotations from the classics in his later writings, although mostly as reminiscences of his former reading ("quasi antiqui per nebulam somnii recordamur," as he says in the preface above referred to), and with the obvious intent of making profane literature subservient to the Bible (comp. his *Epistola* xxi. ad Damasum, cap. 18). Both Jerome and Rufinus permitted themselves to be carried by passion to exaggerated assertions at the expense of truth.

The Hebrew he learned with great labor in his mature years; first from a converted but anonymous Jew, during his five years' ascetic seclusion in the Syrian desert of Chalcis (374-379); afterwards in Bethlehem (about 385) from the Palestinian Rabbi Bar-Anina, who, through fear of the Jews, visited him by night.<sup>1</sup> This exposed him to the foolish rumor among bigoted opponents, that he preferred Judaism to Christianity, and betrayed Christ in preference to the new "Barabbas."<sup>2</sup> He afterwards, in translating the Old Testament, brought other Jewish scholars to his aid, who cost him dear. He also inspired several of his admiring female pupils, like St. Paula and her daughter Eustochium, with enthusiasm for the study of the sacred language of the old covenant, and brought them on so far that they could sing with him the Hebrew Psalms in praise of the Lord. He lamented the injurious influence of these studies on his style, since "the rattling sound of the Hebrew soiled all the elegance and beauty of Latin speech."<sup>3</sup> Yet, on the other hand, he was by the same means preserved from flying off into hollow and turgid ornamentations, from which his earlier writings, such as his letters to Heliodorus and Innocentius, are not altogether free. Though his knowledge of Hebrew was defective, it was much greater than that of Origen, Epiphanius, and Ephræm Syrus, the only other fathers besides himself who understood Hebrew at all; and it is the more noticeable, when we consider the want of grammatical and lexicographical helps and of the Masoretic punctuation.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Ep. 84 ad Pammach. et Ocean. c. 8 (tom. i. 524, ed. Vallarsi): "Veni rursum Jerosolymam et Bethlehem. Quo labore, quo pretio Baraninam nocturnum habui præceptorem! Timebat enim Judæos, et mihi alterum exhibebat Nicodemum."

<sup>2</sup> So Rufinus wrested the name, with reference to Mark xv. 7. Comp. Rufinus, Apol. or Invect. ii. 12, and the answer of Jerome to these calumnies, in the Apol. adv. libros Ruf. l. i. c. 18 (tom. ii. 469).

<sup>3</sup> In the Preface to his Commentary on the Epistle to the Galatians: "Omnes sermonis elegantiam et Latini eloquii venustatem stridor Hebræicæ lectionis sordidavit." This, however, is to be understood cum grano salis.

<sup>4</sup> That there were at that time as yet no vowel-points or other diacritical signs in writing Hebrew words, has been proved against Buxtorf by L. Capellus, Morinus, and Clericus, and among modern Oriental scholars, especially by Hupfeld (*Studien und Kritiken*, 1830, p. 549 ff.). Comp. ZÖCKLER, l. c. p. 345 f.

Jerome, who unfortunately was not free from vanity prided himself not a little upon his learning, and boasted against his opponent Rufinus, that he was "a philosopher, a rhetorician, a grammarian, a dialectician, a Hebrew, a Greek, a Latin, three-tongued," that is, master of the three principal languages of the then civilized world.<sup>1</sup>

All these manifold and rare gifts and attainments made him an extremely influential and useful teacher of the church; for he brought them all into the service of an earnest and energetic, though monkishly eccentric piety. They gave him superior access to the sense of the Holy Scriptures, which continued to be his daily study to extreme old age, and stood far higher in his esteem than all the classics. His writings are imbued with Bible knowledge, and strewn with Bible quotations.

But with all this he was not free from faults as glaring as his virtues are shining, which disturb our due esteem and admiration. He lacked depth of mind and character, delicate sense of truth, and firm, strong convictions. He allowed himself inconsistencies of every kind, especially in his treatment of Origen, and, through solicitude for his own reputation for orthodoxy, he was unjust to that great teacher, to whom he owed so much. He was very impulsive in temperament, and too much followed momentary, changing impressions. Many of his works were thrown off with great haste and little consideration. He was by nature an extremely vain, ambitious, and passionate man, and he never succeeded in fully overcoming these evil forces. He could not bear censure. Even his later polemic writings are full of envy, hatred, and anger. In

<sup>1</sup> *Apol. adv. Ruf. lib. iii. c. 6* (tom. ii. 587). His claim to be a philosopher may be questioned. In the same place he calls "papa" Epiphanius *πεντάλωττος*, a man of five tongues, because besides the three chief languages he also understood the Syriac and the Egyptian or Coptic. But his knowledge of the languages was far inferior to that of Jerome. Augustine regarded Jerome as the most learned man among all mortals. "Quod Hieronymus nescivit," he said, "nullus mortalium unquam scivit." Comp. also the enthusiastic praise of Erasmus, quoted § 41, p. 206, who placed him far above all the fathers; while Luther acknowledged his learning indeed, but could not bear his monastic spirit, and judged him harshly and unjustly. Comp. *M. Lutheri Colloquia*, ed. H. Bindseil, 1863, tom. iii. 185, 149, 193; ii. 340, 349, 357.

nis correspondence with Augustine, with all assurances of respect, he everywhere gives that father to feel his own superiority as a comprehensive scholar, and in one place tells him that he never had taken the trouble to read his writings, excepting his Soliloquies and "some commentaries on the Psalms." He indulged in rhetorical exaggerations and unjust inferences, which violated the laws of truth and honesty; and he supported himself in this, with a characteristic reference to the *sophist* Gorgias, by the equivocal distinction between the gymnastic or polemic style and the didactic.<sup>1</sup> From his master Cicero he had also learned the vicious rhetorical arts of bombast, declamatory fiction, and applause-seeking effects, which are unworthy of a Christian theologian, and which invite the reproach of the divine judge in that vision: "Thou liest! thou art a Ciceronian, not a Christian; for where thy treasure is, there thy heart is also."

### § 177. *The Works of Jerome.*

The writings of Jerome, which fill eleven folios in the edition of Vallarsi, may be divided into exegetical, historical, polemic doctrinal, and polemic ethical works, and epistles.<sup>2</sup>

I. The EXEGETICAL works stand at the head.

Among these the Vulgata,<sup>3</sup> or Latin version of the whole

<sup>1</sup> Between γυμναστικῶς scribere and δογματικῶς scribere. Ep. 48 ad Pammachium pro libris contra Jovinianum, cap. 13.

<sup>2</sup> The Vallarsi edition, Verona, 1734-'42, and with improvements, Venet. 1766-'72, is much more complete and accurate than the Benedictine or Maurine edition of Martianay and Pouget, in 5 vols. 1706, although this far surpassed the older editions of Erasmus, and Marianus Victorius. The edition of Migne, Paris (Petit-Montrouge), 1845-'46, also in 11 volumes (tom. xxii.-xxx. of the Patrologia Lat.), notwithstanding the boastful title, is only an uncritical reprint of the edition of Vallarsi with unessential changes in the order of arrangement; the Vitæ Hieronymi and the Testimonia de Hieronymo being transferred from the eleventh to the first volume, which is more convenient. Vallarsi, a presbyter of Verona, was assisted in his work by Scipio Maffei, and others. I have mostly used his edition, especially in the Epistles.

<sup>3</sup> The name *Vulgata*, sc. *editio, κοινή κειμένη*, i. e., the received text of the Bible, was a customary designation of the Septuagint, as also of the Latin Itala (frequently so used in Jerome and Augustine), sometimes used in the bad sense of

Bible, Old Testament and New, is by far the most important and valuable, and constitutes alone an immortal service.

a vulgar, corrupt text as distinct from the original. The council of Trent sanctioned the use of the term in the honorable sense for Jerome's version of the Bible. With the same right Luther's version might be called the German, King James' version the English Vulgate.

<sup>1</sup> This is now pretty generally acknowledged. We add a few of the most weighty testimonies. LUTHER, who bore a real aversion to Jerome on account of his fanatical devotion to monkery, still, in view of the invaluable assistance he received from the Vulgate in his own similar work, does him the justice to say: "St. Jerome has personally done more and greater in translation than any one man will imitate." ZÖCKLER, l. c. p. 183, thinks: "The Vulgate is unquestionably the most important and most meritorious achievement of our author, the ripest fruit of his laborious studies, not only in the department of Hebrew, in which he leaves all other ecclesiastical authors of antiquity far behind, but also in that of Greek and of biblical criticism and exegesis in general, in which he excels at least all, even the greatest, of the Western fathers." O. F. FARRZSCHER (in Herzog's Encykl. vol. xvii. p. 435): "The severe judgment respecting the labor of Jerome softened with time, and, in fact, so swung to the opposite, that he was regarded as preserved from error by the guidance of the Holy Ghost. This certainly cannot be admitted, for the defects are palpably many and various. Yet criticism must acknowledge that Jerome performed a truly important service for his age; that he first gave the Old Testament to the West, and in a measure also the New, in a substantially pure form; put a stop, provisionally, to the confusion of the Bible's text; and as a translator gave, on the whole, the true sense. He very properly aimed to be *interpreter*, not *paraphrastes*, but in the great dissimilarity between the Hebrew and Latin idiom, he encountered the danger of slavish literalness. This he has in general avoided, and has been able to keep a certain mean between too great strictness and too great freedom, so that the language, though everywhere showing the Hebrew tinge, would not at all offend, but rather favor, the reader of *that day*. Yet it may be said that Jerome could have done still better. It was not that reverence, caution, restrained him; to avoid offence, he adhered as closely as possible to the current version, especially in the New Testament. He sometimes let false translations stand, when they seemed harmless ("quod non nocebat, mutare nolimus"), and probably followed popular usage in respect to phraseology; so that the style is not perfectly uniform. Finally, he did not always give himself due time, but worked rapidly. This is particularly true in the Apocrypha, of which, however, he had a very low estimate. Some parts he left entirely untouched, others he translated or revised very hastily." Comp. also the opinion of the English scholar, B. F. WESROOTT, in W. Smith's Dictionary of the Bible, vol. iii. pp. 1696 and 1714 f., who says among other things: "When every allowance has been made for the rudeness of the original Latin, and the haste of Jerome's revision, it can scarcely be denied that the Vulgate is not only the most venerable but also the most precious monument of Latin Christianity. For ten centuries it preserved in Western Europe a text of Holy Scripture far purer than that which was current in the Byzantine church; and at the revival of Greek learning, guided the way towards a revision of the late



Above all his contemporaries, and above all his successors down to the sixteenth century, Jerome, by his linguistic knowledge, his Oriental travel, and his entire culture, was best fitted, and, in fact, the only man, to undertake and successfully execute so gigantic a task, and a task which just then, with the approaching separation of East and West, and the decay of the knowledge of the original languages of the Bible in Latin Christendom, was of the highest necessity. Here, as so often in history, we plainly discern the hand of divine Providence. Jerome began the work during his second residence in Rome (382-385), at the suggestion of pope Damasus, who deserves much more credit for that suggestion than for his hymns. 'He at first intended only a revision of the Itala, the old Latin version of the Bible which came down from the second century, and the text of which had fallen into inextricable confusion through the negligence of transcribers and the caprice of correctors.' He finished the translation at Bethlehem, in the year 405, after twenty years of toil. He translated first the Gospels; then the rest of the New Testament, next the Psalter (which he wrought over twice, in Rome and in Bethlehem<sup>2</sup>), and then, in irregular succession, the historical, prophetic, and poetical books, and in part the Apocrypha, which, however, he placed decidedly below the canonical books. By this "labor pius, sed periculosa præsumentio," as he called it, he subjected himself to all kinds of enmity from ignorance and blind aversion to change, and was abused as a disturber of the peace and falsifier of the Scripture;<sup>3</sup> but from other sources he received much encouragement. The New Testament and

Greek text, in which the best biblical critics have followed the steps of Bentley, with ever-deepening conviction of the supreme importance of the coincidence of the earliest Greek and Latin authorities."

<sup>1</sup> Jerome says of the Itala: "Tot sunt exemplaria pæne quot codices," and frequently complains of the "varietas" and "vitiositas" of the Codices Latini, which he charges partly upon the original translators, partly upon presumptuous revisers, partly upon negligent transcribers. Comp. especially his Præfat. in Evang. ad Damasum.

<sup>2</sup> Both versions continued in use, the former as the *Psalterium Romanum*, the other as the *Psalterium Gallicanum*, like the two English versions of the Psalms in the worship of the Anglican church.

<sup>3</sup> Falsarius, sacrilegus, et corruptor Scripturæ.

the Psalter were circulated and used in the church long before the completion of the whole. Augustine, for example, was using the New Testament of Jerome, and urged him strongly to translate the Old Testament, but to translate it from the Septuagint.<sup>1</sup> Gradually the whole version made its way on its own merits, without authoritative enforcement, and was used in the West, at first together with the Itala, and after about the ninth century alone.

The Vulgate takes the first place among the Bible-versions of the ancient church. It exerted the same influence upon Latin Christendom as the Septuagint upon Greek, and it is directly or indirectly the mother of most of the earlier versions in the European vernaculars.<sup>2</sup> It is made immediately from the original languages, though with the use of all accessible helps, and is as much superior to the Itala as Luther's Bible to the older German versions. From the present stage of biblical philology and exegesis the Vulgate can be charged, indeed, with innumerable faults, inaccuracies, inconsistencies, and arbitrary dealing, in particulars;<sup>3</sup> but notwithstanding these, it deserves, as a whole, the highest praise for the boldness with which it went back from the half-deified Septuagint directly to the original Hebrew; for its union of fidelity and freedom; and for the dignity, clearness, and gracefulness of its style. Accordingly, after the extinction of the knowledge of Greek, it very naturally became the *clerical* Bible of Western Christendom, and so continued to be, till the genius of the Reformation in Germany, Switzerland, Holland, and England, returning to the original text, and still further penetrating the

<sup>1</sup> Augustine feared, from the displacement of the Septuagint, which he regarded as apostolically sanctioned, and as inspired, a division between the Greek and Latin church, but yielded afterwards, in part at least, to the correct view of Jerome, and rectified in his *Retractions* several false translations in his former works. Wesscott, in his scholarly article on the Vulgate (in Smith's *Dictionary of the Bible*, iii. 702), makes the remark: "There are few more touching instances of humility than that of the young Augustine bending himself in entire submission before the contemptuous and impatient reproof of the veteran scholar."

<sup>2</sup> Excepting the Gothic version, which is older than Jerome, and the Slavonic, which comes down from Methodius and Cyril.

<sup>3</sup> It has been so censured long ago by Le Clerc in his *Questiones Hieronymianæ* 1719.

spirit of the Scriptures, though with the continual help of the Vulgate, produced a number of *popular* Bibles, which were the same to the evangelical laity that the Vulgate had been for many centuries to the catholic clergy. This high place the Vulgate holds even to this day in the Roman church, where it is unwarrantably and perniciously placed on an equality with the original.<sup>1</sup>

The Commentaries of Jerome cover Genesis, the Major and Minor Prophets, Ecclesiastes, Job, some of the Psalms,<sup>2</sup> the Gospel of Matthew, and the Epistles to the Galatians, Ephesians, Titus, and Philemon.<sup>3</sup> Besides these he translated the

<sup>1</sup> For particulars respecting the Vulgate, see H. HONY: *De Bibliorum textibus originalibus*, Oxon. 1705; JOH. CLERICUS: *Quæstiones Hieronymianæ*, Amsterd. 1719 (who, provoked by the exaggerated praise of the Benedictine editor, Martianay, subjected the Vulgate to a sharp and penetrating, though in part unjust criticism); LEANDER VAN ESS: *Pragmatisch-kritische Geschichte der Vulgata*, Tüb. 1824; the lengthy article *Vulgata* by O. F. FRITZSCHE in Herzog's *Theol. Encycl.* vol. xvii. pp. 422-460; an article on the same subject by B. F. WESTCOTT in W. Smith's *Dictionary of the Bible*, 1863, vol. iii. pp. 688-718; and ZÖCKLER: *Hieronymus*, pp. 99 ff.; 183 ff.; 343 ff.

The text of the Vulgate, in the course of time, has become as corrupt as the text of the Itala was at the time of Jerome, and it is as much in need of a critical revision from manuscript sources, as the *textus receptus* of the Greek Testament. The authorized editions of SIXTUS V. and CLEMENT XIII. have not accomplished this task. MARTIANAY, in the Benedictine edition of Jerome's work, did more valuable service towards an approximate restoration of the Vulgate in its original form from manuscript sources. Of late the learned Barnabite C. VERCELLONE has commenced such a critical revision in *Varie Lectiones Vulgatæ Latinæ*. Bibliorum editionis, tom. I. (Pentat.), Rome, 1860; tom. II. Pars prior (to 1 Regg.), 1862. WESTCOTT, in the article referred to, has made use of the chief results of this work, which may be said to create an epoch in the history of the Vulgate.

<sup>2</sup> His seven treatises on Psalms x.-xvi. (probably translated from Origen), and his brief annotations to all the Psalms (*commentarioli*) are lost, but the pseudo-hieronymianum *breviarium* in Psalms, a poor compilation of later times (*Opera*, vii. 1-588), contains perhaps fragments of these.

<sup>3</sup> *Opera*, tom. iii. iv. v. vi. and vii. Jerome dedicated his commentaries and other writings mostly to those high-born ladies of Rome whom he induced to embrace the ascetic mode of life, as Paula, Eustochium, Marcella, &c. He received much encouragement from them in his labors;—such was the lively theological interest which prevailed in some female circles at the time. He was, however, censured on this account, and defended himself in the Preface to his Commentary on Zephaniah, tom. vi. 671, by referring to Deborah and Huldah, Judith and Esther, Anna, Elizabeth, and Mary, not forgetting the heathen Sappho, Aspasia, Themista, and the Cornelia Gracchorum, as examples of literary women.

Homilies of Origen on Jeremiah and Ezekiel, on the Gospel of Luke, and on the Song of Solomon. Of the last he says: "While Origen in his other writings has surpassed all others, on the Song of Solomon he has surpassed himself."<sup>1</sup>

His best exegetical labors are those on the Prophets (particularly his Isaiah, written A. D. 408-410; his Ezekiel, A. D. 410-415; and his Jeremiah to chap. xxxii., interrupted by his death), and those on the Epistles to the Galatians, Ephesians, and Titus (written in 388), together with his critical Questions (or investigations) on Genesis. But they are not uniformly carried out; many parts are very indifferent, others thrown off with unconscionable carelessness in reliance on his genius and his reading, or dictated to an amanuensis as they came into his head.<sup>2</sup> He not seldom surprises by clear, natural, and conclusive expositions, while just on the difficult passages he wavers, or confines himself to adducing Jewish traditions and the exegetical opinions of the earlier fathers, especially of Origen, Ensebius, Apollinaris, and Didymus, leaving the reader to judge and to choose. His scholarly industry, taste, and skill, however, always afford a certain compensation for the defect of method and consistency, so that his commentaries are, after all, the most instructive we have from the Latin church of that day, not excepting even those of Augustine, which otherwise greatly surpass them in theological depth and spiritual unction. He justly observes in the Preface to his Commentary on Isaiah: "He who does not know the Scriptures, does not know the power and wisdom of God; ignorance of the Bible is ignorance of Christ."<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Pref. in Homil. Orig. in Cantic. Cant. tom. iii. 500. Rufinus, during the Origenistic controversy, did not forget to remind him of this sentence.

<sup>2</sup> He frequently excuses this "dictare quodcumque in buccam venerit," by his want of time and the weakness of his eyes. Comp. Preface to the third book of his Comment. in Ep. ad Galat. (tom. vii. 486). At the close of the brief Preface to the second book of his Commentary on the Ep. to the Ephesians (tom. vii. 586), he says that he often managed to write as many as a thousand lines in one day ("interdum per singulos dies usque ad numerum mille versuum—i. e., here *στίχοι*—pervenire").

<sup>3</sup> "Qui nescit Scripturas, nescit Dei virtutem ejusque sapientiam; ignorantia Scripturarum ignorantia Christi est."

Jerome had the natural talent and the acquired knowledge, to make him the father of grammatico-historical interpretation, upon which all sound study of the Scriptures must proceed. He very rightly felt that the expositor must not put his own fancies into the word of God, but draw out the meaning of that word, and he sometimes finds fault with Origen and the allegorical method for roaming in the wide fields of imagination, and giving out the writer's own thought and fancy for the hidden wisdom of the Scriptures and the church.<sup>1</sup> In this healthful exegetical spirit he excelled all the fathers, except Chrysostom and Theodoret. In the Latin church no others, except the heretical Pelagius (whose short exposition of the Epistles of Paul is incorporated in the works of Jerome), and the unknown Ambrosiaster (whose commentary has found its way among the works of Ambrose), thought like him. But he was far from being consistent; he committed the very fault he censures in Eusebius, who in the superscription of his Commentary on Isaiah promised a historical exposition, but, forgetting the promise, fell into the fashion of Origen. Though he often makes very bold utterances, such as that on the original identity of presbyter and bishop,<sup>2</sup> and even shows traces of a loose view of inspiration,<sup>3</sup> yet he had not the courage, and was too scrupulously concerned for his orthodoxy, to break with the traditional exegesis. He could not resist the impulse to indulge, after giving the historical sense, in fantastic allegorizing, or, as he expresses himself, "to spread the sails of the spiritual understanding."<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Comp. particularly the Preface to the fifth book of his Commentary on Isaiah, and Ep. 58 ad Paulinum, c. 7.

<sup>2</sup> In the Comm. on Tit. i. 5, and elsewhere, e. g., Epist. 69 ad Oceanum, c. 3, and Epist. 146 ad Evangelum, c. 1. Such assertions, which we find also in Ambrosiaster, Chrysostom, and Theodoret, were not disputed at that time, but subsequently they gave rise to violent disputes between Episcopalians and Presbyterians. Comp. my History of the Apostolic Church, § 182, p. 524 f.

<sup>3</sup> He admits, for instance, chronological contradictions, or, at least, inexplicable difficulties in the Gospel history (Ep. 57 ad Pammach. c. 7 and 8), and he even ventures unjustly to censure St. Paul for supposed solecisms, barbarisms, and weak arguments (Ep. 121 ad Alag.; Comment. in Gal. iii. 1; iv. 24; vi. 2; Comment. in Eph. iii. 3, 8, 13; Comment. in Tit. i. 3).

<sup>4</sup> "Spiritualis intelligentie vela pandere," or "spirituale ædificium super historicis

He distinguishes in most cases a double sense of the Scriptures: the literal and the spiritual, or the historical and the allegorical; sometimes, with Origen and the Alexandrians, a triple sense: the historical, the tropological (moral), and the pneumatical (mystical).

The word of God does unquestionably carry in its letter a living and life-giving spirit, and is capable of endless application to all times and circumstances; and here lies the truth in the allegorical method of the ancient church. But the spiritual sense must be derived with tender conscientiousness and self-command from the natural, literal meaning, not brought from without, as another sense beside, or above, or against the literal.

Jerome goes sometimes as far as Origen in the unscrupulous twisting of the letter and the history, and adopts his mischievous principle of entirely rejecting the literal sense whenever it may seem ludicrous or unworthy. For instance: By the Shunamite damsel, the concubine of the aged king David, he understands (imitating Origen's allegorical obliteration of the double crime against Uriah and Bathsheba) the ever-virgin Wisdom of God, so extolled by Solomon;<sup>1</sup> and the earnest controversy between Paul and Peter he alters into a sham fight for the instruction of the Antiochian Christians who were present thus making out of it a deceitful accommodation, over which Augustine (who took just offence at such *patrocinium mendacii*) drew him into an epistolary controversy characteristic of the two men.<sup>2</sup>

fundamentum extruere," or "quasi inter saxa et scopulos" (between Scylla and Charybdis), "sic inter historiam et allegoriam orationis cursum flectere."

<sup>1</sup> Ep. 52 ad Nepotianum, c. 2-4. He objects against the historical construction, that it is absurd, inasmuch as the aged David, then seventy years old, might as well have warmed himself in the arms of Bathsheba, Abigail, and the other wives and concubines still living, considering that Abraham at a still more advanced age was content with his Sarah, Isaac with his Rebecca. The Shunamite, therefore, must be "sapientia quæ numquam senescit" (c. 4, tom. i. 258). Nevertheless, in another place, he understands the same passage literally, *Contra Jovinian. l. i. c. 24* (tom. i. 274), where he mentions this and other sins of David, "non quod sanctis viris aliquid detrahere audeam, sed quod aliud sit in lege versari, aliud in evangelio."

<sup>2</sup> Comp. Jerome's Com. on Gal. ii. 11-14; Aug. Epp. 28, 40, and 82, or Epp. 56, 67, and 116 among the Epistles of Jerome (Opera, i. 300 sqq.; 404 sqq.; 761 sqq.)

It is remarkable that Augustine and Jerome, in the two exegetical questions, on which they corresponded, interchanged sides, and each took the other's point of view. In the dispute on the occurrence in Antioch (Gal. ii. 11-14), Augustine represented the principle of evangelical freedom and love of truth, Jerome the principle of traditional committal to dogma and an equivocal theory of accommodation; while in their dispute on the authority of the Septuagint Jerome held to true progress, Augustine to retrogression and false traditionalism. And each afterwards saw his error, and at least partially gave it up.

In the exposition of the Prophets, Jerome sees too many allusions to the heretics of his time (as Luther finds everywhere allusions to the Papists, fanatics, and sectarians); and, on the other hand, with the zeal he inherited from Origen against all chiliasm, he finds far too little reference to the end of all things in the second coming of our Lord. He limits, for example, even the eschatological discourse of Christ in the twenty-fourth chapter of Matthew, and Paul's prophecy of the man of sin in the second Epistle to the Thessalonians, to the destruction of Jerusalem.

Among the exegetical works in the wider sense belongs the book *On the Interpretation of the Hebrew Names*, an etymological lexicon of the proper names of the Old and New Testaments, useful for its time, but in many respects defective, and now worthless;<sup>1</sup> and a free translation of the *Onomasticon* of Eusebius, a sort of biblical topology in alphabetical order, still valuable to antiquarian scholarship.<sup>2</sup>

After defending for a long time his false interpretation, Jerome gave it up at last, A. D. 415, in his *Dial. contra Pelag.* l. i. c. 22. Augustine, on the other hand, yielded his erroneous preference for a translation of the Old Testament from the Septuagint instead of the original Hebrew, although he continued to entertain an exaggerated estimate of the value of the Septuagint and the very imperfect *Itala*. Besides these two points of dispute the Origenistic errors were a subject of correspondence between these most distinguished fathers of the Latin Church.

<sup>1</sup> *Liber de interpretatione nominum Hebraicorum*, or *De nominibus Hebr.* (Opera, tom. iii. 1-120). CLERICUS, in his *Questiones Hieronymianæ*, severely criticised this book.

<sup>2</sup> *Liber de situ et nominibus locorum Hebraicorum*, usually cited under the title *Eusebii Onomasticon (urbium et locorum S. Scripturæ)*. Opera, tom. iii. 121-290.

II. The HISTORICAL works, some of which we have already elsewhere touched, are important to the history of the fathers and the saints, to Christian literature, and to the history of morals.

First among them is a free Latin reproduction and continuation of the Greek Chronicle of Eusebius; i. e., chronological tables of the most important events of the history of the world and the church to the year 379.<sup>1</sup> Jerome dictated this work quite fugitively during his residence with Gregory Nazianzen in Constantinople (A. D. 380). In spite of its many errors, it formed a very useful and meritorious contribution to Latin literature, and a principal source of the scanty historical information of Western Christendom throughout the middle age. PROSPER AQUITANUS, a friend of Augustine and defender of the doctrines of free grace against the Semi-Pelagians in Gaul, continued the Chronicle to the year 449; later authors brought it down to the middle of the sixth century.

More original is the Catalogue of Illustrious Authors,<sup>2</sup> which Jerome composed in the tenth year of Theodosius (A. D. 392 and 393),<sup>3</sup> at the request of his friend, an officer, Dexter. It is the pioneer in the history of theological literature, and gives, in one hundred and thirty-five chapters, short biographical notices of as many ecclesiastical writers, from the

Comp. CLERICUS: *Eusebii Onomasticon cum versione Hieronymi*, Amstel. 1707, and a modern convenient edition in Greek and Latin by F. LARSON and G. PARTHEY, Berlin, 1862.

<sup>1</sup> Opera, viii. 1-820, including the Greek fragments. There is added also the Chronicle of PROSPER AQUITANUS (pp. 821-856), and the Apparatus, Castigationes et Notæ of ARN. PONTAC. We must mention also the famous separate edition of Jerome's Chronicle and its continuators by JOSEPH SCALIGER: *Thesaurus temporum Eusebii Pamphili, Hieronymi, Prosperi, etc.*, Lugd. Bat. 1606, ed. altera Amstel. 1658. Scaliger and Vallarsi have spent immense industry and acuteness in editing this work made very difficult by the many chronological and other blunders and the corruptions of the text caused by ignorant and careless transcribers. The Chronicle of Eusebius is now known also in an Armenian translation, edited by Angelo Mai, Rome, 1838. The Greek original is lost with the exception of a few fragments of Syncellus.

<sup>2</sup> Liber de illustribus viris, or De scriptoribus ecclesiasticis, frequently quoted by the title Catalogus. See Opera, ed. Vallarsi, tom. ii. 821-956, together with the Greek translation of Pseudo-Sophronius.

<sup>3</sup> This date is given by himself, cap. 135, in which he speaks of his own writings



apostles to Jerome himself, with accounts of their most important works. It was partly designed to refute the charge of ignorance, which Celsus, Porphyry, Julian, and other pagans, made against the Christians. Jerome, at that time, was not yet so violent a heretic-hater, and was quite fair and liberal in his estimate of such men as Origen and Eusebius.<sup>1</sup> But many of his sketches are too short and meagre; even those, for example, of so important men as Cyprian, Athanasius, Basil the Great, Gregory of Nyssa, Epiphanius, Ambrose, and Chrysostom († 407).<sup>2</sup> His junior cotemporary, Augustine, who had at that time already written several philosophical, exegetical, and polemic works, he entirely omits.

The Catalogue was afterwards continued in the same spirit by the Semi-Pelagian GENNADIUS of Marseilles, by ISIDORE of Seville, by ILLDEFONSUS, and by others, into the middle age.

Jerome wrote also biographies of celebrated hermits, PAUL of Thebes (A. D. 375), HILARION, and the imprisoned MALCHUS (A. D. 390), in very graceful and entertaining style, but with many fabulous and superstitious accompaniments, and with extravagant veneration of the monastic life, which he aimed by these writings to promote.<sup>3</sup> They were read at that time as eagerly as novels. These biographies, and several necrological letters in honor of deceased friends, such as Nepotian, Lucinius,

<sup>1</sup> In the very first chapter he says of the Second Epistle of Peter that it was by most rejected as spurious "propter styli cum priore dissonantiam." A thorough investigation, however, leads to a more favorable result as to the genuineness of this Epistle. He admits in his catalogue even heretics, as Tatian, Bardesanes, and Priscillian, also the Jews Philo and Josephus, and the heathen philosopher Seneca.

<sup>2</sup> Of Chrysostom he merely says, cap. 129: "Joannes Antiochenæ ecclesiæ presbyter, Eusebii Emiseni Diodorique sectator, multa componere dicitur, de quibus *repl. iepocbony* tantum legi." But afterwards, during the Origenistic controversies, he translated a passionate libel of Theophilus of Alexandria against Chrysostom, and praised it as a valuable book (comp. Ep. 114 ad Theophilum, written 405). Fragments of this miserable Libellus Theophili contra Joannem Chrysost. are preserved in the Defensio trium capp. l. vi. by Facundus of Hermiane.

<sup>3</sup> Opera, tom. ii. l. 1 sqq. In most of the former editions these Vitæ are wrongly placed among the Epistles. To the same class of writings belongs the translation of the Regula Pachomii. Characteristic is the judgment of Gibbon (ch. xxvii. ad ann. 370): "The stories of Paul, Hilarion, and Malchus by Jerome are admirably told: and the only defect of these pleasing compositions is the want of truth and common sense."

Lea, Blasilla, Paulina, Paula, and Marcella, are masterpieces of rhetorical ascetic hagiography. They introduce the legendary literature of the middle age, with its indiscriminate mixture of history and fable, and its sacrifice of historical truth to popular edification.

III. Of the **POLEMIC DOCTRINAL** and **ETHICAL** works<sup>1</sup> some relate to the Arian controversies, some to the Origenistic, some to the Pelagian. In the first class belongs the Dialogue against the schismatic Luciferians,<sup>2</sup> which Jerome wrote during his desert life in Syria (A. D. 379) on the occasion of the Meletian schism in Antioch; also his translation of the work of Didymus On the Holy Ghost, begun in Rome and finished in Bethlehem. His book Against Bishop John of Jerusalem (A. D. 399), and his Apology to his former friend Rufinus, in three books (A. D. 402-403), are directed against Origenism.<sup>3</sup> In the third class belongs the Dialogue against the Pelagians, in three books (A. D. 415). Other polemic works, Against Helvidius (written in 383), Against Jovinian (A. D. 393), and Against Vigilantius (dictated rapidly in one night in 406), are partly doctrinal, partly ethical in their nature, and mainly devoted to the advocacy of the immaculate virginity of Mary, celibacy, vigils, relic-worship, and the monastic life.

These controversial writings, the contents of which we have already noted in the proper place, do the author, on the whole, little credit, and stand in striking contrast with his fame as

<sup>1</sup> All in the second volume of the editions of Vallarsi (p. 171 sqq.) and Migne (p. 155 sqq.).

<sup>2</sup> *Altercatio Luciferiani et Orthodoxi*, or *Dialogus contra Luciferianos*. The Luciferians had their name from Lucifer, bishop of Calaris in Sardinia (died 371), the head of the strict Athanasian party, who arbitrarily ordained Paulinus bishop of Antioch in opposition to the legitimate Meletius (362), because the latter had been elected by the Arian or Semi-Arian party, although immediately after his ordination he had given in his adhesion to the Nicene faith. Lucifer afterwards fell out with the orthodox and organized a new schismatic party, which adopted Novatian principles of discipline, but in the beginning of the fifth century gradually returned to the bosom of the Catholic church.

<sup>3</sup> Besides these Jerome translated several letters of Epiphanius and Theophilus of Alexandria against the Origenists, which have been incorporated by Vallarsi with the collection of Jerome's Epistles.

one of the principal saints of the Roman church. They show an accurate acquaintance with all the arts of an advocate and all the pugilism of a dialectician, together with boundless vehemence and fanatical zealotism, which scruple over no weapons of wit, mockery, irony, suspicion, and calumny, to annihilate opponents, and which pursue them even after their death.<sup>1</sup> And their contents afford no sufficient compensation for these faults. For Jerome was not an original, profound, systematic, or consistent thinker, and therefore very little fitted for a didactic theologian. In the Arian controversy he would not enter into any discussion of the distinction between *οὐσία* and *ὑπόστασις*, and left this important question to the decision of the Roman bishop Damasus; in the Origenistic controversy he must, in his violent condemnation of all Origenists, contradict his own former view and veneration of Origen as the greatest teacher after the Apostles; and in the Pelagian controversy he was influenced chiefly by personal considerations, and drawn half way to Augustine's side; for while he was always convinced of the universality of sin,<sup>2</sup> in reference to the freedom of the will and predestination he adopted synergistic or Semi-Pelagian views, and afterwards continued in the

<sup>1</sup> Of the dead Jovinian he says (Adv. Vigil. c. 1): "Ille Romanæ ecclesiæ auctoritate damnatus, inter phasides aves et carnes suillas non tam emisit spiritum, quam eructavit." He threatened his former friend Rufinus, whose language he had perverted into a threat to take his life, with a libel suit, and after his death in 410 he wrote in an ignoble sense of triumph (in the Prologue to his Commentary on Ezekiel): "*Scorpius* inter Enceladum et Porphyriionem Trinacriæ humo premitur, et *Hydra* multorum capitum contra nos aliquando sibilare cessavit." From Jerome's polemical writings one would form a most unfavorable opinion of Rufinus. Two divines of Aquileja, Fontanini and Maria de Rubeis, felt it their duty to vindicate his memory against unjust aspersions. Comp. ZÖCKLER, l. c. p. 266 f. Augustine, in a letter to Jerome (Ep. Hieron. 110, c. 10), called it a "magnum et triste miraculum," that the friendship of Jerome and Rufinus should have turned into such enmity, and urged him to reconciliation, but in vain. This change, however, is easily explained, since hatred is only inverted love. Rufinus, it must be remembered, had not spared Jerome, and charged him even with worse than heathen impiety for calling, in hyper-ascetic zeal, Paula, the mother of the nun Eustochium, the "mother-in-law of God" (*socrus Dei*). See his Ep. xxii. c. 20 ad Paulam.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. particularly the passage, Dial. adv. Pelag. l. ii. c. 4 (tom. ii. p. 744).

highest consideration among the Semi-Pelagians down to Erasmus.'

He is equally unsatisfactory as a moralist and practical divine. He had no connected system of moral doctrine, and did not penetrate to the basis and kernel of the Christian life, but moved in the outer circle of asceticism and casuistry. Following the spirit of his time, he found the essence of religion in monastic flight from the world and contempt of the natural ordinances of God, especially of marriage; and, completely reversing sound principles, he advocated even ascetic filth as an external mark of inward purity.<sup>1</sup> Of marriage he had a very low conception, regarding it merely as a necessary evil for the increase of virgins. From the expression of Paul in 1 Cor. vii. 1: "It is good not to touch a woman," he draws the utterly unwarranted inference: "It is therefore bad to touch one; for the only opposite of good is bad;" and he interprets the woe of the Lord upon those that are with child and those that give suck (Matt. xxiv. 19), as a condemnation of pregnancy in general, and of the crying of little children,

<sup>1</sup> Hence it is not accidental, that several writings of Pelagius, his Commentary on the Epistles of Paul (with some emendations), his *Epistola ad Demetriadem de virginitate*, his *Libellus fidei* addressed to pope Innocent, and the *Epistola ad Celantiam matronam de ratione pie vivendi* (which was probably likewise written by him), found their way, by an irony of history, into the writings of Jerome, on a seeming resemblance in spirit and aim.

<sup>2</sup> "Difficile inter epulas servatur pudicitia. Nitens cutis sordidum ostendit animum." So he wrote to two ladies, a mother and her daughter in Gaul, Ep. 117, c. 6 (tom. i. 786). St. Anthony, the patriarch of monks, and other saints of the desert were of the same opinion, who washed themselves but seldom and combed their hair but once in a year, on holy Easter (when they ought to have been eminently holy, that is, according to their notions, eminently slovenly). What a contrast this to our modern principle that cleanliness is next to godliness! We must, however, judge this catholic ascetic cynicism from the stand-point of antiquity. Even SOCRATES, starting from the principle that freedom from need was divine, despised undergarments and shoes, and contented himself with a miserable cloak. Yet he did not neglect cleanliness altogether, and censured his disciple Antisthenes, who ostentatiously wore a dirty and torn cloak, by reminding him: "Friend, vanity peeps out from the holes of thy cloak." Man is by nature lazy and dirty. Industry and cleanliness are the fruit of discipline and civilization. In this respect Europe is in advance of Asia, the Teutonic races in advance of the Latin. The Italians call the English and Americans, soap-wasters. The use of soap and of the razor is a test of modern civilization.

and of all the trouble and fruit of the married life. The disagreeable fact of the marriage of Peter he endeavors to weaken by the groundless assumption that the apostle forsook his wife when he forsook his net, and, besides, that "he must have washed away the stain of his married life by the blood of his martyrdom."<sup>1</sup>

In a letter, otherwise very beautiful and rich, to the young Nepotian,<sup>2</sup> he gives this advice: "Let your lodgings be rarely or never visited by women. You must either ignore alike, or love alike, all the daughters and virgins of Christ. Nay, dwell not under the same roof with them, nor trust their former chastity; you cannot be holier than David, nor wiser than Solomon. Never forget that a woman drove the inhabitants of Paradise out of their possession. In sickness any brother, or your sister, or your mother, can minister to you. In the lack of such relatives, the church herself maintains many aged women, whom you can at the same time remunerate for their nursing with welcome alms. I know some who are well in the body indeed, but sick in mind. It is a dangerous service in any case, that is done to you by one whose face you often see. If in your official duty as a clergyman you must visit a widow or a maiden, never enter her house alone. Take with you only those whose company does you no shame; only some reader, or acolyth, or psalm-singer, whose ornament consists not in clothes, but in good morals, who does not crimp his hair with crimping pins, but shows chastity in his whole bearing. But privately or without witnesses, never put yourself in the presence of a woman."

Such exhortations, however, were quite in the spirit of that age, and were in part founded in Jerome's own bitter experience in his youth, and in the thoroughly corrupt condition of social life in the sinking empire of Rome.

While advocating these ascetic extravagancies Jerome does not neglect to chastise the clergy and the monks for their faults

<sup>1</sup> Compare the work *Against Jovinian*, l. i. c. 7, 10, 12, 13, 15, 16, 26, 33, etc., and several of his ascetic letters. Some of his utterances on the state of matrimony gave offence even to his monastic friends.

<sup>2</sup> Ep. 52 (l. 254 sqq.) *de vita clericorum et monachorum*, c. 5.

with the scourge of cutting satire. And his writings are every where strewn with the pearls of beautiful moral maxims and eloquent exhortations to contempt of the world and godly conduct.<sup>1</sup>

IV. The *Epistles* of Jerome, with all their defects, are uncommonly instructive and interesting, and, in easy flow and elegance of diction, are not inferior to the letters of Cicero. Vallarsi has for the first time put them into chronological order in the first volume of his edition, and has made the former numbering of them (even that of the Benedictine edition) obsolete. He reckons in all a hundred and fifty, including several letters from cotemporaries, such as Epiphanius, Theophilus of Alexandria, Augustine, Damasus, Pammachius, and Rufinus; some of them written directly to Jerome, and some treating of matters in which he was interested. They are addressed to friends like the Roman bishop Damasus, the senator Pammachius, the bishop Paulinus of Nola, Theophilus of Alexandria, Evangelus, Rufinus, Heliodorus, Riparius, Nepotianus, Oceanus, Avitus, Rusticus, Gaudentius, and Augustine, and some to distinguished ascetic women and maidens like Paula, Eustochium, Marcella, Furia, Fabiola, and Demetrias. They treat of almost all questions of philosophy and practical religion, which then agitated the Christian world, and they faithfully reflect the virtues and the faults and the remarkable contrasts of Jerome and of his age.

Orthodox in theology and Christology, Semi-Pelagian in anthropology, Romanizing in the doctrine of the church and tradition, anti-chiliasitic in eschatology, legalistic and ascetic in ethics, a violent fighter of all heresies, a fanatical apologist of all monkish extravagancies,—Jerome was revered throughout the catholic middle age as the patron saint of Christian and ecclesiastical learning, and, next to Augustine, as *maximus doctor ecclesiæ*; but by his enthusiastic love for the Holy Scriptures, his recourse to the original languages, his classic

<sup>1</sup> Comp. a collection of the principal doctrinal and moral sentences of Jerome in ZÖCKLER, p. 429 ff. and p. 458 ff.

translation of the Bible, and his manifold exegetical merits, he also played materially into the hands of the Reformation, and as a scholar and an author still takes the first rank, and as an influential theologian the second (after Augustine), among the Latin fathers; while, as a moral character, he decidedly falls behind many others, like Hilary, Ambrose, and Leo I., and, even according to the standard of Roman asceticism, can only in a very limited sense be regarded as a saint.<sup>1</sup>

### § 178. *Augustine.*

**I. S. AURELI AUGUSTINI** Hipponensis episcopi Opera . . . Post Lovanien-sium theologorum recensionem [which appeared at Antwerp in 1577 in 11 vols.] castigatus [referring to tomus primus, etc.] denuo ad MSS. codd. Gallicanos, etc. Opera et studio monachorum ordinis S. Benedicti e congregatione S. Mauri [*Fr. Delfau, Th. Blampin, P. Coustant, and Ol. Guemié*]. Paris, 1679-1700, xi tom. in 8 fol. vols. The same edition reprinted, with additions, at Antwerp, 1700-1703, 12 parts in 9 fol.; and at Venice, 1729-'84, in xi tom. in 8 fol. (this is the edition from which I have generally quoted; it is not to be confounded with another Venice edition of 1756-'69 in xviii vols. 4to, which is full of printing errors); also at Bassano, 1807, in 18 vols.; by *Gaume fratres*, Paris, 1886-'89, in xi tom. in 22 parts (a very elegant edition); and lastly by *J. P. Migne*, Petit-Montrouge, 1841-'49, in xii tom. (Patrol. Lat. tom. xxxii.-xlvii.). Migne's edition (which I have also used occasionally) gives, in a supplementary volume (tom. xii.), the valuable *Notitia literaria de vita, scriptis et editionibus Aug.* from *SCHÖNEMANN's* *Bibliotheca historico-literaria Patrum Lat.* vol. ii. Lips. 1794, the *Vindiciæ Augustinianæ* of Norisius, and the writings of Augustine first published by Fontanini and Angelo Mai. But a thor-

<sup>1</sup> Comp. the various estimates of Jerome at § 41 (p. 214) above; in *VALLARSI*, *Opera Hier.*, tom. xi. 282-300, and in *ZÖCKLER*, l. c. pp. 465-476. In the preface to his valuable monograph (p. v) *ZÖCKLER* says: "Jerome is chiefly the orator and the scholar among the fathers. His life is essentially neither the life of a monk, nor a priest—for monk and priest he was only by the way—nor that of a saint—for he was no saint at all, at least not in the sense of the Roman church. It is from beginning to end the life of a *scholar*, a life replete with literary studies and all sorts of scholarly enterprises." This judgment we can subscribe only with two qualifications: he was as much a monk as a scholar, and exerted an extraordinary influence on the spread of monasticism in the West; and his reputation as a saint rests precisely on the *Romish* overestimate of asceticism, as distinguished from the evangelical Protestant form of piety.

oughly reliable critical edition of Augustine is still a desideratum. On the controversies relating to the merits of the Bened. edition, see the supplementary volume of Migne, xii. p. 40 sqq., and THUILLIER: *Histoire de la nouvelle ed. de S. Aug. par les PP. Bénédictins*, Par. 1788. The first printed edition of Augustine appeared at Basle, 1489-'95; another, a. 1509, in 11 vols. (I have a copy of this edition in black letter, but without a title page); then the edition of Erasmus published by Frobenius, Bas. 1528-'29, in 10 vols. fol.; the Editio Lovaniensis, or of the divines of Louvain, Antw. 1577, in 11 vols., and often. Several works of Augustine have been often separately edited, especially the *Confessions* and the *City of God*. Compare a full list of the editions down to 1794 in SCHÖNEMANN's *Bibliotheca*, vol. ii. p. 78 sqq.

- II. POSSIDIUS (Calamensis episcopus, a pupil and friend of Aug.): *Vita Augustini* (brief, but authentic, written 482, two years after his death, in tom. x. Append. 257-280, ed. Bened., and in nearly all other editions). BENEDICTINI EDITORES: *Vita Augustini ex ejus potissimum scriptis concinnata*, in 8 books (very elaborate and extensive), in tom. xi. 1-492, ed. Bened. (in Migne's reprint, tom. i. pp. 66-578). The biographies of TILLEMONT (*Mém.* tom. xiii.); ELLIES DUPIN (*Nouvelle bibliothèque des auteurs ecclésiastiques*, tom. ii. and iii.); P. BAYLE (*Dictionnaire historique et critique*, art. Augustin); REMI CEILLIER (*Histoire générale des auteurs sacrés et ecclés.*, vol. xi. and xii.); CAYE (*Lives of the Fathers*, vol. ii.); KLOTH (*Der heil. Aug.*, Aachen, 1840, 2 vols.); BÖHRINGER (*Kirchengeschichte in Biographien*, vol. i. P. iii. p. 99 ff.); POUGOULAT (*Histoire de S. Aug. Par.* 1843 and 1852, 2 vols.; the same in German by *Fr. Hurter*, Schaffh. 1847, 2 vols.); EISENBARTH (Stuttg. 1858); PH. SCHAFF (*St. Augustine*, Berlin, 1854; English ed. New York and London, 1854); O. BINDEMANN (*Der heil. Aug.*, vol. i. Berl. 1844; vol. ii. 1855, incomplete). BRAUNE: *Monica und Augustin*. Grimma, 1846. Comp. also the literature at § 146, p. 788.

The *Philosophy* of Augustine is discussed in the larger *Histories of Philosophy* by BRÜCKER, TENNEMANN, RIXNER, H. RITTER (vol. vi. pp. 153-448), HUBER (*Philosophie der Kirchenväter*), and in the following works: THEOD. GANGAUF: *Metaphysische Psychologie des heil. Augustinus*. 1ste Abtheilung, Augsburg, 1852. T. THÉRY: *Le génie philosophique et littéraire de saint Augustin*. Par. 1861. Abbé FLOTTES: *Études sur saint Aug., son génie, son âme, sa philosophie*. Par. 1861. NOUVEISSON: *La philosophie de saint Augustin* (ouvrage couronné par l'Institut de France), deuxième ed. Par. 1866, 2 vols.

It is a venturesome and delicate undertaking to write one's own life, even though that life be a masterpiece of nature or



of the grace of God, and therefore most worthy to be described. Of all autobiographies none has so happily avoided the reef of vanity and self-praise, and none has won so much esteem and love through its honesty and humility as that of St. Augustine.

The "Confessions," which he wrote in the forty-sixth year of his life, still burning in the ardor of his first love, are full of the fire and unction of the Holy Ghost. They are a sublime effusion, in which Augustine, like David in the fifty-first Psalm, confesses to God, in view of his own and of succeeding generations, without reserve the sins of his youth; and they are at the same time a hymn of praise to the grace of God, which led him out of darkness into light, and called him to service in the kingdom of Christ.<sup>1</sup> Here we see the great church teacher of all times "prostrate in the dust, conversing with God, basking in his love; his readers hovering before him only as a shadow." He puts away from himself all honor, all greatness, all beauty, and lays them gratefully at the feet of the All-merciful. The reader feels on every hand that Christianity is no dream nor illusion, but truth and life, and he is carried along in adoration of the wonderful grace of God.

AURELIUS AUGUSTINUS, born on the 13th of November, 354,<sup>2</sup> at Tagaste, an unimportant village of the fertile province Numidia in North Africa, not far from Hippo Regius, inherited from his heathen father, Patricius,<sup>3</sup> a passionate sensibility, from his Christian mother, Monica (one of the noblest women in the history of Christianity, of a highly intellectual and spiritual cast, of fervent piety, most tender affection, and all-conquering love), the deep yearning towards God so grandly ex-

<sup>1</sup> Augustine himself says of his Confessions: "*Confessionum mearum libri tredecim et de malis et de bonis meis Deum laudant justum et bonum, atque in eum excitant humanum intellectum et affectum.*" *Retract. l. ii. c. 6.*

<sup>2</sup> He died, according to the Chronicle of his friend and pupil Prosper Aquitanus, the 28th of August, 430 (in the third month of the siege of Hippo by the Vandals); according to his biographer Possidius he lived seventy-six years. The day of his birth Augustine states himself, *De vita beata*, § 6 (tom. i. 300): "*Idibus Novambris mihi natalis dies erat.*"

<sup>3</sup> He received baptism shortly before his death.

pressed in his sentence: "Thou hast made us for Thee, and our heart is restless till it rests in Thee."<sup>1</sup> This yearning, and his reverence for the sweet and holy name of Jesus, though crowded into the background, attended him in his studies at the schools of Madaura and Carthage, on his journeys to Rome and Milan, and on his tedious wanderings through the labyrinth of carnal pleasures, Manichæan mock-wisdom, Academic skepticism, and Platonic idealism; till at last the prayers of his mother, the sermons of Ambrose, the biography of St. Anthony, and, above all, the Epistles of Paul, as so many instruments in the hand of the Holy Ghost, wrought in the man of three and thirty years that wonderful change which made him an incalculable blessing to the whole Christian world, and brought even the sins and errors of his youth into the service of the truth.<sup>2</sup>

A son of so many prayers and tears could not be lost, and the faithful mother who travailed with him in spirit with greater pain than her body had in bringing him into the world,<sup>3</sup> was permitted, for the encouragement of future mothers, to receive shortly before her death an answer to her prayers and expectations, and was able to leave this world with joy without revisiting her earthly home. For Monica died on a homeward journey, in Ostia at the mouth of the Tiber, in her fifty-sixth year, in the arms of her son, after enjoying with him a glorious conversation that soared above the confines of space and time, and was a foretaste of the eternal Sabbath-rest of the saints.

<sup>1</sup> Conf. i. 1: "Fecisti nos ad Te, et inquietum est cor nostrum, donec requiescat in Te." In all his aberrations, which we would hardly know, if it were not from his own free confession, he never sunk to anything mean, but remained, like Paul in his Jewish fanaticism, a noble intellect and an honorable character, with burning love for the true and the good.

<sup>2</sup> For particulars respecting the course of Augustine's life, see my work above cited, and other monographs. Comp. also the fine remarks of Dr. BAUR in his posthumous *Lectures on Doctrine-History* (1866), vol. i. Part ii p. 26 ff. He compares the development of Augustine with the course of Christianity from the beginning to his time, and draws a parallel between Augustine and Origen.

<sup>3</sup> Conf. ix. c. 8: "Quæ me pariturivit et carne, ut in hanc temporalem, et corde, ut in æternam lucem nascerer." L. v. 9: "Non enim satis eloquor, quid erga me habebat arimi, et quanto majore sollicitudine me paruriebat spiritû, quam carne pepererat."

did, the clerical life with the monastic, he became unwittingly the founder of the Augustinian order, which gave the reformer Luther to the world. He wore the black dress of the Eastern cœnobites, with a cowl and a leathern girdle. He lived almost entirely on vegetables, and seasoned the common meal with reading or free conversation, in which it was a rule that the character of an absent person should never be touched. He had this couplet engraved on the table :

*"Quisquis amat dictis absentum rodere vitam,  
Hanc mensam vetitam noverit esse sibi."*

He often preached five days in succession, sometimes twice a day, and set it as the object of his preaching, that all might live with him, and he with all, in Christ. Wherever he went in Africa, he was begged to preach the word of salvation.<sup>1</sup> He faithfully administered the external affairs connected with his office, though he found his chief delight in contemplation. He was specially devoted to the poor, and, like Ambrose, upon exigency, caused the church vessels to be melted down to redeem prisoners. But he refused legacies by which injustice was done to natural heirs, and commended the bishop Aurelius of Carthage for giving back unasked some property which a man had bequeathed to the church, when his wife unexpectedly bore him children.

Augustine's labors extended far beyond his little diocese. He was the intellectual head of the North African and the entire Western church of his time. He took active interest in all theological and ecclesiastical questions. He was the champion of the orthodox doctrine against Manichæan, Donatist, and Pelagian. In him was concentrated the whole polemic power of the catholicism of the time against heresy and schism ; and in him it won the victory over them.

In his last years he took a critical review of his literary productions, and gave them a thorough sifting in his *Retracta-*

<sup>1</sup> Possidius says, in his *Vita Aug.* : "*Cæterum episcopatu suscepto multo instantius ac ferventius, majore auctoritate, non in una tantum regione, sed ubicunque rogatus venisset, verbum salutis alacriter ac suaviter, pullulante atque crescente Domini ecclesia, prædicavit.*"

tions. His latest controversial works against the Semi-Pelagians, written in a gentle spirit, date from the same period. He bore the duties of his office alone till his seventy-second year, when his people unanimously elected his friend Heraclius to be his assistant and successor.

The evening of his life was troubled by increasing infirmities of body and by the unspeakable wretchedness which the barbarian Vandals spread over his country in their victorious invasion, destroying cities, villages, and churches, without mercy, and even besieging the fortified city of Hippo.<sup>1</sup> Yet he faithfully persevered in his work. The last ten days of his life he spent in close retirement, in prayers and tears and repeated reading of the penitential Psalms, which he had caused to be written on the wall over his bed, that he might have them always before his eyes. Thus with an act of penance he closed his life. In the midst of the terrors of the siege and the despair of his people he could not suspect what abundant seed he had sown for the future.

In the third month of the siege of Hippo, on the 28th of August, 430, in the seventy-sixth year of his age, in full possession of his faculties, and in the presence of many friends and pupils, he passed gently and happily into that eternity to which he had so long aspired. "O how wonderful," wrote he in his *Meditations*,<sup>2</sup> "how beautiful and lovely are the dwellings of Thy house, Almighty God! I burn with longing to behold Thy beauty in Thy bridal-chamber. . . . O Jerusalem, holy city of God, dear bride of Christ, my heart loves thee, my soul has already long sighed for thy beauty! . . . The King of kings Himself is in the midst of thee, and His children are within thy walls. There are the hymning choirs of angels, the fellowship of heavenly citizens. There is the wedding-feast of all who from this sad earthly pilgrimage have reached thy joys. There is the far-seeing choir of the prophets; there the number of the twelve apostles; there the triumphant army of innumerable martyrs and holy confessors.

<sup>1</sup> Possidius, c. 28, gives a vivid picture of the ravages of the Vandals, which have become proverbial. Comp. also Gibbon, ch. xxxiii.

<sup>2</sup> I freely combine several passages.

Full and perfect love there reigns, for God is all in all. They love and praise, they praise and love Him evermore. . . . Blessed, perfectly and forever blessed, shall I too be, if, when my poor body shall be dissolved, . . . I may stand before my King and God, and see Him in His glory, as He Himself hath deigned to promise: 'Father, I will that they also whom Thou hast given Me be with Me where I am; that they may behold My glory which I had with Thee before the world was.' This aspiration after the heavenly Jerusalem found grand expression in the hymn *De gloria et gaudiis Paradisi*:

"Ad perennis vitæ fontem mens sativit arida,"

which is incorporated in the *Meditations* of Augustine, and the idea of which originated in part with him, though it was not brought into poetical form till long afterwards by Peter Damiani.<sup>1</sup>

He left no will, for in his voluntary poverty he had no earthly property to dispose of, except his library; this he bequeathed to the church, and it was fortunately preserved from the depredations of the Arian barbarians.<sup>2</sup>

Soon after his death Hippo was taken and destroyed by the Vandals.<sup>3</sup> Africa was lost to the Romans. A few de-

<sup>1</sup> Comp. DANIEL: *Thesaurus hymnol.* i. p. 116 sqq., and iv. p. 208 sq., and § 116, above (p. 593, note 1).

<sup>2</sup> Possidius says, *Vita*, c. 31: "Testamentum nullum fecit, quia unde faceret, pauper Dei non habuit. Ecclesiarum bibliothecam omnesque codices diligenter posteris custodiendos semper iubebat."

<sup>3</sup> The inhabitants escaped to the sea. There appears no bishop of Hippo after Augustine. In the seventh century the old city was utterly destroyed by the Arabians, but two miles from it Bona was built out of its ruins. Comp. Tillemont, xiii. 945, and Gibbon, ch. xxxiii. Gibbon says, that Bona, "in the sixteenth century, contained about three hundred families of industrious, but turbulent manufacturers. The adjacent territory is renowned for a pure air, a fertile soil, and plenty of exquisite fruits." Since the French conquest of Algiers, Bona was rebuilt in 1832, and is gradually assuming a French aspect. It is now one of the finest towns in Algeria, the key to the province of Constantine, has a public garden, several schools, considerable commerce, and a population of over 10,000 of French, Moors, and Jews, the great majority of whom are foreigners. The relics of St. Augustine have been recently transferred from Pavia to Bona. See the letters of abbé Sibour to Poujoulat sur la translation de la relique de saint Augustin de Pavie à Hippone, in *Poujoulat's Histoire de saint Augustin*, tom. I. p. 413 sqq.

comes later the whole West-Roman empire fell in ruins. The culmination of the African church was the beginning of its decline. But the work of Augustine could not perish. His ideas fell like living seed into the soil of Europe, and produced abundant fruits in nations and countries of which he had never heard.<sup>1</sup>

Augustine, the man with upturned eye, with pen in the left hand, and a burning heart in the right (as he is usually represented), is a philosophical and theological genius of the first order, towering like a pyramid above his age, and looking down commandingly upon succeeding centuries. He had a mind uncommonly fertile and deep, bold and soaring; and with it, what is better, a heart full of Christian love and humility. He stands of right by the side of the greatest philosophers of antiquity and of modern times. We meet him alike on the broad highways and the narrow footpaths, on the giddy Alpine heights and in the awful depths of speculation, wherever philosophical thinkers before him or after him have trod. As a theologian he is *facile princeps*, at least surpassed by no church father, scholastic, or reformer. With royal munificence he scattered ideas in passing, which have set in mighty motion other lands and later times. He combined the creative power of Tertullian with the churchly spirit of Cyprian, the speculative intellect of the Greek church with the practical tact of the Latin. He was a Christian philosopher and a philosophical theologian to the full. It was his need and his delight to wrestle again and again with the hardest problems of thought, and to comprehend to the utmost the divinely re-

<sup>1</sup> Even in Africa Augustine's spirit reappeared from time to time, notwithstanding the barbarian confusion, as a light in darkness, first in VIGILIUS, bishop of Tapsus, who, at the close of the fifth century, ably defended the orthodox doctrine of the Trinity and the person of Christ, and to whom the authorship of the so-called Athanasian Creed has sometimes been ascribed; in FULGENTIUS, bishop of Ruspe, one of the chief opponents of Semi-Pelagianism, and the later Arianism, who with sixty catholic bishops of Africa was banished for several years by the Arian Vandals to the island of Sardinia, and who was called the Augustine of the sixth century (died 533); and in FACUNDUS OF HERMIANE (died 570), and FULGENTIUS FERRANDUS and LIBERATUS, two deacons of Carthage, who took a prominent part in the Three Chapter controversy.

vealed matter of the faith.<sup>1</sup> He always asserted, indeed, the primacy of faith, according to his maxim: *Fides precedit intellectum*; appealing, with theologians before him, to the well known passage of Isaiah vii. 9 (in the LXX.): "Nisi credideritis, non intelligetis." But to him faith itself was an acting of reason, and from faith to knowledge, therefore, there was a necessary transition.<sup>2</sup> He constantly looked below the surface to the hidden motives of actions and to the universal laws of diverse events. The metaphysician and the Christian believer coalesced in him. His *meditatio* passes with the utmost ease into *oratio*, and his *oratio* into *meditatio*. With profundity he combined an equal clearness and sharpness of thought. He was an extremely skilful and a successful dialectician, inexhaustible in arguments and in answers to the objections of his adversaries.

He has enriched Latin literature with a greater store of beautiful, original, and pregnant proverbial sayings, than any classic author, or any other teacher of the church.<sup>3</sup>

He had a creative and decisive hand in almost every dogma of the church, completing some, and advancing others. The centre of his system is the FREE REDEEMING GRACE OF GOD IN CHRIST, OPERATING THROUGH THE ACTUAL, HISTORICAL CHURCH.

<sup>1</sup> Or, as he wrote to a friend about the year 410, Epist. 120, c. 1, § 2 (tom. ii. p. 347, ed. Bened. Venet.; in older ed., Ep. 122): "Ut quod credis intelligas . . . non ut fidem respuas, sed ea quæ fidei firmitate jam tenes, etiam rationis luce conspicias." He continues, *ibid.* c. 3: "Absit namque, ut hoc in nobis Deus oderit, in quo nos reliquis animalibus excellentiores creavit. Absit, inquam, ut ideo credamus, ne rationem accipiamus vel quæramus; cum etiam credere non possemus, nisi rationales animas haberemus." In one of his earliest works, *Contra Academ.* l. iii. c. 20, § 43, he says of himself: "Ita sum affectus, ut quid sit verum non credendo solum, sed etiam intelligendo apprehendere impatienter desiderem."

<sup>2</sup> Comp. *De præd. sanct. cap. 2*, § 5 (tom. x. p. 792): "Ipsam credere nihil aliud est quam cum assensione cogitare. Non enim omnis qui cogitat, credit, cum ideo cogitant, plerique ne credant; sed cogitat omnis qui credit, et credendo cogitat et cogitando credit. Fides si non cogitetur, nulla est." Ep. 120, cap. 1, § 3 (tom. ii. 347), and Ep. 137, c. 4, § 15 (tom. ii. 408): "Intellectui fides aditum aperit, infidelitas claudit." Augustine's view of faith and knowledge is discussed at large by GANGAUX, *Metaphysische Psychologie des heil. Augustinus*, l. pp. 31-76, and by NOUARISSON, *La philosophie de saint Augustin*, tom. ii. 232-290.

<sup>3</sup> Prosper Aquitanus collected from the works of Augustine a long list of sentences (see the Appendix to the tenth vol. of the Bened. ed. p. 223 sqq.), with ref-

He is evangelical or Pauline in his doctrine of sin and grace, but catholic (that is, old-catholic, not Roman Catholic) in his doctrine of the church. The Pauline element comes forward mainly in the Pelagian controversy, the catholic-churchly in the Donatist; but each is modified by the other.

Dr. Baur incorrectly makes *freedom* the fundamental idea of the Augustinian system (it much better suits the Pelagian), and founds on this view an ingenious, but only half true, comparison between Augustine and Origen. "There is no church teacher of the ancient period," says he,<sup>1</sup> "who, in intellect and in grandeur and consistency of view, can more justly be placed by the side of Origen than Augustine; none who, with all the difference in individuality and in mode of thought, so closely resembles him. How far both towered above their times, is most clearly manifest in the very fact that they alone, of all the theologians of the first six centuries, became the creators of distinct systems, each proceeding from its definite idea, and each completely carried out; and this fact proves also how much the one system has that is analogous to the other. The one system, like the other, is founded upon the idea of *freedom*; in both there is a specific act, by which the entire development of human life is determined; and in both this is an

erence to theological purport and the Pelagian controversies. We recall some of the best, which he has omitted:

"Novum Testamentum in Vetere latet, Vetus in Novo patet."

"Distingue tempora, et concordabit Scriptura."

"Cor nostrum inquietum est, donec requiescat in Te."

"Da quod jubes, et jube quod vis."

"Non vincit nisi veritas, victoria veritatis est caritas."

"Ubi amor, ibi trinitas."

"Fides præcedit intellectum."

"Deo servire vera libertas est."

"Nulla infelicitas frangit, quem felicitas nulla corrumpit."

The famous maxim of ecclesiastical harmony: "In necessariis unitas, in dubiis (or non necessariis) libertas, in omnibus (in utrisque) caritas,"—which is often ascribed to Augustine, dates in this form not from him, but from a much later period. Dr. LÜCKE (in a special treatise on the antiquity of the author, the original form, etc., of this sentence, Göttingen, 1850) traces the authorship to RUPERT MILDENIUS, an irenical German theologian of the seventeenth century.

<sup>1</sup> I. a. p. 80 sq.



act which lies far outside of the temporal consciousness of the individual; with this difference alone, that in one system the act belongs to each separate individual himself, and only falls outside of his temporal life and consciousness; in the other, it lies within the sphere of the temporal history of man, but is only the act of one individual. If in the system of Origen nothing gives greater offence than the idea of the pre-existence and fall of souls, which seems to adopt heathen ideas into the Christian faith, there is in the system of Augustine the same overleaping of individual life and consciousness, in order to explain from an act in the past the present sinful condition of man; but the pagan Platonic point of view is exchanged for one taken from the Old Testament. . . . What therefore essentially distinguishes the system of Augustine from that of Origen, is only this: the fall of Adam is substituted for the pre-temporal fall of souls, and what in Origen still wears a heathen garb, puts on in Augustine a purely Old Testament form."

The learning of Augustine was not equal to his genius, nor as extensive as that of Origen and Eusebius, but still considerable for his time, and superior to that of any of the Latin fathers, with the single exception of Jerome. He had received in the schools of Madaura and Carthage a good theoretical and rhetorical preparation for the forum, which stood him in good stead also in theology. He was familiar with Latin literature, and was by no means blind to the excellencies of the classics, though he placed them far below the higher beauty of the Holy Scriptures. The Hortensius of Cicero (a lost work) inspired him during his university course with enthusiasm for philosophy and for the knowledge of truth for its own sake; the study of Platonic and Neo-Platonic works (in the Latin version of the rhetorician Victorinus) kindled in him an incredible fire;<sup>1</sup> though in both he missed the holy name of Jesus

<sup>1</sup> Adv. Academicos, l. ii. c. 2, § 5: "Etiam mihi ipsi de me *incredibile incensum* concitarunt." And in several passages of the Civitas Dei (viii. 3-12; xxii. 27) he speaks very favorably of Plato, and also of Aristotle, and thus broke the way for the high authority of the Aristotelian philosophy with the scholastics of the middle age.

and the cardinal virtues of love and humility, and found in them only beautiful ideals without power to conform him to them. His *City of God*, his book on heresies, and other writings, show an extensive knowledge of ancient philosophy, poetry, and history, sacred and secular. He refers to the most distinguished persons of Greece and Rome; he often alludes to Pythagoras, Plato, Aristotle, Plotin, Porphyry, Cicero, Seneca, Horace, Virgil, to the earlier Greek and Latin fathers, to Eastern and Western heretics. But his knowledge of Greek literature was mostly derived from Latin translations. With the Greek language, as he himself frankly and modestly confesses, he had, in comparison with Jerome, but a superficial acquaintance.<sup>1</sup> Hebrew he did not understand at all. Hence,

<sup>1</sup> It is sometimes asserted that he had no knowledge at all of the Greek. So Gibbon, for example, says (ch. xxxiii.): "The superficial learning of Augustine was confined to the Latin language." But this is as much a mistake as the other assertion of Gibbon, that "the orthodoxy of St. Augustine was derived from the Manichean school." In his youth he had a great aversion to the glorious language of Hellas (Conf. i. 14), and read the writings of Plato in a Latin translation (vii. 9). But after his baptism, during his second residence in Rome, he took it up again with greater zest, for the sake of his biblical studies. In Hippo he had, while presbyter, good opportunity to advance in it, since his bishop, Aurelius, a native Greek, understood his mother tongue much better than the Latin. In his books he occasionally makes reference to the Greek. In his work *Contra Jul.* i. c. 6 § 21 (tom. x. 510), he corrects the Pelagian Julian in a translation from Chrysostom, quoting the original. "Ego ipsa verba Græca quæ a Joanne dicta sunt ponam: διὰ τοῦτο καὶ τὰ παῖδια βαπτίζομεν, καίτοι ἀμαρτήματα οὐκ ἔχοντα, quod est Latine: *Ideo et infantes baptizamus, quamvis peccata non habentes.*" Julian had freely rendered this: "*cum non sint coinquinati peccato,*" and had drawn the inference: "*Sanctus Joannes Constantinopolitanus negat esse in parvulis originale peccatum.*" Augustine helps himself out of the pinch by arbitrarily supplying *propria* to ἀμαρτήματα, so that the idea of sin inherited from another is not excluded. The Greek fathers, however, did not consider hereditary corruption to be proper sin or guilt at all, but only defect, weakness, or disease. In the *City of God*, lib. xix. c. 23, he quotes a passage from Porphyry's ἐκ λογίων φιλοσοφία. It is probable that he read Plotin, and the Panarion of Epiphanius, or the summary of it, in Greek (while the Church History of Eusebius he knew only in the translation of Rufinus). But in his exegetical and other works he very rarely consults the Septuagint or Greek Testament, and was content with the very imperfect Itala or the improved version of Jerome. The Benedictine editors overestimate his knowledge of Greek. He himself frankly confesses that he knew very little of it, *De Trinit.* l. iii. Proem. ("Græcæ linguae non sit nobis tantus habitus, ut talium rerum libris legendis et intelligendis ullo modo reperiamur idonei"), and *Contra literas Petiliani* (written in 400), l. ii. c. 38 ("Et ego

with all his extraordinary familiarity with the Latin Bible, he made many mistakes in exposition. He was rather a thinker than a scholar, and depended mainly on his own resources, which were always abundant.<sup>1</sup>

quidem Græcæ linguæ, perparum assecutus sum, et prope nihil"). On the philosophical learning of Augustine may be compared NOUVEAUSSON, l. c. ii. p. 92 ff.

<sup>1</sup> The following are some of the most intelligent and appreciative estimates of Augustine. ERASMUS (Ep. dedicat. ad Alfons. archiep. Tolet. 1529) says, with an ingenious play upon the name Aurelius Augustinus: "Quid habet orbis christianus hoc scriptore magis *aureum* vel *augustinus*? ut ipsa vocabula nequaquam fortuito, sed numinis providentia videantur indita viro. Auro sapientiæ nihil pretiosius: fulgore eloquentiæ cum sapientiæ conjunctæ nihil mirabilius. . . . Non arbitror alium esse doctorem, in quem opulentus ille ac benignus Spiritus dotes suas omnes largius effuderit, quam in Augustinum." The great philosopher LEIBNITZ (Præfat. ad Theodic. § 84) calls him "virum sane magnum et ingenti stupendi," and "vastissimo ingenio præditum." Dr. BAUR, without sympathy with his views, speaks enthusiastically of the man and his genius. Among other things he says (Vorlesungen über Dogmengeschichte, i. i. p. 61): "There is scarcely another theological author so fertile and withal so able as Augustine. His scholarship was certainly not equal to his mind; yet even that is sometimes set too low, when it is asserted that he had no acquaintance at all with the Greek language; for this is incorrect, though he had attained no great proficiency in Greek." C. BINDEMANN (a Lutheran divine) begins his thorough monograph (vol. i. preface) with the well-deserved eulogium: "St. Augustine is one of the greatest personages in the church. He is second in importance to none of the teachers who have wrought most in the church since the apostolic time; and it can well be said that among the church fathers the first place is due to him, and in the time of the Reformation a Luther alone, for fullness and depth of thought and grandeur of character, may stand by his side. He is the summit of the development of the mediæval Western church; from him descended the mysticism, no less than the scholasticism, of the middle age; he was one of the strongest pillars of the Roman Catholicism, and from his works, next to the Holy Scriptures, especially the Epistles of Paul, the leaders of the Reformation drew most of that conviction by which a new age was introduced." STAUDENMAIER, a Roman Catholic theologian, counts Augustine among those minds in which an hundred others dwell (Sootus Erigena, i. p. 274). The Roman Catholic philosophers A. GÜNTHER and TH. GANGEUF, put him on an equality with the greatest philosophers, and discern in him a providential personage endowed by the Spirit of God for the instruction of all ages. A striking characterization is that of Dr. JOHANNES HUBER (in his instructive work: Die Philosophie der Kirchenväter, Munich, 1859, p. 312 sq.): "Augustine is a unique phenomenon in Christian history. No one of the other fathers has left so luminous traces of his existence. Though we find among them many rich and powerful minds, yet we find in none the forces of personal character, mind, heart, and will, so largely developed and so harmoniously working. No one surpasses him in wealth of perceptions and dialectical sharpness of thoughts, in depth and fervor of religious sensibility, in greatness of aims and energy of action.

§ 179. *The Works of Augustine.*

The numerous writings of Augustine, the composition of which extended through four and forty years, are a mine of Christian knowledge and experience. They abound in lofty ideas, noble sentiments, devout effusions, clear statements of truth, strong arguments against error, and passages of fervid eloquence and undying beauty, but also in innumerable repetitions, fanciful opinions, and playful conjectures of his uncommonly fertile brain.<sup>1</sup> His style is full of life and vigor and

He therefore also marks the culmination of the patristic age, and has been elevated by the acknowledgment of succeeding times as the first and the universal church father.—His whole character reminds us in many respects of Paul, with whom he has also in common the experience of being called from manifold errors to the service of the gospel, and like whom he could boast that he had labored in it more abundantly than all the others. And as Paul among the Apostles pre-eminently determined the development of Christianity, and became, more than all others, the expression of the Christian mind, to which men ever afterwards return, as often as in the life of the church that mind becomes turbid, to draw from him, as the purest fountain, a fresh understanding of the gospel doctrine,—so has Augustine turned the Christian nations since his time for the most part into his paths, and become pre-eminently their trainer and teacher, in the study of whom they always gain a renewal and deepening of their Christian consciousness. Not the middle age alone, but the Reformation also, was ruled by him, and whatever to this day boasts of the Christian spirit, is connected at least in part with Augustine.” NOUVERISSON, the latest French writer on Augustine, whose work is clothed with the authority of the Institute of France, assigns to the bishop of Hippo the first rank among the masters of human thought, alongside of Plato and Leibnitz, Thomas Aquinas and Bossuet. “Si une critique toujours respectueuse, mais d’une inviolable sincérité, est une des formes les plus hautes de l’admiration, j’estime, au contraire, n’avoir fait qu’exalter ce grand cœur, ce psychologue consolant et ému, ce métaphysicien subtil et sublime, en un mot, cet attachant et poétique génie, dont la place reste marquée, au premier rang, parmi les maîtres de la pensée humaine, à côté de Platon et de Descartes, d’Aristote et de saint Thomas, de Leibnitz et de Bossuet.” (*La philosophie de saint Augustin*, Par. 1866, tom. i. p. vii.) Among English and American writers, Dr. SEDGWICK, in the Introduction to his edition of an old translation of the Confessions (1860), has furnished a truthful and forcible description of the mind and heart of St. Augustine, as portrayed in this remarkable book.

<sup>1</sup> ELLIEN DUFIN (*Bibliothèque ecclésiastique*, tom. iii. 1.<sup>re</sup> partie, p. 818) and NOUVERISSON (*l. c.* tom. ii. p. 449) apply to Augustine the term *magnus opinator*, which Cicero used of himself. There is, however, this important difference that Augustine, along with his many opinions on speculative questions in philosophy and theology, had very positive convictions in all essential doctrines, while Cicero was a mere eclectic in philosophy.

ingenious plays on words, but deficient in purity and elegance, and by no means free from wearisome prolixity and from that *vagabunda loquacitas*, with which his adroit opponent, Julian of Eclanum, charged him. He would rather, as he said, be blamed by grammarians, than not understood by the people; and he bestowed little care upon his style, though he many a time rises in lofty poetic flight. He made no point of literary renown, but, impelled by love to God and to the church, he wrote from the fulness of his mind and heart. The writings before his conversion, a treatise on the Beautiful (*De Pulchro et Apto*), the orations and eulogies which he delivered as rhetorician at Carthage, Rome, and Milan, are lost. The professor of eloquence, the heathen philosopher, the Manichæan heretic, the sceptic and freethinker, are known to us only from his regrets and recantations in the *Confessions* and other works. His literary career for us commences in his pious retreat at Cassiciacum where he prepared himself for a public profession of his faith. He appears first, in the works composed at Cassiciacum, Rome, and near Tagaste, as a Christian philosopher, after his consecration to the priesthood as a theologian. Yet even in his theological works he everywhere manifests the metaphysical and speculative bent of his mind. He never abandoned or depreciated reason, he only subordinated it to faith and made it subservient to the defence of revealed truth. Faith is the pioneer of reason, and discovers the territory which reason explores.

The following is a classified view of his most important works, the contents of the most of which we have already noticed in former sections.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> POSSIDIUS counts in all, including sermons and letters, one thousand and thirty writings of Augustine. On these see, above all, his *Retractations*, where he himself reviews ninety-three of his works (embracing two hundred and thirty-two books, see ii. 67), in chronological order; in the first book those which he wrote while a layman and presbyter, in the second those which he wrote when a bishop. Also the extended chronological index in SCHÖNEMANN'S *Biblioth. historico-literaria Patrum Latinorum*, vol. ii. (Lips. 1794), p. 340 sqq. (reprinted in the supplemental volume, xii., of Migne's ed. of the *Opera*, p. 24 sqq.); and other systematic and alphabetical lists in the eleventh volume of the *Bened. ed.* (p. 494 sqq., ed. Venet.), and in Migne, tom. xi.

I. AUTOBIOGRAPHICAL works. To these belong the Confessions and the Retractions; the former acknowledging his sins, the latter his theoretical errors. In the one he subjects his life, in the other his writings, to close criticism; and these productions therefore furnish the best standard for judging of his entire labors.<sup>1</sup>

The Confessions are the most profitable, at least the most edifying, product of his pen; indeed, we may no doubt say, the most edifying book in all the patristic literature. They were accordingly the most read even during his lifetime,<sup>2</sup> and they have been the most frequently published since.<sup>3</sup> A more

<sup>1</sup> For this reason the Benedictine editors have placed the Retractions and the Confessions at the head of his works.

<sup>2</sup> He himself says of them, *Retract. l. ii. c. 6*: "*Multis fratribus eos [Confessionum libros tredecim] multum placuisse et placere scio.*" *Comp. De dono perseverantiae, c. 20*: "*Quid autem meorum opusculorum frequentius et delectabilius innotescere potuit quam libri Confessionum mearum?*" *Comp. Ep. 231* Dario comiti.

<sup>3</sup> SCHÖNEMANN (in the supplemental volume of Migne's ed. of Augustine, p. 134 sqq.) cites a multitude of separate editions of the Confessions in Latin, Italian, Spanish, Portuguese, French, English, and German, from A. D. 1475 to 1776. Since that time several new editions have been added. There are German translations by H. KAUTZ (R. C., Arnsberg, 1840), G. RAFF (Prot., 2d ed., Stuttg., 1847), and others. The best English edition is that of Dr. E. B. PUSEY: *The Confessions of S. Augustine*, Oxford (first in 1838, as the first volume in the Oxf. Library of the Fathers, together with an edition of the Latin original). It is, however, as Dr. Pusey says, only a revision of the translation of Rev. W. WATTS, D. D., London, 1650, accompanied with a long preface (pp. i-xxxv) and elucidations from Augustine's works in notes and at the end (pp. 314-346). The edition of Dr. W. G. T. SHEDD, Andover, 1860, is, as he says, "a reprint of an old translation by an author unknown to the editor, which was republished in Boston in 1843." A cursory comparison shows, that this anonymous Boston reprint agrees almost word for word with Pusey's revision of Watts, omitting his introduction and all his notes. Dr. Shedd has, however, added an excellent original introduction, in which he clearly and vigorously characterizes the Confessions and draws a comparison between them and the Confessions of Rousseau. He calls the former (p. xxvii) not inaptly the best commentary yet written upon the seventh and eighth chapters of Romans. "That quickening of the human spirit, which puts it again into vital and sensitive relations to the holy and eternal; that illumination of the mind, whereby it is enabled to perceive with clearness the real nature of truth and righteousness; that empowering of the will, to the conflict of victory—the entire process of restoring the Divine image in the soul of man—is delineated in this book, with a vividness and reality never exceeded by the uninspired mind." . . . "It is the life of God in the soul of a strong man, rushing and rippling with the freedom of the life of nature. He who watches can almost

sincere and more earnest book was never written. The historical part, to the tenth book, is one of the devotional classics of all creeds, and second in popularity only to the "Imitation of Christ," by Thomas a Kempis, and Bunyan's "Pilgrim's Progress." Certainly no autobiography is superior to it in true humility, spiritual depth, and universal interest. Augustine's experience, as a heathen sensualist, a Manichæan heretic, an anxious inquirer, a sincere penitent, and a grateful convert, is reflected in every human soul that struggles through the temptations of nature and the labyrinth of error to the knowledge of truth and the beauty of holiness, and after many sighs and tears finds rest and peace in the arms of a merciful Saviour. Rousseau's "Confessions," and Goethe's "Truth and Poetry," though written in a radically different spirit, may be compared with Augustine's Confessions as works of rare genius and of absorbing interest, but, by attempting to exalt human nature in its unsanctified state, they tend as much to expose its vanity and weakness, as the work of the bishop of Hippo, being written with a single eye to the glory of God, raises man from the dust of repentance to a new and imperishable life of the Spirit.<sup>1</sup>

Augustine composed the Confessions about the year 400. The first ten books contain, in the form of a continuous prayer and confession before God, a general sketch of his earlier life, of his conversion, and of his return to Africa in the thirty-fourth year of his age. The salient points in these books are the engaging history of his conversion in Milan, and the story of the last days of his noble mother in Ostia, spent as it were at the very gate of heaven and in full assurance of a blessed reunion at the throne of glory. The last three books (and a part of the tenth) are devoted to speculative philosophy; they treat, partly in tacit opposition to Manichæism, of the

see the growth; he who listens can hear the perpetual motion; and he who is in sympathy will be swept along."

<sup>1</sup> NOURRISSON (l. c. tom. i. p. 19) calls the Confessions "cet ouvrage unique, souvent imité, toujours parodié, où il s'accuse, se condamne et s'humilie, prière ardente, récit entraînant, métaphysique incomparable, histoire de tout un monde qui se reflète dans l'histoire d'une âme."

metaphysical questions of the possibility of knowing God, and the nature of time and space; and they give an interpretation of the Mosaic cosmogony in the style of the typical allegorical exegesis usual with the fathers, but foreign to our age; they are therefore of little value to the general reader, except as showing that even abstract metaphysical subjects may be devotionally treated.

The *Retractations* were produced in the evening of his life (427), when, mindful of the proverb: "In the multitude of words there wanteth not sin,"<sup>1</sup> and remembering that we must give account for every idle word,<sup>2</sup> he judged himself, that he might not be judged.<sup>3</sup> He revised in chronological order the numerous works he had written before and during his episcopate, and retracted or corrected whatever in them seemed to his riper knowledge false or obscure. In all essential points, nevertheless, his theological system remained the same from his conversion to this time. The *Retractations* give beautiful evidence of his love of truth, his conscientiousness, and his humility.<sup>4</sup>

To this same class should be added the *Letters of Augustine*, of which the Benedictine editors, in their second volume, give two hundred and seventy (including letters to Augustine) in chronological order from A. D. 386 to A. D. 429. These letters treat, sometimes very minutely, of all the important questions of his time, and give us an insight of his cares, his official fidelity, his large heart, and his effort to become, like Paul, all things to all men.

When the questions of friends and pupils accumulated, he answered them in special works; and in this way he produced various collections of *Quæstiones* and *Responsiones*, dogmatical, exegetical, and miscellaneous (A. D. 390, 397, &c.).

<sup>1</sup> Prov. x. 19. This verse (*ex multiloquio non effugies peccatum*) the Semi-Pelagian Gennadius (*De viris illustr. sub Aug.*) applies against Augustine in excuse for his erroneous doctrines of freedom and predestination.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. xii. 36.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. xi. 31. Comp. his Prologus to the two books of *Retractationes*.

<sup>4</sup> J. MORELL MACKENZIE (in W. Smith's *Dictionary of Greek and Roman Biography and Mythology*, vol. i. p. 422) happily calls the *Retractations* of Augustine



II. PHILOSOPHICAL treatises, in dialogue; almost all composed in his earlier life; either during his residence on the country-seat Cassiciacum in the vicinity of Milan, where he spent half a year before his baptism in instructive and stimulating conversation in a sort of academy or Christian Platonic banquet with Monica, his son Adeodatus, his brother Navigius, his friend Alypius, and some cousins and pupils; or during his second residence in Rome; or soon after his return to Africa.<sup>1</sup>

To this class belong the works: *Contra Academicos libros* (386), in which he combats the skepticism and probabilism of the New Academy,—the doctrine that man can never reach the truth, but can at best attain only probability; *De vita beata* (386), in which he makes true blessedness to consist in the perfect knowledge of God; *De ordine*,—on the relation of evil to the divine order of the world<sup>2</sup> (386); *Soliloquia* (387), communings with his own soul concerning God, the highest good, the knowledge of truth, and immortality; *De immortalitate animæ* (387), a continuation of the *Soliloquia*; *De quantitate animæ* (387), discussing sundry questions of the size, the origin, the incorporeity of the soul; *De musica libri vi* (387-389); *De magistro* (389), in which, in a dialogue with his son Adeodatus, a pious and promising, but precocious youth, who died soon after his return to Africa (389), he treats on the importance and virtue of the word of God, and on Christ as the infallible Master.<sup>3</sup> To these may be added the later work, *De*

"one of the noblest sacrifices ever laid upon the altar of truth by a majestic intellect acting in obedience to the purest conscientiousness."

<sup>1</sup> In tom. I. of the ed. Bened., immediately after the *Retractationes* and *Confessiones*, and at the close of the volume. On these philosophical writings, see BAUCKER: *Historia critica philosophiæ*, Lips. 1766, tom. iii. pp. 485-507; H. RITTER: *Geschichte der Philosophie*, vol. vi. p. 153 ff.; BINDEMANN, l. c. p. 282 sqq.; HUBER, l. c. p. 242 sqq.; GANGAUF, l. c. p. 25 sqq., and NOURRISSON, l. c. ch. i. and ii. Nourrison makes the just remark (l. p. 53): "Si la philosophie est la recherche de la vérité, jamais sans doute il ne s'est rencontré une âme plus philosophe que celle de saint Augustin. Car jamais âme n'a supporté avec plus d'impatience les anxiétés du doute et n'a fait plus d'efforts pour dissiper les fantômes de l'erreur."

<sup>2</sup> Or on the question: "*Utrum omnia bona et mala divinæ providentiæ ordo contineat?*" Comp. *Retract.* i. 3.

<sup>3</sup> Augustine, in his *Confessions* (l. ix. c. 6), expresses himself in this touching

anima et ejus origine (419). Other philosophical works on grammar, dialectics (or *ars bene disputandi*), rhetoric, geometry, and arithmetic, are lost.<sup>1</sup>

These works exhibit as yet little that is specifically Christian and churchly; but they show a Platonism seized and consecrated by the spirit of Christianity, full of high thoughts, ideal views, and discriminating argument. They were designed to present the different stages of human thought by which he himself had reached the knowledge of the truth, and to serve others as steps to the sanctuary. They form an elementary introduction to his theology. He afterwards, in his *Retractations*, withdrew many things contained in them, like the Platonic view of the pre-existence of the soul, and the Platonic idea that the acquisition of knowledge is a recollection or excavation of the knowledge hidden in the mind.<sup>2</sup> The philosopher in him afterwards yielded more and more to the

way about this son of his illicit love: "We took with us [on returning from the country to Milan to receive the sacrament of baptism] also the boy Adeodatus, the son of my carnal sin. Thou hadst formed him well. He was but just fifteen years old, and he was superior in mind to many grave and learned men. I acknowledge Thy gifts, O Lord, my God, who createst all, and who canst reform our deformities; for I had no part in that boy but sin. And when we brought him up in Thy nurture, Thou, only Thou, didst prompt us to it; I acknowledge Thy gifts. There is my book entitled, *De Magistro*; he speaks with me there. Thou knowest that all things there put into his mouth were in his mind when he was sixteen years of age. That maturity of mind was a terror to me; and who but Thou is the artificer of such wonders? Soon Thou didst take his life from the earth; and I think more quietly of him now, fearing no more for his boyhood, nor his youth, nor his whole life. We took him to ourselves as one of the same age in Thy grace, to be trained in Thy nurture; and we were baptized together; and all trouble about the past fled from us."

<sup>1</sup> The books on grammar, dialectics, rhetoric, and the ten Categories of Aristotle, in the Appendix to the first volume of the Bened. ed., are spurious. For the genuine works of Augustine on these subjects were written in a different form (the dialogue) and for a higher purpose, and were lost in his own day. Comp. *Retract.* i. c. 6. In spite of this, PRANTL (*Geschichte der Logik im Abendlande*, pp. 665-674, cited by HUBER, l. c. p. 240) has advocated the genuineness of the *Principia dialecticæ*, and HUBER inclines to agree. GANGAUF, l. c. p. 5, and NOURRISSON, i. p. 37, consider them spurious.

<sup>2</sup> Ἡ ἀνάσσεις οὐκ ἄλλο τι ἢ ἀνάμνησις. On this Plato, in the *Phædo*, as is well known, rests his doctrine of pre-existence. Augustine was at first in favor of the idea, *Solil.* ii. 20, n. 35; afterwards he rejected it, *Retract.* i. 4, § 4.

theologian, and his views became more positive and empirical, though in some cases narrower also and more exclusive. Yet he could never cease to philosophize, and even his later works, especially *De Trinitate* and *De Civitate Dei*, are full of profound speculations. Before his conversion he followed a particular system of philosophy, first the Manichæan, then the Platonic; after his conversion he embraced the Christian philosophy, which is based on the divine revelation of the Scriptures, and is the handmaid of theology and religion; but at the same time he prepared the way for the catholic ecclesiastical philosophy, which rests on the authority of the church, and became complete in the scholasticism of the middle age.

In the history of philosophy he deserves a place in the highest rank, and has done greater service to the science of sciences than any other father, Clement of Alexandria and Origen not excepted. He attacked and refuted the pagan philosophy as pantheistic or dualistic at heart; he shook the superstitions of astrology and magic; he expelled from philosophy the doctrine of emanation, and the idea that God is the soul of the world; he substantially advanced psychology; he solved the question of the origin and the nature of evil more nearly than any of his predecessors, and as nearly as most of his successors; he was the first to investigate thoroughly the relation of divine omnipotence and omniscience to human freedom, and to construct a theodicy; in short, he is properly the founder of a Christian philosophy, and not only divided with Aristotle the empire of the mediæval scholasticism, but furnished also living germs for new systems of philosophy, and will always be consulted in the speculative establishment of Christian doctrines.

III. APOLOGETIC works against Pagans and Jews. Among these the twenty-two books, *De Civitate Dei*, are still well worth reading. They form the deepest and richest apologetic work of antiquity; begun in 413, after the occupation of Rome by the Gothic king Alaric, finished in 426, and often separately published. They condense his entire theory of the world and of man, and are the first attempt at a comprehensive philoso-

phy of universal history under the dualistic view of two antagonistic currents or organized forces, a kingdom of this world which is doomed to final destruction, and a kingdom of God which will last forever.<sup>1</sup>

IV. RELIGIOUS-THEOLOGICAL works of a general nature (in part anti-Manichæan): *De utilitate credendi*, against the Gnostic exaltation of knowledge (392); *De fide et symbolo*, a discourse which, though only presbyter, he delivered on the Apostles' Creed before the council at Hippo at the request of the bishops in 393; *De doctrina Christiana* iv libri (397; the fourth book added in 426), a compend of exegetical theology for instruction in the interpretation of the Scriptures according to the analogy of the faith; *De catechizandis rudibus*, likewise for catechetical purposes (400); *Enchiridion*, or *De fide, spe et caritate*, a brief compend of the doctrine of faith and morals, which he wrote in 421, or later, at the request of Laurentius; hence also called *Manuale ad Laurentium*.

V. POLEMIC-THEOLOGICAL works. These are the most copious sources of the history of doctrine. The heresies collectively are reviewed in the book *De hæresibus ad Quodvult-deum*, written between 428 and 430 to a friend and deacon in Carthage, and giving a survey of eighty-eight heresies, from the Simonians to the Pelagians.<sup>2</sup> In the work *De vera religione* (390) Augustine proposed to show that the true religion is to be found not with the heretics and schismatics, but only in the catholic church of that time.

<sup>1</sup> In the Bened. ed. tom. vii. Comp. *Retract.* ii. 43, and above, § 12. The *City of God* and the *Confessions* are the only writings of Augustine which GIBSON thought good to read (chap. xxxiii.). HUBER (l. c. p. 315) says: "Augustine's philosophy of history, as he presents it in his *Civitas Dei*, has remained to this hour the standard philosophy of history for the church orthodoxy, the bounds of which this orthodoxy, unable to perceive in the motions of the modern spirit the fresh morning air of a higher day of history, is scarcely able to transcend." NOURRISSON devotes a special chapter to the consideration of the two cities of Augustine, the *City of the World* and the *City of God* (tom. ii. 43-88). Compare also the Introduction to SAUSSER's *Traduction de la Cité de Dieu*, Par. 1855.

<sup>2</sup> This work is also incorporated in the *Corpus hæreseologicum* of FR. OERLER, tom. i. pp. 192-225.

The other controversial works are directed against the particular heresies of Manichæism, Donatism, Arianism, Pelagianism, and Semi-Pelagianism. Augustine, with all the firmness of his convictions, was free from personal antipathy, and used the pen of controversy in the genuine Christian spirit, *fortiter in re, suaviter in modo*. He understood Paul's ἀληθεύειν ἐν ἀγάπῃ, and forms in this respect a pleasing contrast to Jerome, who probably had by nature no more fiery temperament than he, but was less able to control it. "Let those," he very beautifully says to the Manichæans, "burn with hatred against you, who do not know how much pains it costs to find the truth, how hard it is to guard against error;—but I, who after so great and long wavering came to know the truth, must bear myself towards you with the same patience which my fellow-believers showed towards me while I was wandering in blind madness in your opinions."<sup>1</sup>

1. The ANTI-MANICHÆAN works date mostly from his earlier life, and in time and matter follow immediately upon his philosophical writings.<sup>2</sup> In them he afterwards found most to retract, because he advocated the freedom of the will against the Manichæan fatalism. The most important are: *De moribus ecclesiæ catholicæ, et de moribus Manichæorum*, two books (written during his second residence in Rome, 388); *De vera religione* (390); *Unde malum, et de libero arbitrio*, usually simply *De libero arbitrio*, in three books, against the Manichæan doctrine of evil as a substance, and as having its seat in matter instead of free will (begun in 388, finished in 395); *De Genesi contra Manichæos*, a defence of the biblical doctrine of creation (389); *De duabus animabus*, against the psychological dualism of the Manichæans (392); *Disputatio contra Fortunatum* (a triumphant refutation of this Manichæan priest in Hippo in August, 392); *Contra Epistolam Manichæi quam vocant fundamenti* (397); *Contra Faustum Manichæum*, in thirty-three books (400-404); *De natura boni* (404), &c.

These works treat of the origin of evil; of free will; of the

<sup>1</sup> Comp. *Contra Epist. Manichæi quam vocant fundamenti*, l. i. 2.

<sup>2</sup> The earliest anti-Manichæan writings (*De libero arbitrio*; *De moribus eccl. cath. et de moribus Manich.*) are in tom. i. ed. Bened.; the latter in tom. viii.

harmony of the Old and New Testaments, and of revelation and nature; of creation out of nothing, in opposition to dualism and hylozoism; of the supremacy of faith over knowledge; of the authority of the Scriptures and the church; of the true and the false asceticism, and other disputed points; and they are the chief source of our knowledge of the Manichæan Gnosticism and of the arguments against it. Having himself belonged for nine years to this sect, Augustine was the better fitted for the task of refuting it, as Paul was peculiarly prepared for the confutation of the Pharisaic Judaism. His doctrine of the nature of evil is particularly valuable. He has triumphantly demonstrated for all time, that evil is not a corporeal thing, nor in any way substantial, but a product of the free will of the creature, a perversion of substance in itself good, a corruption of the nature created by God.

2. Against the PRISCILLIANISTS, a sect in Spain built on Manichæan principles, are directed the book *Ad Paulum Orosium contra Priscillianistas et Origenistas* (411);\* the book *Contra mendacium*, addressed to Consentius (420); and in part the 190th Epistle (alias Ep. 157), to the bishop Optatus, on the origin of the soul (418), and two other letters, in which he refutes erroneous views on the nature of the soul, the limitation of future punishments, and the lawfulness of fraud for supposed good purposes.

3. The ANTI-DONATISTIC works, composed between the years 393 and 420, argue against separatism, and contain Augustine's doctrine of the church and church-discipline, and of the sacraments. To these belong: *Psalmus contra partem Donati* (A. D. 393), a polemic popular song without regular metre, intended to offset the songs of the Donatists; *Contra epistolam Parmeniani*, written in 400 against the Carthaginian bishop of the Donatists, the successor of Donatus; *De baptismo contra Donatistas*, in favor of the validity of heretical baptism (400); *Contra literas Petiliani* (about 400), against the view of Cyprian and the Donatists, that the efficacy of the sacraments depends on the personal worthiness and the ecclesiastical

\* Tom. viii. p. 611 sqq.

status of the officiating priest; *Ad Catholicos Epistola contra Donatistas*, vulgo *De unitate ecclesiæ* (402); *Contra Cresconium grammaticum Donatistam* (406); *Breviculus collationis cum Donatistis*, a short account of the three-days' religious conference with the Donatists (411); *De correctione Donatarum* (417); *Contra Gaudentium, Donat. Episcopum*, the last anti-Donatistic work (420).<sup>1</sup>

4. The ANTI-ARIAN works have to do with the deity of Christ and of the Holy Ghost, and with the Holy Trinity. By far the most important of these are the fifteen books *De Trinitate* (400-416);—the most profound and discriminating production of the ancient church on the Trinity, in no respect inferior to the kindred works of Athanasius and the two Gregories, and for centuries final to the dogma.<sup>2</sup> This may also be counted among the positive didactic works, for it is not directly controversial. The *Collatio cum Maximino Ariano*, an obscure babbler, belongs to the year 428.

5. The numerous ANTI-PELAGIAN works of Augustine are his most influential and most valuable. They were written between the years 412 and 429. In them Augustine, in his intellectual and spiritual prime, develops his system of anthropology and soteriology, and most nearly approaches the position of evangelical Protestantism: On the Guilt and the Remission of Sins, and Infant Baptism (412); On the Spirit and the Letter (413); On Nature and Grace (415); On the Acts of Pelagius (417); On the Grace of Christ, and Original Sin (418); On Marriage and Concupiscence (419); On Grace and Free Will (426); On Discipline and Grace (427); Against Julian of Eclanum (two large works, written between 421 and 429, the second unfinished, and hence called *Opus imperfectum*); On the Predestination of the Saints (428); On the Gift of Perseverance (429); &c.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> All these in tom. ix. Comp. above, §§ 69 and 70.

<sup>2</sup> Tom. viii. ed. Bened. p. 749 sqq. Comp. § 131, above. The work was stolen from him by some impatient friends before revision, and before the completion of the twelfth book, so that he became much discouraged, and could only be moved to finish it by urgent entreaties.

<sup>3</sup> Opera, tom. x., in two parts, with an Appendix. The same in Migne. Comp. §§ 146-160, above.

VI. EXEGETICAL works. The best of these are: *De Genesi ad literam* (The Genesis word for word), in twelve books, an extended exposition of the first three chapters of Genesis, particularly the history of the creation literally interpreted, though with many mystical and allegorical interpretations also (written between 401 and 415);<sup>1</sup> *Enarrationes in Psalmos* (mostly sermons);<sup>2</sup> the hundred and twenty-four *Homilies on the Gospel of John* (416 and 417);<sup>3</sup> the ten *Homilies on the First Epistle of John* (417); the *Exposition of the Sermon on the Mount* (393); the *Harmony of the Gospels* (*De consensu evangelistarum*, 400); the *Epistle to the Galatians* (394); and the unfinished commentary on the *Epistle to the Romans*.<sup>4</sup>

Augustine deals more in lively, profound, and edifying thoughts on the Scriptures than in proper grammatical and historical exposition, for which neither he nor his readers had the necessary linguistic knowledge, disposition, or taste. He grounded his theology less upon exegesis than upon his Christian and churchly mind, saturated with Scriptural truths.

VII. ETHICAL OR PRACTICAL and ASCETIC works. Among these belong three hundred and ninety-six *Sermones* (mostly very short) *de Scripturis* (on texts of Scripture), *de tempore* (festival sermons), *de sanctis* (in memory of apostles, martyrs, and saints), and *de diversis* (on various occasions), some of them dictated by Augustine, some taken down by hearers.<sup>5</sup> Also various moral treatises: *De continentia* (395); *De men-*

<sup>1</sup> Tom. iii. 117-324. Not to be confounded with two other books on Genesis, in which he defends the biblical doctrine of creation against the Manichæans. In this exegetical work he aimed, as he says, *Retract. ii. c. 24*, to interpret Genesis "non secundum allegoricas significationes, sed secundum rerum gestarum proprietatem." The work is more original and spirited than the *Hexaëmeron* of Basil or of Ambrose.

<sup>2</sup> Tom. iv., the whole volume.

<sup>3</sup> Tom. iii., 289-324.

<sup>4</sup> All in tom. iii.

<sup>5</sup> Tom. v., which contains besides these a multitude (317) of doubtful and spurious sermons, likewise divided into four classes. To these must be added recently discovered sermons, edited from manuscripts in Florence, Monte Cassino, etc., by M. DENIS (1792), O. F. FRANGIPANE (1820), A. L. CAILLAU (Paris, 1836), and ANGELIC MAI (in the *Nova Bibliotheca Patrum*).



lacio (395), against deception (not to be confounded with the similar work already mentioned *Contra mendacium*, against the fraud-theory of the Priscillianists, written in 420); *De agone Christiano* (396); *De opere monachorum*, against monastic idleness (400); *De bono conjugali* adv. Jovinianum (400); *De virginitate* (401); *De fide et operibus* (413); *De adulterinis conjugiiis*, on 1 Cor. vii. 10 sqq. (419); *De bono viduitatis* (418); *De patientia* (418); *De cura pro mortuis gerenda*, to Paulinus of Nola (421); *De utilitate jejunii*; *De diligendo Deo*; *Meditationes*; etc.<sup>1</sup>

As we survey this enormous literary labor, augmented by many other treatises and letters now lost, and as we consider his episcopal labors, his many journeys, and his adjudications of controversies among the faithful, which often robbed him of whole days, we must be really astounded at the fidelity, exuberance, energy, and perseverance of this father of the church. Surely, such a life was worth the living.

§ 180. *The Influence of Augustine upon Posterity and his Relation to Catholicism and Protestantism.*

Before we take leave of this imposing character, and of the period of church history in which he shines as the brightest star, we must add some observations respecting the influence of Augustine on the world since his time, and his position with reference to the great antagonism of Catholicism and Protestantism. All the church fathers are, indeed, the common inheritance of both parties; but no other of them has produced so permanent effects on both, and no other stands in so high regard with both, as Augustine. Upon the Greek church alone has he exercised little or no influence; for this church

<sup>1</sup> Most of them in tom. vi. ed. Bened. On the scripta deperdita, dubia et spuria of Augustine, see the index by SCHÖNEMANN, l. c. p. 60 sqq., and in the supplemental volume of Migne's edition, pp. 34-40. The so-called *Meditations of Augustine* (German translation by AUGUST KROHN, Stuttgart, 1864) are a later compilation by the abbot of Fescamp in France, at the close of the twelfth century, from the writings of Augustine, Gregory the Great, Anselm, and others.

stopped with the undeveloped synergistic anthropology of the previous age.<sup>1</sup>

1. Augustine, in the first place, contributed much to the development of the doctrinal basis which Catholicism and Protestantism hold *in common* against such radical heresies of antiquity as Manichæism, Arianism, and Pelagianism. In all these great intellectual conflicts he was in general the champion of the cause of Christian truth against dangerous errors. Through his influence the canon of Holy Scripture (including, indeed, the Old Testament Apocrypha) was fixed in its present form by the councils of Hippo (393) and Carthage (397). He conquered the Manichæan dualism, hylozoism, and fatalism, and saved the biblical idea of God and of creation, and the biblical doctrine of the nature of sin and its origin in the free will of man. He developed the Nicene dogma of the Trinity, completed it by the doctrine of the double procession of the Holy Ghost, and gave it the form in which it has ever since prevailed in the West, and in which it received classical expression from his school in the Athanasian Creed. In

<sup>1</sup> It betrays a very contracted, slavish, and mechanical view of history, when Roman Catholic divines claim the fathers as their exclusive property; forgetting that they taught a great many things which are as inconsistent with the papal as with the Protestant Creed, and knew nothing of certain dogmas (such as the infallibility of the pope, the seven sacraments, transubstantiation, purgatory, indulgences, auricular confession, the immaculate conception of the Virgin Mary, etc.), which are essential to Romanism. "I recollect well," says Dr. NEWMAN, the former intellectual leader of Oxford Tractarianism (in his Letter to Dr. Pusey on his Eirenicon, 1866, p. 5), "what an outcast I seemed to myself, when I took down from the shelves of my library the volumes of St. Athanasius or St. Basil, and set myself to study them; and how, on the contrary, when at length I was brought into Catholic communion, I kissed them with delight, with a feeling that in them I had more than all that I had lost, and, as though I were directly addressing the glorious saints, who bequeathed them to the Church, I said to the inanimate pages, 'You are now mine, and I am yours, beyond any mistake.'" With the same right the Jews might lay exclusive claim to the writings of Moses and the prophets. The fathers were living men, representing the onward progress and conflicts of Christianity in their time, unfolding and defending great truths, but not unmixed with many errors and imperfections which subsequent times have corrected. Those are the true children of the fathers who, standing on the foundation of Christ and the apostles, and, kissing the New Testament rather than any human writings, follow them only as far as they followed Christ, and who carry forward their work in the onward march of true evangelical catholic Christianity.

Christology, on the contrary, he added nothing, and he died shortly before the great Christological conflicts opened, which reached their ecumenical settlement at the council of Chalcedon, twenty years after his death. Yet he anticipated Leo in giving currency in the West to the important formula: "Two natures in one person."

2. Augustine is also the principal theological creator of the *Latin-Catholic* system as distinct from the Greek Catholicism on the one hand, and from evangelical Protestantism on the other. He ruled the entire theology of the middle age, and became the father of scholasticism in virtue of his dialectic mind, and the father of mysticism in virtue of his devout heart, without being responsible for the excesses of either system. For scholasticism thought to comprehend the divine with the understanding, and lost itself at last in empty dialectics; and mysticism endeavored to grasp the divine with feeling, and easily strayed into misty sentimentalism; Augustine sought to apprehend the divine with the united power of mind and heart, of bold thought and humble faith.\* Anselm, Bernard of Clairvaux, Thomas Aquinas, and Bonaventura, are his nearest of kin in this respect. Even now, since the Catholic church has become a Roman church, he enjoys greater consideration in it than Ambrose, Hilary, Jerome, or Gregory the Great. All this cannot possibly be explained without an interior affinity.†

\* He was summoned to the council of Ephesus, which condemned Nestorianism in 431, but died a year before it met. He prevailed upon the Gallic monk, Leporius, to retract Nestorianism. His Christology is in many points defective and obscure. Comp. DORNER's History of Christology, ii. pp. 90-98. Jerome did still less for this department of doctrine.

† WIGGERS (Pragmat. Darstellung des Augustinismus und Pelagianismus, i. p. 27) finds the most peculiar and remarkable point of Augustine's character in his singular union of intellect and imagination, scholasticism and mysticism, in which neither can be said to predominate. So also HUBER, l. c. p. 313.

‡ NOUVEAUSSON, the able expounder of the philosophy of Augustine, says (l. c. tom. i. p. iv): "Je ne crois pas, qu'excepté saint Paul, aucun homme ait contribué davantage, par sa parole comme par ses écrits, à organiser, à interpréter, à répandre le christianisme; et, après saint Paul, nul apparemment, non pas même le glorieux, l'invincible Athanase, n'a travaillé d'une manière aussi puissante à fonder l'unité catholique."

His very conversion, in which, besides the Scriptures, the personal intercourse of the hierarchical Ambrose and the life of the ascetic Anthony had great influence, was a transition not from heathenism to Christianity (for he was already a Manichæan Christian), but from heresy to the historical, episcopally organized church, as, for the time, the sole authorized vehicle of the apostolic Christianity in conflict with those sects and parties which more or less assailed the foundations of the gospel.<sup>1</sup> It was, indeed, a full and unconditional surrender of his mind and heart to God, but it was at the same time a submission of his private judgment to the authority of the church which led him to the faith of the gospel.<sup>2</sup> In the same spirit he embraced the ascetic life, without which, according to the Catholic principle, no high religion is possible. He did not indeed enter a cloister, like Luther, whose conversion in Erfurt was likewise essentially catholic, but he lived in his house in the simplicity of a monk, and made and kept the vow of voluntary poverty and celibacy.<sup>3</sup>

He adopted Cyprian's doctrine of the church, and completed it in the conflict with Donatism by transferring the predicates of unity, holiness, universality, exclusiveness, and maternity, directly to the actual church of the time, which,

<sup>1</sup> On the catholic and ascetic character of his conversion and his religion, see the observations in my work on Augustine, ch. viii., in the *German* edition.

<sup>2</sup> We recall his famous anti-Manichæan dictum: "Ego evangelio non crederem, nisi me catholicæ ecclesiæ commoveret auctoritas." The Protestant would reverse this maxim, and ground his faith in the church on his faith in Christ and in the gospel. So with the well-known maxim of Irenæus: "Ubi ecclesia, ibi Spiritus Dei, et ubi Spiritus Dei, ibi ecclesia." According to the spirit of Protestantism it would be said conversely: "Where the Spirit of God is, there is the church, and where the church is, there is the Spirit of God."

<sup>3</sup> According to genuine Christian principles it would have been far more noble, if he had married the African woman with whom he had lived in illicit intercourse for thirteen years, who was always faithful to him, as he was to her, and had borne him his beloved and highly gifted Adeodatus; instead of casting her off, and, as he for a while intended, choosing another for the partner of his life, whose excellences were more numerous. The superiority of the evangelical Protestant morality over the Catholic asceticism is here palpable. But with the prevailing spirit of his age he would hardly have enjoyed so great regard, nor accomplished so much good, if he had been married. Celibacy was the bridge from the heathen degradation of marriage to the evangelical Christian exaltation and sanctification of the family life.

with a firm episcopal organization, an unbroken succession, and the Apostles' Creed, triumphantly withstood the eighty or the hundred opposing sects in the heretical catalogue of the day, and had its visible centre in Rome. In this church he had found rescue from the shipwreck of his life, the home of true Christianity, firm ground for his thinking, satisfaction for his heart, and a commensurate field for the wide range of his powers. The predicate of infallibility alone he does not plainly bring forward; he assumes a progressive correction of earlier councils by later; and in the Pelagian controversy he asserts the same independence towards pope Zosimus; which Cyprian before him had shown towards pope Stephen in the controversy on heretical baptism, with the advantage of having the right on his side, so that Zosimus found himself compelled to yield to the African church.<sup>1</sup>

He was the first to give a clear and fixed definition of the sacrament, as a visible sign of invisible grace, resting on divine appointment; but he knows nothing of the number seven; this was a much later enactment. In the doctrine of baptism he is entirely Catholic,<sup>2</sup> though in logical contradiction with his dogma of predestination; but in the doctrine of the holy communion he stands, like his predecessors, Tertullian and Cyprian, nearer to the Calvinistic theory of a spiritual presence and fruition of Christ's body and blood. He also contributed to promote, at least in his later writings, the Catholic faith of miracles,<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> On Augustine's doctrine of the church, see § 71, above, and especially the thorough account by R. ROTHE: *Anfänge der christl. Kirche und ihrer Verfassung*, vol. i. (1837), pp. 679-711. "Augustine," says he, "decidedly adopted Cyprian's conception [of the church] in all essential points. And once adopting it, he penetrated it in its whole depth with his wonderfully powerful and exuberant soul, and, by means of his own clear, logical mind, gave it the perfect and rigorous system which perhaps it still lacked" (p. 679 f.). "Augustine's conception of the doctrine of the church was about standard for succeeding times" (p. 686).

<sup>2</sup> Respecting Augustine's doctrine of baptism, see the thorough discussion in W. WALL's *History of Infant Baptism*, vol. i. p. 173 ff. (Oxford ed. of 1862). His view of the slight condemnation of all unbaptized children contains the germ of the scholastic fancy of the *limbus infantum* and the *pœna damni*, as distinct from the lower regions of hell and the *pœna sensus*.

<sup>3</sup> In his former writings he expressed a truly philosophical view concerning miracles (*De vera relig.* c. 25, § 47; c. 50, § 98; *De utilit. credendi*, c. 16, § 24; *De peccat. meritis et remiss.* l. ii. c. 32, § 52, and *De civit. Dei*, xxii. c. 8); but in

and the worship of Mary;' though he exempts the Virgin only from actual sin, not from original, and, with all his reverence for her, never calls her mother of God. \*

At first an advocate of religious liberty and of purely spiritual methods of opposing error, he afterwards asserted the fatal principle of the *coge intrare*, and lent the great weight of his authority to the system of civil persecution, at the bloody fruits of which in the middle age he himself would have shuddered; for he was always at heart a man of love and gentleness, and personally acted on the glorious principle: "Nothing conquers but truth, and the victory of truth is love." †

Thus even truly great and good men have unintentionally, through mistaken zeal, become the authors of much mischief.

3. But, on the other hand, Augustine is, of all the fathers, nearest to *evangelical Protestantism*, and may be called, in respect of his doctrine of sin and grace, the first forerunner of the Reformation. The Lutheran and Reformed churches have ever conceded to him, without scruple, the cognomen of Saint,

his *Retract. l. i. c. 14, § 5*, he corrects or modifies a former remark in his book *De utilit. credendi*, stating that he did not mean to deny the continuance of miracles altogether, but only such great miracles as occurred at the time of Christ ("quia non tanta nec omnia, non quia nulla fiunt"). See above, §§ 87 and 88, and the instructive monograph of the younger NITZSCH (*Lic. and Privatdocent in Berlin*): *Augustinus' Lehre vom Wunder*, Berlin, 1865 (97 pp.).

\* See above, §§ 81 and 82.

† *Comp. Tract. in Evang. Joannis, viii. c. 9*, where he says: "Cur ergo ait matri filius: Quid mihi et tibi est, mulier? nondum venit hora mea (John ii. 4). Dominus noster Jesus Christus et Deus erat et homo: secundum quod Deus erat, matrem non habebat; secundum quod homo erat, habebat. Mater ergo [Maria] erat carnis, mater humanitatis, mater infirmitatis quam suscepit propter nos." This strict separation of the Godhead from the manhood of Jesus in his birth from the Virgin would have exposed Augustine in the East to the suspicion of Nestorianism. But he died a year before the council of Ephesus, at which Nestorius was condemned.

‡ See above, § 27, p. 144 f. He changed his view partly from his experience that the Donatists, in his own diocese, were converted to the catholic unity "timore legum imperialium," and were afterwards perfectly good Catholics. He adduces also a misinterpretation of Luke xiv. 28, and Prov. ix. 9: "Da sapienti occasionem et sapientior erit." Ep. 98, ad Vincentium Rogatistam, § 17 (tom. ii. p. 287 sq. ed. Bened.). But he expressly discouraged the infliction of death on heretics, and adjured the proconsul Donatus, Ep. 100, by Jesus Christ, not to repay the Donatists in kind. "Corrigi eos cupimus, non necari."

and claimed him as one of the most enlightened witnesses of the truth and most striking examples of the marvellous power of divine grace in the transformation of a sinner. It is worthy of mark, that his Pauline doctrines, which are most nearly akin to Protestantism, are the later and more mature parts of his system, and that just these found great acceptance with the laity. The Pelagian controversy, in which he developed his anthropology, marks the culmination of his theological and ecclesiastical career, and his latest writings were directed against the Pelagian Julian and the Semi-Pelagians in Gaul, who were brought to his notice by the two friendly laymen, Prosper and Hilary. These anti-Pelagian works have wrought mightily, it is most true, upon the Catholic church, and have held in check the Pelagianizing tendencies of the hierarchical and monastic system, but they have never passed into its blood and marrow. They waited for a favorable future, and nourished in silence an opposition to the prevailing system.

Even in the middle age the better sects, which attempted to simplify, purify, and spiritualize the reigning Christianity by return to the Holy Scriptures, and the reformers before the Reformation, such as Wiclif, Huss, Wessel, resorted most, after the apostle Paul, to the bishop of Hippo as the representative of the doctrine of free grace.

The Reformers were led by his writings into a deeper understanding of Paul, and so prepared for their great vocation. No church teacher did so much to mould Luther and Calvin; none furnished them so powerful weapons against the dominant Pelagianism and formalism; none is so often quoted by them with esteem and love.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> LUTHER pronounced upon the church fathers (with whom, however, excepting Augustine, he was but slightly acquainted) very condemnatory judgments, even upon Basil, Chrysostom, and Jerome (for Jerome he had a downright antipathy, on account of his advocacy of fasts, virginity, and monkery); he was at times dissatisfied even with Augustine, because he after all did not find in him his *sola fide*, his *articulus stantis et cadentis ecclesie*, and says of him: "Augustine often erred; he cannot be trusted. Though he was good and holy, yet he, as well as other fathers, was wanting in the true faith." But this cursory utterance is overborne by numerous commendations; and all such judgments of Luther must be taken *cum grano salis*. He calls Augustine the most pious, grave, and sincere of the fathers, the

All the Reformers in the outset, Melancthon and Zwingle among them, adopted his denial of free will and his doctrine of predestination, and sometimes even went beyond him into the abyss of supralapsarianism, to cut out the last roots of human merit and boasting. In this point Augustine holds the same relation to the Catholic church, as Luther to the Lutheran; that is, he is a heretic of unimpeachable authority, who is more admired than censured even in his extravagances; yet his doctrine of predestination was *indirectly* condemned by the pope in Jansenism, as Luther's view was rejected as Calvinism by the Form of Concord.<sup>1</sup> For Jansenism was nothing

patron of divines, who taught a pure doctrine and submitted it in Christian humility to the Holy Scriptures, etc., and he thinks, if he had lived in the sixteenth century, he would have been a Protestant (*si hoc seculo viveret, nobiscum sentiret*), while Jerome would have gone with Rome. Compare his singular but striking judgments on the fathers in *Lutheri Colloquia*, ed. H. E. Bindseil, 1868, tom. iii. 149, and many other places. GANGAUF, a Roman Catholic (a pupil of the philosopher Günther), concedes (l. c. p. 28, note 18) that Luther and Calvin built their doctrinal system mainly on Augustine, but, as he correctly thinks, with only partial right. NOUVEAUSSON, likewise a Roman Catholic, derives Protestantism from a corrupted (!) Augustinianism, and very superficially makes Lutheranism and Calvinism essentially to consist in the denial of the freedom of the will, which was only one of the questions of the Reformation. "On ne saurait le méconnaître, de l'Augustinianisme corrompu, mais enfin de l'Augustinianisme procède le Protestantisme. Car, sans parler de Wiclef et de Huss, qui, nourris de saint Augustin, soutiennent, avec le réalisme platonicien, la doctrine de la prédestination; Luther et Calvin ne font guère autre chose, dans leurs principaux ouvrages, que cultiver des semences d'Augustinianisme" (l. c. ii. p. 176). But the Reformation is far more, of course, than a repristination of an old controversy; it is a new creation, and marks the epoch of modern Christianity which is different both from the mediæval and from ancient or patristic Christianity.

<sup>1</sup> It is well known that LUTHER, as late as 1526, in his work, *De servo arbitrio*, against Erasmus, which he never retracted, proceeded upon the most rigorous notion of the divine omnipotence, wholly denied the freedom of the will, declared it a mere lie (*merum mendacium*), pronounced the calls of the Scriptures to repentance a divine irony, based eternal salvation and eternal perdition upon the secret will of God, and almost exceeded Calvin. See particulars in the books on doctrine-history; the inaugural dissertation of JUL. MÜLLER: *Lutheri de prædestinatione et libero arbitrio doctrina*, Gott. 1832; and a historical treatise on predestination by CARL BECK in the *Studien und Kritiken* for 1847. We add, as a curiosity, the opinion of GIBSON (ch. xxxiii.), who, however, had a very limited and superficial knowledge of Augustine: "The rigid system of Christianity which he framed or restored, has been entertained, with public applause, and secret reluctance, by the Latin church. The church of Rome has canonized Augustine, and reprobated Cal



but a revival of Augustinianism in the bosom of the Roman Catholic church.<sup>1</sup>

The excess of Augustine and the Reformers in this direction is due to the earnestness and energy of their sense of sin and grace. The Pelagian looseness could never beget a reformer. It was only the unshaken conviction of man's own inability, of unconditional dependence on God, and of the almighty power of his grace to give us strength for every good work, which could do this. He who would give others the conviction that he has a divine vocation for the church and for mankind, must himself be penetrated with the faith of an eternal, unalterable decree of God, and must cling to it in the darkest hours.

In great men, and only in great men, great opposites and apparently antagonistic truths live together. Small minds cannot hold them. The catholic, churchly, sacramental, and sacerdotal system stands in conflict with the evangelical Protestant Christianity of subjective, personal experience. The doctrine of universal baptismal regeneration, in particular, which presupposes a universal call (at least within the church), can on principles of logic hardly be united with the doctrine of an absolute predestination, which limits the decree of redemption to a portion of the baptized. Augustine supposes, on the one hand, that every baptized person, through the inward operation of the Holy Ghost, which accompanies the outward act of the sacrament, receives the forgiveness of sins, and is translated from the state of nature into the state of grace, and thus,

vin. Yet as the *real* difference between them is invisible even to a theological microscope, the Molinists are oppressed by the authority of the saint, and the Jansenists are disgraced by their resemblance to the heretic. In the mean while the Protestant Arminians stand aloof, and deride the mutual perplexity of the disputants. Perhaps a reasoner, still more independent, may smile in his turn when he peruses an Arminian commentary on the Epistle to the Romans." NOUZZARSON (ii. 179), from his Romish stand-point, likewise makes Lutheranism to consist "essentiellement dans la question du libre arbitre." But the principle of Lutheranism, and of Protestantism generally, is the supremacy of the Holy Scriptures as a rule of faith, and justification by free grace through faith in Christ.

<sup>1</sup> On the mighty influence of Augustine in the seventeenth century in France, especially on the noble Jansenists, see the works on Jansenism, and also NOUZZARSON, I. c. tom. ii. pp. 186-276.

*qua baptizatus*, is also a child of God and an heir of eternal life; and yet, on the other hand, he makes all these benefits dependent on the absolute will of God, who saves only a certain number out of the "mass of perdition," and preserves these to the end. Regeneration and election, with him, do not, as with Calvin, coincide. The former may exist without the latter, but the latter cannot exist without the former. Augustine assumes that many are actually born into the kingdom of grace only to perish again; Calvin holds that in the case of the non-elect baptism is an unmeaning ceremony; the one putting the delusion in the inward effect, the other in the outward form. The sacramental, churchly system throws the main stress upon the baptismal regeneration to the injury of the eternal election; the Calvinistic and Puritan system sacrifices the virtue of the sacrament to the election; the Lutheran and Anglican system seeks a middle ground, without being able to give a satisfactory theological solution of the problem. The Anglican church allows the two opposite views, and sanctions the one in the baptismal service of the Book of Common Prayer, the other in her Thirty-nine Articles, which are moderately Calvinistic.

It was an evident ordering of God, that the Augustinian system, like the Latin Bible of Jerome, appeared just in that transitional period of history, in which the old civilization was passing away before the flood of barbarism, and a new order of things, under the guidance of the Christian religion, was in preparation. The church, with her strong, imposing organization and her firm system of doctrine, must save Christianity amidst the chaotic turmoil of the great migration, and must become a training-school for the barbarian nations of the middle age.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Guizot, the Protestant historian and statesman, very correctly says in his *Histoire générale de la civilisation en Europe* (Deuxième leçon, p. 45 sq. ed. Bruxelles, 1850): "S'il n'eût pas été une église, je ne sais ce qui en serait advenu au milieu de la chute de l'empire romain. . . . Si le christianisme n'eût été comme dans les premiers temps, qu'une croyance, un sentiment, une conviction individuelle, on peut croire qu'il aurait succombé au milieu de la dissolution de l'empire et de l'invasion des barbares. Il a succombé plus tard, en Asie et dans tous le nord de l'Afrique, sous une invasion de même nature, sous l'invasion des

In this process of training, next to the Holy Scriptures, the scholarship of JEROME and the theology and fertile ideas of AUGUSTINE were the most important intellectual agent.

Augustine was held in so universal esteem that he could exert influence in all directions, and even in his excesses gave no offence. He was sufficiently catholic for the principle of church authority, and yet at the same time so free and evangelical that he modified its hierarchical and sacramental character, reacted against its tendencies to outward, mechanical ritualism, and kept alive a deep consciousness of sin and grace, and a spirit of fervent and truly Christian piety, until that spirit grew strong enough to break the shell of hierarchical tutelage, and enter a new stage of its development. No other father could have acted more beneficently on the Catholicism of the middle age, and more successfully provided for the evangelical Reformation than St. Augustine, the worthy successor of Paul, and the precursor of Luther and Calvin.

Had he lived at the time of the Reformation, he would in all probability have taken the lead of the evangelical movement against the prevailing Pelagianism of the Roman church. For we must not forget that, notwithstanding their strong affinity, there is an important difference between Catholicism and Romanism or Popery. They sustain a similar relation to each other as the Judaism of the Old Testament dispensation, which looked to, and prepared the way for, Christianity, and

barbares musulmans; il a succombé alors, quoiqu'il fût à l'état d'institution, d'église constituée. A bien plus forte raison le même fait aurait pu arriver au moment de la chute de l'empire romain. Il n'y avait alors aucun des moyens par lesquels aujourd'hui les influences morales s'établissent ou résistent indépendamment des institutions, aucun des moyens par lesquels une pure vérité, une pure idée acquiert un grand empire sur les esprits, gouverne les actions, détermine des événements. Rien de semblable n'existait au IV<sup>e</sup> siècle, pour donner aux idées, aux sentiments personnels, une pareille autorité. Il est clair qu'il fallait une société fortement organisée, fortement gouvernée, pour lutter contre un pareil désastre, pour sortir victorieuse d'un tel ouragan. Je ne crois pas trop dire en affirmant qu'à la fin du IV<sup>e</sup> et au commencement du V<sup>e</sup> siècle, c'est l'église chrétienne qui a sauvé le christianisme; c'est l'église avec ses institutions, ses magistrats, son pouvoir, qui s'est défendue vigoureusement contre la dissolution intérieure de l'empire, contre la barbarie, qui a conquis les barbares, qui est devenue le lien, le moyen, le principe de civilisation entre le monde romain et le monde barbare."

the Judaism after the crucifixion and after the destruction of Jerusalem, which is antagonistic to Christianity. Catholicism covers the entire ancient and mediæval history of the church, and includes the Pauline, Augustinian, or evangelical tendencies which increased with the corruptions of the papacy and the growing sense of the necessity of a "reformatio in capite et membris." Romanism proper dates from the council of Trent, which gave it symbolical expression and anathematized the doctrines of the Reformation. Catholicism is the strength of Romanism, Romanism is the weakness of Catholicism. Catholicism produced Jansenism, Popery condemned it. Popery never forgets and never learns anything, and can allow no change in doctrine (except by way of addition), without sacrificing its fundamental principle of infallibility, and thus committing suicide. But Catholicism may ultimately burst the chains of Popery which have so long kept it confined, and may assume new life and vigor.

Such a personage as Augustine, still holding a mediating place between the two great divisions of Christendom, revered alike by both, and of equal influence with both, is furthermore a welcome pledge of the elevating prospect of a future reconciliation of Catholicism and Protestantism in a higher unity, conserving all the truths, losing all the errors, forgiving all the sins, forgetting all the enmities of both. After all, the contradiction between authority and freedom, the objective and the subjective, the churchly and the personal, the organic and the individual, the sacramental and the experimental in religion, is not absolute, but relative and temporary, and arises not so much from the nature of things, as from the deficiencies of man's knowledge and piety in this world. These elements admit of an ultimate harmony in the perfect state of the church, corresponding to the union of the divine and human natures, which transcends the limits of finite thought and logical comprehension, and is yet completely realized in the person of Christ. They are in fact united in the theological system of St. Paul, who had the highest view of the church, as the mystical "body of Christ," and "the pillar and ground of the truth," and who was at the same time the great cham

pion of evangelical freedom, individual responsibility, and personal union of the believer with his Saviour. WE BELIEVE IN AND HOPE FOR ONE HOLY CATHOLIC APOSTOLIC CHURCH, ONE COMMUNION OF SAINTS, ONE FOLD, AND ONE SHEPHERD. The more the different churches become truly Christian, or draw nearer to Christ, and the more they give real effect to His kingdom, the nearer will they come to one another. For Christ is the common head and vital centre of all believers, and the divine harmony of all discordant human sects and creeds. IN CHRIST, says Pascal, one of the greatest and noblest disciples of Augustine, IN CHRIST ALL CONTRADICTIONS ARE SOLVED.

## APPENDIX TO THE REVISED EDITION, 1884.

---

### ADDENDA ET CORRIGENDA.

[In the additions to the Literature I have followed the method of italicizing book-titles and words in foreign languages, as in the revised edition of vols. i. and ii. The same method will be carried out in all subsequent volumes.]

Page 11. Add to Literature on Constantine the Great :

TH. ZAHN: *Constantin der Grosse und die Kirche*. Hannover, 1876. DEMETRIADES: *Die christl. Regierung und Orthodoxie Kaiser Constantin's des Gr.* München, 1878. TH. BRIEGER: *Constantin der Gr. als Religionspolitiker*. Gotha, 1880. E. L. CUTTS: *Constantine the Great*. Lond. and N. Y., 1881. W. GASS: *Konstantin der Gr. und seine Söhne*, in Herzog,<sup>1</sup> viii. (1881), 199–207. JOHN WORDSWORTH: *Const. the Gr. and his Sons*, in Smith and Wace, i. 623–654. EDM. STAFFER: in Lichtenberger, iii. 388–393.—Comp. also vol. ii. p. 64–74, especially on the Edicts of Toleration (only two, not three, as formerly assumed).

Page 11. In Note <sup>1</sup> change reference (from vol. i. § 57) to :  
vol. ii. § 25 (p. 71 sqq.).

Page 40. Add to Lit. on the heathen sources :

JULIANI imperatoris *Librorum contra Christianos quæ supersunt*. Collegit, recensuit, prolegomenis instruxit CAR. JOA. NEUMANN. *Insunt Cyrilli Alexandrini fragmenta syriaca ab Eberh. Nestle edita*. Lips., 1880. KAISER JULIAN'S *Bücher gegen die Christen*. Nach ihrer Wiederherstellung übersetzt von KARL JOH. NEUMANN. Leipzig, 1880. 53 pages. This is Fasc. iii. of *Scriptorum Græcorum qui Christianam impugnaverunt religionem quæ supersunt*, ed. by Neumann.

Page 40, bottom of the page. Add to works on Julian the Apostate :

ALB. DE BROGLIE (R. C.), in the third and fourth vols. of his *L'église et l'empire romain au quatrième siècle*. Par., 4th ed., 1868. (Very full.)

J. F. A. MÜCKE: *Flavius Claudius Julianus. Nach den Quellen.* Gotha, 1867 and 1869. 2.vols. (Full, painstaking, prolix, too much dependent on Ammianus, and partial to Julian.) KELLERBAUM: *Skizze der Vorgeschichte Julians*, 1877. F. RODE: *Gesch. der Reaction des Kaiser Julianus gegen die christl. Kirche.* Jena, 1877. (Careful, partly against Teuffel and Mücke.) H. ADRIEN NAVILLE: *Julien l'apostate et sa philosophie du polythéisme.* Paris and Neuchatel, 1877. Comp. his art. in Lichtenberger's "Encyclop.," vii. 519-525. TORQUATI: *Studi storico-critici sulla vita . . . di Giuliano l'Apostata.* Rom., 1878. G. H. RENDALL: *The Emperor Julian: Paganism and Christianity.* Lond., 1879. J. G. E. HOFFMANN: *Jul. der Abtrünnige, Syrische Erzählungen.* Leiden, 1880. (Old romances reflecting the feelings of the Eastern Christians.) Comp. also art. on Jul. in the "Encycl. Brit.," 9th ed., vol. xiii. 768-770 (by KIRKUP); in Herzog<sup>3</sup>, vii. 285-296 (by HARNACK); in Smith and Wace, iii. 484-524 (by Prebendary JOHN WORDSWORTH, very full and fair).

Page 43. Note <sup>1</sup> (instead of i § 61), read:

Comp. vol. ii. § 34.

Page 81, last line, after Münter, 1826, add:

; by C. Bursian, Lips., 1856; C. Halm, Vienna, 1867. (First ed. by Flavius Illyricus, 1562, from one MS.)

Page 93. Add as footnote <sup>2</sup>:

<sup>2</sup> Jerome, who was a shrewd observer of men and things, and witnessed the first effects of the union of church and state, says: "*Ecclesia postquam ad Christianos principes venit, potentia quidem et divitiis major, sed virtutibus minor facta.*"

Page 143. Add at the bottom of the page:

H. WEINGARTEN: *Der Ursprung des Mönchthums im nachconstantinischen Zeitalter.* Gotha, 1877. See also his art. in Herzog<sup>3</sup>, x. 758 sqq. AD. HARNACK: *Das Mönchthum, seine Ideale und seine Geschichte.* Giessen, 1882.—Comp. vol. i. ch. ix. p. 387 sqq.

Page 226. Add to footnote:

AD. FRANZ, *Marcus Aur. Cassiodorus Senator.* Breslau, 1872.

Page 242, § 50, add:

See Lit. on clerical celibacy in vol. i. p. 403 sq., especially THEINER, LEA, and VON SCHULTE.

Page 314. Add to Lit. on Leo the Great:

FRIEDRICH (old Cath.): *Zur ältesten Geschichte des Primates in der Kirche.* Bonn, 1879. JOS. LANGEN (old Cath.): *Geschichte der röm. Kirche bis zum Pontificate Leo's I.* Bonn, 1881. KARL MÜLLER, in Herzog<sup>3</sup>,

viii. (1881), 551-563. C. GORE, in Smith and Wace, iii. (1882), 652-678. By the same: *Leo the Great* (Lond. Soc. for Promoting Christ. Knowledge, 175 pages). On the literary merits of Leo, see EBERT: *Geschichte der christl. lat. Lit.*, vol. i. 447-449.

Page 329. Add to § 64 the following:

## LIST OF POPES AND EMPERORS

FROM CONSTANTINE THE GREAT TO GREGORY THE GREAT, A.D. 314-590.

Comp. the lists in vol. i. 166 sqq., and vol. iv. 205 sqq.

This list is based upon Jaffe's *Regesta*, Potthast's *Biblioth. Hist. Medii Aevi*, and conformed to Cardinal Hergenröther's list, in his *Kirchengesch.*, second ed. (1880), vol. iii. 598 sqq.

A.D.	POPES.	EMPERORS.	A.D.
311-314,	Melchiodes.	Constantine I., or the Great,	
314-335,	Silvester I.		306 (323)-337.
336-337,	Marcus.	Constantine II. (in Gaul),	337-340.
337-352,	Julius I.	Constantius II. (in the East),	} 337-350.
		Constans (in Italy),	
352-366,	Liberius.	Constantius alone,	350-361.
(357,	Felix II., Antipope.)	Julian,	361-363.
		Jovian,	363-364.
366-384,	Damasus.	Valentinian I.,	364-375.
		Valens,	364-378.
(368-387,	Ursicinus, Antipope.)	Gratian,	375-383.
		Valentinian II. (in the West),	} 375-392.
385-398,	Siricius.	Theodosius,	
398-402,	Anastasius.	Arcadius (in the East),	379-395.
402-417,	Innocent I.	Honorius (in the West),	395-408.
417-418,	Zosimus.	Theodosius II. (E.),	395-423.
418-422,	Bonifacius.		408-450.
(418, Dec. 27,	Eulalius, Antipope.)		
422-432,	Coelestinus I.	Valentinian III. (W.),	423-455.
432-440,	Sixtus III.		
440-461,	Leo I. the Great.	Marcian (E.),	450-457.
		Maximus Avitus (W.),	455-457.
		Majorian (W.),	457-461.
		Leo I. (E.),	457-474.
461-468,	Hilarus.	Severus (W.),	461-465.
		Vacancy (W.),	465-467.



A.D.	POPES.	EMPERORS.	A.D.
468-483,	Simplicius.	Anthemius (W.),	467-472.
		Olybrius (W.),	472-473.
		Glycerius (W.),	473-474.
		Julius Nepos (W.),	474
		{ Leo II.,	474
		{ Zeno,	474-476.
		{ Basiliscus (all E.),	476-477.
		Romulus Augustulus (W.)	475
		End of the Western Line }	476
		in Romulus Augustulus, }	
		(Henceforth, till A.D. 800,	
		Emperors reigning at Con-	
		stantinople).	
483-492,	Felix III. (or II.).	Anastasius I.,	491-518.
492-496,	Gelasius I.		
496-498,	Anastasius II.		
498-514,	Symmachus.		
(498- Nov.,	501, Laurentius, Antipope.)		
514-523,	Hormisdas.	Justin I.,	518-527.
523-525,	John I.		
526-530,	Felix IV. (or III.).	Justinian,	527-565.
530-532,	Bonifacius II.		
532-535,	John II.		
535-536,	Agapetus I.		
536-540,	Silverius.		
540-554,	Vigilius.		
555-560,	Pelagius I.		
560-573,	John III.	Justin II.,	565-574.
574-578,	Benedict I.	Tiberius II.,	574-582.
578-590,	Pelagius II.	Maurice,	582-602.
590-604,	Gregory I. the Great.	Phocas,	602-610.

Page 330, line 8 from below, read after HEFELE (R. C.):

*Conciliengeschichte*, Freiburg i. B. 1855 sqq.; second revised ed. 1873 sqq., 7 vols., down to the Council of Florence (1447).

Page 353. Add to footnote:

The reign of Pope Pius IX. has added another Council to the Latin list of œcumenical councils, that of the Vatican, 1870, which is counted as the twentieth (by Bishop Hefele, in the revised edition of his *Conciliengesch.*, i. 60), and which decreed the infallibility of the Pope in all his official utterances, thereby superseding the necessity of future œcumenical councils. See the author's *Creeeds of Christendom*, i. 134 sqq.

Page 356, line 2 from above (for vol. i. § 114), read:  
vol. ii. § 57 (p. 187).

Page 357, line 1 from bottom, same change in reference.

Page 360, footnote, change reference to :

vol. ii. § 57, p. 193 sqq.

Pages 365 and 366. Omit reference to vol. i. in footnote.

Page 404. Change reference in Lit. to :

vol. ii. § 62.

Page 480. Change reference in Lit. to :

vol. i. § 54, and vol. ii. § 70.

Page 518. Add to Lit. :

C. A. HAMMOND : *Antient Liturgies* (with introduction, notes, and liturgical glossary). Oxford, 1878.

Page 541. § 103. *Church Architecture* :

On the history of Architecture in general, see the works of KUGLER : *Geschichte der Baukunst* (1859, 3 vols.) ; SCHNAASE : *Gesch. der Kunst* (1843-66, 8 vols.) ; LÜBKE : *History of Art* (Eng. transl. New York, 1877, 2 vols.) ; VIOLLET LE DUC : *Lectures on Architecture* (London, 1877), and his numerous works in French, including *Dictionnaire de l'architecture Française* (Paris, 1853-69, 10 vols.) ; JAMES FERGUSON : *History of Architecture of all Countries from the earliest Times to the present* (Lond., 1865 ; 2d ed., 1874, 4 vols.) .—On church architecture in particular : RICHARD BROWN : *Sacred Architecture ; its Rise, Progress, and Present State* (Lond., 1845) ; KREUSER : *Der christl. Kirchenbau* (Bonn, 1851) ; HÜBSCH : *Allchristl. Kirchen* (Karlsruhe, 1858-61) ; DE VOGÜÉ : *Architecture civile et relig. du I<sup>er</sup> au VII<sup>e</sup> siècle* (Paris, 1877, 2 vols.) ; CH. E. NORTON : *Studies of Church Buildings in the Middle Ages* (New York, 1880). There are also special works on the basilicas in Rome, Constantinople, and Ravenna. See §§ 106 and 107.

Page 560. § 109. *Crosses and Crucifixes*.

Comp. the Lit. in vol. ii. §§ 75 and 77.

Page 563. Add to Lit. :

Mrs. JAMESON and Lady EASTLAKE : *The History of Our Lord as exemplified in Works of Art* (with illustrations). London, 1864 ; second ed. 1865. 2 vols. Also the works on Christian Art, and on the Catacombs quoted in vol. ii. §§ 75 and 82.

Page 622. Add to Lit., line 5 from below :

EUGÈNE REVILLOUT : *Le Concile de Nicée d'après les textes coptes et les diverses collections canoniques*. Paris, 1881.

Page 651. Add to Lit., line 13 :

THEOD. ZAHN : *Marcellus von Ancyra*. Gotha, 1867. (Zahn represents Marcellus as essentially orthodox and agreed with Irenæus, but

as seeking to gain a more simple and satisfactory conception of the truth from the Bible than the theology of the age presented. Neander, *Dogmengesch.*, i. 275, had suggested a similar view.) W. MÖLLER: *Art. Marcellus* in Herzog's vol. ix. (1881), 279-282. (Partly in opposition to Zahn.) E. S. FFOULKES, in Smith and Wace, iii. 808-813. (Ignores the works of Zahn and other German writers.)

Page 689. § 132. *The Athanasian Creed.* Add to Lit.:

A. P. STANLEY: *The Athanasian Creed.* Lond., 1871. E. S. FFOULKES: *The Athanasian Creed.* Lond., 1872. CH. A. HEURTLEY: *The Athanasian Creed.* Oxf., 1872. (Against Ffoulkes.) J. R. LUMBY: *History of the Creeds.* Cambridge, 1873; second ed. 1880. The UTRECHT PSALTER, a facsimile ed., published in London, 1875. This contains the oldest MS. of the Athan. Creed, which by Ussher and Waterland was assigned to the sixth century, but by recent scholars to the ninth century. C. A. SWAINSON: *The Nicene and Apostles' Creeds, together with an Account of the Growth and Reception of the Creed of St. Athanasius.* Lond., 1875. (Comp. his art. *Creed* in Smith and Wace, i. 711.) G. D. W. OMMANEY: *Early History of the Athan. Creed. An Examination of Recent Theories.* Lond., 1875; 2d ed. 1880. SCHAFF: *Creeds of Christendom*, i. 34 sqq. and ii. 66-72, 555 sq. (With a facsimile of the oldest MS. from the Utrecht Psalter.)

Page 696.

The statements concerning the origin and age of the Athanasian Creed should be conformed to the author's views as expressed in his work on *Creeds*, i. 36. The latest investigations do not warrant us to trace it higher than the eighth or seventh century. The first commentary on it ascribed to Venantius Fortunatus, 570, is of doubtful genuineness, and denied to him by Gieseler, Ffoulkes, and others. The majority of recent Anglican writers, including Stanley, Swainson, and Lumby, assign the Creed to an unknown author in Gaul between A.D. 750 and 850, probably during the reign of Charlemagne (d. 814). Hardy and Ommamey plead for an earlier date. The question is not yet fully settled. The Creed consists of two parts, one on the Trinity and one on the Incarnation, which were afterward welded together by a third hand. The second part was found separately as a fragment of a sermon on the Incarnation, at Treves, in a MS. from the middle of the eighth century, and was first published by Prof. Swainson, 1871, and again in 1875.

Page 872. Add to Lit. on Eusebius:

FR. AD. HEINICHEN: *Eusebii Pamphili Scripta Historica.* New ed. Lips., 1868-70. 3 Tom. The third vol. (804 pages) contains *Commentarii et Meltemata.* The ample indexes and critical and explanatory notes make this the most useful edition of the Church History and other historical works of Eusebius. DINDORF's ed., Lips., 1867 sqq., 4

vols., includes the two apologetic works. Best ed. of the *Chronicle* by ALFRED SCHÖNE: *Eusebii Chronicorum libri II.* Berol. 1866 and 1875. 2 Tom., 4°. Schöne was assisted by Petermann in the Armenian Version, and by Rödiger in the Syriac Epitome. He gives also the *χρονολογείον σύντομον* of the year 853, the first part of which professes to be derived from the labors of Eusebius. STEIN: *Eusebius nach s. Leben, s. Schriften, und s. dogmatischen Charakter.* Würzburg, 1859. Bishop LIGHTFOOT: art. *Eusebius of Cæs.* in Smith and Wace, vol. ii. 308-348 (full and fair). SEMERICH: art. *Eus. v. Cæs.* in Herzog,<sup>1</sup> vol. iv. 390-398. E. CHASTEL: in Lichtenberger, iv. 627-630.

Page 885. Add to Lit. on Athanasius:

G. R. SIEVERS: *Athanastii Vita acephala* (written before 412, first publ. by Maffei, 1738). *Ein Beitrag zur Gesch. des Athan.* In the "Zeitschr. für hist. Theol." (ed. by Kahnis). Gotha, 1868, pp. 89-162. BÖHRINGER: *Athanasius und Arius*, in his *Kirchengesch. in Biogr.* Bd. vi., new ed. Leipz., 1874. HERGENROTHER (R. C.): *Der heil. Athanas. der Gr.* Cologne, 1877 (an essay, pages 24). L. ATZBERGER: *Die Logoslehre des heil. Athanas.* München, 1880. W. MÜLLER: Art. *Athan.* in Herzog,<sup>1</sup> i. 740-747. LÜDTKE: in Wetzzer and Welte,<sup>2</sup> i. (1882), 1534-1543.

Page 890. Add to footnote at the bottom:

Villemain considers Athanasius the greatest man between the Apostles and Gregory VII., and says of him: "*Sa vie, ses combats, son génie servirent plus à l'agrandissement du christianisme que toute la puissance de Constantin. . . . Athanase cherche le triomphe, et non le martyre. Tel qu'un chef de parti, tel qu'un général expérimenté qui se sent nécessaire aux siens, Athan. ne s'expose que pour le succès, ne combat que pour vaincre, se retire quelque fois pour reparaitre avec l'éclat d'un triomphe populaire.*" (*Tableau de l'éloquence chrétienne au IV<sup>e</sup> siècle*, p. 92.)

Page 894, line 11. Add to Lit. on St. Basil:

DÖRGENS: *Der heil. Basilus und die class. Studien.* Leipz., 1857. EUG. FIALON: *Étude historique et littéraire sur S. Basile, suivie de l'hexameron.* Paris, 1861. G. R. SIEVERS: *Leben des Libanios.* Berl., 1868 (p. 294 sqq.). BÖHRINGER: *Die drei Kappadozier oder die trinitarischen Epigonen* (Basil, Gregory of Nyssa, and Gregory of Naz.), in *Kirchengesch. in Biograph.*, new ed. Bd. vii. and viii. 1875. WEISS: *Die drei grossen Kappadozier als Exegeten.* Braunsberg, 1872. R. TRAVERS SMITH: *St. Basil the Great.* London, 1879. (Soc. for Promoting Christian Knowledge), 282 pages. SCHOLL: *Des heil. Basil Lehre von der Gnade.* Freib., 1881. W. MÖLLER, in Herzog,<sup>2</sup> ii. 116-121. E. VENABLES, in Smith and Wace, i. 282-297.

Page 904, line 7. Add to Lit. on Gregory of Nyssa :

BÖHRINGER: *Kirchengesch. in Biogr.*, new ed., vol. viii. 1876. G. HEERMANN: *Greg. Nyss. Sententie de salute adipiscenda*. Halle, 1875. J. BERGADES: *De universo et de anima hominis doctrina Gregor. Nyss.* Leipz., 1876. W. MÖLLER, in Herzog,<sup>1</sup> v. 396-404. E. VENABLES, in Smith and Wace, ii. 761-768. A. PAUMIER, in Lichtenberger, 723-725. On his doctrine of the Trinity and the Person of Christ, see especially BAUR and DORNER. On his doctrine of the *apokatastasis* and relation to Origen, see MÖLLER, G. HEERMANN, and BERGADES, *l. c.*

Page 909, line 4. Add to Lit. on Gregory of Nazianzus :

A. GRENIER: *La vie et les poésies de saint Grégoire de Nazianze*. Paris, 1858. BÖHRINGER: *K. G. in Biogr.*, new ed., vol. viii. 1876. Abbé A. BENOÎT: *Vie de saint Grégoire de Nazianze*. Paris, 1877. J. H. NEWMAN: *Church of the Fathers*, pp. 116-145, 551. DABAS: *La femme au quatrième siècle dans les poésies de Grég. de Naz.* Bordeaux, 1868. H. W. WATKINS, in Smith and Wace, ii. 741-761. W. GASS, in Herzog,<sup>1</sup> v. 392-396. A. PAUMIER, in Lichtenberger, v., 716-722. On his christology, see NEANDER, BAUR, and especially DORNER. His views on future punishment have been discussed by FARRAR, and PUSEY (see vol. ii. 606, and 612 note).

Page 920, line 22. Add :

In one of his plaintive songs from his religious retreat, after lamenting the factions of the church, the loss of youth, health, strength, parents, and friends, and his gloomy and homeless condition, Gregory thus gives touching expression to his faith in Christ as the last and only comforter :

“Thy will be done, O Lord ! That day shall spring,  
When at thy word, this clay shall reappear.  
No death I dread, but that which sin will bring ;  
No fire or flood without thy wrath I fear ;  
For Thou, O Christ, my King, art fatherland to me.  
My wealth, and might, and rest ; my all I find in Thee.”<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Πρὸς αὐτόν, in Daniel's *Thesaurus Hymnol.*, iii., 11 :

Χριστὲ ἄναξ, σὺ δὲ μοι πᾶτερ, σθένος, ἑλπίς, πάντα,  
Σοὶ δ' ἔρ' ἀναψύξαιμι βίον καὶ κῆδε' ἀμείψας.

Page 924. After line 2, add to Lit. on Cyril of Jerusalem :

J. H. NEWMAN: Preface to the Oxford transl. of Cyril in the “Library of the Fathers” (1839). E. VENABLES, in Smith and Wace, i. 760-763. C. BURK, in Herzog,<sup>1</sup> iii. 416-418. .

Page 933, line 4 from below. Add to Lit. on Chrysostom :

VILLEMAIN: *L'éloquence chrétienne dans le quatrième siècle*. Paris, 1849 ; new ed. 1857. P. ALBERT: *S. Jean Chrysostôme considéré*

*comme orateur populaire*. Paris, 1858. ARBÉ ROCHET : *Histoire de S. Jean Chrysostôme*. Paris, 1866. 2 vols. TH. FÜSTER : *Chrysostomus in seinem Verhältnisse zur antiochenischen Schule*. Gotha, 1869. W. MAGGILVRAY : *John of the Golden Mouth*. Lond., 1871. AM. THIERRY : *S. J. Chrysostôme et l' impératrice Eudoxie*. 2d ed. Paris, 1874. BÖHRINGER : *Johann Chrysostomus und Olympias*, in his *K. G. in Biogr.*, vol. ix., new ed., 1876. W. R. W. STEPHENS : *St. Chrysostom : his Life and Times*. London, 1872; 2d ed., 1880. E. VENABLES, in Smith and Wace, i. 518-535. (Mostly from Stephens.) C. BURK, in Herzog,<sup>3</sup> iii. 225-231. E. DANDIRAN, in Lichtenberger, iii. 165-176.

Page 942, line 14. Add to Lit. on Cyril of Alex :

A new ed. of Cyril's works, including his *Com. on the Minor Prophets, the Gospel of John, the Five Books against Nestorius, the Scholia on the Incarnation*, etc., was prepared with great pains by PHILIP PUSEY (son of Dr. Pusey). Oxf., 1868-81. In 5 vols. Engl. trans. in the Oxford "Library of the Fathers." 1874 sqq. See an interesting sketch of Ph. Pusey (d. 1880) and his ed. in the "Church Quarterly Review" (London), Jan., 1883, pp. 257-291.

Page 942, line 24. Add :

HEFELZ : *Conciliengesch.*, vol. ii., revised ed. (1875), where Cyril figures very prominently, pp. 135, 157, 167 sqq., 247 sqq., 266 sqq., etc. C. BURK, in Herzog,<sup>3</sup> iii. 418 sq. W. BRIGHT : *St. Cyrillus of Al.*, in Smith and Wace, i. 763-773.

Page 950. Add to Lit. on Ephræm :

*Evangelii Concordantis Expositio facta a S. Ephræmo Doctore Syro*. Venet., 1876. (A Commentary on Tatian's *Diatessaron*, found in the Mechitarist Convent at Venice in an Armenian translation, translated into Latin, 1841, by Aucher, and published with an introduction by Prof. Mössinger of Salzburg.) Comp. also the art. Ephræm, in Herzog,<sup>3</sup> iv. 255-261 (by Rödiger, revised by Spiegel). In Smith and Wace, ii. 137-145 (by E. Venables).

Page 955. Add to Lit. on Lactantius :

English translation by W. FLETCHER, in Clark's "Ante-Nicene Library," vols. xxi. and xxii. Edinb., 1871. For an estimate of his literary merits, see EBERT : *Gesch. der christl. lat. Lit.* Leipz., 1874 sqq., vol. i. 70-86. EBERT, in Herzog,<sup>3</sup> viii. 364-366. FFOULKES, in Smith and Wace, iii. 613-617.

Page 959, line 9. Add to Lit. on Hilary of Poitiers :

REINKENS : *Hilarius von Poitiers*. Schaffhausen, 1864. SEMISCH, in Herzog,<sup>3</sup> vi. 416-427. CAZENOVE, in Smith and Wace, ii. 54-66, and his *St. Hilary of Poitiers*. Lond., 1883. (Soc. for Promot. Christian Knowledge.)

Page 961. Add to Lit. on Ambrose :

BARNARD: *Histoire de S. Ambroise*. Paris, 1871. EBERT: *Gesch. der christl. lat. Lit.*, i. 135-176 (1874). ROBINSON THORNTON: *St. Ambrose: his Life, Times, and Teaching*. Lond., 1879, 215 pages (Soc. for Promoting Christ. Knowledge). PLITT, in Herzog, i. 331-335. J. LL. DAVIES, in Smith and Wace, i. 91-99. CUNITZ, in Lichtenberger, i. 229-232. On the hymns of Ambrose, comp. especially Ebert, l. c.

Page 967. Add to Lit. on Jerome :

AMÉDÉE THIERRY: *St. Jérôme, la société chrétienne à Rome et l'émigration romaine en terre sainte*. Par., 1867. 2 vols. (He says at the close : "There is no continuation of Jerome's work ; a few more letters of Augustine and Paulinus, and night falls on the West.") LUEBECK: *Hieronymus quos noverit scriptores et ex quibus hauserit*. Leipzig, 1872. EBERT: *Gesch. der christl. lat. Lit.* Leipz., 1874 sqq., i. 176-203 (especially on the Latinity of Jerome, in which he places him first among the fathers). EDWARD L. CUTTS: *St. Jerome*. London, 1877 (Soc. for Promot. Chr. Knowledge), 230 pages. ZÖCKLER, in Herzog, vi. 103-108. CUNITZ, in Lichtenberger, vii. 243-250. FREEMANTLE, in Smith and Wace, iii. 29-50. ("Jerome lived and reigned for a thousand years. His writings contain the whole spirit of the church of the middle ages, its monasticism, its contrast of sacred things with profane, its credulity and superstition, its subjection to hierarchical authority, its dread of heresy, its passion for pilgrimages. To the society which was thus in a great measure formed by him, his Bible was the greatest boon which could have been given. But he founded no school and had no inspiring power ; there was no courage or width of view in his spiritual legacy which could break through the fatal circle of bondage to received authority which was closing round mankind.")

On Jerome as a Bible translator, comp. F. KAULEN (R. C.) : *Geschichte der Vulgata*. Mainz, 1869. HERMANN RÖNSCH: *Itala und Vulgata. Das Sprachidiom der urchristlichen Itala und der katholischen Vulgata*. 2d ed., revised. Marburg, 1875. L. ZIEGLER: *Die latein Bibelübersetzungen vor Hieronymus und die Itala des Augustinus*. München, 1879. (He maintains the existence of several Latin versions or revisions before Jerome.) WESTCOTT's art. "Vulgate," in Smith's *Dict. of the Bible*. O. F. FRITZSCHE: *Latein. Bibelübersetzungen*, in the new ed. of Herzog, vol. viii. (1881), pp. 433-472. WESTCOTT and HORT's *Greek Testament*, vol. ii., *Introd.*, pp. 78-84.

Page 969, line 13. Add to Lit. on Augustine :

English translations of select works of Aug. by Dr. PUSEY and others in the Oxford "Library of the Fathers": the Confessions, vol. i., 1839, 4th ed., 1853 ; Sermons, vol. xvi., 1844, and vol. xx., 1845 ; Short

Treatises, vol. xxii., 1847; Expositions on the Psalms, vols. xxiv., xxv., xxx., xxxii., xxxvii., xxxix., 1847, 1849, 1850, 1853, 1854; Homilies on John, vols. xxvi. and xxix., 1848 and 1849. Another translation by MARCUS DODS and others, Edinb. (T. and T. Clark), 1871-76, 15 vols., containing the City of God, the Anti-Donatist, the Anti-Pelagian, the Anti-Manichæan writings, Letters, On the Trinity, the Sermon on the Mount, and the Harmony of the Gospels, On Christian Doctrine, the Euchiridion, on Catechising, on Faith and the Creed, Lectures on John, and Confessions. German translation of select writings of Aug. in the Kempten *Bibliothek der Kirchenväter*, 1871-79, 8 vols. There are also separate translations and editions of the Confessions (by Silbert, 5th ed., Vienna, 1860; by Kautz, Arnshausen, 1840; by Wilden, Schaffhausen, 1865; by Rapp, 7th ed., Gotha, 1878), the Euchiridion, the Meditations, the City of God (*Die Stadt Gottes*, by Silbert, Vienna, 1827, 2 vols.), etc.

On the same page, line 30. Substitute and add at the close of Lit.:

C. BINDEMANN: *Der heil. Augustin*. Berlin, 1844-55-69. 3 vols. GANGAUF: *Des heil. Aug. Lehre von Gott dem dreieinigen*. Augsburg, 1866. REINKENS: *Geschichtsphilosophie des heil. Augustin*. Schaffhausen, 1866. EMIL FEUERLEIN: *Ueber die Stellung Augustin's in der Kirchen- und Kulturgeschichte*. 1869. (In v. Sybel's "Hist. Zeitschrift" for 1869, vol. xi., 270-313. ERNST: *Die Werke und Tugenden der Ungläubigen nach Augustin*. Freib., 1872. BÖHRINGER: *Aurelius Augustinus*, revised ed. Leipz., 1877-78. 2 parts. AUG. DORNER: *Augustinus, sein theol. System und seine religionsphilosophische Anschauung*. Berlin, 1873. EBERT: *Gesch. der christl. lat. Lit.* Leipzig, 1874 sqq., vol. i. 203-243. EDWARD L. CUTTS: *St. Augustine*. London (Soc. for Prom. Christian Knowledge), 1880. H. REUTER: *Augustinische Studien*, in Brieger's "Zeitschrift für Kirchengesch." for 1880-83 (four articles on Aug.'s doctrine of the church, predestination, the kingdom of God, etc.). CH. H. COLLETT: *St. Aug., a Sketch of his Life and Writings as affecting the Controversy with Rome*. Lond., 1883. Comp. also the art. *Aug.* by PRESSENSÉ, in Smith and Wace, i. 216-225; by HERGENROTHER, in Wetzzer and Welte,<sup>1</sup> i. 1669-1678; and by AUG. DORNER, in Herzog,<sup>2</sup> i. 781-795, abridged and supplemented in Schaff's Herzog, i. 174 sqq.

On the Philosophy of Aug., compare besides the works quoted on same page:

ERDMANN: *Grundriss der Gesch. der Philos.*, i. 231 sqq. UEBERWEG: *History of Philos.* Engl. transl. by Morris, vol. i. 333-346. GANGAUF: *Metaphysische Psychologie des heil. Aug.* Augsb., 1852. FERAZ: *De la psychologie de S. Aug.* 2d ed. Paris, 1869. SCHÜTZ: *Augustinum non esse ontologum*. Monast., 1867. G. LOESCHE: *De Augustino Plotinziante in doctrina de Deo disserenda*. Jense, 1880. (68 pages.)





# ALPHABETICAL INDEX

TO THE

## THIRD VOLUME.

### A

**ABGARUS**, p. 569.  
**ABYSSINIANS**, 777 f.  
**ACTA SANCTORUM**, 446 ff., and passim in the Literature.  
**ADEODATUS**, 992, 1008 f.  
**ADVENT**, 397.  
**ÆLURUS, TIMOTHEUS**, 765.  
**ÆRIUS**, 233.  
**ÆTIUS**, 637.  
**AGAPETUS**, 326.  
**AGNOSTA**, 767.  
**AKTISTOTA**, 767.  
**ALARIC**, 641.  
**ALEXANDER OF ALEXANDRIA**, 620.  
**ALEXANDRIAN SCHOOL OF THEOLOGY**, 236, 612, 619, 706, 922, 937, 946.  
**ALL SAINTS, FEAST OF**, 408, 444.  
**ALTAR**, 549.  
**ALYPHUS**, 992, 1008.  
**AMBROSE**, on persecution, 143; on monasticism, 201; on the papacy, 304; on church discipline (Theodosius M.), 359, 963; on Mariolatry, 417; on the worship of saints and relics, 440, 457, 458; liturgy of, 533; his hymns, 590 f.; his life and writings, 961-967; influence on Augustine, 991.  
**AMBROSIASTER**, 965.  
**ANAPHORA**, 525.  
**ANASTASIA, CHURCH OF**, 917, 919.  
**ANASTASIUS II.**, pope, 324.  
**ANATOLIUS OF CONSTANTINOPLE**, 583.  
**ANDREW OF CRETE**, 583.

**ANGELO MAI**, 949, and passim in the Literature, especially ch. x.  
**ANGELA, WORSHIP OF**, 430.  
**ANHYPOSTASIA**, 757 ff.  
**ANNUNCIATION OF MARY**, 425.  
**ANTHIMUS**, 769.  
**ANTHONY OF EGYPT**, 181 ff.  
**ANTHROPOLOGICAL CONTROVERSIES**, 785 ff.  
**ANTHUSA**, 934.  
**ANTIOCHIAN SCHOOL OF THEOLOGY**, 612, 707, 937.  
**APHTHARTODOCETS**, 766.  
**APIARIUS**, 294.  
**APOLLINARIANISM**, 709 ff.  
**APOLLINARIUS**, 709 ff.  
**APOLOGETICS AND POLEMICS**, 72, 81, etc.  
**AQUILEIA**, 274, 293.  
**ARAUSIO, SYNOD OF**, 866.  
**ARCADIUS**, 66, 129, 704..  
**ARCHBISHOPS**, 270.  
**ARCHITECTURE**, 541.  
**ARCHPRESBYTER**, 259.  
**ARIANISM**, 618 ff., 641 ff., 644 ff.  
**ARIUS**, 620, 627, 638.  
**ARMENIANS**, 779 ff.  
**ASCENSION DAY**, 408.  
**ASCETICISM**, 149 ff.  
**ASCUSNAGA**, 674, 767.  
**ASSEMANI**, 783, 949, and passim.  
**ASSUMPTION OF MARY**, 426.  
**ASTERIUS OF AMASIA**, 440.  
**ASYLUM, RIGHT OF**, 104.  
**ATHANASIAN CREED**, 389 ff.  
**ATHANASIUS THE GREAT**, 82; on monasticism, 201; on the eucharist, 495 f.; on Scripture and tradition, 607; at the

- council of Nicæa, 626 f.; during the Arian controversies, 632 ff.; on Arianism, 647 ff.; on the homoousion, 660 ff.; on the Holy Ghost, 666; on Christology, 706 f.; against Apollinarianism, 713; his life and writings, 884 ff.
- ATHENS**, 894 f., 912.
- ATTILA** and **LEO**, 821.
- AUDIANS**, 199.
- AUGUSTINE**, his *City of God*, 85, 1010; on slavery, 119; on religious toleration and persecution, 144, 1021; on monasticism, 164, 202; on the holy ministry, 251; on veracity, 255; on the papacy, 306; on general councils, 348; his controversy with the Donatists, 363 ff.; on Mariology and Mariolatry, 415, 418 f., 1021; on the worship of saints, 441; on the worship of relics, 459 f.; on miracles, 460, 464; on the sacraments, 475 ff.; on baptism, 482 ff.; on the eucharist, 498, 507; hymns of, 593; on the canon, 609; on tradition, 613; on the Holy Trinity, 684 ff.; on the double procession of the Holy Ghost, 686; his doctrines of sin and grace, 785 ff.; on the origin of the soul, 831 ff.; on the condemnation of unbaptized children, 835 f.; on the possibility of salvation out of the church, 836; on heathen morality, 841 f.; on predestination, 850 ff.; on Semi-Pelagianism, 859 ff.; on heresies, 931 f.; on the Vulgate and Septuagint, 976; relation to Jerome, 218, 979 f., 984 (note); his life and character, 988-1002; his works, 1008-1016; his influence on posterity and relation to Catholicism and Protestantism, 1016-1028.
- AUGUSTINIANISM**, 785 ff.
- AURELIUS OF CARTHAGE**, 793.
- Ave Maria**, 424.
- AVITUS OF VIENNE**, 866.
- B**
- BANCROFT**, on the Arian controversy, 644.
- Baptism**, sacrament of, 480 ff.; 884 ff.
- Baptisteries**, 558 ff.
- BAR-ANINA**, 970.
- BASIL, ST.**, on monasticism, 198; on the worship of saints, 438; on the eucharist, 497; liturgy of, 530; on images, 567; against Arianism, 638; on the Holy Ghost, 664 f.; his life and writings, 893 ff.
- BASILICA**, 551 ff.
- BASILISCUS**, 765.
- BAUR**, on Julian, 48 (note); on the Arian controversy, 641; on the Creed of Chalcedon, 759 (note); on St. Augustine, 815 f. (note), 822, 832, 838, 842; on Semi-Pelagianism, 858 (note); on Athanasius, 889 (note); on Cyril of Alexandria, 945; on the system of Augustine, 999, 1002.
- BENEDICT, ST.**, 216 ff.
- Benedictus**, 224 ff.
- BEYSCHLAG**, on the Christology of Chalcedon, 759 (note).
- BINDEMANN**, on St. Augustine, 1002 (note).
- Bishops**, 263 ff.
- BOETHIUS**, 751.
- BOLAND**, and the **BOLLANDISTS**, 448.
- BONIFACE II.**, pope, 326, 869.
- Brahmanism**, 150.
- BRUGLIE**, 3, 11; on Athanasius, 890 (note).
- Buddhism**, 150.
- BULL, G.**, 662.
- Byzantine court**, 128 and *passim*.
- Byzantine style of architecture**, 555 ff.
- C**
- CÆSARIUS OF ARLES**, 866.
- CÆSARIUS**, brother of Gregory Nazianzen, 912.
- Calendar**, 445.
- CALVIN** and **AUGUSTINE**, 852, 1022 f.
- Candlemas**, 425.
- Canon**, 608 ff.
- Carthage**, synod of, 793, 798.
- CASSIAN**, 860 ff.
- Cassiciacum**, 991.
- CASSIODORUS**, 225 f., 884.
- Catechetical instruction**, 487.
- Catecheses of Cyril**, 925.
- CEILLIER**, *passim* in the *Literature*.
- Celibacy of the clergy**, 242 f.
- Chains of Peter**, 443.
- Chalcedon**, council of (A. D. 451), 279, 348, 351, 740 ff.; Creed of, 744 ff.; Christology of, 747 ff.
- Chorepiscopi**, 269.
- Christmas**, 394 ff.
- Christological controversies**, 705 ff.
- CHRYSOSTOM**, on slavery, 118; against extravagance, 127; on persecution, 144; on monasticism, 169; on the priesthood, 253; on veracity, 254; on the papacy, 309; on discipline, 358; on the worship of saints and relics, 439; on the eucharist, 494, 507, 502; liturgy of, 530; on hymns, 579; dur-

ing the Origenistic controversies, his deposition, exile, and death, 702 ff.; his life and writings, 933-941; Jerome on Chrysostom, 982 (note 2).  
 Church, doctrine of the, 863 ff.  
 Church Year, 886 ff.  
 Church and State, union of, 91 ff.  
 Circumcellions, 862.  
 Circumcision, festival of, 899  
 Circumincessio, 680, 753.  
 CLEMENT, liturgy of, 526.  
 Clergy and Laity, 238.  
 Code of Theodosius, 110; of Justinian, 110, 111.  
 CELESTIUS, 791 ff.  
 Comes, 471.  
 Confessions of Augustine, 989, 1005 ff.  
 Confirmation, 487 ff.  
 Consecration of churches, 544 ff.  
 CONSTANTINE THE GREAT, his general character and position, 12; his youth and training, 18; the vision of the Cross, 20; the edict of toleration, 29; his public reign and legislation, 31; his baptism and death, 35, 37; his merits for the civil Sunday, 105; for the removal of social evils, 108; on slavery, 116; on gladiatorial shows, 122; on the relation between the imperial and episcopal power, 133; on the persecution of heretics, 139; presiding over the council of Nicæa, 336; legislation on the observance of Sunday, 379 ff.; building churches, 542; calling the council of Nicæa, 621; opening the council, 625 f.  
 Constantinople, foundation of, 33; patriarchal see, 276 ff.  
 Constantinopolitan Council, I. (A. D. 381). 350, 638 ff., 667 ff.  
 Constantinopolitan Council, II. (A. D. 553), 351, 770 ff.  
 Constantinopolitan Council, III. (A. D. 680) and IV. (A. D. 869), 352, 771.  
 Constantinopolitan local Synod (in 448), 738.  
 CONSTANTIUS, 38, 635.  
 Consubstantiality, 654 ff.  
 Copts, 776 f.  
 Councils, 380 ff.  
 Creationism (or Creatianism),<sup>1</sup> 830 ff.

<sup>1</sup> German divines uniformly spell *Creatianismus*, *Generatianismus*, *Traducianismus*, *Preëxistentianismus*, *Subordinationianismus* (in the doctrine on the Trinity), and *Creatianer*, etc., after the analogy of *Christianism*, *Aristotelianism*, *Sabellianism*, *Arianism*, *Pelagianism*, *Nestorianism*, etc. In English these con-

Crete, invention of the, 450; use of, 566 ff.  
 Crucifix, 562.  
 Crypta, 560.  
 CRESIPHON, 794.  
 CUNNINGHAM, on the Trinity, 673 (note).  
 on Pelagianism, 815; on Augustinianism, 821 (note); on irresistible grace, 848 (note).  
 CYRIL OF ALEXANDRIA, 67, 75, 421, 714 ff.; his doctrine of Christ, 735; views on the Virgin Mary, 946 ff.; his life and writings, 942-949.  
 CYRIL OF JERUSALEM, on the eucharist, 493; his life and writings, 923-925.

## D

DAMASUS, pope, 370 ff., 594, 974.  
 DANIEL THE STYLITE, 195.  
 DANTE, on the donation of Constantine, 99.  
 Deacons, 259.  
 Deaconesses, 259.  
 Decretals, 292.  
 DEMETRIAS, 791, 794.  
 DIDYMUS OF ALEXANDRIA, his life and writings, 921-923.  
 DIONORUS OF TARSUS, 935, 937.  
 DIONYSIUS AREOPAGITA, 604.  
 DIONYSIUS EXIGUUS, 354.  
 DIOSCURUS OF ALEXANDRIA, 736 ff.; 743 f.  
 Diospolis, synod of, 796.  
 Discipline, 856 ff.  
 DOMITIAN, 704.  
 Donatists, 145, 360 ff.

venient scholastic terms are not yet naturalized, and, with the single exception of *Traducianism*, are not found in Johnson and Richardson, nor even in the new editions of Webster or Worcester. The few modern English writers who use them, differ; Dr. Shedd (*History of Christian Doctrine*, vol. ii. p. 8) spells *creationism*, while the translator of Hagenbach's *Dogmengeschichte* follows the German spelling. There can be no doubt that *Traducianism* is the only proper spelling; but inasmuch as the English language has the nouns *creation*, *generation*, *subordination*, there is some reason for preferring *creationism*, *generationism*, and *subordinationism*, which seem to sound more natural to the English ear than the corresponding German terms, which are formed from adjectives which are not in use.

**DONATUS THE GREAT**, 361.

**DORNER**, on the council of Chalcedon, 747; on the Christology of the ancient church, 759 (note), 760, and *passim*.

**DUPIN**, *passim* in the Literature and notes.

## E

**Easter**, 400 ff.

**Ecce Homo** picture, 570.

**Ecumenical bishop**, 328 f.

**Ecumenical councils**, 330 ff., 723.

**Edessa**, 237, 951.

**Election of the clergy**, 239.

**Election, doctrine of**, 850 ff.

**Elevation of the Holy Cross**, 455.

**Ephesus, ecumenical council of** (A. D. 431), 348, 350, 722 ff., 801.

**Ephesus, heretical council of** (A. D. 449), see Robber Council.

**EPHREM, or EPHRAIM, THE SYRIAN**, on Mariolatry, 422, 953; on hagiolatry, 438; as a hymn writer, 580; his life and works, 949-954.

**EPIPHANIUS**, on Mariolatry, 417; against images, 566; against Origen, 700 ff.; against Apollinarianism, 711; his life and writings, 926-933.

**Epiphany**, 399.

**Epitrachelion**, 535.

**Episcopal jurisdiction**, 102.

**Episcopal intercession**, 103.

**ERASMUS**, on Jerome, 206; on Augustine, 1002.

**Essence, Divine**, as distinct from *hypostasis* or *subsistence*, 672.

**Eucharist, sacrament of the**, 491; sacrifice of, 502; celebration of, 511.

**Euchites**, 199.

**EUDOXIA**, 704, 936, 938.

**EUDOXIUS OF ANTIOCH**, 637.

**EUNAPIUS**, 79.

**EUNOMIUS, EUNOMIANS**, 637, 646.

**EUSEBIUS OF CÆSAREA**, 82, 130; on images, 565 f.; at the council of Nicæa, 626, 628; his life and writings, 871 ff.

**EUSEBIUS OF DORYLÆUM**, 738.

**EUSEBIUS OF EMISA**, 872.

**EUSEBIUS OF NICOMEDIA**, 627, 629, 633 ff.

**Eustathiana**, 199.

**EUTYCHES**, 736 ff.

**Eutychianism and Eutychian controversy**, 734 ff.

**EVAGRIUS**, 882.

**Exorcism**, 486, 925.

## F

**FABRICIUS, J. A.**, *passim* in the Literature and notes.

**FACUNDUS**, 500, 770, 996.

**Fall, doctrine of the**, 805 ff., 824 ff.

**Family**, 112.

**FAUSTUS OF RHEGIUM**, 863.

**FELIX I.**, pope, 824, 371.

**FELIX II.**, pope, 636.

**FELIX III.**, pope, 326.

**Filioque**, 687 f.

**FLAVIAN OF CONSTANTINOPLE**, 737.

**FORTUNATUS**, 595 ff.

**Freedom, doctrine of**, 802 ff.

**FULGENTIUS OF RUSPE**, 866, 996.

**FULGENTIUS FERRANDUS**, 996.

## G

**Gallican Liturgy**, 531.

**GANGAUF**, on St. Augustine, 989, 995 1002.

**GELASIUS I.**, pope, 324; on the eucharist, 498; on Semi-Pelagianism, 866.

**Generation, eternal of the Son**, 658 f.

**Generationism** (or in the German way of spelling, *Generationism*), 830 ff.

**GENNADIUS**, 863, 884, 932.

**GENSERIC**, 322, 641.

**GEORGE, St.**, 888 (note).

**GIBBON**, on Constantine the Great, 18; on Julian, 51; on the downfall of the Roman empire, 74; on the persecution of heretics, 143; on Athanasius, 389; on Gregory Nazianzen, 909, 914, 915 (notes); on Jerome, 982; on Hippo, 992; on Augustine, 1001, 1023 (notes).

**GIESKLER**, *passim* in the Literature and notes.

**Gladiatorial games**, 123.

**Gloria in excelsis**, 578.

**Good Friday**, 402.

**Grace, doctrine of**, 812 ff., 843 ff.

**GRATIAN**, 62.

**GREGORY NAZIANZEN**, against extravagance and luxury, 127; on the ministry, 251; on synods, 347; on baptism, 481; on the eucharist, 496; as a hymn-writer, 579, 581, 921; at Constantinople, 638, 917 f.; on the Holy Ghost, 664 f.; friendship with Basil, 895, 914; his life and writings, 908-921.

**GREGORY OF NYSSA**, on the worship of saints, 438; on pilgrimages, 467; on baptism, 481; against Arianism, 633;

on the Holy Ghost, 665; on the Trinity, 671; his life and writings, 903-908.

GREGORY I., pope, 328 f., 870.

GREGORY ILLUMINATOR, 779.

GREGORY OF CAPPADOCIA, 888 (note).

GUIZOT, on the church and civilization, 1025.

## H

HARE, 179; on Gregory Nazianzen, 909; on Chrysostom, 988 (note).

HARRE, on the Christology of Chalcedon, 760.

HELENA, 19, 467.

HELVIDIUS, 231 f.

Hemiteon, 765.

Hereseologues, 929 ff.

Heretical baptism, 484.

HIERONYMUS, see JEROME.

HILARIUS OF ARLES, 296 ff.

HILARIUS OF POITIERS, his hymns, 589; on the Holy Ghost, 664; his life and writings, 959-961.

HILARIUS, pope, 323.

HILARIUS, deacon of Rome, 965.

Hippo, council of, 609.

Hippo-Bona, 993, 997.

Holy Ghost, doctrine of, 663 ff.

Homocousion, 654 ff., 672 ff., 745.

HONORIUS, 66.

HOOKE, R., on the Trinity, 673; on the incarnation, 752, 756 (notes).

HORMISDAS, pope, 325.

HOSIUS OF CORDOVA, 627, 635, 636.

HUBER, on St. Augustine, 832 f., 1002, 1011 (notes).

HUMBOLDT, ALEXANDER VON, on the Nestorians and their influence upon physical sciences in the East, 781 f.; on St. Basil's descriptions of the beauties of nature, 896, 900.

Hymns, hymnology, 576 ff.

HYFATIA, 67, 943.

Hypostasia, 675 ff.

## I

IBAS OF EDESSA, 729, 735, 746, 769.

Idiotes, 679.

Images, of Christ, 563 ff.; of the Virgin Mary, the apostles and saints, 571 ff.

Incarnation, true doctrine of, 750.

Infant baptism, 488, 834 ff.

Infanticide, 114.

INNOCENT I., 797, 940.

Innocents, festival of the, 898.

Invention of the Cross, 450.

ISIDORE OF PELUSIUM, 198, 941.

## J

JACOB BARADAI, 775.

JACOB OF NISIBIS, 626.

Jacobites, 775 f.

JAMES, liturgy of, 527.

JEROME, his life and writings, 205 ff. and 967 ff.; on the clergy, 252; on veracity, 255; on the papacy, 304; on the worship of saints, 440; on pilgrimages, 468; against Origen, 701 ff., 971; against Pelagianism, 794 ff.; on universal sinfulness, 807; on Epiphanius, 928; relation to Augustine, 972; as a divine and scholar, 967 ff.; his works, 972 ff.

Jerusalem, patriarchate of, 383; synod of, 795.

JOHN THE BAPTIST, festival of, 443 f.

JOHN, THE EVANGELIST, festival of, 398.

JOHN, bishop of Antioch, 722, 724, 725, 735.

JOHN, bishop of Jerusalem, 701, 795.

JOHN CHRYSOSTOM, see Chrysostom.

JOHN OF DAMASCUS, on Christ's personal appearance, 571; on the anhypostasia of Christ's humanity, 757 f.

JOHN SCHOLASTICUS, 835.

JOVIAN, 60.

JOVINIAN, 227 ff., 984.

JULIAN THE APOSTATE, 41; his education, 42; his religion and moral character, 43; his reign, 45; his attempted reformation of heathenism, 47; his attempted suppression of Christianity, 50; his toleration, 51; his partiality and injustice, 52; prohibition of Christian schools of learning, 53; treatment of the Jews, 54; vain attempt to rebuild the temple of Jerusalem, 55; his death, 57; failure of his reign, 59; his attack upon Christianity, 75; his testimony for the Gospel history, 77.

JULIAN OF ECLANUM, 800, 837 f., 937 and passim.

Julianists, 766.

JUSTIN II., 772.

JUSTINA, 136.

JUSTINIAN I., 68, 110, 135, 768 ff.

Justinian Code, 110, 115, etc.

JUVENAL, 765.

JUVENCUS, 598.

## K

**KAHNIS**, on the Creed of Chalcedon, 747.  
**Kenosis**, 761.  
**Kenosists**, or **Kenotics**, 761.  
**Ktistolatræ**, 767.

## L

**LACTANTIUS**, 82, and *passim*; his life and works, 955-958.  
**Latin patriarchate**, 288 ff.  
**LEE, SAMUEL**, on Eusebius, 874, 878.  
**Legislation**, influence of Christianity on, 107.  
**LEIBNITZ**, on St. Augustine, 1002 (note).  
**LEO THE GREAT**, on persecution, 145; on the council of Chalcedon, 282: his controversy with Hilarius of Arles, 296; his life and reign, 314 ff.; on the worship of saints, 442; on the eucharist, 500; on the Robber synod, 739; during the Christological conflict, 740; at the council of Chalcedon, 744 ff.; on Semi-Pelagianism, 864 f.  
**LEONTIUS**, on images, 568.  
**LIBANIUS**, 40, 61, 64, 80, 81, 934.  
**LIBERATUS**, 996.  
**LIBERIUS**, pope, 371, 635 f.  
**Liturgies**, 517 ff.  
**Longobards**, 641.  
**Lord's Supper**, see **Eucharist**.  
**LUCIFER**, bishop of Calaris, 983.  
**Luciferians**, 983.  
**LUTHER**, on Jerome, 214, 978; on Augustine, 1022 f.; on predestination, 1023 (notes).

## M

**MACARIUS**, on the eucharist, 497.  
**Macedonians**, 639, 664.  
**MACEDONIUS**, 663.  
**MACRINA**, 905.  
**Madonna pictures**, 571.  
**MALCHUS**, monk, 982.  
**Manichæism**, 1012, 1017, and *passim*.  
**Manuscripts of the Bible**, 610 f.  
**Marcella**, 395, 962.  
**MARCELLINUS, AMMIANUS**, 79, and often.  
**MARCELLUS**, 661 ff.  
**MARCIAN**, emperor, 741.  
**MARIUS MERCATOR**, 714, 716, 784, 793, 800.  
**Mariolatry**, 422 ff., 946 f.

**Mariology**, 409 ff.  
**MARK**, liturgy of, 529.  
**Maronites**, 792 f.  
**Marriage**, 112, 242.  
**MARTIN OF TOURS**, 202 ff.  
**Martyrology**, 446.  
**Martyrs and Saints**, worship of, 428 ff.  
**MARY**, the Virgin, doctrine and worship of, 409 ff.; festivals of, 425 ff.; mother of God, 716 ff.; free from sin, 807.  
**Mass**, 504, 511, 522.  
**Massilians**, 859.  
**MATERNUS, JULIUS FIRMICUS**, 84.  
**Maundy Thursday**, 402.  
**MAURUS**, 225.  
**MELETIUS OF ANTIOCH**, 372, 934.  
**MEMNON OF EFHESUS**, 723, 726.  
**Menses**, 446.  
**Menologia**, 446.  
**MESROP**, 779.  
**Messaliana**, 199.  
**Metropolitans**, 270.  
**MICHAEL**, archangel, festival of, 444.  
**MIGNE**, often in the Literature, especially ch. x.  
**Milan**, archbishop of, 298.  
**MILMAN**, on the court of Arcadius, 129; on ecumenical councils, 723; on Cyril of Alexandria, 945, and *passim*.  
**Miracles of the Nicene age**, 460 ff.  
**Missa**, 504, 511, 522.  
**Missale Romanum**, 535.  
**Monasticism**, 147 ff.  
**MONGUS, PETER**, 765.  
**MONICA**, or **MONNICA**, 990, 991.  
**Monophysites and Monophysitism**, 762 ff.  
**Monothelitism**, 752 f., 782.  
**MONTALEMBERT**, 148, 211, 214.  
**MONTFAUCON**, 689, 699, 884, 933, and *passim*.  
**Monte Cassino**, 218.  
**MOSES CHORENENSIS**, 779.  
**Mozarabic liturgy**, 532.

## N

**Nativity of Mary**, 427.  
**Natures in Christ**, 751 f., 753.  
**NEANDER**, on persecution, 145; on Pelagianism, 815; on Augustine, 842; on Chrysostom, 933, 938.  
**NECTARIUS**, 357.  
**NEPOTIAN**, 986.  
**Nestorianism**, 714 ff.  
**Nestorians**, 729 ff.  
**NESTORIUS**, 715 ff.; his condemnation, 724; death and character, 728 f.  
**NEWMAN, JOHN H.**, 214, 948, 1017.

New Platonism, 42 f., 68, 80.  
 New Year, 899.  
 NICEA, or Nice, council of, 349, 352, 622 f.  
 Nicene Creed, 629, 631, 667 f.  
 NICEPHORUS CALLISTI, 883.  
 NIDWNER, on Chrysostom, 987, and passim.  
 NILUS OF SINAI, 198, 941.  
 NIOBES, STEPHANUS, 767.  
 Nisibis, 237.  
 Nomocanon, 355.  
 NONNA, 910.  
 NOURRISSON, on St. Augustine, 989, 1008, 1006, 1008, 1018, 1128 (notes).

## O

ODOACER, 69, 328.  
 (Ecumenical, see Ecumenical.  
 OLYMPIAS, 261.  
 OPTATUS OF MILVI, on the papacy, 808.  
 Orange, synod of, 866 f.  
 Orarion, 535.  
 Ordination, 489 f.  
 ORESTES, 943.  
 ORIGEN, doctrine of Christ, 619 f.; on the origin of the soul, 831; 872, 875, 879, 978.  
 Origenistic controversies, 698 f., 769, 771, 971.  
 Original sin, 829 f., 833 f.  
 OROSIUS, 85, 795.  
 OSIUS (or HOSIUS) OF CORDOVA, 627, 628, 635, 636.  
 OWEN, JOHN, on the Person of Christ, 756 (note).  
 OZANAM, on Jerome, 968.

## P

PACHOMIUS, 195.  
 Paganism, origin of the word, 61; extinction of, 67.  
 Painting, 567.  
 Pallium, 265.  
 Palm Sunday, 402.  
 PAMPHILUS, 872.  
 Panarium of Epiphanius, 929 f.  
 Papacy, 299 f.  
 PAPHNUTIUS, on celibacy, 244, 626.  
 Parabolani, 263.  
 Paschal controversies, 404 f.  
 Passion week, 402.  
 Patron saints, 430.  
 Patriarchs, 271 f.

Patriarchs of old and new Rome, 284 f.  
 PAUL OF THEBES, 179 f.  
 PAULA, St., 214 f.  
 PAULINUS OF ANTIOCH, 373.  
 PAULINUS OF MILAN, 792, 961, 964, 967.  
 PAULINUS OF NOLA, 442, 568, 598.  
 PAULUS OROSIUS, 795, 884.  
 Pelagianism, 785 f.  
 PELAGIUS, on Mariology, 419; his life and system, 790 f.  
 PELAGIUS I., pope, 327, 772.  
 PELAGIUS II., pope, 328.  
 Pentecost, 407 f.  
 Pericopes, 470.  
 Περὶ ἑρμηνείας, 680, 753.  
 Persecution of heretics, 138.  
 Person, in the Holy Trinity, 675 f.; of Christ, 754 f.  
 PETAVIUS, on the Trinity, 616, 676, and passim; on Christology, 757, and passim.  
 PETER, festival of, 443.  
 PETER AND PAUL, festival of, 443.  
 PETER THE FULLER, 765.  
 Phantasiastes, 766.  
 Phelonion, 535.  
 PHILASTRUS, or PHILASTRIUS, 931.  
 Philopatris, 79.  
 PHILOPONUS, JOHN, 674, 767.  
 Philippopolis, council of, 635.  
 Philosophy of the fathers, 604 f.  
 PHILOSTORGIUS, 629, 883.  
 PHOCAS, 431, 440.  
 PHOTINUS, 651 f.  
 Phthartolaters, 766.  
 Pilgrimages, 466.  
 PLATO, on the origin of the soul, 831, 1009, and passim.  
 Platonism, 604, 991, 1009.  
 Pneumatomachians, 639, 664.  
 Poetry, 576.  
 Politics and religion, 131.  
 POSSIDIUS, 989, 994.  
 POTAMON, 873.  
 Prædestinatus, 863 f., 932.  
 Predestination, doctrine of, 850 f.  
 Præxistentianism, 831 f.  
 Presbyters, 258.  
 Presentation of Mary, 427.  
 Priscillianists, 143, 1018.  
 Procession of the Holy Ghost, 686 f.  
 Processions, 465.  
 PROCLUS, 79.  
 PROCLUS OF CYZICUM, 720 f.  
 Propriety (proprietas), 679.  
 PROSPER AQUITANUS, 859 f., 862, 981.  
 Prothesis, 551.  
 PRUDENTIUS, on the worship of saints, 441; his hymns, 594 f.  
 PSEUDO-DIONYSIUS, 604.



PUBLIUS LENTULUS, description of Christ's personal appearance, 570.  
PULCHERIA, empress, 741.  
Purification of Mary, 425.

## Q

Quadragesima, 400.  
Quatember, 490.  
QUESNEL, 296 (note), and *passim*.  
Quinisexta, 352, 355.  
QUODVULTEUS, 381.

## R

Ravenna, 274; bishop of, 293 f.  
Relics, worship of, 449 ff.  
Resurrection of the body, 451.  
Retractions of Augustine, 1004, 1007.  
Rhyme, 587.  
Robber Council at Ephesus, 348, 738 ff.  
Roman liturgy, 534.  
ROWSEYD, 448.  
RUFINUS, 701, 884, 984 (note).

## S

Sabbath, the Christian, 378 ff.  
Sabellianism, 651 ff.  
Sacraments, doctrine of the, 474 ff.  
Sacrifice of the Mass, 502 ff.  
Salvator picture, 569.  
SALVIANUS, on the moral condition of the Christian Church towards the middle of the fifth century, 88, 126 ff.  
Saints, worship of, 428 ff.  
Sardica, council of, 310 ff., 634.  
Sasima, 914.  
SCHLEIERMACHER'S Christology, 757 (note).  
SCHROCKE, *passim* in the Literature and notes.  
Scripture, reading of the, 470 ff.; the rule of faith, 606 ff.  
Secretaries, 263.  
Secularization of the Church, 125.  
Semi-Augustinianism, 866 ff.  
Semi-Arianism, 635 ff.  
Semi-Pelagianism and Semi-Pelagians, 857 ff.  
Serapeion, destruction of, 65.  
Sermons, 472 ff., 649 ff.  
Severians, 766.  
SHERD, on the Trinity, 674, and 676

(notes); on Christology, 755 f., 760 (note); on Augustine's doctrine of sin, 821 (note); on irresistible grace, 848 f. (note); on Augustine's Confessions, 1005 (note).  
SIMPLICIUS, pope, 823.  
Sin, doctrine of, 829 ff.  
SIRICIUS, decree on the celibacy of the clergy, 247, 292.  
Sirmium, 637.  
Slavery, 115.  
SOCRATES, the historian, 880, and *passim*.  
SOPHIA, St., 557.  
SOZOMEN, 881, and *passim*.  
Spanish liturgy, 532.  
SPYRIDION, 626, 631.  
STEPHEN, St., festival of, 898; relics of, 459.  
Stewards, 262.  
Sticharion, 535.  
Subordinationism (or subordinationism) of the Nicene fathers, 681-683.  
SULPITIUS SEVERUS, 202, 884.  
Sunday, legal sanction and observance of, 105, 378 ff.  
Support of the clergy, 100.  
SYMEON THE STYLITE, 192 ff.  
SYMMACHUS, 61, 62, 64, 80, 963.  
SYMMACHUS, pope, 324.  
SYNESIUS, 604 f.  
Synodus palmaris, 325.

## T

Tall brethren, 700.  
Tedeum, 578, 592.  
TELEMACHUS, 122.  
TERTULLIAN, on traducianism, 830.  
Ter Sanctus, 578.  
Themistians, 767.  
THEMISTIUS, 80.  
THEMISTIUS, the Monophysite, 767.  
THEODORA, 136, 769 ff.  
THEODORE OF MOPSUESTIA, 707, 717, 718 f., 729, 769, 770, 800, 881, 935, 937.  
THEODORET, on the papacy, 309; on the eucharist, 497; on the person of Christ, 727, 735, 737; condemned in the Three Chapter controversy, 769 ff.; his life and writings, 881.  
THEODORIC, 69, 324 ff., 641.  
THEODORUS ASKIDAS, 704, 771.  
THEODORUS LECTOR, 883.  
Theodosians, 767.  
THEODOSIUS I., or THE GREAT, his charac-

<sup>1</sup> See the note sub *v. creationism* or *creatianism*, p. 1081.

ter and reign, 63; laws against idolatry, 65; his code, 110; his laws against heretics, 141; submits to discipline, 359; calls the second ecumenical council, 638; relation to Ambrose, 963.  
**THEODOSIUS II.**, 66, 68, 722, 800.  
**THEODOSIUS**, the Monophysite, 765.  
**Theopaschites**, 763.  
**THEOPHILUS**, bishop of Alexandria, 65, 702 ff., 936.  
**Theotokos**, 716 ff., 745.  
**Thomas Christians**, 733.  
**Three Chapter controversy**, 768 ff.  
**TILLEMONT**, often (in the Literature and notes).  
**Tradition**, 606 ff.  
**Traducianism**, 830.  
**TRIBONIANUS**, 110.  
**Trinitarian controversies**, 616 ff.  
**Trinity**, Nicene doctrine of, 670 ff.  
**Trisagion**, 763.  
**Tritheism**, 674.  
**Trullan Council (692)**, 246.  
**TYCHONIUS**, 369 f.

## U

**ULFILAS**, 641.  
**ULLMANN**, on Gregory Nazianzen, 908, 910.  
**URBINUS**, 370 ff.

## V

**VALENS**, 60 f., 638.  
**VALENTINIAN I.**, 60.  
**VALENTINIAN II.**, 62.

**VALENTINIAN III.**, 66.  
**VERONICA**, 570.  
**Victoria**, altar of, 62.  
**VIGILANTIUS**, 232 f.  
**VIGILIUS**, pope, 769 ff.  
**VIGILIUS OF TAPSUS**, 996.  
**VINCENTIUS LIRINENSIS**, on progress in Christian knowledge, 344; on the rule of faith, 613 f.; on Semi-Pelagianism, 862 f.  
**Vulgate**, 611, 972 ff.

## W

**WALCH**, 945, and passim.  
**WATERLAND**, on the eternal generation, 658; on the Trinity, 683; on the double procession of the Holy Spirit, 687; on the Athanasian Creed, 696.  
**Westminster standards**, on Christology, 748.  
**WIGGERS**, on the Pelagian controversy, 783 ff., 852 (note).  
**Woman**, elevation of, 112.

## X

**Xenajas**, 766.

## Z

**ZENO**, 765.  
**ZÖCKLER**, on Jerome, 963, 973, 983.  
**ZOSIMUS**, pope, 67, 79, 294, 295, 797 ff.







*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

*Now complete, in Four Volumes, imperial 8vo, price 18s. each,*

**COMMENTARY ON THE NEW TESTAMENT.**

WITH ILLUSTRATIONS AND MAPS.

EDITED BY PHILIP SCHAFF, D.D., LL.D.

**CONTRIBUTORS.**

The Very Rev. Dean HOWSON; The Very Rev. Dean PLUMPTRE; Principal DAVID BROWN, D.D.; J. RAWSON LUMBY, D.D.; W. MILLIGAN, D.D.; W. F. MOULTON, D.D.; Rev. CARON SPENCE; MARCUS DODS, D.D.; J. OSWALD DYKES, D.D.; JOSEPH ANGUS, D.D.; PATON J. GLOAG, D.D.; S. D. F. SALMOND, D.D.; WILLIAM B. POPE, D.D.; PHILIP SCHAFF, D.D.; MATTHEW B. RIDDLE, D.D.

Maps and Plans—Professor ARNOLD GUYOT.

Illustrations—W. M. THOMSON, D.D., Author of 'The Land and the Book.'

*Volume I.*  
**THE SYNOPTICAL GOSPELS.**

*Volume II.*  
**ST. JOHN'S GOSPEL, and the  
THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES.**

*Volume III.*  
**ROMANS TO PHILEMON.**

*Volume IV.*  
**HEBREWS TO REVELATION.**

'A useful, valuable, and instructive commentary. The interpretation is set forth with clearness and cogency, and in a manner calculated to commend the volumes to the thoughtful reader. The book is beautifully got up, and reflects great credit on the publishers as well as the writers.'—*The Bishop of Gloucester.*

'I have looked into this volume, and read several of the notes on crucial passages. They seem to me very well done, with great fairness, and with evident knowledge of the controversies concerning them. The illustrations are very good. I cannot doubt that the book will prove very valuable.'—*The Bishop of Winchester.*

'We have already spoken of this commentary with warm praise, and we can certainly assert that the enterprise has now been brought to a close with really admirable work.'—*English Churchman.*

'We congratulate Dr. Schaff on the completion of this useful work, which we are now able to commend, in its complete form, to English readers of the Scriptures. . . . It will be seen that we have a high opinion of this commentary, of the present volume, and also of the whole work. In this last respect it is perhaps of more uniform excellence than any of its rivals, and in beauty of appearance it excels them all.'—*Church Bells.*

'External beauty and intrinsic worth combine in the work here completed. Good paper, good type, good illustrations, good binding, please the eye, as accuracy and thoroughness in matter of treatment satisfy the judgment. Everywhere the workmanship is careful, solid, harmonious.'—*Methodist Recorder.*

'There are few better commentaries having a similar scope and object; indeed, within the same limits, we do not know of one so good upon the whole of the New Testament.'—*Literary World.*

'We predict that this work will take its place among the most popular of the century. . . . The publishers have spared no pains to secure volumes that shall be worthy of the theme, and of the scholarship of the age.'—*Freeman.*

'The commentators have given the results of their own researches in a simple style, with brevity, but with sufficient fulness; and their exposition is all through eminently readable.'—*Record.*

'From so many contributors we are led confidently to expect a well-considered, careful, and edifying comment, constructed with sufficient learning and Biblical knowledge. And this confidence will not be disappointed on examination. . . . We regard the work as well done, and calculated both to instruct and to benefit those who consult it. The printing, paper, illustrations, and all such matters are of unusual beauty and excellence.'—*The Literary Churchman.*

*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

*Just published, in demy 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,*

## THE LORD'S PRAYER: A PRACTICAL MEDITATION.

By REV. NEWMAN HALL, LL.B.

'Short, crisp sentences, absolute in form and lucid in thought, convey the author's meaning and carry on his exposition. . . . He is impatient of dim lights; his thoughts are sharply cut, and are like crystals in their clearness.'—*British Quarterly Review*.

'A new volume of theological literature, by Rev. Newman Hall, is sure to be eagerly welcomed, and we can promise its readers that they will not be disappointed. . . . Upon every subject Mr. Hall writes with clearness and power.'—*Nonconformist*.

*Just published, in crown 8vo, price 6s.,*

## STUDIES IN THE CHRISTIAN EVIDENCES.

By ALEXANDER MAIR, D.D.

'Dr. Mair has made an honest study of Strauss, Renan, Keim, and "Supernatural Religion," and his book is an excellent one to put into the hands of doubters and inquirers.'—*English Churchman*.

'Will in every way meet the wants of the class for whom it is intended, many of whom are "wayworn and sad," amid the muddled speculations of the current day.'—*Ecclesiastical Gazette*.

*Just published, in demy 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,*

## LECTURES ON PAUL'S EPISTLES TO THE THESSALONIANS.

By REV. DR. HUTCHISON.

'We have not—at least amongst modern works—many commentaries on these epistles in which the text is at once treated with scholarly ability, and turned to popular and practical account. Such is the character of Dr. Hutchison's work—his exegesis of crucial passages strikes us at once as eminently clear.'—*Baptist*.

'Certainly one of the ablest and best commentaries that we have ever read. The style is crisp and clear, and the scholarship is in no sense of a superficial or pretentious order.'—*Evangelical Magazine*.

*Just published, in crown 8vo, price 6s.,*

## CHRISTIAN CHARITY IN THE ANCIENT CHURCH.

By G. UHLHORN, D.D.

'A very excellent translation of a very valuable book.'—*Guardian*.

'The historical knowledge this work displays is immense, and the whole subject is wrought out with great care and skill. It is a most readable, delightful, and instructive volume.'—*Evangelical Christendom*.

'The facts are surprising, many of them fresh, and the truths to be deduced are far more powerful as weapons for warring against infidelity than scores of lectures or bushels of tracts.'—*Ecclesiastical Gazette*.

*Just published, in demy 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,*

## THE PARABLES OF JESUS. A METHODICAL EXPOSITION.

By SIEGFRIED GOEBEL,

COURT CHAPLAIN IN HALBERSTADT.

TRANSLATED BY PROF. J. S. BANKS, HEADINGLEY COLLEGE.

'This ought to be one of the most helpful of all the volumes in the "Foreign Theological Library." . . . Such expositions as those of the Good Samaritan and the Prodigal Son are as full of human feeling as others are of ripe learning. The volume is quite a treasury of original exposition on a subject on which preachers constantly need help, and on which little that is new has appeared in recent years.'—*Methodist Recorder*.

*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

*In Three Volumes, Imperial 8vo, price 24s. each,*

# ENCYCLOPÆDIA

OR

# DICTIONARY

OF

## BIBLICAL, HISTORICAL, DOCTRINAL, AND PRACTICAL THEOLOGY.

BASED ON THE REAL-ENCYCLOPÄDIE OF HERZOG, PLITT, AND HAUCK.

EDITED BY

PHILIP SCHAFF, D.D., LL.D.,

PROFESSOR IN THE UNION THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY, NEW YORK.

'As a comprehensive work of reference, within a moderate compass, we know nothing at all equal to it in the large department which it deals with.'—*Church Bell*.

'The work will remain as a wonderful monument of industry, learning, and skill. It will be indispensable to the student of specifically Protestant theology; nor, indeed, do we think that any scholar, whatever be his especial line of thought or study, would find it superfluous on his shelves.'—*Literary Churchman*.

'We commend this work with a touch of enthusiasm, for we have often wanted such ourselves. It embraces in its range of writers all the leading authors of Europe on ecclesiastical questions. A student may deny himself many other volumes to secure this, for it is certain to take a prominent and permanent place in our literature.'—*Evangelical Magazine*.

'Dr. Schaff's name is a guarantee for valuable and thorough work. His new Encyclopædia (based on Herzog) will be one of the most useful works of the day. It will prove a standard authority on all religious knowledge. No man in the country is so well fitted to perfect such a work as this distinguished and exact scholar.'—HOWARD CROSSY, D.D., LL.D., *ex-Chancellor of the University, New York*.

'This work will prove of great service to many; it supplies a distinct want in our theological literature, and it is sure to meet with welcome from readers who wish a popular book of reference on points of historical, biographical, and theological interest. Many of the articles give facts which may be sought far and wide, and in vain in our encyclopædias.'—*Scotsman*.

'Those who possess the latest edition of Herzog will still find this work by no means superfluous. . . . Strange to say, the condensing process seems to have improved the original articles. . . . We hope that no minister's library will long remain without a copy of this work.'—*Daily Review*.

'For fulness, comprehensiveness, and accuracy, it will take the first place among Biblical Encyclopædias.'—WM. M. TAYLOR, D.D.



**BISHOP MARTENSEN'S WORKS.**

In Three Volumes, 8vo, price 31s. 6d.,

**CHRISTIAN ETHICS.**

Volume I. GENERAL ETHICS.—II. INDIVIDUAL ETHICS.—III. SOCIAL ETHICS.

'As man is a member of two societies, a temporal and a spiritual, it is clear that his ethical development only can go on when these two are treated side by side. This Bishop Martensen has done with rare skill. We do not know where the conflicting claims of Church and State are more equitably adjusted. . . . We can read these volumes through with unflagging interest.'—*Literary World*.

'It is no ordinary book, and we commend it to the study of all who are interested in Christian Ethics, as one of the most able treatises on the subject which has ever yet appeared.'—*Watchman*.

'Dr. Martensen has allowed himself the liberty of speaking from the heart to the heart. His work will be found as useful to non-theological as to professionally theological readers. They will find very much in it to instruct and to stimulate.'—*Nonconformist*.

In One Volume, 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,

**CHRISTIAN DOGMATICS.**

'To students this volume will be helpful and welcome.'—*Freeman*.

'We feel much indebted to Messrs. Clark for their introduction of this important compendium of orthodox theology from the pen of the learned Danish Bishop. . . . Every reader must rise from its perusal stronger, calmer, and more hopeful, not only for the fortunes of Christianity, but of dogmatic theology.'—*Quarterly Review*.

'Such a book is a library in itself, and a monument of pious labour in the cause of true religion.'—*Irish Ecclesiastical Gazette*.

Just published, in demy 8vo, price 9s.,

**A POPULAR INTRODUCTION TO THE  
HISTORY OF CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE.**

By REV. T. G. CRIPPEN.

'A clear and intelligible account of the course of religions from the earliest times to our own; . . . indeed, the student who masters this volume only will have no mere acquaintance with this department of theological work.'—*Freeman*.

'Mr. Crippen is studiously, on some points startlingly, and enviably fair. His book shows wide reading and honest thinking. It abounds in acute distinctions; its statement of varying views of doctrine is sometimes very happy, and it sufficiently illustrates the pathology of theological speculation.'—*Wesleyan Methodist Magazine*.

In Three Volumes, 8vo, price 31s. 6d.,

**A HISTORY OF CHRISTIAN DOCTRINES.**

By THE LATE DR. K. R. HAGENBACH.

Translated from the Fifth and Last German Edition, with  
Additions from other Sources.

WITH AN INTRODUCTION BY THE VERY REV. DEAN PLUMPTRE.

'This scholarly and elaborate history.'—*Dickinson's Theological Quarterly*.

'There is no work which deals with this subject in a manner so scientific and so thorough as Hagenbach's. Moreover, there is no edition of this work, either in German or in English, which approaches the present as to completeness and accuracy.'—*Church Bell*.

'No work will be more welcome or useful than the present one. We have a whole system of theology from the hand of the greatest living theologian of Germany.'—*Methodist Recorder*.

*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

*Just published, a New Edition, thoroughly Revised and Enlarged,*  
**HISTORY OF THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH.**

By PHILIP SCHAFF, D.D., LL.D.

**APOSTOLIC CHRISTIANITY, A.D. 1-100.** In Two Divisions. Ex. demy 8vo, price 21s.  
**ANTE-NICENE CHRISTIANITY, A.D. 100-325.** In Two Divisions. Ex. demy 8vo,  
price 21s.  
**POST-NICENE CHRISTIANITY, A.D. 325-600.** In Two Divisions. Ex. demy 8vo, price  
21s. [*Nearly ready.*]

'No student, and indeed no critic, can with fairness overlook a work like the present, written with such evident candour, and, at the same time, with so thorough a knowledge of the sources of early Christian history.'—*Scotsman.*

'I trust that this very instructive volume will find its way to the library table of every minister who cares to investigate thoroughly the foundations of Christianity. I cannot refrain from congratulating you on having carried through the press this noble contribution to historical literature. I think that there is no other work which equals it in many important excellences.'—Rev. Prof. FISHER, D.D.

'In no other work of its kind with which I am acquainted will students and general readers find so much to instruct and interest them.'—Rev. Prof. HITCHCOCK, D.D.

*In demy 4to, Third Edition, price 25s.,*

**BIBLICO-THEOLOGICAL LEXICON OF NEW  
TESTAMENT GREEK.**

By HERMANN CREMER, D.D.,

PROFESSOR OF THEOLOGY IN THE UNIVERSITY OF GRIFFSWALD.

TRANSLATED FROM THE GERMAN OF THE SECOND EDITION  
(WITH ADDITIONAL MATTER AND CORRECTIONS BY THE AUTHOR)

By WILLIAM URWICK, M.A.

'Dr. Cremer's work is highly and deservedly esteemed in Germany. It gives with care and thoroughness a complete history, as far as it goes, of each word and phrase that it deals with. . . . Dr. Cremer's explanations are most lucidly set out.'—*Guardian.*

'It is hardly possible to exaggerate the value of this work to the student of the Greek Testament. . . . The translation is accurate and idiomatic, and the additions to the later edition are considerable and important.'—*Church Bells.*

'We cannot find an important word in our Greek New Testament which is not discussed with a fulness and discrimination which leaves nothing to be desired.'—*Nonconformist.*

'This noble edition in quarto of Cremer's Biblico-Theological Lexicon quite supercedes the translation of the first edition of the work. Many of the most important articles have been re-written and re-arranged.'—*British Quarterly Review.*

*Just published, in extra 8vo, price 12s.,*

**THE PHILOSOPHICAL BASIS OF THEISM.**

*An Examination of the Personality of Man to ascertain his Capacity  
to Know and Serve God, and the Validity of the Principles  
underlying the Defence of Theism.*

By REV. SAMUEL HARRIS, D.D., LL.D.,

PROFESSOR OF SYSTEMATIC THEOLOGY, YALE COLLEGE.

'Full of suggestive thought, and of real assistance in unfolding to the mind the true account and justification of its religious knowledge. The length of the book is by no means the result of any undue diffuseness of style, but represents an amount of solid thought quite commensurate with the number of its pages.'—*Spectator.*

*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

*Nearly ready, in demy 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,*

## THE THEORY OF MORALS.

By PAUL JANET, Member of the Institute, Paris.

TRANSLATED FROM THE LATEST FRENCH EDITION.

CONTENTS.—BOOK FIRST:—Pleasure and Good—Good and Law—The Principle of Excellence, or of Perfection—The Principle of Happiness—Impersonal Goods—The True, the Good, and the Beautiful—Absolute Good.—BOOK SECOND:—Nature and Basis of the Moral Law—Good and Duty—Definite and Indefinite Duties—Right and Duty—Division of Duties—Conflict of Duties.—BOOK THIRD:—The Moral Conscience—Moral Intention—Moral Probabilism—Universality of Moral Principles—The Moral Sentiment—Liberty—Kant's Theory of Liberty—Virtue—Moral Progress—Sin—Merit and Demerit, the Sanctions of the Moral Law—Religion.

By the same Author.

*In One Volume, 8vo, Second Edition, price 12s.,*

## FINAL CAUSES.

TRANSLATED FROM THE LATEST FRENCH EDITION

By WILLIAM AFFLECK, B.D.

CONTENTS.—PRELIMINARY CHAPTER—The Problem. BOOK I.—The Law of Finality. BOOK II.—The First Cause of Finality. APPENDIX.

'This very learned, accurate, and, within its prescribed limits, exhaustive work. . . The book as a whole abounds in matter of the highest interest, and is a model of learning and judicious treatment.'—*Guardian*.

'Illustrated and defended with an ability and learning which must command the reader's admiration.'—*Dublin Review*.

'A great contribution to the literature of this subject. M. Janet has mastered the conditions of the problem, is at home in the literature of science and philosophy, and has that faculty of felicitous expression which makes French books of the highest class such delightful reading; . . . in clearness, vigour, and depth it has been seldom equalled, and more seldom excelled, in philosophical literature.'—*Spectator*.

'A wealth of scientific knowledge and a logical acumen which will win the admiration of every reader.'—*Church Quarterly Review*.

*In demy 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,*

## THE BIBLE DOCTRINE OF MAN.

(SEVENTH SERIES OF CUNNINGHAM LECTURES.)

By JOHN LAIDLAW, D.D.,

Professor of Systematic Theology, New College, Edinburgh.

'An important and valuable contribution to the discussion of the anthropology of the sacred writings, perhaps the most considerable that has appeared in our own language.'—*Literary Churchman*.

'The work is a thoughtful contribution to a subject which must always have deep interest for the devout student of the Bible.'—*British Quarterly Review*.

'Dr. Laidlaw's work is scholarly, able, interesting, and valuable. . . Thoughtful and devout minds will find much to stimulate, and not a little to assist, their meditations in this learned and, let us add, charmingly printed volume.'—*Record*.

'On the whole, we take this to be the most sensible and reasonable statement of the Biblical psychology of man we have met.'—*Expositor*.

'The book will give ample material for thought to the reflective reader; and it holds a position, as far as we know, which is unique.'—*Church Bell*.

*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

*Just published, in demy 8vo, price 9s.,*

## THE DOCTRINE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT.

(NINTH SERIES OF THE CUNNINGHAM LECTURES.)

BY REV. GEO. SMEATON, D.D.,

Professor of Exegetical Theology, New College, Edinburgh.

'This work amply sustains the reputation that the series in its past volumes has gained for learning, for freshness of treatment, and for adaptation to the needs of our time. Indeed, it is one of the best of the series. . . . The volume is sure to take a leading place in our best theological literature.'—*Christian Treasury*.

'A valuable monograph. . . . The masterly exposition of doctrine given in these lectures has been augmented in value by the wise references to current needs and common misconceptions.'—*British and Foreign Evangelical Review*.

BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

*Second Edition, in demy 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,*

## THE DOCTRINE OF THE ATONEMENT

AS TAUGHT BY CHRIST HIMSELF;

*Or, The Sayings of Jesus Exegetically Expounded and Classified.*

'We attach very great value to this seasonable and scholarly production. The idea of the work is most happy, and the execution of it worthy of the idea. On a scheme of truly Baconian exegetical induction, he presents us with a complete view of the various positions or propositions which a full and sound doctrine of the atonement embraces.'—*British and Foreign Evangelical Review*.

'The plan of the book is admirable. A monograph and exegesis of our Lord's own sayings on this greatest of subjects concerning Himself, must needs be valuable to all theologians. And the execution is thorough and painstaking—exhaustive as far as the completeness of range over these sayings is concerned.'—*Contemporary Review*.

*Just published, Fifth Edition, crown 8vo, price 6s.,*

## THE TRIPARTITE NATURE OF MAN:

SPIRIT, SOUL, AND BODY.

*Applied to Illustrate and Explain the Doctrines of Original Sin, the New Birth, the Disembodied State, and the Spiritual Body.*

BY REV. J. B. HEARD, M.A.

'The author has got a striking and consistent theory. Whether agreeing or disagreeing with that theory, it is a book which any student of the Bible may read with pleasure.'—*Guardian*.

'An elaborate, ingenious, and very able book.'—*London Quarterly Review*.

'The subject is discussed with much ability and learning, and the style is sprightly and readable. It is candid in its tone, and original both in thought and illustration.'—*Westleyan Methodist Magazine*.

## WORKS OF JOHN CALVIN.

COMMENTARIES, 45 VOLS.

TRACTS ON THE REFORMATION, 3 VOLS.

A Selection of Six Volumes (or more at the same proportion) for 21s., with the exception of PSALMS, vol. V; HABAKKUK, and CORINTHIANS, 2 vols.

Any separate Volume (with the above exceptions), 6s.

*Detailed List of Commentaries free on application.*

The LETTERS, edited by Dr. Bonnet, 2 vols., 10s. 6d.

The INSTITUTE, 2 vols., translated, 14s.

The INSTITUTE, in Latin, 2 vols., Tholuck's Edition (*Subscription price*), 14s.

*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

*Just published, in post 8vo, price 7s. 6d.,*

**BIBLICAL STUDY:**  
**ITS PRINCIPLES, METHODS, AND HISTORY.**  
BY PROFESSOR C. A. BRIGGS, D.D.

With INTRODUCTION by Professor A. B. BRUCE, D.D., Glasgow.

'A book fitted at once to meet the requirements of professional students of Scripture, and to serve as an available guide for educated laymen who, while using the Bible chiefly for edification, desire to have the advantage of the light which scholarship can throw on the sacred page, ought to meet with wide acceptance and to be in many ways useful. Such a book is the one now published. Dr. Briggs is exceptionally well qualified to prepare a work of this kind.'—*Prof. Bruce.*

'We have great pleasure in recommending Dr. Briggs' work to the notice of all Biblical students.'—*Nonconformist.*

*In crown 8vo, price 6s.,*

**THE INCARNATE SAVIOUR.**  
**A LIFE OF JESUS CHRIST.**  
BY REV. W. R. NICOLL, M.A.

'It commands my warm sympathy and admiration. I rejoice in the circulation of such a book, which I trust will be the widest possible.'—*Canon LIDDON.*

'There was quite room for such a volume. It contains a great deal of thought, often penetrating and always delicate, and pleasingly expressed. The subject has been very carefully studied, and the treatment will, I believe, furnish much suggestive matter both to readers and preachers.'—*Rev. Principal SANDAY.*

*In crown 8vo, Eighth Edition, price 7s. 6d.,*

**THE SUFFERING SAVIOUR;**  
**OR, MEDITATIONS ON THE LAST DAYS OF THE**  
**SUFFERINGS OF CHRIST.**  
BY F. W. KRUMMACHER, D.D.

BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

*In crown 8vo, Second Edition, price 7s. 6d.,*

**DAVID, THE KING OF ISRAEL:**  
**A PORTRAIT DRAWN FROM BIBLE HISTORY AND THE BOOK**  
**OF PSALMS.**

*In demy 8vo, price 7s. 6d.,*

**SERMONS TO THE NATURAL MAN.**  
BY WILLIAM G. T. SHEDD, D.D.,

'Characterized by profound knowledge of divine truth, and presenting the truth in a chaste and attractive style, the sermons carry in their tone the accents of the solemn feeling of responsibility to which they owe their origin.'—*Weekly Review.*

*In One Volume, crown 8vo, price 5s., Third Edition,*

**LIGHT FROM THE CROSS:**  
**SERMONS ON THE PASSION OF OUR LORD.**

TRANSLATED FROM THE GERMAN OF A. THOLUCK, D.D.,

'With no ordinary confidence and pleasure, we commend these most noble, solemnizing, and touching discourses.'—*British and Foreign Evangelical Review.*

*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

---

**WORKS BY ERNEST NAVILLE.**

---

In crown 8vo, price 5s.

**MODERN PHYSICS.**

**HISTORICAL AND PHILOSOPHICAL STUDIES.**

'Christian scientists should at once procure this learned and able volume.'—*Evangelical Magazine.*

---

In crown 8vo, price 4s. 6d.,

**THE CHRIST.**

'They are masterly productions.'—*Methodist Recorder.*

'We look upon these Lectures as a valuable contribution to Christology; and to young ministers and others interested in the grand and exhaustive subject, they will be found to be highly stimulating and helpful.'—*Literary World.*

---

In crown 8vo, price 4s. 6d.,

**THE PROBLEM OF EVIL.**

'The subject is dealt with by M. Naville in a truly philosophic manner, and at the same time with a brilliancy of illustration that seizes and enchains the attention, and with a simplicity of style that places the subject within the reach of all.'—*London Quarterly Review.*

---

Just published, in crown 8vo, price 2s. 6d.,

**THE WORK OF THE HOLY SPIRIT IN MAN.**

*DISCOURSES.*

BY PASTOR G. TOPHEL, GENEVA.

'These pages are replete with clear, mellow, tender, beautiful, elevating thoughts, eminently instructive to inquiring minds, and such as the devout must delight contemplatively and prayerfully to linger upon.'—*Baptist Magazine.*

'An admirable book on a subject of the deepest importance. We do not remember a work on this theme that is more impressive, or seems more fitted for general usefulness.'—*British Messenger.*

---

In crown 8vo, price 4s. 6d.,

**OLD TESTAMENT HISTORY OF  
REDEMPTION.**

BY PROFESSOR DELITZSCH.

TRANSLATED FROM MANUSCRIPT NOTES BY PROFESSOR S. I. CURTISS.

'Few who will take the trouble to look into it will not readily acknowledge that it is not only a masterly work, such as few men, if any, besides the Leipzig professor could give, but that there is nothing to be compared with it as a handbook for students.'—*Literary World.*

---

In Two Volumes, demy 8vo, price 21s., Second Edition,

**HISTORICAL THEOLOGY:**

A REVIEW OF THE PRINCIPAL DOCTRINAL DISCUSSIONS IN THE  
CHRISTIAN CHURCH SINCE THE APOSTOLIC AGE.

BY THE LATE WILLIAM CUNNINGHAM, D.D.,

PRINCIPAL AND PROFESSOR OF CHURCH HISTORY, NEW COLLEGE, EDINBURGH.

*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

*In crown 8vo, price 4s. 6d.,*

**THE WORLD OF PRAYER;**  
*OR, PRAYER IN RELATION TO PERSONAL RELIGION.*  
By BISHOP MONRAD.

'English readers are greatly indebted to Mr. Banks for his translation of this work: he has rendered available to them a book of devotional reading which admirably combines the truest Christian mysticism with the soundest and healthiest practical teaching.'  
—*London Quarterly Review*.

'One of the richest devotional books that we have read.'—*Primitive Methodist Magazine*.

*In demy 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,*

**HISTORY OF THE  
PASSION AND RESURRECTION OF OUR LORD,**  
*CONSIDERED IN THE LIGHT OF MODERN CRITICISM.*

By DR. F. L. STEINMEYER,  
PROFESSOR OF THEOLOGY, BERLIN.

'Our readers will find this work a most valuable and suggestive help for their thoughts and teaching during Passion-tide and Easter.'—*English Churchman*.

By the same Author.

*In demy 8vo, price 7s. 6d.,*

**THE MIRACLES OF OUR LORD,**  
*IN RELATION TO MODERN CRITICISM.*

'This work vindicates in a vigorous and scholarly style the sound view of miracles against the sceptical assaults of the time.'—*Princeton Review*.

'We commend the study of this work to thoughtful and intelligent readers, and especially to students of divinity, whose position requires a competent knowledge of modern theological controversy.'—*Wesleyan Methodist Magazine*.

*In demy 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,*

**THE FIRST EPISTLE OF ST. JOHN.**  
*A CONTRIBUTION TO BIBLICAL THEOLOGY.*

By ERICH HAUPT.

TRANSLATED, WITH AN INTRODUCTION,

By W. B. POPE, D.D.

'We recommend it especially to the use of ministers, and are sure that they will find in such scientific penetration, far deeper and more suggestive preparation for sermons and Bible lectures, than in the expositions which are written specially for ministers for homiletical use.'—*Neue Evangelische Kirchen-Zeitung*.

*In crown 8vo, price 5s.,*

**MESSIANIC PROPHECY:**  
*ITS ORIGIN, HISTORICAL CHARACTER, AND RELATION TO  
NEW TESTAMENT FULFILMENT.*

FROM THE GERMAN OF DR. EDWARD RIEHM.

'Original and suggestive, and deserving careful consideration.'—*Literary Churchman*.  
'Its intrinsic excellence makes it a valuable contribution to our biblical literature.'—*British and Foreign Evangelical Review*.

Just Published, in Two Volumes, 8vo (1600 pages), price 28s., -

## THE DOCTRINE OF SACRED SCRIPTURE,

A CRITICAL, HISTORICAL, AND DOGMATIC INQUIRY INTO THE ORIGIN  
AND NATURE OF THE OLD AND NEW TESTAMENTS.

BY GEORGE T. LADD, D.D.,

PROFESSOR OF MENTAL AND MORAL PHILOSOPHY, YALE COLLEGE.

PART I.—Introduction.—Chap. I. The Nature of Old Testament Scripture as determined by the Teaching of Christ. II. The Nature of New Testament Scripture as determined by the Promises of Christ. III. The Claims of the Old Testament in general, and of Mosaism in particular. IV. The Claims of Prophetism and of the Hekmah. V. The Claims for the Old Testament by the Writers of the New. VI. The Claims for the New Testament by its own Writers.

PART II.—Chap. I. Introductory. II. The Doctrine of Sacred Scripture as related to the Scientific Contents of the Bible. III. The Doctrine of Sacred Scripture as related to the Miraculous Contents of the Bible. IV. The Doctrine of Sacred Scripture as related to the Historical Contents of the Bible. V. The Doctrine of Sacred Scripture as related to the Predictive Contents of the Bible. VI. The Doctrine of Sacred Scripture as dependent upon the Ethico-Religious Contents of the Bible. VII. The Doctrine of Sacred Scripture as related to the Authorship and Composition of the Biblical Books. VIII. The Doctrine of Sacred Scripture as related to the Language and Style of the Biblical Books. IX. The Doctrine of Sacred Scripture as related to the History of the Canon. X. The Doctrine of Sacred Scripture as related to the Text of the Bible. XI. Inductive Theory of Sacred Scripture.

PART III.—Chap. I. Introductory—The Nature of the Testimony of the Church in History to the Bible. II. The Period preceding the Christian Era—The Doctrine of the Old Testament Apocrypha, of the Talmud, Philo, and Josephus. III. The Period of the Early Christian Church (down to about 250 A.D.). IV. The Second Period of the Church (from 250 to Augustine and Jerome). V. The Period from Augustine and Jerome to the Reformation. VI. The Doctrine of Sacred Scripture in the Period of the Reformation. VII. The Period from the Beginning of the Post-Reformation Era to the Present Time.

PART IV.—Chap. I. Introductory—The Relations of the Dogmatic and Synthetic Statement of the Doctrine to the Induction Theory. II. The Bible and the Personality of God. III. Revelation: its Possibility, Nature, Stages, Criteria, etc. IV. The Spirit and the Bible. V. Man as the Subject of Revelation and Inspiration (Psychological). VI. The Media of Revelation. VII. Inspiration. VIII. The Bible and the Church. IX. The Bible and the Word of God (distinguished in idea and extent). X. The Authority of the Bible. XI. The Bible as Translated and Interpreted. XII. The Bible as a Means of Grace. XIII. The Bible and the Individual Man. XIV. The Bible and the Race.

'It is not very easy to give an account of this very considerable and important work within the compass of one short notice. . . . It is one which will certainly be studied by all scientific theologians, and the general reader will probably find here a better summary of the whole subject than in any other work or series of works.'—*Church Bell*.

'A scientific method of treating the phenomena and place of the Bible such as this will have special value in these days; as such we very heartily commend it to all interested in the great question of Divine revelation through Jesus Christ of which the Bible is the medium, and in which all its teachings find their reason and inspiration and relations.'—*British Quarterly Review*.

'This important work is pre-eminently adapted for students, and treats in an exhaustive manner nearly every important subject of Biblical criticism which is agitating the religious mind at the present day.'—*Contemporary Review*.



*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

In Three Volumes, 8vo, price 31s. 6d.,

(*Vols. I. and II. now ready. Volume III. shortly.*)

## THE LIFE OF CHRIST.

BY DR. BERNHARD WEISS,

PROFESSOR OF THEOLOGY, BERLIN.

'The authority of John's Gospel is vindicated with great fulness and success. Altogether the book seems destined to hold a very distinguished, if not absolutely unique, place in the criticism of the New Testament. Its fearless search after truth, its independence of spirit, its extent of research, its thoughtful and discriminating tone, must secure for it a very high reputation.'—*Congregationalist*.

'If the work in its completeness fulfil the promise of this instalment, it will be an exposition of the divine character and mission of our Lord more thorough and penetrating and conclusive than any that we yet possess.'—*British Quarterly Review*.

'Able and learned volumes. . . . A careful perusal of these books will amply repay the reader. They are replete with original matter, and are evidently the result of painstaking conscientiousness on the part of the author.'—*Rock*.

'A valuable treatise. . . . A thoroughly exhaustive work; a work in which learning of the most severe type, combined with a perfect knowledge of the languages drawn upon for the elucidation of his purpose, is apparent in every page.'—*Bell's Weekly Messenger*.

'From the thoroughness of the discussion and clearness of the writer, we anticipate a very valuable addition to the Great Biography.'—*Freeman*.

---

By the same Author.

In Two Volumes, 8vo, price 21s.,

## BIBLICAL THEOLOGY OF THE NEW TESTAMENT.

'We can bear grateful testimony to the vigour, freshness, and richly suggestive power.'—*Baptist Magazine*.

'Further references to this work, so far from diminishing the high estimate we have previously expressed, have induced us to value it still more. The issue of the second and concluding volume gives aid to this enhanced appreciation.'—*Theological Quarterly*.

'Written throughout with freshness, vigour, and perfect command of the material. . . . This is a field which Weiss has made his own. His work far excels the numerous works of his predecessors in thoroughness and completeness.'—*Methodist Recorder*.

'The work which this volume completes is one of no ordinary strength and acumen. It is an exposition of the books of the New Testament arranged scientifically, that is, according to the authorship and development. It is the ripe fruit of many years of New Testament exegesis and theological study. . . . The book is in every way a notable one.'—*British Quarterly Review*.

'A work so thorough as this, and which so fully recognises the historical character of the science of Biblical Theology, was well worth translating.'—*Academy*.

'Able contributions to theological literature.'—*Scotsman*.

*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

In demy 8vo, Second Edition, price 10s. 6d.,

## THE HUMILIATION OF CHRIST, IN ITS PHYSICAL, ETHICAL, AND OFFICIAL ASPECTS.

By A. B. BRUCE, D.D.,  
PROFESSOR OF DIVINITY, FREE CHURCH COLLEGE, GLASGOW.

'Dr. Bruce's style is uniformly clear and vigorous, and this book of his, as a whole, has the rare advantage of being at once stimulating and satisfying to the mind in a high degree.'—*British and Foreign Evangelical Review*.

'This work stands forth at once as an original, thoughtful, thorough piece of work in the branch of scientific theology, such as we do not often meet in our language. . . . It is really a work of exceptional value; and no one can read it without perceptible gain in theological knowledge.'—*English Churchman*.

'We have not for a long time met with a work so fresh and suggestive as this of Professor Bruce. . . . We do not know where to look at our English Universities for a treatise so calm, logical, and scholarly.'—*English Independent*.

By the same Author.

In demy 8vo, Third Edition, price 10s. 6d.,

## THE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE; OR, EXPOSITION OF PASSAGES IN THE GOSPELS EXHIBITING THE TWELVE DISCIPLES OF JESUS UNDER DISCIPLINE FOR THE APOSTLESHIP.

'Here we have a really great book on an important, large, and attractive subject—a book full of loving, wholesome, profound thoughts about the fundamentals of Christian faith and practice.'—*British and Foreign Evangelical Review*.

'It is some five or six years since this work first made its appearance, and now that a second edition has been called for, the Author has taken the opportunity to make some alterations which are likely to render it still more acceptable. Substantially, however, the book remains the same, and the hearty commendation with which we noted its first issue applies to it at least as much now.'—*Rock*.

'The value, the beauty of this volume is that it is a unique contribution to, because a loving and cultured study of, the life of Christ, in the relation of the Master of the Twelve.'—*Edinburgh Daily Review*.

In demy 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,

## DELIVERY AND DEVELOPMENT OF CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE.

By ROBERT RAINY, D.D.,  
PRINCIPAL, AND PROFESSOR OF DIVINITY AND CHURCH HISTORY, NEW COLLEGE, EDIN.

'We gladly acknowledge the high excellence and the extensive learning which these lectures display. They are able to the last degree; and the author has, in an unusual measure, the power of acute and brilliant generalization.'—*Literary Churchman*.

'It is a rich and nutritious book throughout, and in temper and spirit beyond all praise.'—*British and Foreign Evangelical Review*.

'The subject is treated with a comprehensive grasp, keen logical power, clear analysis and learning, and in devout spirit.'—*Evangelical Magazine*.

## HANDBOOKS FOR BIBLE CLASSES.

'These volumes are models of the *multum in parvo* style. We have long desired to meet with a Series of this kind—Little Books on Great Subjects.'—*Literary World*.

### THE EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL TO THE GALATIANS.

With Introduction and Notes

[Price 1s. 6d.]

By THE REV. PROFESSOR JAMES MACGREGOR, D.D.

### THE POST-EXILIAN PROPHETS— HAGGAI, ZECHARIAH, MALACHI.

With Introduction and Notes

[Price 2s.]

By MARCUS DODS, D.D.

### THE LIFE OF CHRIST.

By REV. JAMES STALKER, M.A.

[Price 1s. 6d.]

### THE CHRISTIAN SACRAMENTS.

By PROFESSOR JAMES S. CANDLISH, D.D.

[Price 1s. 6d.]

### THE BOOKS OF CHRONICLES.

By REV. PROFESSOR MURPHY, BELFAST.

[Price 1s. 6d.]

### THE WESTMINSTER CONFESSION OF FAITH.

With Introduction and Notes

[Price 2s.]

By REV. JOHN MACPHERSON, M.A.

### THE BOOK OF JUDGES.

By REV. PRINCIPAL DOUGLAS, D.D.

[Price 1s. 3d.]

### THE BOOK OF JOSHUA.

By REV. PRINCIPAL DOUGLAS, D.D.

[Price 1s. 6d.]

### THE EPISTLE TO THE HEBREWS.

By REV. PROFESSOR A. B. DAVIDSON.

[Price 2s. 6d.]

### SCOTTISH CHURCH HISTORY.

By REV. NORMAN L. WALKER, M.A.

[Price 1s. 6d.]

### THE CHURCH.

By REV. PROFESSOR WM. BINNIE, D.D.

[Price 1s. 6d.]

### THE EPISTLE TO THE ROMANS.

By REV. PRINCIPAL BROWN, D.D.

[Price 2s.]

### THE BOOK OF GENESIS.

By MARCUS DODS, D.D.

[Price 2s.]

### THE REFORMATION.

By REV. PROFESSOR LINDSAY, D.D.

[Price 2s.]

### PRESBYTERIANISM.

By REV. JOHN MACPHERSON, M.A.

[Price 1s. 6d.]

### LESSONS ON THE LIFE OF CHRIST.

By REV. WM. SCRYMGEOUR.

[Price 2s. 6d.]

### THE SHORTER CATECHISM.

By ALEXANDER WHYTE, D.D.

[Price 2s. 6d.]

### THE GOSPEL OF ST. MARK.

By REV. PROFESSOR LINDSAY, D.D.

[Price 2s. 6d.]

### A SHORT HISTORY OF MISSIONS.

By GEORGE SMITH, LL.D.

[In the Press.]





Rep<sup>d</sup> R.H 14.4.47



